

# INTRODUCTION

The idea of compiling and publishing a collection of Portuguese historical statistics was first launched more than a decade ago by professor Jaime Reis. Various circumstances prevented the project led by him from coming to fruition in the 1980s, whilst, in the 1990s, the first attempts made by the Gabinete de História Económica e Social of the Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão of the Universidade Técnica de Lisboa to relaunch the project with the support of the Institute's Research Fund were similarly unable to progress much beyond the stage of organising a plan and producing a rough draft for a few of the chapters. It is only this third attempt, launched by the same office with the financial support of the *Fundação para a Ciência e a Tecnologia* (Foundation for Science and Technology) and the ERDF through its PRAXIS XXI programme, that has finally brought the work to the point where it is possible to make these volumes available to those interested in studying the history of Portugal.

The work has been planned in such a way as to combine coverage of the different areas of social life normally associated with this kind of collection — demography and the economy in their various aspects (population, cities, the economic activity of the population, production, national accounts, money, prices and salaries, public finance and the public debt, external economic relations) — with the treatment of subjects that are not normally included, even though they are equally susceptible to a relevant statistical treatment — geography, culture and politics.

Many people have helped to make this final result possible. First of all, those responsible for the conception and preparation of the introductions and tables contained in each chapter or section — Alda Domingos, Ana Bela Nunes, Ana Maria Simão, Ana Tomás, Carlos Bastien, Eugénia Mata, Eva Nunes, Isabel Loução, Jaime Reis, José Carlos Marques, Magda Pinheiro, Manuel Lisboa, Maria Joannis Baganha, Maria Paula Fontoura and Patrícia Lavos — whose names are mentioned in the appropriate places. Secondly, several colleagues who lent their help at different stages in the preparation of the collection, although for various reasons they were not able to accept responsibility for any part of its final version. This was the case with David Justino, Helder Fonseca, João Confraria and Pedro Lains. Thirdly, those collaborators who performed various tasks in support of the work of the Gabinete de História Económica e Social of the Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão of the Universidade Técnica de Lisboa. This was the case in particular with John Elliott, who is responsible for the English version of this work. A special mention must also be made of the support provided by the staff of the libraries at the Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão of the Universidade Técnica de Lisboa and the National Statistical Institute and of the office of the Social Sciences Department at the Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão of the Universidade Técnica de Lisboa.

## Introduction

On behalf of the Gabinete de História Económica e Social do Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão da Universidade Técnica de Lisboa and all those who worked in the preparation of this collection of Portuguese historical statistics, I wish to formally express the hope that our main aim has been achieved: to produce a useful working tool for all those interested in the history of Portuguese society.

NUNO VALÉRIO  
(coordinator)

# INDEX

Introduction	1
Index	3
Chapter 1 — Geography (author: Nuno Valério)	11
Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions	13
Table 1.2 — Division of the territory	25
Table 1.3 — Climate	31
Chapter 2 — Population (authors: Maria Joannis Baganha and José Carlos Marques)	33
Table 2.1 — Total population and population by sex, 1864-1991	51
Table 2.2 — Population calculated for the end of the year, 1864-1991	52
Table 2.3 — Total population by age groups, 1864-1991	55
Table 2.4 — Total population by districts, 1864-1991	57
Table 2.5 — Natural movement of the population, 1890-1991	59
Table 2.6 — Births, deaths and marriages, 1890-1991	63
Table 2.7 — Births by sex, 1890-1991	65
Table 2.8 — Deaths by age, by four-years periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1991	67
Table 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality	75
Table 2.10 — Legal emigration and estimated illegal emigration, 1885-1988	83
Table 2.11 — Legal emigration by destination, 1886-1988	86
Table 2.12 — Numbers of Portuguese emigrants entering some destination countries, 1981-1993	90
Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988	91
Table 2.14 — Summary of legal emigration by district, 1886-1988	101
Table 2.15 — Legal emigration by sex, 1886-1988	103
Table 2.16 — Demographic characteristics of legal emigration, 1890-1988	105
Table 2.17 — Legal emigration by sex and age group, 1955-1988	106
Table 2.18 — Movement of passengers between Portugal and the Overseas Provinces	109
Appendix — Age pyramids	114

## Index

Chapter 3 — Cities (author: Ana Tomás)	127
Table 3.1 — Cities according to the legal criterion	128
Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion	132
Chapter 4 — Economic activity of the population (author: Ana Bela Nunes)	149
Table 4.1 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to General Population Censuses, 1890-1991	164
Table 4.2 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to General Population Censuses, 1930-1991	167
Table 4.3 — Active population by occupational status, according to General Population Censuses, 1930-1991	171
Table 4.4 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to General Population Censuses, 1940-1991	173
Table 4.5 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to Employment Surveys, 1974-1992	175
Table 4.6 — Active population by sectors of activity — long series, 1890-1981	178
Table 4.7 — Active population in the manufacturing industry in the broad sense by sectors — long series, 1930-1981	182
Table 4.8 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993	187
Table 4.9 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993	189
Table 4.10 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993	193
Chapter 5 — Production	197
Section A — Agriculture, animal husbandry, forestry and hunting (author: Eva Nunes)	199
Table 5A.1 — Land use and farms	202
Table 5A.2 — Livestock numbers	204
Table 5A.3 — Agricultural machinery	206
Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production	208
Table 5A.5 — Animal production	225
Table 5A.6 — Forestry production	235

## Index

Section B — Fishing and aquaculture (author: Nuno Valério)	239
Table 5B.1 — Fishing boats	241
Table 5B.2 — Catches brought ashore and aquaculture	245
Section C — Mining and quarrying (author: Nuno Valério)	249
Table 5C.1 — Extraction of energy products	250
Table 5C.2 — Extraction of non-radioactive metal ores	253
Table 5C.3 — Extraction of non-metallic minerals	257
Section D — Manufacturing industry (author: Manuel Lisboa)	261
Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value, 1945-1989	297
Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes	316
Section E — Electricity, gas, water supply and sanitation (author: Isabel Loução)	331
Table 5E.1 — Electricity and gas production	333
Table 5E.2 — Energy balance sheets	335
Table 5E.3 — Water supply	336
Table 5E.4 — Sanitation	338
Section F — Construction (author: Nuno Valério)	339
Table 5F.1 — Existing buildings	340
Table 5F.2 — Construction of buildings	341
Table 5F.3 — Overall indicators of construction activity	344
Section G — Wholesale and retail trade, repair of motor vehicles and household goods (author: Nuno Valério)	345
Table 5G.1 — Indicators of wholesale and retail trade activity	346
Table 5G.2 — Indicators of activity in the sub-sector of repairs and similar services	347

## Index

Section H — Hotels and restaurants — Tourism (author: Ana Maria Simão)	349
Table 5H.1 — Hotels	353
Table 5H.2 — Restaurants and cafes	355
Table 5H.3 — Tourism	357
Section I — Transport and communications	359
Sub-Section IA — Transport (author: Magda Pinheiro)	361
Table 5IA.1 — Roads	365
Table 5IA.2 — Means of road transport	371
Table 5IA.3 — Public road transport	375
Table 5IA.4 — Railways	378
Table 5IA.5 — Movement at ports	383
Table 5IA.6 — Merchant navy and its activity	389
Table 5IA.7 — Movements at airports	394
Table 5IA.8 — Activity of airline companies	396
Table 5IA.9 — Urban transport	398
Sub-Section IB — Communications (author: Nuno Valério)	403
Table 5IB.1 — Postal services	405
Table 5IB.2 — Telecommunications	410
Section J — Financial activities (author: Nuno Valério)	415
Table 5J.1 — Other financial intermediaries	420
Table 5J.2 — Discounting and protesting of bills	424
Table 5J.3 — Insurance and pension funds	427
Table 5J.4 — Formation and dissolution of companies	431
Table 5J.5 — Issue and transaction of securities	434
Section K — Real estate, renting and business activities (author: Nuno Valério)	437
Table 5K.1 — Property transactions and mortgages	439
Table 5K.2 — Indicators of the activity of services rendered to businesses	442

## Index

Section L — Public administration (authors: Eugénia Mata and Nuno Valério)	445
Table 5L.1 — Justice	448
Table 5L.2 — Local administration finance	452
Table 5L.3 — Indicators of the activity of public administration and defence	459
Section M — Education and research (authors: Alda Domingos and Nuno Valério)	465
Table 5M.1 — Education — number of students completing the various levels of education	470
Table 5M.2 — Research	475
Section N — Health, veterinary services and social work (authors: Patrícia Lavos and Nuno Valério)	477
Table 5N.1 — Doctors, pharmacists and veterinary surgeons enrolled with their respective professional associations	480
Table 5N.2 — Health equipment	482
Table 5N.3 — Health services and general indicators about health	486
Table 5N.4 — Revenue and expenditure of social protection	491
Table 5N.5 — Pensioners and beneficiaries of social protection and the unemployment subsidy	492
Section O — Community, social and personal service activities (author: Nuno Valério)	497
Table 5O.1 — Community services	501
Table 5O.2 — Social services — religious services	506
Table 5O.3 — Personal services	507
Section P — Domestic services (author: Nuno Valério)	509
Table 5P.1 — Persons occupied in domestic services	510
Table 5P.2 — Indicators of the activity of domestic service firms	511
Chapter 6 — National accounts (author: Nuno Valério)	513
Table 6.1 — Origin of the product by sectors	519

## Index

Table 6.2 — Origin of the product of manufacturing industry by sectors	523
Table 6.3 — Origin of the product of sundry services by sectors	527
Table 6.4 — National expenditure	528
Table 6.5 — National disposable income	532
Table 6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations	536
Chapter 7 — Money and credit (author: Jaime Reis)	545
Table 7.1 — Metallic money	560
Table 7.2 — Paper money	566
Table 7.3 — Deposit money	568
Table 7.4 — Money supply	571
Table 7.5 — Monetary base	585
Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal	587
Table 7.7 — Banks, bankers and banking houses	601
Table 7.8 — Savings banks and credit companies	608
Table 7.9 — Number of financial institutions	615
Table 7.10 — Bank of Portugal discount rates	617
Table 7.11 — Bank clearing	619
Chapter 8 — Prices and wages (author: Carlos Bastien)	623
Table 8.1 — Prices	629
Table 8.2 — Wages	648
Chapter 9 — Public finance and public debt (author: Eugénia Mata)	665
Table 9.1 — Public revenue assessments and budgets, fourteenth to eighteenth centuries	670
Table 9.2 — Public revenue and expenditure, 1762-1833	671
Table 9.3 — Summary of public accounts, 1833-1998	672
Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998	678
Table 9.5 — Functional composition of public expenditure, 1851-1998	702
Table 9.6 — Tax revenue, 1833-1998	708
Table 9.7 — Public debt, 1851-1998	715



## Index

Chapter 10 — Foreign economic relations (authors: Maria Paula Fontoura e Nuno Valério)	721
Table 10.1 — Foreign trade and import duties 1776-1998	727
Table 10.2 — Balance of trade and monetary operations 1776-1998	733
Table 10.3 — Balance of payments 1948-1998	739
Table 10.4 — Balance of current accounts 1948-1998	741
Table 10.5 — Balance of capital movements 1965-1998	743
Table 10.6 — Exchange rates 1891-1998	745
Chapter 11 — Culture (author: Nuno Valério)	749
Table 11.1 — Mother tongue of the Portuguese population	752
Table 11.2 — Religion of the Portuguese population	754
Table 11.3 — Educational qualifications of the Portuguese population	755
Chapter 12 — Politics (author: Nuno Valério)	759
Table 12.1 — Counts of the Counties of Portugal and Coimbra	775
Table 12.2 — Kings of Portugal	777
Table 12.3 — Presidents of the Portuguese Republic	781
Table 12.4 — Meetings of the <i>Cortes</i> during the period of Absolute Monarchy	785
Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections	790
Table 12.6 — Governments	801
Table 12.7 — Internal wars and conflicts	811
Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts	832
Index	857

# CHAPTER 1 — GEOGRAPHY

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

This chapter is an attempt to summarise the geographical framework governing the existence of Portuguese society.

Table 1.1 summarises the historical circumstances under which the Portuguese territory was formed and under which other territories were made subject to Portuguese sovereignty.

Table 1.2 summarises the evolution of the ecclesiastical, administrative, judicial, military and economic division of Portuguese territory throughout its history.

Table 1.3 includes the fundamental data necessary for a knowledge of the climate of the regions that nowadays comprise the Portuguese territory. The normal climatological features are presented for the following places: Ponta Delgada and Oporto, which are considered to be paradigmatic of the temperate Atlantic climate prevailing in the Azores and on the northern mainland coast respectively; Faro and Funchal, considered to be paradigmatic of the temperate Mediterranean climate prevailing on the southern mainland coast and the southern coast of Madeira respectively; Lisbon, considered to be paradigmatic of the temperate climate that marks the transition between the Atlantic and Mediterranean climates and prevails along the central mainland coast; Évora, considered paradigmatic of the temperate semi-continental climate prevailing in the inland region of mainland Portugal; and Penhas Douradas, considered paradigmatic of the temperate climate that marks the transition to the mountain climate prevailing in the northern inland regions of mainland Portugal at an altitude of more than 1200 m<sup>1</sup>.

## References

CALDAS, Eugénio de Castro; LOUREIRO, Manuel de Santos — Regiões homogéneas no Continente português — primeiro ensaio de delimitação. Lisboa: Instituto nacional de Investigação Industrial – Fundação Gulbenkian, 1966.

GASPAR, Jorge (editor) — Portugal em mapas e em números. Lisboa: Horizonte, 1979.

MATOSO, José (editor) — História de Portugal. (7 volumes) Lisboa: Círculo de Leitores, 1992-1994.

---

<sup>1</sup> Further data on meteorological series can be found in the working paper No. 17 of the Gabinete de História Económica e Social, Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão, Universidade Técnica de Lisboa.

OLIVEIRA, Miguel de — História eclesiástica de Portugal. Mem Martins: Europa-América, 1994.

PERES, Damião (editor) — História de Portugal. (8 volumes) Barcelos: Portucalense Editora, 1938-1940.

RODRIGUES, António Simões (editor) — História de Portugal em datas. Lisboa: Círculo de Leitores, 1994.

SERRÃO, Joel; MARQUES, A. H. de Oliveira (editors) — Nova história da expansão portuguesa. (5 volumes published) Lisboa: Estampa, 1986-1998.

SERRÃO, Joel; MARQUES, A. H. de Oliveira (editors) — Nova história de Portugal. (7 volumes published) Lisboa: Presença, 1987-1998.

## Tables

1.1 — Territory and possessions

1.2 — Division of the territory

1.3 — Climate

## Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions

Sources — Matoso, 1992-1994; Peres, 1938-1940; Rodrigues, 1994; Serrão, Marques, 1986-1998; Serrão, Marques, 1987-1998.

### A — Territory

The Portuguese territory is composed of three regions: mainland Portugal, Madeira and the Azores.

#### Mainland Portugal

Mainland Portugal occupies the south-west of the Iberian Peninsula and today has an area of roughly 89 000 km<sup>2</sup>.

Its subjection to Portuguese sovereignty took place in five main stages:

1 — Formation of the first County of Portugal — The territory of the first County of Portugal (868-1071) corresponded to the present-day territory of mainland Portugal between the River Lima and the River Douro. It had an area of roughly 16 500 km<sup>2</sup>.

2 — Formation of the County of Coimbra — The territory of the County of Coimbra (878-981 and 1064-1093) corresponded to the present-day territory of mainland Portugal between the River Douro and the central range of mountains, excluding the region of Ribacoa. It had an area of roughly 17 600 km<sup>2</sup>.

3 — Formation of the second County of Portugal — The territory of the second County of Portugal (1096-1143) initially corresponded to the present-day territory of mainland Portugal between the River Minho and the central range of mountains, excluding the region of Ribacoa. It had an area of roughly 35 900 km<sup>2</sup>.

4 — Conquest of the present-day territory of mainland Portugal to the south of the central range of mountains — In 1143, the County of Portugal was transformed into the Kingdom of Portugal, which was effectively independent of the Kingdom of León. Between 1143 and 1249, the Kingdom of Portugal conquered the present-day territory of mainland Portugal to the south of the central range of mountains and the region of Olivença from the neighbouring Moorish states. As a consequence of this conquest, the territory of the kingdom of Portugal had an area of roughly 87 700 km<sup>2</sup>.

5 — Establishment of the eastern border of the kingdom of Portugal with the kingdom of León — This border was fixed by the treaties of Badajoz in 1267 and Alcañices in 1297, in the

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

latter case after a war which led to the occupation by Portugal of the region of Ribacoa. These treaties confirmed the sovereignty of Portugal over the Algarve, the regions of Olivença and Moura and Serpa on the left bank of the River Guadiana and over Ribacoa. As a result of the establishment of this border, the territory of Portugal had an area of roughly 89 500 km<sup>2</sup>.

Since 1297, the boundaries of the territory of mainland Portugal have only been altered once, by the treaty of Badajoz in 1801. As a result of this treaty, the Kingdom of Spain gained sovereignty over the region of Olivença.

## **Madeira**

The region of Madeira corresponds to the archipelago with the same name, formed from the inhabited islands of Madeira and Porto Santo and the uninhabited islands known as the Desertas and Selvagens. It has an area of roughly 800 km<sup>2</sup>.

The archipelago was uninhabited until it was occupied by Portugal in 1418 (Porto Santo) and 1419 (Madeira).

## **Azores**

The region of the Azores corresponds to the archipelago with the same name, formed from the inhabited islands of Santa Maria, São Miguel, Terceira, Graciosa, São Jorge, Pico, Faial, Flores and Corvo and several uninhabited islands. It has an area of roughly 2 300 km<sup>2</sup>.

The archipelago was uninhabited until it was occupied by Portugal in 1439.

## **B — Possessions**

Throughout history, the Portuguese state has held possessions in fifteen regions around the world: Morocco, Guinea, Cape Verde, the coast of the Gulf of Guinea, South-West Africa, East Africa, Abyssinia, India, the Persian Gulf, Malaysia, China, East Indies, Brazil and the North-West Atlantic.

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

## Morocco

There were several Portuguese possessions in Morocco from 1415 to 1769 as a result of the conquest of various towns and the sporadic subjection of some adjacent territories. This is the list of the main towns involved:

— Ceuta — Conquered in 1415 from the Kingdom of Morocco. Effectively lost to the Kingdom of Spain in 1640, through the fact of its not having recognised the dethroning of King Philip III by King João IV. Spanish sovereignty was recognised by the treaty of 1668, which brought an end to the War of Restoration.

— Alcácer Ceguer — Conquered in 1458 from the Kingdom of Morocco. Lost in 1549 to the Kingdom of Morocco.

— Arzila — Conquered in 1471 from the Kingdom of Morocco. Lost in 1550 to the Kingdom of Morocco. Conquered in 1577 from the Kingdom of Morocco. Lost in 1589 to the Kingdom of Morocco.

— Tangier — Occupied in 1471, after its abandonment by the Kingdom of Morocco. Ceded to England in 1662.

— Azamor — Conquered in 1486 from the Kingdom of Morocco. Lost in 1542 to the Kingdom of Morocco.

— Safim — Conquered in 1488 from the Kingdom of Morocco. Lost in 1542 to the Kingdom of Morocco.

— Santa Cruz do Cabo de Güé — Conquered in 1505 from the Kingdom of Morocco. Lost in 1541 to the Kingdom of Morocco.

— Mogador — Conquered in 1506 from the Kingdom of Morocco. Lost in 1510 to the Kingdom of Morocco.

— Mazagão — Conquered in 1514 from the Kingdom of Morocco. Lost in 1769 to the Kingdom of Morocco.

## Guinea

There were Portuguese possessions on the coast of Guinea (west coast of Africa and north of the Gulf of Guinea) from the mid-fifteenth century to 1974. There were two distinct periods in the evolution of these possessions:

1) From the mid-fifteenth century to the end of the nineteenth century, the Portuguese possessions on the coast of Guinea had the form of trading-stations, sometimes protected by fortresses.

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

The main Portuguese fortresses and trading-stations on the coast of Guinea between the mid-fifteenth century and the end of the nineteenth century were:

— Argüim — Fortress built around 1450. Conquered by the Dutch West India Company in 1638.

— Cacheu — Trading-station established in 1588. Fortress built in 1641.

— Bissau — Trading-station established in 1681. Fortress built in 1687.

2) From the end of the nineteenth century to 1974, the Portuguese possessions on the coast of Guinea had the form of an overseas province or colony, known as Portuguese Guinea, with an area of roughly 36 000 km<sup>2</sup> and its capital at Bissau.

The African Party for the Independence of Guinea and Cape Verde (PAIGC — *Partido Africano para a Independência da Guiné e Cabo Verde*) began an armed struggle for the independence of Portuguese Guinea in January 1962.

On 24 September 1973, the People's National Assembly of Guinea-Bissau met at Madina do Boé and proclaimed the independence of Guinea-Bissau.

As a result of the protocol signed at Algiers on 26 August 1974 between Portugal and the PAIGC, the independence of Guinea-Bissau was recognised by Portugal on 10 September 1974.

## **Cape Verde**

The territory of Cape Verde corresponds to the archipelago of the same name, consisting of the inhabited islands of Boavista, Brava, Fogo, Maio, Sal, Santa Luzia, Santiago, Santo Antão, São Nicolau and São Vicente and various uninhabited islands. It has a total area of roughly 4 000 km<sup>2</sup>.

The archipelago was uninhabited until it was occupied by Portugal in 1460.

Under the terms of the protocol signed at Algiers on 26 August 1974 between Portugal and the African Party for the Independence of Guinea and Cape Verde (PAIGC — *Partido Africano para a Independência da Guiné e Cabo Verde*), Cape Verde became independent on 5 July 1975.

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

### **Coast of the Gulf of Guinea**

There were a number of Portuguese possessions on the coast of the Gulf of Guinea between the end of the fifteenth century and 1961 under the form of trading-stations, sometimes protected by fortresses.

The main Portuguese fortresses and trading-stations on the coast of the Gulf of Guinea between the mid-fifteenth century and 1961 were:

— São Jorge da Mina — Fortress built around 1485. Conquered by the Dutch West India Company in 1637.

— São João Baptista de Ajudá — Fortress built around 1680. Conquered by Dahomey (present-day Benin) in 1961.

In the 1880s, Portugal tried to establish a protectorate over the region of Dahomey (present-day Benin), which it failed to achieve as a result of the opposition put up by France.

### **Islands of the Gulf of Guinea**

The main islands of the Gulf of Guinea — Ano Bom, Fernão do Pó, Príncipe and São Tomé — were, with the exception of Fernão do Pó, uninhabited until they were occupied by Portugal as from 1470.

São Tomé was conquered by the Dutch West India Company in 1641 and recaptured by Portugal in 1648.

The islands of Ano Bom and Fernão do Pó were ceded to Spain by the Treaty of Santo Ildefonso in 1777. The Portuguese possessions of the islands of the Gulf of Guinea were reduced thereafter to the islands of São Tomé and Príncipe, with an area of roughly 1 000 km<sup>2</sup>.

Under the terms of the agreement signed at Algiers on 26 November 1974 between Portugal and the São Tomé and Príncipe Liberation Movement (*Movimento de Libertação de São Tomé e Príncipe*), São Tomé and Príncipe became independent on 12 July 1975.

### **South-West Africa**

There were Portuguese possessions in south-west Africa (west coast of Africa and south of the Gulf of Guinea) from the end of the fifteenth century to 1975. There were four distinct periods in the evolution of these possessions:



Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

1) From the mid-fifteenth century to the end of the sixteenth century, the Portuguese possessions in south-west Africa had the form of trading-stations, based on the Portuguese protectorate of the Kingdom of Congo.

2) From the end of the sixteenth century to the end of the eighteenth century, the Portuguese possessions in south-west Africa had the form of trading-stations, sometimes protected by fortresses.

The main Portuguese fortresses and trading-stations in south-west Africa between the end of the sixteenth century and the end of the nineteenth century were:

— São Paulo de Luanda — Fortress built in 1576. Conquered by the Dutch West India Company in 1641. Recaptured by Portugal in 1648.

— Massangano — Fortress built in 1582.

— Cambambe — Fortress built in 1602.

— Ambaca — Fortress built in 1614.

— São Filipe de Benguela — Fortress built in 1617.

— Caconda — Fortress built in 1682.

3) From the end of the eighteenth century to the end of the nineteenth century, the Portuguese possessions in south-west Africa had the form of an overseas province or colony, known as Angola, with an area of roughly 100 000 km<sup>2</sup> and its capital at Luanda.

4) From the end of the nineteenth century to 1975, the Portuguese possessions in south-west Africa had the form of an overseas province or colony, known as Angola, with an area of roughly 1 247 000 km<sup>2</sup> and its capital at Luanda.

The Popular Movement for the Liberation of Angola (MPLA — *Movimento Popular de Libertação de Angola*) began its armed struggle for the independence of Angola on 4 February 1961, being joined by the Angolan Peoples' Union (UPA — *União dos Povos de Angola*), later the National Front for the Liberation of Angola (FNLA — *Frente Nacional de Libertação de Angola*) on 15 March 1961 and the National Union for the Total Independence of Angola (UNITA — *União Nacional para a Independência Total de Angola*) on 25 December 1965.

As a result of the agreement signed at Alvor on 15 January 1975 between Portugal, the MPLA, FNLA and UNITA, the independence of Angola was proclaimed on 11 November 1975 simultaneously by two governments, one headed by the MPLA based in Luanda and the other resulting from an alliance between the FNLA and UNITA based in Huambo. There had already been a civil war fought between these two governments and this was to continue after independence.

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

## East Africa

There were Portuguese possessions in East Africa from the beginning of the sixteenth century to 1975. There were three distinct periods in the evolution of these possessions:

1) From the beginning of the sixteenth century to the beginning of the eighteenth century, the Portuguese possessions in East Africa had the form of trading-stations, sometimes protected by fortresses.

The main Portuguese fortresses and trading-stations in East Africa between the beginning of the sixteenth century and the beginning of the eighteenth century were:

- Zanzibar — Conquered in 1503. Lost to the Sultanate of Oman in 1652.
- Sofala — Conquered in 1505. Later Sena and Tete were established as dependencies in the Zambeze valley.
- Mombasa — Conquered in 1505. Lost to the Sultanate of Oman in 1698. Recaptured by Portugal in 1728. Lost once more to the Sultanate of Oman in 1729.
- Kilwa — Conquered in 1505. Abandoned in 1512.
- Mozambique — Conquered in 1545.

2) From the beginning of the eighteenth century to the end of the nineteenth century, the Portuguese possessions in East Africa had the form of an overseas province or colony, known as Mozambique, with an area of roughly 100 000 km<sup>2</sup> and its capital at Mozambique.

3) From the end of the nineteenth century to 1975, the Portuguese possessions in East Africa had the form of an overseas province or colony, known as Mozambique, with an area of roughly 785 000 km<sup>2</sup> and its capital at Lourenço Marques (present-day Maputo).

The National Front for the Liberation of Mozambique (FRELIMO — *Frente Nacional de Libertação de Moçambique*) began an armed struggle for the independence of Mozambique in September 1964.

As a result of the protocol signed at Lusaka on 7 September 1974 between Portugal and FRELIMO, Mozambique became independent on 25 July 1975.

## Abyssinia

In 1541, a military expedition was sent to defend Abyssinia from the Sultanate of Adal, an ally of the Ottoman Empire, which in practical terms established a Portuguese protectorate over Abyssinia.

The Portuguese protectorate over Abyssinia ended in 1634, due to its being repudiated by the Abyssinian government.

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

## India

There were Portuguese possessions in India from the beginning of the sixteenth century to 1961. There were two distinct periods in the evolution of these possessions:

1) From the beginning of the sixteenth century to the end of the eighteenth century, the Portuguese possessions in India had the form of trading-stations, sometimes protected by fortresses.

The main Portuguese fortresses and trading-stations in India from the beginning of the sixteenth century to the end of the eighteenth century were:

— Cochin — Submitted to a Portuguese protectorate in 1503. Lost to the Dutch East India Company (VOC) in 1662.

— Goa — Conquered in 1510. From 1544 onwards, began to have as its dependencies the territories of Bardez and Salcete (Old Conquests) and, after 1763, the territories of Bicholim, Canácona, Perném, Pondá, Quepém, Sangüém and Satari (New Conquests).

— Chaúl — Conquered in 1516. Lost to the Maratra Kingdom in 1740.

— Colombo — Conquered in 1518. Lost to the Dutch East India Company (VOC) in 1656.

— Baçaim — Conquered in 1533. Lost to the Maratra Kingdom in 1739.

— Bombay — Conquered in 1534. Ceded to England in 1665.

— Diu — Conquered in 1535.

— Damão — Conquered in 1559. From 1785 onwards, began to have as its dependencies Dadrá and the *praganá* of Nagar-Aveli.

2) From the end of the eighteenth century to the mid-twentieth century, the Portuguese possessions in India had the form of an overseas province or colony, with an area of roughly 4 000 km<sup>2</sup> and its capital at Goa, consisting of Goa, the Old Conquests, the New Conquests, the town of Damão and its dependencies and the town of Diu.

Immediately after its independence in 1947, India requested that Portugal negotiate the transfer of its sovereignty over Portuguese India from Portugal to India. In view of Portugal's refusal to accede to this request, India occupied Dadrá and Nagar-Aveli with its troops in 1954 and Goa, the Old Conquests, the New Conquests, Damão and Diu in 1961.

India's sovereignty over the former Portuguese India was recognised by Portugal through the constitutional law No. 9/74 of 15 October 1974.

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

## **Persian Gulf**

There were Portuguese possessions in the Persian Gulf from 1507 to 1652, under the form of trading-stations, sometimes protected by fortresses.

The main Portuguese fortresses and trading-stations in the Persian Gulf between 1507 and 1652 were:

- Ormuz — Conquered in 1507. Lost to Persia in 1622.
- Mascate — Conquered in 1507. Lost to the Sultanate of Oman in 1652.

## **Malaysia**

There were Portuguese possessions in Malaysia from 1511 to 1641, under the form of trading-stations, sometimes protected by fortresses.

The main Portuguese fortress and trading-station in Malaysia from 1511 to 1641 was:

- Malacca — Conquered in 1511. Lost to the Dutch East India Company (VOC) in 1641.

## **China**

Portugal made attempts to establish trading-posts in China after 1513, but most of its efforts were thwarted due to the opposition of the Chinese authorities. The only exception was Macau, where a permanent trading-post was established in the mid-1550s. The restrictions placed on foreign sea trade by the Chinese authorities in the following centuries afforded Macau, in its relations with the port of Canton, an almost complete monopoly of this same Chinese foreign sea trade until the 1840s.

Taking advantage of the weakness of the Chinese state in the nineteenth century, the Portuguese authorities sought to establish their sovereignty over the Macau trading-post, which they achieved in practical terms in the middle of this same century. Through treaties signed in 1862 and 1887, China recognised the concession to Portugal of the right to exercise sovereignty over Macau on a perpetual basis.

Everything changed when Portugal recognised that Macau was Chinese territory in 1974 and when a joint declaration was issued by China and Portugal in 1987, setting a timetable for the transfer of the administration of the territory from Portugal to China — there would be a period of transition from 1990 to 1999, followed by the effective transfer of the administration in 1999;

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

Macau would maintain its status as a special administrative region at least between 1999 and 2049.

## East Indies

There were Portuguese possessions in the East Indies from the beginning of the sixteenth century to 1975. There were two distinct periods in the evolution of these possessions:

1) From the beginning of the sixteenth century to the mid-nineteenth century, the Portuguese possessions in the East Indies had the form of trading-stations, sometimes protected by fortresses.

The main Portuguese fortresses and trading-stations in the East Indies from the beginning of the sixteenth century to the mid-nineteenth century were situated in the Moluccas from the beginning of the sixteenth century to the beginning of the seventeenth century and in Timor from the beginning of the seventeenth century to the mid-nineteenth century.

2) From the mid-nineteenth century to 1975, the eastern half of Timor, the enclave of Oucssi-Ambeno in the western half of Timor and the islands of Ataúro and Jaco were an overseas province or colony, known as Portuguese Timor, with an area of roughly 19 000 km<sup>2</sup> and its capital at Dili.

Portuguese Timor was occupied by Australia and the Netherlands in December 1941 and by Japan in February 1942. Portuguese administration was only re-established in September 1945.

Law No. 7/75 of 17 July 1975 approved both the process and the timetable for the decolonisation of Portuguese Timor, which was thereafter referred to in common parlance as East Timor. However, the outbreak of a civil war in August 1975 between the Timor Democratic Popular Association (APODETI — *Associação Popular Democrática de Timor*), the Timor National Liberation Front (FRETILIN — *Frente Timorense de Libertação Nacional*) and the Timor Democratic Union (UDT — *União Democrática de Timor*) meant the *de facto* end of Portuguese sovereignty over the territory. As a result of these events, Indonesia invaded the territory of East Timor and occupied it in December 1975. The next year, East Timor was formally annexed by Indonesia. This annexation was, however, never recognised, neither by Portugal nor by the United Nations and was contested through armed resistance and diplomatic means by FRETILIN and UDT, which later united together to form the Timor National Resistance Council (CNRT — *Conselho Nacional de Resistência Timorense*), until 1999. In May of that year, an agreement was signed between Portugal and Indonesia for the holding of a referendum with the population of the territory being asked to choose between the territory's being integrated into Indonesia as an autonomous region and its complete independence. The referendum was held in August of the

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

same year, with the result clearly in favour of independence. Still in the same year, the administration of the territory was formally handed over to the United Nations Organisation as the first stage in the process of transition to independence.

## **Brazil**

The Treaty of Tordesilhas signed in 1494 between Portugal and Castile implicitly recognised Portugal's sovereignty over certain zones of South America.

It is quite likely that the exploration of these regions had begun in the years immediately before the signing of the treaty. However, the formal recognition and the act of taking formal possession of Terra de Vera Cruz (the Land of the True Cross, later more commonly known as Brazil) only took place in 1500, being carried out by the second Indian fleet under the command of Pedro Álvares Cabral.

A general-government for Brazil was established in 1530 and, during the next century, all of its coastal regions were gradually occupied, from Pará in the north to São Vicente (now the state of São Paulo) in the south.

Brazil's domination by Portugal was disputed in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries by France and in the seventeenth century by the Dutch United Provinces through the Dutch West India Company. The region of Guanabara was occupied by France from 1555 to 1567, the regions of Pará and Maranhão were occupied by France from 1594 to 1615, São Salvador da Baía was occupied by the Dutch West India Company from 1624 to 1625, the region of Pernambuco was occupied by the same Company from 1630 to 1654 and other regions of North East Brazil were occupied by the same Company for shorter periods between the 1630s and 1650s. As a result of these attempts to take over the territory, France and the Netherlands were later to establish colonies in Guiana, known respectively as Cayenne and Surinam.

The definitive boundaries of the territory of colonial Brazil were established by the following treaties:

- Utrecht, 1713, which established the northern border at River Oyapock and the southern border at River Plate;
- Madrid, 1750, which handed over Uruguay to Spanish sovereignty and Goiás, Mato Grosso and part of Amazonia to Portuguese sovereignty;
- Paris, 1763, which re-established the southern border at River Plate;
- Santo Ildefonso, 1777, which returned Uruguay to Spanish sovereignty;
- Badajoz, 1801, which established the northern border at River Amazon;
- Vienna, 1815, which re-established the northern border at River Oyapock.

Table 1.1 — Territory and possessions (continued)

In 1808, the capital of the kingdom of Portugal and the Algarves was moved to Rio de Janeiro as a result of the occupation of mainland Portugal by France and the continuing French threat after the occupying forces had been expelled. At the same time, the rules of the so-called colonial pact (in particular the monopoly of external trade enjoyed by the metropolis) were abolished in relation to the colony of Brazil.

Brazil was raised to the category of a kingdom by the law of 16 December 1815, being united to Portugal in the United Kingdom of Portugal, Brazil and the Algarves.

In 1821, the capital of the United Kingdom of Portugal, Brazil and the Algarves was re-established in Lisbon, with the heir to the throne remaining in Brazil as regent.

Brazil became independent through a proclamation made by its regent Pedro (later Emperor Pedro I) on 7 September 1822. Independence was recognised unilaterally by the King João VI of Portugal through the Letter Patent of 13 May 1825, which was followed by the Treaty of Rio de Janeiro signed on 29 August 1825 and ratified by the law of 15 November 1825.

### **North-West Atlantic**

The Treaty of Tordesilhas signed in 1494 between Portugal and Castile implicitly recognised Portuguese sovereignty over areas in the North-West Atlantic.

Cod fishing in the North Atlantic (in the seas of Greenland and Newfoundland) became an important activity for Portuguese fishermen from the sixteenth century onwards, but no attempts were made to dominate territories in these regions. In spite of this, from that time on, Portugal frequently invoked its historical rights of access to these fishing lands, which it only explicitly renounced by subscribing to and ratifying the United Nations Convention on the Law of the Sea in 1987.

## Table 1.2 — Division of the territory

Sources — Caldas, Loureiro, 1966; Matoso, 1992-1994; Oliveira, 1994; Peres, 1938-1940; Serrão, Marques, 1987-1998.

### A — Ecclesiastical division

Throughout the formation period of Portuguese society, more precisely from the mid-eleventh century to the mid-thirteenth century, nine of the dioceses that existed before the Muslim conquest were gradually restored. The chronology of this process was as follows:

- 1070 — Restoration of the (metropolitan) diocese of Braga.
- 1080 — Restoration of the diocese of Coimbra.
- 1112 — Restoration of the diocese of Oporto.
- 1147 — Restoration of the dioceses of Lisbon, Lamego and Viseu.
- 1165 — Restoration of the diocese of Évora.
- 1203 — Restoration of the diocese of Egitânia (Idanha-a-Velha) in Guarda .
- 1253 — Restoration of the diocese of Ossónoba (Faro) in Silves.

Until the end of the fourteenth century, parts of the Portuguese territory were included in dioceses whose sees were situated in the Kingdom of León, later the Kingdom of León and Castile, namely in the dioceses of Tui, Ciudad Rodrigo and Badajoz. This situation ended during the so-called Great Western Schism (1378-1417), due to the different obediences of León and Castile (the Avignon pope) and Portugal (the Roman pope, although there was a fleeting official acceptance of the Avignon pope from 1382 to 1383 between the end of the Third War of Succession in Castile and the beginning of the First War of Succession in Portugal — for more details on these wars see Table 12.8). The territorial rearrangement was later linked to the restoration of the diocese of Ceuta, which had its see in Africa, although part of its territory was in mainland Portugal until 1570.

Also in the fourteenth century, more precisely in 1394, a second ecclesiastical province was created on Portuguese territory when Lisbon was raised to the category of an archdiocese.

In the sixteenth century, there was a significant increase in the number of Portuguese dioceses, firstly with the creation of a diocese in Madeira and another in the Azores, and later with the creation of four more dioceses in mainland Portugal. The fifteen Portuguese dioceses then corresponded to three ecclesiastical provinces, with Évora being raised to an archdiocese. The chronology of this process was as follows:



Table 1.2 — Division of the territory (continued)

- 1514 — Creation of the diocese of Funchal in Madeira.
- 1534 — Creation of the diocese of Angra in the Azores.
- 1540 — Raising of Évora to an archdiocese.
- 1545 — Creation of the dioceses of Miranda and Leiria.
- 1549 — Creation of the diocese of Portalegre.
- 1570 — Creation of the diocese of Elvas.
- 1577 — Transfer to Faro of the see of the diocese of Silves.

Only in the eighteenth century did the map of Portuguese dioceses change once more. Firstly with the creation of six new dioceses, although one of these was very fleeting and there was also a merger. The chronology of this process was as follows:

- 1716 — Raising of Lisbon to a patriarchate.
- 1717 — Division of the diocese of Lisbon into two: Western Lisbon (patriarchate) and Eastern Lisbon (archdiocese).
- 1740 — Reunification of the dioceses of Western Lisbon and Eastern Lisbon. The reunified diocese maintained the category of a patriarchate, with the vicar-general of the diocese enjoying the status of an archbishop.
- 1770 — Creation of the dioceses of Beja, Bragança, Penafiel and Pinhel.
- 1771 — Creation of the diocese of Castelo Branco.
- 1774 — Creation of the diocese of Aveiro.
- 1778 — Extinction of the diocese of Penafiel.
- 1780 — Merger of the dioceses of Miranda and Bragança (with the effective see being in Bragança and the name of the diocese becoming that of Miranda and Bragança).

The second and third quarters of the nineteenth century saw the progressive informal extinction of dioceses, for which bishops ceased to be appointed. The chronology of this process was as follows:

- 1829 — Extinction of the diocese of Elvas.
- 1831 — Extinction of the diocese of Castelo Branco.
- 1833 — Extinction of the diocese of Portalegre.
- 1837 — Extinction of the diocese of Aveiro.
- 1838 — Extinction of the diocese of Pinhel.
- 1873 — Extinction of the diocese of Leiria.

Table 1.2 — Division of the territory (continued)

In 1882, this process was completed with the formal extinction of the dioceses of Aveiro, Elvas, Leiria and Pinhel and the merger of the dioceses of Castelo Branco and Portalegre (with the effective see being in Portalegre and the name of the diocese being changed to that of Portalegre and Castelo Branco).

During the twentieth century, six new dioceses were restored or created, raising the total number of dioceses in mainland Portugal to eighteen and the total in the country to twenty. The chronology of this process was as follows:

- 1918 — Restoration of the diocese of Leiria.
- 1922 — Creation of the diocese of Vila Real.
- 1938 — Restoration of the diocese of Aveiro.
- 1975 — Creation of the dioceses of Santarém and Setúbal.
- 1977 — Creation of the diocese of Viana do Castelo.

## **B — Administrative division**

During its formation period (until the mid-thirteenth century), Portugal was divided into domains of ecclesiastical donees (*coutos*), domains of noble donees (*honras*) and popular collective domains (*concelhos*). These local areas of self-government were regulated by specific laws, known as *forais* (charters). The structure of their administrative and judicial bodies varied, but they usually had at their centre a chamber formed from councillors elected by the local social elite and presided over by a judge, who was either appointed by the ecclesiastical or noble donee landlords or else was also elected. *Coutos*, *honras* and *concelhos* were grouped together in *terras* (lands), which varied in size and for which the King appointed governors with civil and military functions.

During the first quarter of the fourteenth century, there was a separation between the military and the civil administration at the level of the *terras* and these were replaced by a stable division of the country into six provinces, each with a military governor and a civil *corregedor* (magistrate), who had administrative and judicial functions. These six provinces were as follows:

- a) Algarve, covering the areas to the south of the mountains of the Serra do Caldeirão and the Serra de Monchique.
- b) Beira, covering the inland area between the River Douro and the River Tagus.
- c) Entre-Douro-e-Minho, later Minho, covering the coastal area to the north of the River Douro.
- d) Entre-Tejo-e-Odiana, later Alentejo, covering the areas between the River Tagus and the Serra do Caldeirão and the Serra do Monchique.

Table 1.2 — Division of the territory (continued)

e) Estremadura, covering the coastal area between the River Douro and the River Tagus.

f) Trás-os-Montes, covering the inland area to the north of the River Douro.

During the second quarter of the fourteenth century, the presidents of the chambers of the main *concelhos* began to be judges from outside the *concelho*, appointed by the king, and ordinary judges, appointed by the ecclesiastical or noble donee landlords. Only the chambers of the less important *concelhos* continued to be presided over by the elected ordinary judges.

In the sixteenth century, in the administrative and judicial domains, there was a general review of the charters and the replacement of the provinces by smaller *comarcas* (administrative and judicial districts), twenty-eight in number, whose capitals were: Abrantes, Alenquer, Aveiro, Beja, Castelo Branco, Coimbra, Elvas, Estremoz, Évora, Guarda, Guimarães, Lagos, Lamego, Leiria, Lisbon, Miranda, Pinhel, Ponte de Lima, Portalegre, Oporto, Santarém, Setúbal, Tavira, Tomar, Torre de Moncorvo, Viana da Foz do Lima, Vila Real and Viseu.

In the eighteenth century, the number of *comarcas* increased significantly, reaching a total of forty-four, whose capitals were: Alcobaça, Alenquer, Arganil, Aveiro, Avis, Barcelos, Beja, Braga, Bragança, Castelo Branco, Chão de Couce, Coimbra, Crato, Elvas, Évora, Faro, Feira, Guarda, Guimarães, Lagos, Lamego, Leiria, Linhares, Lisbon, Miranda, Moncorvo, Ourém, Ourique, Penafiel, Pinhel, Portalegre, Oporto, Ribatejo, Santarém, Setúbal, Tavira, Tomar, Torres Vedras, Trancoso, Valença, Viana, Vila Real, Vila Viçosa and Viseu.

In 1790, the powers of the ecclesiastical and noble donee landlords were suppressed.

In the 1830s, as a result of the implementation of the political system of a Constitutional Monarchy, the judicial and administrative functions (in their strictest sense) were separated.

In the strictly administrative domain, three levels of local self-government were established: *distritos* (administrative districts), *concelhos* (boroughs) and *freguesias* (parishes). At each of these levels of local government there were: an elected collective body — the *Junta Distrital* (District Council), *Câmara Municipal* (Borough Council) and *Junta de Freguesia* (Parish Council); a president of this collective body, elected by the same body; and a representative of the central administration, either directly or indirectly appointed by the government — the Civil Governor of the district, the Administrator of the *concelho* or borough and the *Regedor* (Chairman) of the parish. Although with some changes in the names, this was the scheme of administrative divisions and organs stated by the *Códigos Administrativos* (Administratives Codes) of 1836, 1842, 1878 and 1886.

Through a decree issued on 18 July 1835, mainland Portugal was divided into seventeen *distritos*, whose capitals were: Aveiro, Beja, Braga, Bragança, Castelo Branco, Coimbra, Évora, Faro, Guarda, Lamego, Leiria, Lisbon, Portalegre, Oporto, Santarém, Viana do Castelo and Vila Real.

Table 1.2 — Division of the territory (continued)

Through a decree issued on 12 September 1835, the Azores were divided into two *distritos*, the eastern district with its capital at Ponta Delgada and the western district with its capital at Angra do Heroísmo, whilst Madeira became the *distrito* of Funchal.

The decree of 15 December 1835 transferred the district capital from Lamego to Viseu.

The law of 28 March 1836 divided the western district of the Azores into two: the central district, with its capital at Angra do Heroísmo, and the western district, with its capital at Horta.

The decree of 6 November 1836 extinguished a large number of small *concelhos*.

Through the Administrative Code of 1896, the *distritos* ceased to be areas of local government in mainland Portugal and became mere constituencies for the activities of a government representative (the Civil Governor). In 1910 (through a decree issued with the force of law on 13 October), the Provisional Government of the Republic restored the previous situation, which was once again abolished by the military dictatorship in 1926 (decree with the force of law No. 12 073 of 9 August).

The decree with the force of law No. 12 870 of 22 December 1926 divided the district of Lisbon into two: Lisbon and Setúbal.

The 1933 Constitution introduced the division of mainland Portugal into provinces, eleven in number — Algarve, Alto Alentejo, Baixo Alentejo, Beira Alta, Beira Baixa, Beira Litoral, Douro Litoral, Estremadura, Minho, Ribatejo and Trás-os-Montes — but this new division was abolished by the constitutional revision of 1959.

Meanwhile, the Administrative Code approved by Decree-Law No. 27 424, of 31 December 1936, brought an end to the duality between presidents of elected bodies and representatives of the central administration at the level of the *concelhos* and *freguesias*, by extinguishing the posts of *Administrador* (Administrator) in the *concelhos* and that of *Regedor* in the *freguesias*, meanwhile establishing the direct or indirect appointment by the central government of the Presidents of the Borough Councils and the Presidents of the Parish Councils.

The 1976 Constitution transformed Madeira and the Azores into autonomous regions in the context of a unitary Portuguese state and provided for the formation of new administrative regions in mainland Portugal. However, the formally transitory situation of maintaining the division into *distritos* ended up lasting until the end of the twentieth century. Meanwhile, the Presidents of the Borough Councils and the Presidents of the Parish Councils were once again elected, as was the case with most of the local government bodies.

## **C — Judicial division**

In the 1830s, Portugal was divided, at the judicial level, into judicial courts of the first instance, known as *comarcas*, and roughly corresponding to the old administrative and judicial

Table 1.2 — Division of the territory (continued)

*comarcas*. The judicial courts of the second instance, known as *relações* or appeal courts, had been two in number since the seventeenth century: Lisbon and Oporto.

Throughout the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, there was a tendency for the number of *comarcas* to increase, approaching the number of *concelhos*. The number of *relações* also increased, with the creation of the appeal courts of Coimbra and Évora.

## **D — Military division**

In the sixteenth century, in the area of military administration, part of the coastal region immediately to the south of the River Douro was moved from the province of Estremadura to the province of Beira.

In the nineteenth century, the division into provinces in mainland Portugal was simplified, with the creation of only four military regions — North, Centre, Lisbon and South — to which naturally the regions of Madeira and the Azores were added.

## **E — Economic division**

In 1969 (with Decree-Law No. 48905 of 11 March), the country was divided into plan-regions for the purposes of economic planning. There were originally four such regions in mainland Portugal.

— North — including the districts of Braga, Bragança, Oporto, Viana do Castelo and Vila Real.

— Centre — including the districts of Aveiro, Castelo Branco, Coimbra, Leiria, Guarda and Viseu.

— Lisbon — including the districts of Lisbon, Santarém and Setúbal.

— South — including the districts of Beja, Évora, Faro and Portalegre.

Naturally, the regions of Madeira and the Azores were added to these regions.

Later the South region was divided into two — Alentejo and Algarve — and alterations were made to the boundaries which meant that the plan-regions and the groups of districts no longer coincided exactly. The name of the Lisbon region was also altered to Lisbon and the Tagus Valley.

## Table 1.3 — Climate

Source — Gaspar, 1979.

### Évora — latitude 38° 34' N — longitude 7° 54' W — altitude 309 m

—	year	jan	feb	mar	apr	may	jun	jul	aug	sep	oct	nov	dec
total rainfall	634 mm	66	87	73	47	41	31	4	3	32	64	93	88
average temperature	+ 15 °C	+ 8	+ 9	+ 11	+ 13	+ 16	+ 19	+ 22	+ 22	+ 20	+ 16	+ 12	+ 9

### Faro — latitude 37° 01' N — longitude 7° 58' W — altitude 8 m

—	year	jan	feb	mar	apr	may	jun	jul	aug	sep	oct	nov	dec
total rainfall	363 mm	48	51	43	26	16	6	0	1	13	40	68	51
average temperature	+ 17 °C	+ 12	+ 12	+ 14	+ 15	+ 18	+ 21	+ 24	+ 24	+ 22	+ 19	+ 15	+ 12

### Funchal — 32° 38' N — longitude 16° 54' W — altitude 56 m

—	year	jan	feb	mar	apr	may	jun	jul	aug	sep	oct	nov	dec
total rainfall	514 mm	70	71	59	37	18	4	1	2	24	68	81	78
average temperature	+ 19 °C	+ 16	+ 16	+ 16	+ 17	+ 18	+ 20	+ 21	+ 22	+ 22	+ 21	+ 19	+ 17

### Lisbon — latitude 38° 43' N — longitude 9° 09' W — altitude 77 m

—	year	jan	feb	mar	apr	may	jun	jul	aug	sep	oct	nov	dec
total rainfall	602 mm	66	74	64	46	32	18	6	3	38	68	104	84
average temperature	+ 16 °C	+ 11	+ 11	+ 13	+ 14	+ 17	+ 19	+ 21	+ 22	+ 20	+ 17	+ 14	+ 12

Table 1.3 — Climate (continued)

**Penhas Douradas — latitude 40° 25' N — longitude 7° 33' W — altitude 1380 m**

—	year	jan	feb	mar	apr	may	jun	jul	aug	sep	oct	nov	dec
total rainfall	2 365 mm	228	288	230	172	118	86	42	36	101	230	398	417
average temperature	+ 8 °C	+ 2	+ 2	+ 3	+ 5	+ 9	+ 13	+ 16	+ 17	+ 14	+ 9	+ 5	+ 3

**Ponta Delgada — latitude 37° 41' N — longitude 25° 40' W — altitude 35 m**

—	year	jan	feb	mar	apr	may	jun	jul	aug	sep	oct	nov	dec
total rainfall	958 mm	120	100	105	67	62	42	27	29	81	103	120	102
average temperature	+ 17 °C	+ 14	+ 14	+ 14	+ 15	+ 16	+ 19	+ 21	+ 22	+ 21	+ 19	+ 17	+ 15

**Oporto — latitude 41° 08' N — longitude 8° 36' W — altitude 93 m**

—	year	jan	feb	mar	apr	may	jun	jul	aug	sep	oct	nov	dec
total rainfall	1 164 mm	129	135	131	94	76	48	22	21	67	118	147	176
average temperature	+ 14 °C	9	10	11	13	15	18	20	20	18	15	11	10

## CHAPTER 2 — POPULATION

MARIA JOANNIS BAGANHA (Faculty of Economics — University of Coimbra)

JOSÉ CARLOS MARQUES (Faculty of Economics — University of Coimbra)

### 1 — Introduction

The first population census ever carried out in Portugal took place in 1864. All figures relating to the nation's inhabitants prior to that date are estimations based on counts undertaken for administrative, fiscal, military or ecclesiastical purposes, which, in view of their specific aims, did not record the entire population. The evolution of the population, such as it can be estimated on the basis of these surveys (Table 2A), does, however, show that the growth of the Portuguese population was probably not very significant until the mid-seventeenth century.

**Table 2A — Portuguese population at various periods**

1422	D. João I's List of Archers	1 043 274
1527	D. João III's Household count	1 262 376
1636	Count of Valid Men	1 100 000
1736	List compiled by the Marquis of Abrantes, corrected by A. Balbi	2 143 368
1770	Ecclesiastical Census	2 850 444
1776	Pina Manique's Census	3 352 310
1801	Census ordered by the Count of Linhares	2 931 930
1811	Census of the Investigador Portuguez	2 876 602
1838	Liberalism Census	3 200 000

Source — Machado, 1965

This demographic stagnation is generally attributed to a series of factors that are known to have influenced the evolution of demographic systems in this period: bad farming years would provoke cyclical crises of famine and starvation, which made it easier for epidemics to spread and consequently led to higher mortality rates. From the fifteenth century onwards, these factors were further exacerbated by the migratory movements that began with the maritime discoveries. In the



Portuguese case, the demographic impact of these movements was particularly significant, since, as Godinho has said, "From 1500 to 1580 Portugal was 'bled' of some 280 000 units (at the rate of roughly 3 500 per year); over the next sixty years, it was to lose somewhere between 300 000 and 360 000 people (at the rate of between 5 000 and 6 000 per year); from 1640 to 1700, the loss was reduced to some 120 000." (Godinho, 1965: 28 <sup>1</sup>). From the eighteenth century onwards, the Portuguese population was to record a more favourable evolution in view of the reduced significance of the risk factors mentioned previously, even though the beginning of the nineteenth century was marked by a decline in population numbers, which, according to Machado, 1965: 92, was due to the French invasions and the subsequent Peninsular War.

With the first General Population Census, conducted on 1 January 1864 (which was followed by another Census in 1878), knowledge of the Portuguese population numbers became less uncertain. The 1890 census marked the beginning of ten-yearly censuses which, until 1950, were held on 1 December in years ending in a nought, and, between this date and 1970, in the middle of the same month and years. The only exception was the 1910 Census, which was postponed until 1 December of the following year because of the vicissitudes of the implantation of the Portuguese Republic. The 1981 and 1991 Censuses adopted the recommendation of the European Community that allowed for greater comparability of the census data at a European level. These censuses were therefore carried out on 15 March and 15 April of the respective years <sup>2</sup>.

In Portugal, the statistics relating to the natural movement of the population, which complement the information provided by the censuses, only began to be published on a regular basis after 1886 and it was not until 1 April 1911 that the registration of births was made compulsory. Until this date, birth statistics had been based on the records of baptisms and not births. This fact is quite understandable, since, although the register of baptisms was incomplete, it was nonetheless more comprehensive than the register of births until 1912 (Bacci, 1971: 25).

\*

Now that the main limitations have been explained regarding the sources used in this study, as well as the censuses and vital statistics, we shall now present the evolution of the overall

---

<sup>1</sup> For more information on this subject, see also Godinho, 1974 and Godinho, 1978.

<sup>2</sup> For an analysis of the characteristics of the various censuses, see Machado, 1965 and Carrilho, 1991.

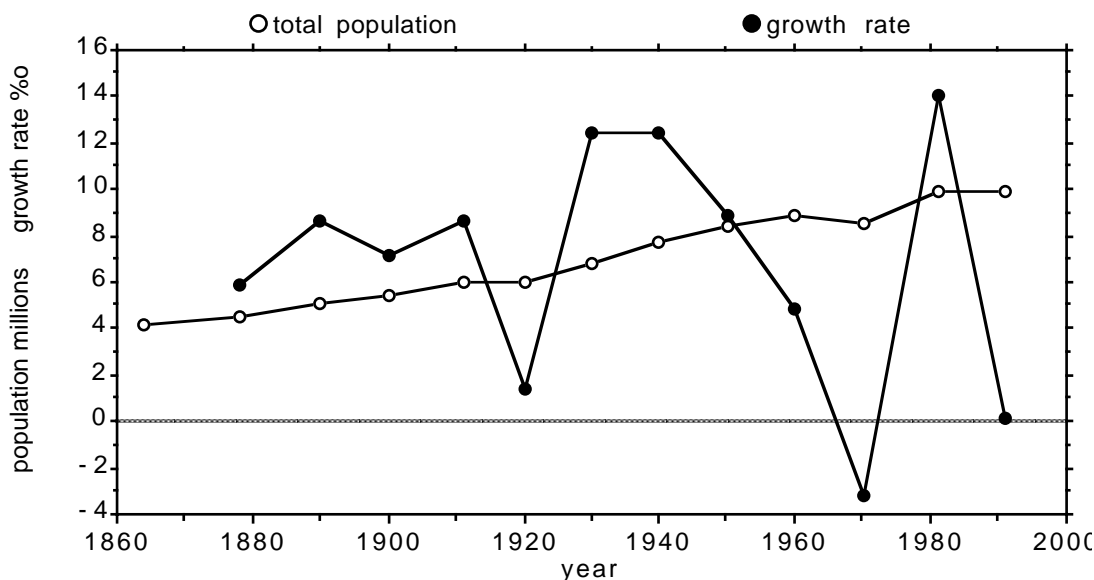
aspects of the population and describe the development of the variables that can explain the growth or decline in the population (birth and death rates and migratory movements).

## 2 — The evolution of the Portuguese population

Graph 2B shows the evolution and growth rates of the Portuguese population. As can be seen, the national population recorded a fairly moderate growth rate between 1864 and 1920, increasing from 4 188 410 in 1864 to 6 032 991 in 1920, which corresponds to an average annual growth rate of 0.65%. After 1920, there was a sharp increase in population growth, which continued into the 1950s. During this period, the Portuguese population grew at an average annual rate of 1.1%, reaching a figure of 8 441 312 inhabitants in 1950. After this date, the population again grew at more moderate rates, and actually declined between 1960 and 1970 as a result of the high rates of emigration and the colonial war. The period between the two censuses in 1970 and 1981 recorded the highest growth rate in the whole of the period under study (1.3% per year). This sharp growth can be attributed to the combined effect of the following factors: the return of approximately five hundred thousand Portuguese citizens from the ex-colonies; the return of a considerable number of emigrants; and the impossibility of emigrating due to the anti-immigration policies pursued by the main countries that had previously welcomed Portuguese emigrants. Finally, in the last decade, the growth rate has been very close to 0%.

The evolution described above did not, however, take place in a homogeneous fashion throughout the Portuguese territory, as has in fact been pointed out by various authors (Alarcão, 1982, Girão, Velho, 1944, Evangelista, 1971 and Nazareth, 1988, amongst others). Table 2.4 shows the population surveyed in the censuses between 1864 and 1991 in the different districts of Portugal. An analysis of this table highlights the demographic asymmetries that are to be found at a national level. Thus, although it is true that most districts show a positive evolution in absolute terms (only the districts of Bragança, Guarda and the Azores show a fall in population between the beginning and end of the period under study), it is undeniable that certain districts have been gradually losing their relative importance over time, whilst others have increasingly become major population centres. The former situation relates to inland districts, whilst the latter situation refers to the districts running along the coastal strip from Porto to Setúbal. In 1864, the six districts included in this area (Aveiro, Coimbra, Leiria, Lisboa, Porto and Setúbal) were inhabited by roughly 36% of the national population, whereas in 1991 the population of these six districts amounted to 60% of the Portuguese population, with 37% of Portuguese inhabitants being concentrated around the country's two main urban centres — Lisboa and Porto.

**Graph 2B — Evolution and growth rates of the Portuguese population, 1864-1991**



Source — Table 2.1

If we also take into account the data that are shown in Table 2C, it can be seen that the movement towards the coast or 'littoralisation' (Nazareth, 1988: 120) of the Portuguese population has been accompanied by an increase in the population living in urban centres of more than 10 000 inhabitants. In fact, in 1890, only 11 % of the Portuguese population lived in urban centres with more than 10 000 inhabitants, whereas by 1991 this percentage had risen to 33 %.

Again taking the data from Table 2C into account, it can be said that urbanisation has been a relatively slow process in Portugal<sup>3</sup>. In 1890, 11 % of the population lived in centres with more than 10 000 inhabitants and fifty years later this percentage was still no higher than 20 %. It was only after the 1950s that a sharp increase was to be noted in the urbanisation of the country, with the result that in 40 years the population living in urban centres rose to approximately 33 %.

<sup>3</sup> Nunes, 1989, Baganha, 1990 and Nunes, 1996.

**Table 2C — Total population and population living in urban centres with more than 10 000 inhabitants, 1890-1991**

year	total population	population in urban centres with more than 10 000 inhabitants	percentage
1890	5 049 729	570 166	11
1900	5 423 132	671 707	12
1911	5 960 056	778 570	13
1920	6 032 991	857 797	14
1930	6 825 883	1 102 659	16
1940	7 722 152	1 346 742	17
1950	8 441 312	1 639 008	19
1960	8 851 289	1 984 673	22
1970	8 568 703	2 290 282	27
1981	9 852 841	2 918 549	30
1991	9 862 540	3 264 464	33

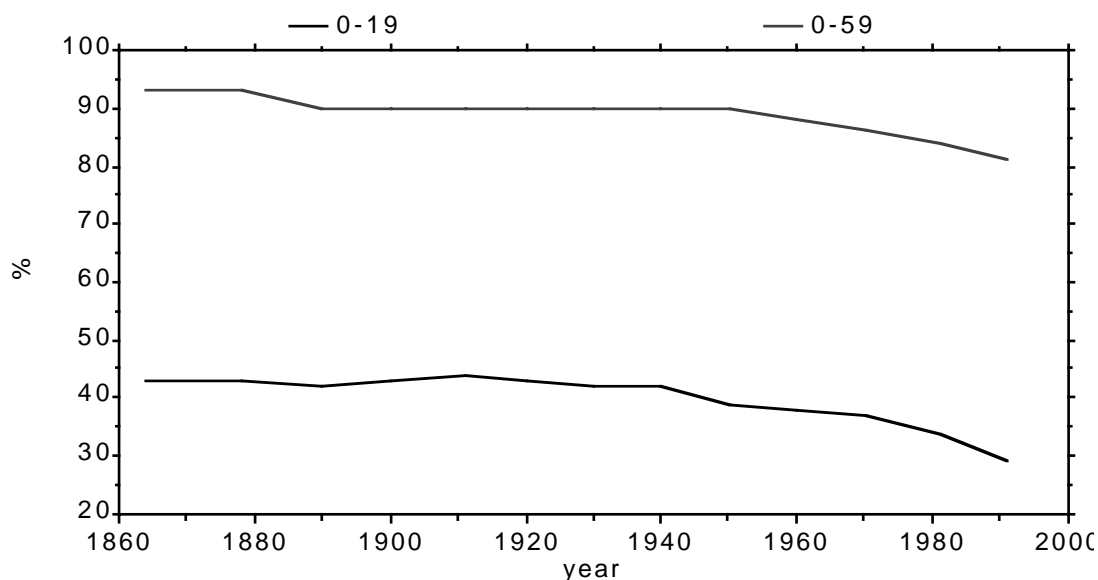
Source — From 1890 to 1981, Nunes, 1989; 1991, figures taken from the Census for that year.

\*

The analysis of the evolution of the age structure of the Portuguese population (Graph 2D and Table 2.3) shows that the youngest age groups have shown a tendency to grow smaller throughout the period under analysis, whilst the population aged 60 or over has grown in inverse proportion. Thus, the percentage of the population under 20 years of age fell from 43 % in 1864 to 29 % in 1991, whilst the percentage of people aged 60 or over rose from 7 % to 19 % over the same period.

The age pyramids presented in Appendix 2.1 similarly show the demographic ageing of the Portuguese population. Furthermore, they highlight the effects of emigration on the age structure of the population. As can be seen, the active age groups grew smaller, as these were the ones that were most affected by emigration. This effect began to be particularly noticeable in the 1960s.

**Graph 2D — Evolution of the age structure of the Portuguese population, 1864-1991**



Source — Table 2.3

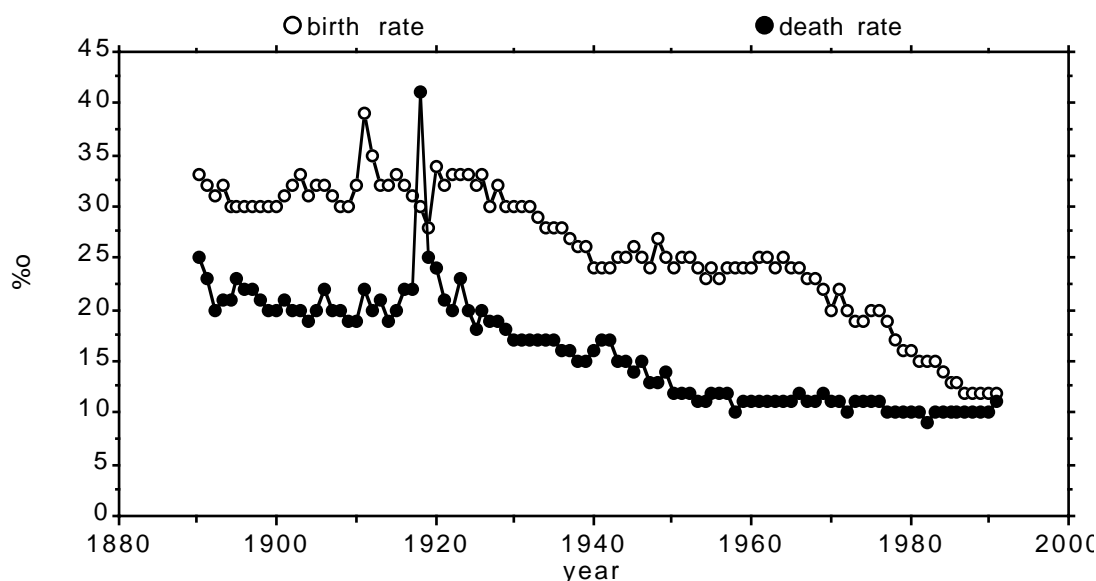
The evolution of the age pyramids also shows that there has been a shift away from the pyramid typical of underdeveloped countries or countries that have a so-called pre-modern demographic system (with a pyramid in the shape of a circumflex accent) towards a pyramid that is more typical of developed countries or countries that are in the final phase of demographic transition (with a pyramid in the shape of an urn) (Nazareth, 1968: 169).

### **3 — Natural movement of the Portuguese population, 1864-1991**

As can be seen from Table 2.5 and Graph 2E, both the birth and the death rates were very high at the end of the last century (roughly 30 ‰ in the case of births and 20 ‰ in the case of deaths). This situation continued into the first decade of the twentieth century, when both demographic variables began to fall. The fall was, however, more intense in the case of the death

rate, which was reduced by half in the space of approximately 30 years. In turn, the birth rate fell less sharply until 1964 and then much more quickly after that date.

**Graph 2E — Evolution of the gross birth rate and the gross death rate, 1890-1991** <sup>4</sup>



Source — Table 2.5

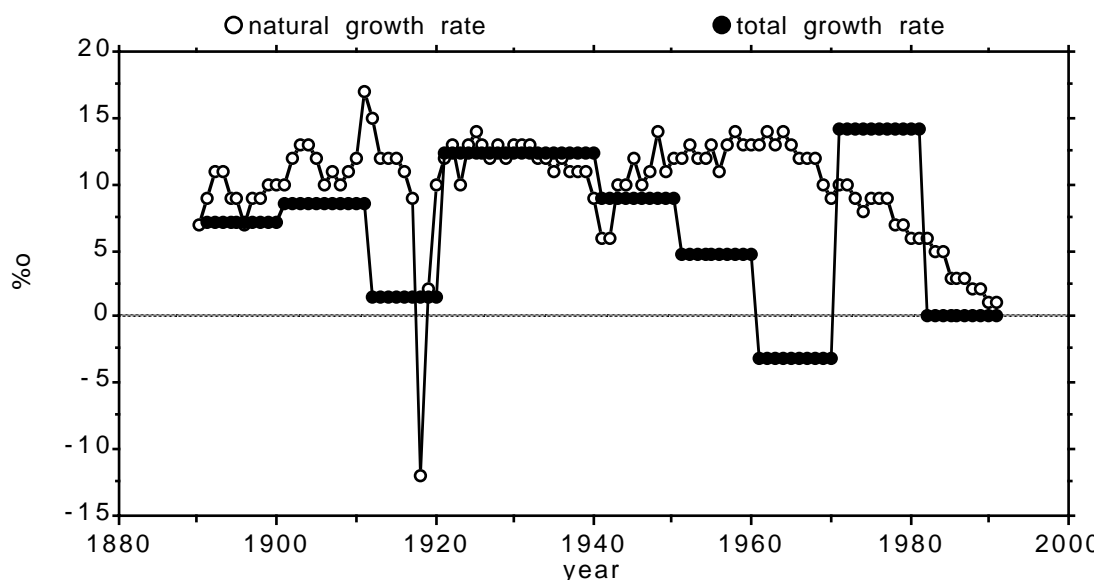
The different phases in this demographic transition are perfectly visible in Graph 2E. In the first phase (1890-1925), the birth and death rates were in a state of equilibrium at high levels, although they remained at some distance from each other. In the second phase (1925-1960), there was a sharp fall in the death rate, whilst the birth rate remained at fairly high levels (more than 22 ‰). In the third phase (1960-1985), the death rate continued to fall, although more slowly than before, whilst there was a sharp fall in the birth rate. Finally, the fourth phase, which began

<sup>4</sup> In the case of the death rate, the anomalous values recorded in 1918 and 1919 are due essentially to the outbreak of pneumonia which swept across the country in those years (Girão, Velho, 1944: 11). In fact, the statistics relating to the cause of death clearly show the impact of this epidemic. In 1918, for example, 'influenza' was named as the cause of 55 780 deaths (with 49,908 of these occurring between October and December), whereas in the previous year only 1 205 deaths had been attributed to this cause.

in 1985, marked the re-establishment of equilibrium between the birth and the death rates, although this equilibrium was now to be found at much lower levels and the two rates were much closer to one another.

As a consequence of this out-of-phase evolution of the birth and death rates, population growth rates remained very high until the end of the 1970s, when, because the birth rates and death rates had now achieved equilibrium at much lower levels, the natural growth rate of the Portuguese population fell progressively to a rate of 1,2% in 1991 (Table 2.5 and Graph 2F).

**Graph 2F — Natural growth rate and total growth rate, 1890-1991**



Source — Table 2.5

The social and scientific developments that took place in the twentieth century, particularly in the field of medicine, had a profound influence on the decline of both the birth rate (changes in the social role of women and a more widespread use of contraception, for example) and the death rate, leading to a positive evolution in the average duration of life. Graph 2H and Table 2.9 clearly show the positive effects recorded in life expectancy at birth in the period from 1930 to 1991. Between these two years, life expectancy at birth increased by 25 years, rising from 49.7 years to 74.8 years. A major contribution towards this increase in life expectancy was undoubtedly made by the fall in the number of deaths occurring in the first years of life. As can be seen from the abbreviated logarithmic tables of mortality, the infant mortality rate showed a decrease of

1225%. This fall in infant mortality can also be seen in the series of survivors in the logarithmic tables of mortality (lx). Thus, in 1930, in a series of 100 000 individuals, only 85 633 reached the age of 4, whereas, in 1991, 98 916 people survived until this age.

**Table 2G — Natural movement of population, 1890-1991**

year	population at the beginning of the period	population in the middle of the period	births	deaths	marriages	GBR (‰)	GDR (‰)	natural growth rate (‰)	GMR (‰)	IMR (‰)
1890	5 049 729	5 236 431	1 600 410	1 129 778	348 599	31	22	9	7	
1900	5 423 132	5 691 594	1 948 431	1 243 347	407 575	31	22	9	7	
1911	5 960 056	5 996 524	1 741 533	1 276 876	339 368	32	24	9	6	
1920	6 032 991	6 429 437	2 052 923	1 274 744	474 125	32	20	12	7	155
1930	6 825 883	7 274 018	2 027 224	1 180 758	470 943	28	16	12	6	144
1940	7 722 152	8 081 732	2 007 890	1 205 024	599 579	25	15	10	7	131
1950	8 441 312	8 646 301	2 073 397	999 125	695 383	24	12	12	8	94
1960	8 851 289	8 709 996	2 084 900	973 190	750 271	24	11	13	9	85
1970	8 568 703	9 210 772	1 756 123	959 459	865 947	17	9	8	9	52
1981	9 852 841	9 857 691	1 327 785	968 198	720 070	13	10	4	7	22
1991	9 862 540									11

Note:

GBR — gross birth rate

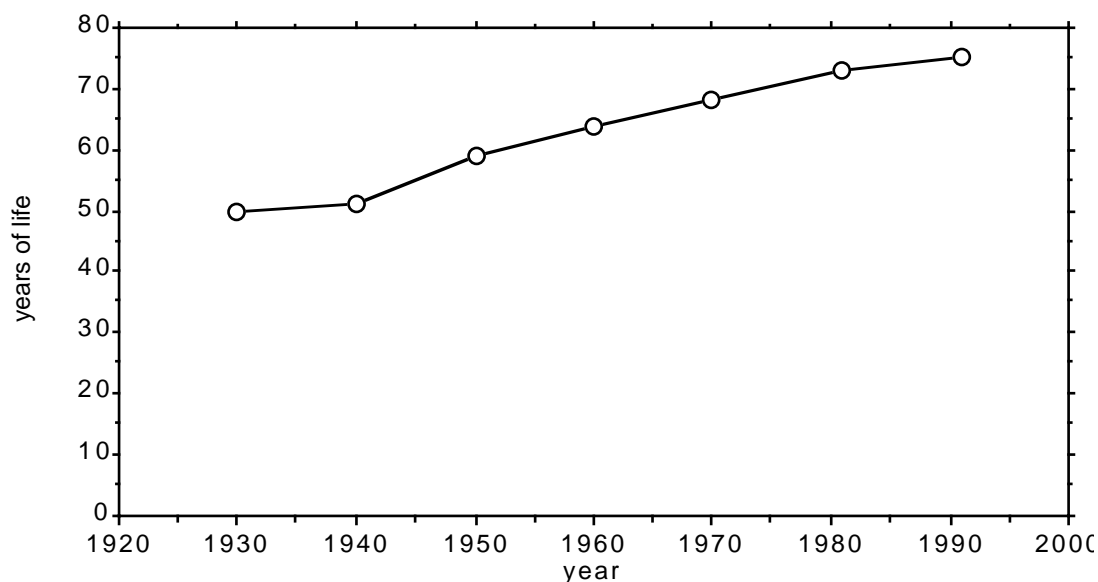
GDR — gross death rate

GMR — gross marriage rate

IMR — infant mortality rate

Source — From 1890 to 1965, *Estadísticas Demográficas*, part 1 'Datos Retrospectivos e Comparativos'; from 1966 to 1991, *Estadísticas Demográficas* for the respective year.



**Graph 2H — Evolution of the life expectancy at birth**

Source — Table 2.9

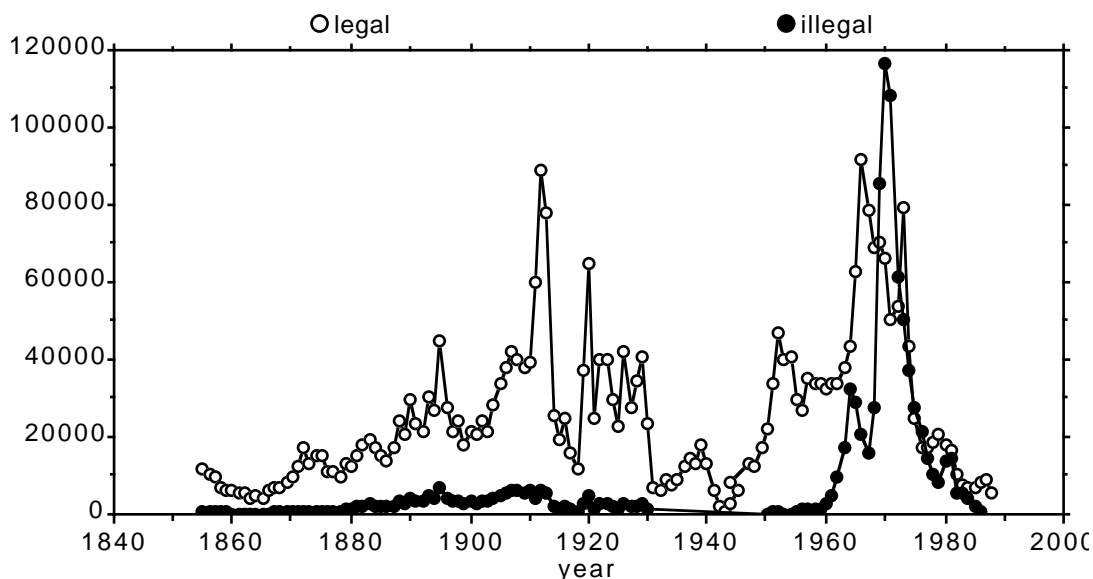
## 4 — Migratory movements

Comparison of natural growth rates with average annual growth rates calculated for the periods between censuses (Graph 2F) shows the importance of emigration in the evolution of the Portuguese population. In fact, whilst it is true that the natural growth rate of the population was almost always higher than 10 ‰ per year until the 1970s, it is equally true that most of this growth was absorbed by migratory flows, which meant that average annual growth rates in the periods between censuses were rarely more than 1%. In the periods when these rates were higher than 1%, emigration was restricted by international factors (such as the economic crises of 1929/30 and 1973/74 and the subsequent imposition of restrictive measures on immigration by the countries that had traditionally been the preferred destination of Portuguese emigrants) and the country was subjected to the special demographic impact resulting from the independence of the former Portuguese colonies in the 1970s.

As can be seen from Graph 2I and Table 2.10, emigration was a constant factor in Portugal throughout the period under study. Between 1855 and 1988, roughly 3.1 million people left Portugal legally and approximately 1 million (936 363) left the country illegally. The numbers of people leaving the country were at their highest between 1950 and 1974. In fact, the migratory

boom that can be observed in these years corresponds to 44 % of all Portuguese emigration between 1855 and 1988 and 67 % of all illegal emigration.

**Graph 2I — Legal emigration and estimated illegal emigration, 1855-1988**



Source — Table 2.10

Throughout the period under observation, it is possible to identify two clearly distinct migratory cycles: the transatlantic cycle and the intra-European cycle (Table 2.11). The first cycle stretches from 1855 to the mid-1950s. During this cycle, Portuguese emigrants showed a preference for Brazil and then the United States in second place as their chosen destination. Between 1891 and 1955, these two countries absorbed 74 % and 11 % of Portuguese emigration, respectively.

The second cycle began in the 1960s and continued until 1974, with the preferred destinations being France and Germany, which respectively welcomed 60 % and 12 % of all Portuguese emigrants between 1960 and 1974.

The economic crisis resulting from the oil shock of 1973/1974 was to impose major restrictions on this intra-European migratory movement. If we believe the official Portuguese statistics, after the economic crisis of the mid-1970s, Portuguese emigration fell progressively and

returned to its earlier transoceanic pattern. However, an analysis of the sources at the chosen destination of emigrants (Table 2.12) not only shows that the Portuguese migratory movement did not fall to the numbers recorded in Portuguese statistics, but it also shows that Portuguese emigrants continued to show a preference for European destinations, although the relative importance of the different European countries altered to some extent. Thus, between 1981 and 1993, Switzerland progressively became the main centre of attraction, absorbing roughly 46 % of the Portuguese emigrants who made their way to Europe and 34 % of all emigrants (Table 2.12).

As can be seen from Tables 2.13 and 2.14, the populations of the various Portuguese administrative districts joined in the migratory movements in quite different ways. The northern and coastal districts, as well as those in the archipelagos of Madeira and the Azores, had a fairly heavy share of the transoceanic movement (the districts of Aveiro, Braga, Coimbra, Porto, Vila Real and the Azores were responsible for 67 % of Portuguese emigration during this period). This share was to diminish in the course of the intra-European migratory movement, since other districts, such as Leiria, Lisboa and Viseu joined with the traditional emigrant districts of Aveiro, Braga and Porto. All together, these districts were responsible for 46 % of the emigration that occurred between 1960 and 1974.

Although Portuguese emigration was a predominantly male phenomenon, there was a sizeable female component in the intra-European period (see Table 2.15). Thus, whilst in the transatlantic cycle roughly 70 % of emigrants were men (by the end of this cycle, this percentage had fallen to 65 %), in the course of the intra-European cycle this percentage fell to 58 %.

Differences can also be noted in the marital status of emigrants from one cycle to the next. In the migratory cycle in which the preferred destination was Brazil, most emigrants were single people (roughly 55 %), whilst in the cycle in which France was the main centre of attraction emigrants were predominantly married (roughly 51 %).

As can also be seen in Table 2.15, emigration particularly affected the population of working age (as was mentioned earlier in section 2), and until 1988 this group was responsible for roughly 80 % of legal emigration. Although it only shows data from 1955 onwards, Table 2.17 makes it possible to be a little more precise in relation to the previous statement, since, as can be seen, not all of the active population took part in the migratory movement with equal intensity. Above all, it was those in the younger groups of the active population (those aged between 20 and 44) who mostly took part in the migratory movement (roughly 55 % between 1955 and 1988)<sup>5</sup>.

---

<sup>5</sup> In view of the high number of illegal emigrants, the national migratory flow, when characterised on the basis of the official Portuguese statistics (as in the present case), does not correspond precisely to the characteristics of Portuguese emigration as a whole.

\*

Together with the migratory movements that have been described above, another type of emigration that occurred in Portugal before 1974 should also be stressed. This involves the migratory movements to the overseas African provinces. The study of this flow presents a number of particular difficulties arising from the fact that, after 1907, the official statistics no longer counted those national citizens who went to live in the Portuguese overseas provinces as 'emigrants'. It was only after 1937 that data were again made available on these migratory movements. However, such data do not register these movements as migrations, but instead these appear under the form of a record of the number of people entering or leaving the former Portuguese colonies.

As can be seen in Table 2J, in the period when those leaving Portugal for the Portuguese overseas provinces were registered as emigrants, their numbers were not very significant. Indeed, between 1891 and 1907, the Portuguese citizens setting sail for the African continent amounted to no more than 5 % of the total number of Portuguese emigrants.

The lesser importance of Africa as a destination for emigrants seems to have continued until 1974, a phenomenon that ran counter to the official policies of the Portuguese government, which encouraged such migratory movements. According to the balance between the numbers of people travelling to and from the colonies, the number of those emigrating to the overseas provinces was rarely higher than 15 000 per year (1959 and 1962 were the only two years when this figure was actually exceeded). This number falls some way short of the figures for other migratory destinations favoured by the Portuguese (Table 2.18). Graph 2L summarises the migratory movements between 1937 and 1974 to what were then known as the Overseas Provinces.

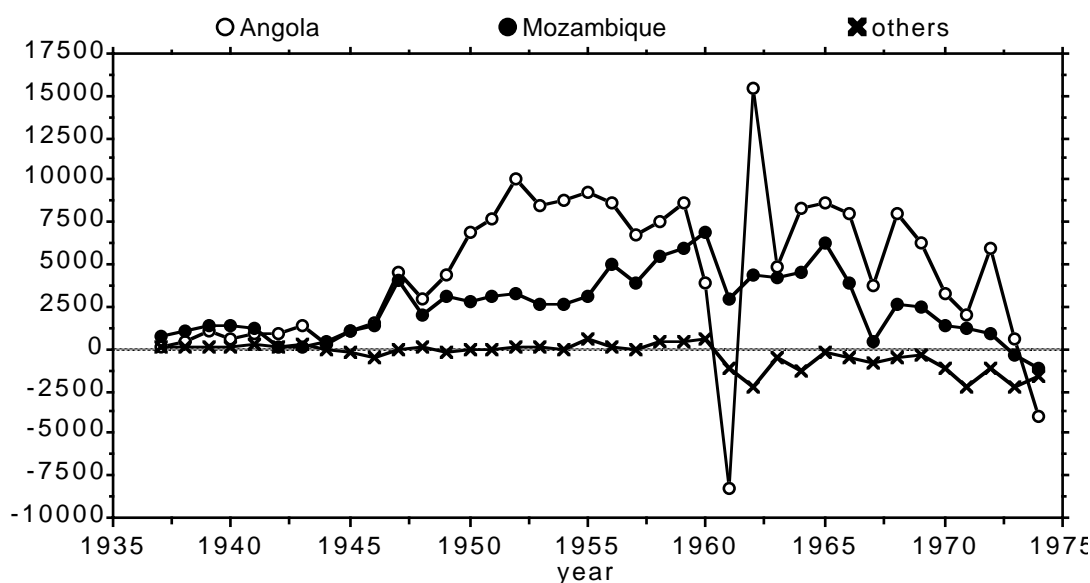
**Table 2J — Emigration to the Portuguese overseas colonies, 1891-1907**

period	emigrants
1891-1900	12 048
1901-1907	10 506

Source — Evangelista, 1971

An analysis of Graph 2L shows that the migratory movement to the colonies was mainly to Angola and Mozambique, “the only colonies of settlement” (Ferreira, 1976: 115). The outbreak of independence movements in the 1960s and the political and military vicissitudes associated with this were the main reasons for the oscillations that can be observed in the evolution of Portuguese migration to what were then its African colonies.

**Graph 2L — Movement of passengers between Portugal and its colonies, 1938-1974**



Source — Table 2.18

### Sources:

População. Censo no 1º de Janeiro de 1864. Estatística de Portugal. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional

População. Censo no 1º de Janeiro de 1878. Estatística de Portugal. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional

Censo da População do Reino de Portugal no 1º de Dezembro de 1890. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional

Censo da População do Reino de Portugal no 1º de Dezembro de 1900. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional

Censo da População de Portugal no 1º de Dezembro de 1911, 1920 e 1930, Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional

VIII, IX, X, XI, XII, XIII Recenseamento Geral da População, 1940, 1950, 1960, 1970, 1981, 1991. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional

Movimento da População. Estado Civil. Emigração. 1886 to 1896

Anuário Estatístico de Portugal. 1897 to 1900 and 1922 to 1940

Emigração Portuguesa. 1901 to 1912

Estatística Demográfica (Movimento da População). 1909 to 1921

Anuário Demográfico (Estatística do Movimento Fisiológico da População de Portugal). 1929 to 1940

Anuário Demográfico (Estatística do Movimento da População de Portugal). 1941 to 1966

Estatísticas Demográficas. 1967 to 1992

A Emigração Portuguesa, Dados Retrospectivos. Secretaria de Estado das Comunidades Portuguesas (SECP)

## **Bibliography:**

ALARCÃO, Alberto — Divisão "Regionalizada" e Evolução Demográfica em Portugal, Oeiras: Instituto Gulbenkian de Ciência, Centro de Estudos de Economia Agrária, 1982.

ARROTEIA, Jorge — Aspectos demográficos e sociais da população portuguesa no período 1864-1981: uma análise regional, Estudos Demográficos, 30, 1991.

BACCI, Massimo Livi — A Century of Portuguese Fertility, Princeton: N. J., Princeton University Press, 1971.

BAGANHA, Maria J. B. — Portuguese Emigration to the United States, 1820-1930, New York: Garland Publishing Inc., 1990.

BAGANHA, Maria J. B. — Uma imagem desfocada — a emigração portuguesa e as fontes sobre a emigração. Análise Social, XXVI (112-113), 1991.

BAGANHA, Maria J. B. — Migration and Urbanization in Portugal at the Turn of the Nineteenth Century. Paper presented at the International Conference on European Cities and their Peoples, Amsterdam, 1992.

BAGANHA, Maria J. B. — Principais características e tendências da emigração portuguesa. In APS (editor) — Estruturas sociais e desenvolvimento, Lisboa: Fragmentos, 1993.

BAGANHA, Maria J. B. — As correntes emigratórias portuguesas no século XX e o seu impacto na economia nacional. Análise Social, vol. XXIX (128), 1994.

BAGANHA, Maria J. B. (editor) — Immigration in Southern Europe, Oeiras: Celta Editora, 1997.

BARRETO, António — A Situação Social em Portugal, 1960-1995, Lisboa: Instituto de Ciências Sociais, 1996.

CARRILHO, Maria José — Aspectos demográficos e sociais da população portuguesa no período 1864-1981: evolução global do continente português, Estudos Demográficos, 30, 1991.

CARRILHO, Maria José; PEIXOTO, João — A Evolução Demográfica em Portugal entre 1981 e 1992, Estudos Demográficos, 31, 1993.

CÓNIM, Custódio — Cadernos de Estudos Demográficos, no. 7, Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1988.

CÓNIM, Custódio; CARRILHO, Maria José — Situação Demográfica e Perspectivas de Evolução. Portugal, 1960-2000, Lisboa: Instituto de Estudos para o Desenvolvimento, caderno 16, 1989.

EVANGELISTA, João — Um século de população portuguesa (1864-1960), Lisboa: Instituto Nacional de Estatística — Centro de Estudos Demográficos, 1971.

FERRÃO, João — A Demografia Portuguesa. In BARRETO, António (editor) — A Situação Social em Portugal, 1960-1995, Lisboa: Instituto de Ciências Sociais, 1996.

FERREIRA, Eduardo S. — Origens e Formas da Emigração, Lisboa: Iniciativas Editoriais, 1976.

FERRO, João Pedro — A População Portuguesa no Final do Antigo Regime (1750-1815), Lisboa: Editorial Presença, 1995.

GIRÃO, Aristides de A.; VELHO, Fernanda de O. L. — Evolução Demográfica e Ocupação do Solo Continental (1890-1940), Coimbra: Centro de Estudos Geográficos da Faculdade de Letras da Universidade de Coimbra, 1995.

GODINHO, Vitorino M. — Sociedade Portuguesa. In SERRÃO, Joel (editor) — Dicionário de História de Portugal — vol. VI. Porto: Livraria Figueirinhas, 1965.

GODINHO, Vitorino M. — L'émigration portugaise du XV siècle à nos jours, Histoire d'une constante structurale, Conjuncture Économique, Structures Sociales, Paris: Mouton, 1974.

GODINHO, Vitorino M. — L'émigration portugaise (XV-XX siècles). Revista de História Económica e Social, 11, 1978.

MACHADO, José T. M. — No Centenário do I Recenseamento Populacional Português. Revista do Centro de Estudos Demográficos, 16, 1965.

MEDEIROS, Carlos A. — Portugal — Esboço Breve de Geografia Humana, Lisboa: Edições Terra Livre, 1976.

MORAIS, Joaquim J. P.; ALARCÃO, Alberto de — A População de Portugal. Lisboa: Instituto Nacional de Estatística — Centro de Estudos Demográficos, 1976.

NAZARETH, J. Manuel — Cadernos de Estudos Demográficos, no. 5, Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1977.

NAZARETH, J. Manuel — O envelhecimento da população portuguesa, Lisboa: Presença, 1979.

NAZARETH, J. Manuel — A demografia portuguesa do século XX: principais linhas de evolução e transformação. Análise Social, vol. XXI (87-88-89), 1985.

NAZARETH, J. Manuel — Unidade e Diversidade da Demografia Portuguesa no Final do Século XX, Lisboa: Fundação Calouste Gulbenkian, 1988.

NUNES, Ana Bela F. M. — A Rede Urbana Portuguesa e o Moderno Crescimento Económico. Study presented at Ph. D. examination, Instituto Superior de Economia da Universidade Técnica de Lisboa, 1989.

NUNES, Ana Bela F. M. — Portuguese Urban System: 1890-1991. In PEREIRA, Pedro Telhado; MATA, Maria Eugénia (editors) — Urban Dominance and Labour Market Differentiation of a European Capital City, Lisbon 1890-1990, Massachusetts: Kluwer Academic Publishers, 1996.

PEIXOTO, João — A Emigração Portuguesa a Partir de 1980: Factos Estatísticos e Modalidades de Evolução. Estudos Demográficos, 31, 1993.

PEREIRA, Miriam Halpern — Liberdade e contenção na emigração portuguesa (1850-1930). In SILVA, Maria Beatriz Nizza da [et alii] (editors) — Emigração / imigração, Lisboa: Fragmentos, 1993.

ROSA, Maria João V. — O envelhecimento da População Portuguesa. In BARRETO, António (editor) — A Situação Social em Portugal, 1960-1995. Lisboa: Instituto de Ciências Sociais, 1996.

## Tables

2.1 — Total population and population by sex, 1864-1991

2.2 — Population calculated for the end of the year, 1864-1991



## Chapter 2 — Population

- 2.3 — Total population by age groups, 1864-1991
- 2.4 — Total population by districts, 1864-1991
- 2.5 — Natural movement of the population, 1890-1991
- 2.6 — Births, deaths and marriages, 1890-1991
- 2.7 — Births by sex, 1890-1991
- 2.8 — Deaths by age, by four-year periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1991
- 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality
- 2.10 — Legal emigration and estimated illegal emigration, 1885-1988
- 2.11 — Legal emigration by destination, 1886-1988
- 2.12 — Numbers of Portuguese emigrants entering some destination countries, 1981-1993
- 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988
- 2.14 — Summary of legal emigration by district, 1886-1988
- 2.15 — Legal emigration by sex, 1886-1988
- 2.16 — Demographic characteristics of legal emigration, 1890-1988
- 2.17 — Legal emigration by sex and age group, 1955-1988
- 2.18 — Movement of passengers between Portugal and the Overseas Provinces

## **Appendix**

Age pyramids

**Table 2.1 — Total population and population by sex, 1864-1991**

Source — Census for the respective year

year	men	women	total population	population index base 1900 = 100	average annual growth rate %
1864	2 005 540	2 182 870	4 188 410	77.2	—
1878	2 175 829	2 374 870	4 550 699	83.9	0.59
1890	2 430 339	2 619 390	5 049 729	93.1	0.87
1900	2 591 600	2 831 532	5 423 132	100.0	0.72
1911	2 828 691	3 131 365	5 960 056	109.9	0.86
1920	2 855 818	3 177 173	6 032 991	111.2	0.14
1930	3 255 876	3 570 007	6 825 883	125.9	1.24
1940	3 711 748	4 010 404	7 722 152	142.4	1.24
1950	4 060 266	4 381 046	8 441 312	155.7	0.89
1960	4 237 854	4 613 435	8 851 289	163.2	0.48
1970	4 054 115	4 514 588	8 568 703	158.0	- 0.32
1981	4 742 524	5 110 317	9 852 841	181.7	1.41
1991	4 754 632	5 107 908	9 862 540	181.9	0.01

**Table 2.2 — Population calculated for the end of the year,  
1864-1991**

Source — Author's calculation.

year	total	men	women
1864	4 188 410	2 005 540	2 182 870
1865	4 213 303	2 017 249	2 196 054
1866	4 238 344	2 029 026	2 209 318
1867	4 263 533	2 040 871	2 222 661
1868	4 288 873	2 052 786	2 236 086
1869	4 314 363	2 064 771	2 249 591
1870	4 340 004	2 076 825	2 263 178
1871	4 365 798	2 088 950	2 276 847
1872	4 391 745	2 101 146	2 290 599
1873	4 417 847	2 113 412	2 304 433
1874	4 444 103	2 125 751	2 318 351
1875	4 470 516	2 138 161	2 332 354
1876	4 497 085	2 150 644	2 346 441
1877	4 523 813	2 163 200	2 360 612
1878	4 550 699	2 175 829	2 374 870
1879	4 590 330	2 195 979	2 394 344
1880	4 630 307	2 216 316	2 413 978
1881	4 670 631	2 236 842	2 433 772
1882	4 711 307	2 257 557	2 453 729
1883	4 752 337	2 278 465	2 473 850
1884	4 793 725	2 299 566	2 494 135
1885	4 835 473	2 320 862	2 514 587
1886	4 877 584	2 342 356	2 535 207
1887	4 920 062	2 364 048	2 555 995
1888	4 962 910	2 385 942	2 576 955
1889	5 006 131	2 408 038	2 598 086
1890	5 049 729	2 430 339	2 619 390
1891	5 085 882	2 446 003	2 639 869
1892	5 122 294	2 461 768	2 660 507

year	total	men	women
1893	5 158 966	2 477 634	2 681 307
1894	5 195 902	2 493 603	2 702 270
1895	5 233 101	2 509 675	2 723 396
1896	5 270 567	2 525 850	2 744 688
1897	5 308 301	2 542 129	2 766 146
1898	5 346 305	2 558 514	2 787 772
1899	5 384 582	2 575 004	2 809 567
1900	5 423 132	2 591 600	2 831 532
1901	5 469 876	2 612 306	2 857 560
1902	5 517 022	2 633 178	2 883 827
1903	5 564 575	2 654 217	2 910 335
1904	5 612 538	2 675 423	2 937 087
1905	5 660 915	2 696 800	2 964 085
1906	5 709 708	2 718 346	2 991 331
1907	5 758 922	2 740 068	3 018 828
1908	5 808 560	2 761 958	3 046 577
1909	5 858 626	2 784 026	3 074 582
1910	5 909 123	2 806 269	3 102 843
1911	5 960 056	2 828 691	3 131 365
1912	5 968 116	2 831 692	3 136 422
1913	5 976 187	2 834 697	3 141 487
1914	5 984 269	2 837 705	3 146 560
1915	5 992 362	2 840 715	3 151 842
1916	6 000 466	2 843 730	3 156 732
1917	6 008 581	2 846 747	3 161 830
1918	6 016 706	2 849 767	3 166 936
1919	6 024 843	2 852 791	3 172 050
1920	6 032 991	2 855 818	3 177 173
1921	6 107 947	2 893 505	3 214 428

Table 2.2 — Population calculated for the end of the year, 1864-1991 (continued)

year	total	men	women
1922	6 183 835	2 931 690	3 252 120
1923	6 260 666	2 970 378	3 290 253
1924	6 338 451	3 009 577	3 328 834
1925	6 417 203	3 049 293	3 367 867
1926	6 496 933	3 089 534	3 407 358
1927	6 577 653	3 130 305	3 447 312
1928	6 659 377	3 171 814	3 487 735
1929	6 742 116	3 213 469	3 528 631
1930	6 825 883	3 255 876	3 570 007
1931	6 910 616	3 298 822	3 611 777
1932	6 996 402	3 342 335	3 654 036
1933	7 083 252	3 386 422	3 696 790
1934	7 171 180	3 431 090	3 740 044
1935	7 260 200	3 476 347	3 783 804
1936	7 350 325	3 522 202	3 828 076
1937	7 441 589	3 568 661	3 872 885
1938	7 533 945	3 615 733	3 918 179
1939	7 627 468	3 663 426	3 964 023
1940	7 722 152	3 711 748	4 010 404
1941	7 791 221	3 745 209	4 046 011
1942	7 860 907	3 778 972	4 081 935
1943	7 931 217	3 813 039	4 118 177
1944	8 002 156	3 847 414	4 154 741
1945	8 073 729	3 882 098	4 191 630
1946	8 145 942	3 917 095	4 228 847
1947	8 218 801	3 952 407	4 266 393
1948	8 292 312	3 988 038	4 304 274
1949	8 366 480	4 023 990	4 342 490
1950	8 441 312	4 060 266	4 381 046
1951	8 481 440	4 077 685	4 403 748
1952	8 521 759	4 095 178	4 426 568
1953	8 562 270	4 112 746	4 449 506
1954	8 602 973	4 130 390	4 472 563

year	total	men	women
1955	8 643 870	4 148 110	4 495 739
1956	8 684 961	4 165 905	4 519 036
1957	8 726 248	4 183 777	4 542 453
1958	8 767 731	4 201 726	4 565 991
1959	8 809 411	4 219 751	4 589 652
1960	8 851 289	4 237 854	4 613 435
1961	8 822 616	4 219 111	4 603 454
1962	8 794 036	4 200 452	4 593 494
1963	8 765 548	4 181 875	4 583 556
1964	8 737 153	4 163 380	4 573 639
1965	8 708 850	4 144 967	4 563 744
1966	8 680 638	4 126 635	4 553 870
1967	8 652 518	4 108 384	4 544 018
1968	8 624 489	4 090 214	4 534 186
1969	8 596 551	4 072 125	4 524 377
1970	8 568 703	4 054 115	4 514 588
1971	8 689 199	4 118 200	4 570 893
1972	8 811 389	4 183 298	4 627 901
1973	8 935 297	4 249 424	4 685 620
1974	9 060 948	4 316 596	4 744 058
1975	9 188 366	4 384 830	4 803 226
1976	9 317 576	4 454 143	4 863 131
1977	9 448 602	4 524 551	4 923 783
1978	9 581 471	4 596 072	4 985 192
1979	9 716 209	4 668 724	5 047 367
1980	9 852 841	4 742 524	5 110 317
1981	9 853 810	4 743 733	5 110 076
1982	9 854 780	4 744 943	5 109 835
1983	9 855 750	4 746 153	5 109 594
1984	9 856 719	4 747 363	5 109 353
1985	9 857 689	4 748 574	5 109 112
1986	9 858 659	4 749 785	5 108 871
1987	9 859 629	4 750 996	5 108 631

Table 2.2 — Population calculated for the end of the year, 1864-1991 (continued)

year	total	men	women
1988	9 860 599	4 752 208	5 108 390
1989	9 861 570	4 753 420	5 108 149

year	total	men	women
1990	9 862 540	4 754 632	5 107 908
1991	9 863 510	4 755 844	5 107 667

**Table 2.3 — Total population by age groups, 1864-1991 \***

Source — Census for the respective year

age groups	total	0-4	5-9	10-14	15-19	20-24	25-29
1864**	4 188 410	574 445	435 329	408 574	364 408	343 233	359 523
1878**	4 550 699	634 480	469 712	430 917	409 506	364 621	378 951
1890	5 049 729	589 398	554 905	524 836	461 490	405 477	365 890
1900	5 423 132	637 009	610 151	580 381	515 863	465 465	392 464
1911	5 960 056	706 306	703 153	635 966	570 481	511 517	432 590
1920	6 032 991	604 132	681 201	682 578	627 014	515 709	446 418
1930	6 825 883	769 627	762 208	646 267	682 779	625 635	535 131
1940	7 722 152	829 141	835 721	803 356	748 482	630 682	608 886
1950	8 441 312	889 714	798 678	799 693	810 964	761 703	681 256
1960***	8 889 650	901 410	851 145	839 400	747 225	705 204	673 452
1970***	8 611 115	789 355	849 785	812 710	730 900	628 040	518 735
1981***	9 833 014	791 696	862 333	854 644	859 742	768 317	679 958
1991***	9 867 147	544 309	646 161	781 933	845 588	765 248	726 628

age groups	total	30-34	35-39	40-44	45-49	50-54	55-59
1864**	4 188 410	244 103	348 151	219 374	263 045	132 621	191 592
1878**	4 550 699	270 879	344 871	215 641	284 760	183 489	227 437
1890	5 049 729	334 232	298 009	308 422	252 417	259 298	172 225
1900	5 423 132	350 400	305 527	313 651	257 936	274 411	190 181
1911	5 960 056	391 345	338 841	329 596	270 660	283 242	203 593
1920	6 032 991	392 854	358 481	339 747	300 600	277 955	214 027
1930	6 825 883	441 780	410 057	377 365	331 872	317 830	258 865
1940	7 722 152	556 636	495 900	422 388	375 181	346 166	285 422
1950	8 441 312	541 099	567 333	524 737	460 038	390 566	331 777
1960***	8 889 650	637 452	591 184	499 411	510 724	481 429	409 028
1970***	8 611 115	533 985	555 740	551 385	513 230	444 600	439 750
1981***	9 833 014	629 898	565 426	574 160	586 900	570 462	531 731
1991***	9 867 147	694 606	661 076	634 519	569 623	559 346	562 041

Table 2.3 — Total population by age groups, 1864-1991 (continued)

age groups	total	60-64	65-69	70-74	75-79	80-84	85 and over	unknown
1864**	4 188 410	103 300	99 924	40 433	35 532	10 270	8 875	5 678
1878**	4 550 699	113 960	103 914	46 832	41 549	12 782	9 967	6 451
1890	5 049 729	202 238	123 351	96 562	43 699	25 146	12 969	19 165
1900	5 423 132	207 495	116 253	97 619	49 439	32 736	14 032	12 119
1911	5 960 056	217 481	132 532	111 587	53 959	35 410	17 373	14 424
1920	6 032 991	208 770	138 829	108 046	57 247	34 418	17 355	27 610
1930	6 825 883	230 119	166 184	123 940	72 817	38 653	22 037	12 717
1940	7 722 152	262 328	194 270	140 144	86 974	47 435	29 469	23 571
1950	8 441 312	294 239	229 976	168 524	107 039	53 123	30 853	—
1960***	8 889 650	334 019	264 150	206 298	130 504	69 202	38 415	—
1970***	8 611 115	410 150	326 250	233 720	146 610	82 480	43 690	—
1981***	9 833 014	432 289	408 307	332 339	218 838	110 679	57 295	—
1991***	9 867 147	533 325	470 049	344 747	271 089	165 553	91 306	—

\* Both sexes

\*\* Age groups 0-5, 6-10, 11-15, etc., 86 and over

\*\*\* Resident population

## Table 2.4 — Total population by districts, 1864-1991

Source — Census for the respectiv year.

year	Portugal	Aveiro	Beja	Braga	Bragança	C. Branco	Coimbra	Évora
1864	4 188 410	238 700	135 508	309 508	158 909	159 505	268 894	98 104
1878	4 550 699	257 049	142 119	319 464	168 651	173 983	292 037	106 858
1890	5 049 729	287 437	157 571	338 308	179 678	205 211	316 624	118 408
1900	5 423 132	303 169	163 612	357 159	185 162	216 608	332 168	128 062
1911	5 960 056	336 243	192 499	382 276	192 024	241 184	359 387	148 295
1920	6 032 991	344 178	200 615	376 141	170 302	239 167	353 121	153 239
1930	6 825 883	381 694	240 465	414 784	185 164	265 573	387 808	180 852
1940	7 722 152	429 870	275 441	482 914	213 233	299 670	411 677	207 952
1950	8 441 312	477 191	286 803	541 377	227 125	320 279	432 044	219 638
1960*	8 851 289	522 227	268 911	593 587	230 266	310 745	433 596	215 186
1970*	8 568 703	539 688	201 502	607 354	176 246	250 351	398 678	175 286
1981*	9 852 841	619 966	184 252	709 763	181 375	232 967	441 001	179 241
1991*	9 862 540	654 265	169 438	748 192	157 809	214 853	427 839	173 654

year	Portugal	Faro	Guarda	Leiria	Lisboa	Portalegre	Porto	Santarém
1864	4 188 410	172 660	210 414	173 916	438 464	95 665	410 665	196 617
1878	4 550 699	199 142	228 494	192 982	498 059	101 126	461 881	220 881
1890	5 049 729	228 635	250 154	217 278	611 168	112 834	546 262	254 844
1900	5 423 132	255 191	261 630	238 755	709 509	124 431	597 935	283 154
1911	5 960 056	272 861	271 616	262 632	852 354	141 481	679 540	325 775
1920	6 032 991	268 294	256 243	279 124	933 568	147 398	702 166	332 012
1930	6 825 883	300 762	267 614	314 540	906 582	166 343	810 253	378 517
1940	7 722 152	317 628	294 166	353 675	1 070 103	186 373	938 288	421 996
1950	8 441 312	325 971	304 368	389 182	1 226 815	196 993	1 052 663	453 192
1960*	8 851 289	312 509	276 470	400 275	1 402 586	183 841	1 191 504	462 121
1970*	8 568 703	265 225	207 469	374 535	1 578 614	143 903	1 302 786	427 892
1981*	9 852 841	328 605	205 405	418 942	2 085 861	142 141	1 561 310	458 229
1991*	9 862 540	341 404	188 165	426 152	2 048 180	134 169	1 641 501	444 880



Table 2.4 — Total population by districts, 1864-1991 (continued)

year	Portugal	Setúbal	V. Castelo	Vila Real	Viseu	Açores	Madeira
1864	4 188 410	—	195 257	213 289	353 543	248 028	110 764
1878	4 550 699	—	201 390	224 628	371 571	259 800	130 584
1890	5 049 729	—	207 366	237 302	391 015	255 594	134 040
1900	5 423 132	—	215 267	242 196	402 259	256 291	150 574
1911	5 960 056	—	227 250	245 547	416 744	242 565	169 783
1920	6 032 991	—	226 046	235 499	404 864	232 012	179 002
1930	6 825 883	233 668	240 261	253 994	431 473	253 935	211 601
1940	7 722 152	268 884	258 596	289 114	465 563	286 885	250 124
1950	8 441 312	324 186	274 532	317 372	487 182	317 409	266 990
1960*	8 851 289	376 128	275 345	322 649	477 468	327 806	268 069
1970*	8 568 703	465 367	249 919	261 995	407 538	284 161	250 174
1981*	9 852 841	654 312	255 395	263 972	421 752	249 101	259 251
1991*	9 862 540	712 594	250 059	236 294	401 871	237 795	253 425

\* Resident population

## Table 2.5 — Natural movement of the population, 1890-1991

Source — From 1890 to 1940, Anuário Demográfico (Estatísticas do Movimento Fisiológico da População de Portugal), 1940; from 1941 to 1966, Anuário Demográfico; from 1967 to 1991, Estatísticas Demográficas.

year	births	deaths	natural population	estimated population	GBR ‰	GDR ‰	NGR ‰	TGR ‰
1890	164 627	127 237	5 049 729	5 049 729	33	25	7	
1891	162 051	115 610	5 096 170	5 085 882	32	23	9	
1892	159 205	103 587	5 151 788	5 122 294	31	20	11	
1893	164 141	109 931	5 205 998	5 158 966	32	21	11	
1894	153 971	107 450	5 252 519	5 195 902	30	21	9	
1895	156 405	108 435	5 300 489	5 233 101	30	21	9	
1896	157 546	119 508	5 338 527	5 270 567	30	23	7	
1897	160 971	115 911	5 383 587	5 308 301	30	22	8	
1898	160 924	113 849	5 430 662	5 346 305	30	21	9	
1899	160 569	108 260	5 482 971	5 384 582	30	20	10	
1900	165 245	110 330	5 537 886	5 423 132	30	20	10	7
1901	170 773	114 130	5 594 529	5 469 876	31	21	10	
1902	176 029	108 378	5 662 180	5 517 022	32	20	12	
1903	183 138	111 685	5 733 633	5 564 575	33	20	13	
1904	176 726	105 572	5 804 787	5 612 538	31	19	13	
1905	179 746	112 756	5 871 777	5 660 915	32	20	12	
1906	182 920	125 248	5 929 449	5 709 708	32	22	10	
1907	176 417	113 254	5 992 612	5 758 922	31	20	11	
1908	175 268	115 876	6 052 004	5 808 560	30	20	10	
1909	174 753	112 421	6 114 336	5 858 626	30	19	11	
1910	187 416	113 697	6 188 055	5 909 123	32	19	12	
1911	230 033	130 900	6 287 188	5 960 056	39	22	17	9
1912	207 870	119 578	6 375 480	5 968 116	35	20	15	
1913	193 906	123 054	6 446 332	5 976 187	32	21	12	
1914	188 479	115 526	6 519 285	5 984 269	32	19	12	
1915	195 225	122 513	6 591 997	5 992 362	33	20	12	
1916	192 780	129 389	6 655 388	6 000 466	32	22	11	

Table 2.5 — Natural movement for the population, 1890-1991 (continued)

year	births	deaths	natural population	estimated population	GBR ‰	GDR ‰	NGR ‰	TGR ‰
1917	188 391	134 082	6 709 697	6 008 581	31	22	9	
1918	178 687	248 978	6 639 406	6 016 706	30	41	-12	
1919	166 162	152 856	6 652 712	6 024 843	28	25	2	
1920	202 908	142 862	6 712 758	6 032 991	34	24	10	1
1921	197 022	126 316	6 783 464	6 107 947	32	21	12	
1922	203 727	125 747	6 881 444	6 183 835	33	20	13	
1923	207 172	141 775	6 926 841	6 260 666	33	23	10	
1924	207 440	126 052	7 008 229	6 338 451	33	20	13	
1925	208 434	117 413	7 099 250	6 417 203	32	18	14	
1926	214 633	128 335	7 185 548	6 496 933	33	20	13	
1927	199 399	123 332	7 261 615	6 577 653	30	19	12	
1928	211 314	124 088	7 348 841	6 659 377	32	19	13	
1929	200 874	118 824	7 430 891	6 742 116	30	18	12	
1930	202 529	116 352	7 517 068	6 825 883	30	17	13	12
1931	204 120	115 225	7 605 963	6 910 616	30	17	13	
1932	208 062	118 895	7 695 130	6 996 402	30	17	13	
1933	204 315	120 996	7 778 449	7 083 252	29	17	12	
1934	203 158	118 539	7 863 068	7 171 180	28	17	12	
1935	202 943	123 051	7 942 960	7 260 200	28	17	11	
1936	205 615	119 003	8 029 572	7 350 325	28	16	12	
1937	198 127	117 291	8 110 408	7 441 569	27	16	11	
1938	199 467	115 331	8 194 544	7 533 945	26	15	11	
1939	198 888	116 075	8 277 357	7 627 468	26	15	11	
1940	187 892	120 486	8 344 763	7 722 152	24	16	9	12
1941	184 336	134 937	8 394 162	7 791 221	24	17	6	
1942	187 503	136 531	8 445 134	7 860 907	24	17	6	
1943	198 101	121 887	8 521 348	7 931 217	25	15	10	
1944	201 373	119 275	8 603 446	8 002 156	25	15	10	
1945	209 131	115 596	8 696 981	8 073 729	26	14	12	
1946	205 825	120 800	8 782 006	8 145 942	25	15	10	
1947	200 488	110 437	8 872 057	8 218 801	24	13	11	
1948	220 981	107 576	8 985 462	8 292 312	27	13	14	

Table 2.5 — Natural movement for the population, 1890-1991 (continued)

year	births	deaths	natural population	estimated population	GBR ‰	GDR ‰	NGR ‰	TGR ‰
1949	212 260	117 499	9 080 223	8 366 480	25	14	11	
1950	205 163	102 798	9 182 588	8 441 312	24	12	12	9
1951	207 870	105 473	9 284 985	8 481 440	25	12	12	
1952	211 213	100 486	9 395 712	8 521 759	25	12	13	
1953	202 135	97 460	9 500 387	8 562 270	24	11	12	
1954	197 536	95 088	9 602 835	8 602 973	23	11	12	
1955	209 790	99 472	9 713 153	8 643 870	24	12	13	
1956	202 667	106 919	9 808 901	8 684 961	23	12	11	
1957	211 494	101 784	9 918 611	8 726 248	24	12	13	
1958	212 467	91 891	10 039 187	8 767 731	24	10	14	
1959	213 062	97 754	10 154 495	8 809 411	24	11	13	
1960	213 895	95 007	10 273 383	8 851 289	24	11	13	5
1961	217 516	99 590	10 391 309	8 822 616	25	11	13	
1962	220 200	96 864	10 514 645	8 794 036	25	11	14	
1963	212 152	98 011	10 628 786	8 765 548	24	11	13	
1964	217 136	96 878	10 749 044	8 737 153	25	11	14	
1965	210 299	95 187	10 864 156	8 708 850	24	11	13	
1966	206 940	100 088	10 971 008	8 680 638	24	12	12	
1967	202 061	95 816	11 077 253	8 652 518	23	11	12	
1968	194 962	94 661	11 177 554	8 624 489	23	11	12	
1969	189 739	101 088	11 266 205	8 596 551	22	12	10	
1970	172 891	93 093	11 346 003	8 568 703	20	11	9	-3
1971	189 042	98 688	11 436 357	8 689 199	22	11	10	
1972	174 685	90 315	11 520 727	8 811 389	20	10	10	
1973	172 324	95 435	11 597.616	8 935 297	19	11	9	
1974	171 979	96 928	11 672 667	9 060 948	19	11	8	
1975	179 648	97 936	11 754 379	9 188 366	20	11	9	
1976	186 712	102 027	11 839 064	9 317 576	20	11	9	
1977	181 064	96 111	11 924 017	9 448 602	19	10	9	
1978	167 467	96 194	11 995 290	9 581 471	17	10	7	
1979	160 311	92 732	12 062 869	9 716 209	16	10	7	
1980	158 352	94 971	12 126 250	9 852 841	16	10	6	1

Table 2.5 — Natural movement for the population, 1890-1991 (continued)

year	births	deaths	natural population	estimated population	GBR ‰	GDR ‰	NGR ‰	TGR ‰
1981	152 102	95 892	12 182 460	9 853 810	15	10	6	
1982	151 029	92 551	12 240 938	9 854 780	15	9	6	
1983	144 327	96 367	12 288 898	9 855 750	15	10	5	
1984	142 805	97 227	12 334 476	9 856 719	14	10	5	
1985	130 492	97 339	12 367 629	9 857 689	13	10	3	
1986	126 748	95 828	12 398 549	9 858 659	13	10	3	
1987	123 218	95 423	12 426 344	9 859 629	12	10	3	
1988	122 121	98 236	12 450 229	9 860 599	12	10	2	
1989	118 560	96 220	12 472 569	9 861 570	12	10	2	
1990	116 383	103 115	12 485 837	9 862 540	12	10	1	
1991	116 415	104 361	12 497 891	9 863 510	12	11	1	0

GBR — gross birth rate

GDR — gross death rate

NGR — natural growth rate

TGR — total growth rate

## Table 2.6 — Births, deaths and marriages, 1890-1991

Source — From 1890 to 1940, Anuário Demográfico (Estatísticas do Movimento Fisiológico da População de Portugal), 1940; from 1941 to 1966, Anuário Demográfico; from 1967 to 1991, Estatísticas Demográficas.

year	births	deaths	marriages
1890	164 627	127 237	35 769
1891	162 051	115 610	34 631
1892	159 205	103 587	34 828
1893	164 141	109 931	34 088
1894	153 971	107 450	33 161
1895	156 405	108 435	33 274
1896	157 546	119 508	32 998
1897	160 971	115 911	36 218
1898	160 924	113 849	35 021
1899	160 569	108 260	38 611
1900	165 245	110 330	36 779
1901	170 773	114 130	37 865
1902	176 029	108 378	38 654
1903	183 138	111 685	38 618
1904	176 726	105 572	36 663
1905	179 746	112 756	37 600
1906	182 920	125 248	35 485
1907	176 417	113 254	35 357
1908	175 268	115 876	35 761
1909	174 753	112 421	35 807
1910	187 416	113 697	38 986
1911	230 033	130 900	41 235
1912	207 870	119 578	44 126
1913	193 906	123 064	35 057
1914	188 479	115 526	36 548
1915	195 225	122 513	35 885
1916	192 780	129 389	35 896
1917	188 391	134 082	33 426

year	births	deaths	marriages
1918	178 687	248 978	30 236
1919	166 162	152 856	46 959
1920	202 908	142 862	53 024
1921	197 022	126 316	51 213
1922	203 727	125 747	50 543
1923	207 172	141 775	49 104
1924	207 440	126 052	46 242
1925	208 434	117 413	45 550
1926	214 633	128 335	46 801
1927	199 399	123 332	41 776
1928	211 314	124 088	45 347
1929	200 874	118 824	44 525
1930	202 529	116 352	47 746
1931	204 120	115 225	44 908
1932	208 062	118 895	45 388
1933	204 315	120 996	45 833
1934	203 158	118 539	47 459
1935	202 943	123 051	48 899
1936	205 615	119 003	46 526
1937	198 127	117 291	46 801
1938	199 467	115 331	48 847
1939	198 888	116 075	48 536
1940	187 892	120 486	46 618
1941	184 336	134 937	55 131
1942	187 503	136 531	58 664
1943	198 101	121 887	58 455
1944	201 373	119 275	59 260
1945	209 131	115 596	61 479

Table 2.6 — Births, deaths and marriages, 1890-1991 (continued)

year	births	deaths	marriages
1946	205 825	120 800	62 460
1947	200 488	110 437	67 486
1948	220 981	107 576	64 638
1949	212 260	117 499	65 388
1950	205 163	102 798	65 244
1951	207 870	105 473	66 689
1952	211 213	100 486	67 059
1953	202 135	97 460	67 304
1954	197 536	95 088	69 361
1955	209 790	99 472	73 076
1956	202 667	106 919	65 894
1957	211 494	101 784	71 792
1958	212 467	91 891	73 096
1959	213 062	97 754	75 868
1960	213 895	95 007	69 457
1961	217 516	99 590	78 199
1962	220 200	96 864	70 817
1963	212 152	98 011	71 209
1964	217 136	96 878	73 310
1965	210 299	95 187	75 483
1966	206 940	100 088	77 199
1967	202 061	95 816	78 864
1968	194 962	94 661	76 553

year	births	deaths	marriages
1969	189 739	101 088	79 180
1970	172 891	93 093	81 461
1971	189 042	98 688	83 438
1972	174 685	90 315	77 325
1973	172 324	95 435	84 334
1974	171 979	96 928	81 724
1975	179 648	97 936	103 125
1976	186 712	102 027	101 885
1977	181 064	96 111	91 403
1978	167 467	96 194	81 111
1979	160 311	92 732	80 141
1980	158 352	94 971	72 164
1981	152 102	95 892	76 283
1982	151 029	92 551	73 660
1983	144 327	96 367	74 917
1984	142 805	97 227	69 875
1985	130 492	97 339	68 461
1986	126 748	95 828	69 271
1987	123 218	95 423	71 656
1988	122 121	98 236	71 098
1989	118 560	96 220	73 195
1990	116 383	103 115	71 654
1991	116 415	104 361	71 808

## Table 2.7 — Births by sex, 1890-1991

Source — From 1890 to 1940, Anuário Demográfico (Estatísticas do Movimento Fisiológico da População de Portugal), 1940; from 1941 to 1966, Anuário Demográfico; from 1967 to 1991, Estatísticas Demográficas.

year	men	women	total
1890	84 472	80 155	164 627
1891	83 863	78 188	162 051
1892	82 197	77 008	159 205
1893	84 654	79 487	164 141
1894	79 393	74 578	153 971
1895	80 787	75 618	156 405
1896	81 316	76 230	157 546
1897	82 524	78 447	160 971
1898	82 137	78 787	160 924
1899	82 719	77 850	160 569
1900	85 274	79 971	165 245
1901	88 289	82 484	170 773
1902	90 968	85 061	176 029
1903	94 681	88 457	183 138
1904	91 639	85 087	176 726
1905	93 898	85 848	179 746
1906	94 669	88 251	182 920
1907	91 895	84 522	176 417
1908	90 550	84 718	175 268
1909	89 860	84 893	174 753
1910	97 040	90 376	187 416
1911	117 656	112 377	230 033
1912	106 212	101 658	207 870
1913	99 258	94 648	193 906
1914	96 964	91 515	188 479
1915	100 181	95 044	195 225
1916	98 819	93 961	192 780
1917	96 786	91 605	188 391

year	men	women	total
1918	92 063	86 624	178 687
1919	85 332	80 830	166 162
1920	103 984	98 924	202 908
1921	101 007	96 015	197 022
1922	105 063	98 664	203 727
1923	106 375	100 797	207 172
1924	106 350	101 090	207 440
1925	106 801	101 633	208 434
1926	110 049	104 584	214 633
1927	102 504	96 895	199 399
1928	108 159	103 155	211 314
1929	103 215	97 659	200 874
1930	103 928	98 601	202 529
1931	105 150	98 970	204 120
1932	107 123	100 939	208 062
1933	104 940	99 375	204 315
1934	104 759	98 399	203 158
1935	104 771	99 172	203 943
1936	105 577	100 038	205 615
1937	101 637	96 490	198 127
1938	102 968	96 499	199 467
1939	102 229	96 659	198 888
1940	97 147	90 745	187 892
1941	94 801	89 535	184 336
1942	96 650	90 853	187 503
1943	102 085	96 016	198 101
1944	105 093	96 280	201 373
1945	108 482	100 649	209 131



Table 2.7 — Births by sex, 1890-1991 (continued)

year	men	women	total
1946	107 128	98 697	205 825
1947	104 070	96 418	200 488
1948	114 771	106 210	220 981
1949	110 466	101 794	212 260
1950	106 025	99 138	205 163
1951	107 756	100 114	207 870
1952	109 580	101 633	211 213
1953	104 391	97 744	202 135
1954	102 101	95 435	197 536
1955	107 877	101 913	209 790
1956	103 917	98 750	202 667
1957	108 855	102 639	211 494
1958	109 096	103 371	212 467
1959	109 737	103 325	213 062
1960	110 485	103 410	213 895
1961	111 869	105 647	217 516
1962	113 842	106 358	220 200
1963	109 457	102 695	212 152
1964	112 434	104 702	217 136
1965	108 574	101 725	210 299
1966	107 224	99 716	206 940
1967	103 889	98 172	202 061
1968	101 125	93 837	194 962

year	men	women	total
1969	98 054	91 685	189 739
1970	89 246	83 645	172 891
1971	97 271	91 771	189 042
1972	90 322	84 363	174 685
1973	88 697	83 627	172 324
1974	88 062	83 917	171 979
1975	93 099	86 549	179 648
1976	96 582	90 130	186 712
1977	94 040	87 024	181 064
1978	87 124	80 343	167 467
1979	82 726	77 585	160 311
1980	81 642	76 710	158 352
1981	78 340	73 762	152 102
1982	77 861	73 168	151 029
1983	74 811	69 516	144 327
1984	73 891	68 914	142 805
1985	67 358	63 134	130 492
1986	65 427	61 321	126 748
1987	63 572	59 646	123 218
1988	63 020	59 101	122 121
1989	60 895	57 665	118 560
1990	59 953	56 430	116 383
1991	59 920	56 495	116 415

**Table 2.8 — Death by age, by four-year periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1991**

Source — From 1919 to 1921, Movimento da População; from 1922 to 1925, Movimento Fisiológico da População de Portugal; from 1929 to 1967, Anuário Demográfico; from 1967 to 1991, Estatísticas Demográficas.

age groups	1919	1920	1921	1922	1919-1922
less than 1	30 196	33 302	29 102	29 330	121 930
1-4	25 740	22 491	16 182	16 270	80 683
5-9	6 794	5 626	3 908	3 367	19 695
10-14	3 247	3 043	2 528	2 201	11 019
15-19	3 804	3 674	3 168	3 079	13 725
20-24	4 644	4 381	3 903	3 780	16 708
25-29	4 440	3 911	3 522	3 514	15 387
30-34	3 978	3 424	3 425	3 264	14 091
35-39	3 953	3 433	3 230	3 418	14 034
40-44	4 284	3 731	3 551	3 443	15 009
45-49	4 230	3 784	3 534	3 618	15 166
50-54	5 042	4 374	4 143	4 070	17 629
55-59	5 154	4 528	4 425	4 514	18 621
60-64	7 948	6 724	6 551	6 441	27 664
65-69	7 374	6 921	6 646	6 585	27 526
70 and over	31 297	28 978	28 103	28 389	116 767
unknown	731	537	395	464	2 127
total	152 856	142 862	126 316	125 747	547 781

Table 2.8 — Deaths by age, by four-year periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1992  
(continued)

age groups	1929	1930	1931	1932	1929-1932
less than 1	30 377	29 077	28 707	30 483	118 844
1-4	14 993	12 403	11 780	13 250	52 426
5-9	3 396	4 275	4 421	4 582	18 874
10-14	1 566	1 581	1 454	1 525	6 128
15-19	2 683	2 584	2 514	2 315	10 098
20-24	3 660	3 561	3 499	3 279	13 999
25-29	3 488	3 313	3 171	3 127	13 099
30-34	2 989	2 980	2 893	2 857	11 719
35-39	3 050	3 125	2 966	2 899	12 040
40-44	3 055	2 973	3 025	3 048	12 101
45-49	3 279	3 190	3 105	3 137	12 711
50-54	3 817	3 578	3 753	3 751	14 899
55-59	4 156	4 172	4 099	4 245	16 672
60-64	5 628	5 595	5 600	5 726	22 549
65-69	6 135	6 353	6 307	8 523	25 318
70 and over	25 876	27 321	27 818	28 020	109 035
unknown	676	171	113	128	1 088
total	118 824	118 252	115 225	118 895	469 196

Table 2.8 — Deaths by age, by four-year periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1992  
(continued)

age groups	1939	1940	1941	1942	1939-1942
less than 1	23 852	23 690	27 794	24 629	99 965
1-4	13 064	14 304	18 188	15 910	61 466
5-9	2 518	2 659	3 076	3 344	11 597
10-14	1 588	1 729	1 895	2 100	7 310
15-19	2 317	2 493	2 677	2 996	10 483
20-24	2 710	2 820	3 096	3 185	11 811
25-29	2 960	3 056	3 080	3 029	12 125
30-34	2 899	3 048	3 160	3 078	12 185
35-39	3 072	2 994	3 277	3 214	12 557
40-44	3 146	3 040	3 294	3 193	12 673
45-49	3 324	3 401	3 560	3 374	13 659
50-54	3 955	3 949	4 279	4 152	16 335
55-59	4 713	4 789	5 029	4 890	19 421
60-64	6 414	6 504	7 060	6 821	26 799
65-69	7 359	7 453	8 457	8 205	31 474
70 and over	31 979	34 034	36 763	34 204	136 980
unknown	207	223	252	207	889
total	116 075	120 186	134 937	126 531	497 729

Table 2.8 — Deaths by age, by four-year periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1992  
(continued)

age groups	1949	1950	1951	1952	1949-1952
less than 1	24 304	19 308	18 521	19 924	82 057
1-4	12 441	9 514	8 944	9 784	40 683
5-9	1 795	1 578	1 565	1 436	6 374
10-14	1 205	1 015	951	813	3 984
15-19	1 999	1 789	1 601	1 257	6 646
20-24	2 928	2 635	2 416	1 778	9 757
25-29	2 659	2 537	2 352	1 872	9 420
30-34	2 270	2 021	1 999	1 687	7 977
35-39	2 900	2 501	2 372	2 023	9 796
40-44	3 055	2 844	2 888	2 418	11 205
45-49	3 605	3 233	3 227	2 972	13 037
50-54	3 949	3 543	3 858	3 470	14 820
55-59	4 802	4 369	4 585	4 267	18 023
60-64	6 291	5 970	6 231	5 729	24 221
65-69	7 980	7 178	7 701	7 315	30 174
70 and over	35 105	32 632	36 112	33 601	137 450
unknown	211	131	150	140	632
total	117 499	102 798	105 473	100 486	426 256

Table 2.8 — Deaths by age, by four-year periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1992  
(continued)

age groups	1959	1960	1961	1962	1959-1962
less than 1	18 878	16 576	19 308	17 300	72 062
1-4	6 792	4 926	6 800	5 305	23 823
5-9	1 059	901	1 057	1 029	4 046
10-14	635	575	586	539	2 335
15-19	699	674	754	698	2 825
20-24	985	912	897	818	3 612
25-29	1 208	1 091	1 060	1 120	4 479
30-34	1 395	1 295	1 321	1 290	5 301
35-39	1 627	1 562	1 606	1 570	6 365
40-44	1 912	1 759	1 756	1 738	7 165
45-49	2 660	2 589	2 619	2 473	10 341
50-54	3 361	3 466	3 576	3 631	14 034
55-59	4 453	4 455	4 583	4 708	18 199
60-64	5 539	5 702	5 870	6 156	23 267
65-69	7 429	7 691	7 804	7 734	30 658
70 and over	35 238	38 766	70 204	39 705	183 913
unknown	67	48	83	56	254
total	93 937	92 988	129 884	95 870	412 679

Table 2.8 — Deaths by age, by four-year periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1992  
(continued)

age groups	1969	1970	1971	1972	1969-1972
less than 1	10 580	10 027	9 408	7 234	37 249
1-4	2 293	2 330	2 003	1 623	8 249
5-9	654	727	793	634	2 808
10-14	479	475	515	483	1 952
15-19	751	677	713	688	2 829
20-24	718	728	776	736	2 958
25-29	748	708	771	651	2 878
30-34	1 057	889	925	799	3 670
35-39	1 441	1 255	1 393	1 187	5 276
40-44	2 008	1 818	1 897	1 669	7 392
45-49	2 674	2 444	2 744	2 538	10 400
50-54	3 480	3 069	3 309	3 223	13 081
55-59	5 507	4 817	5 168	4 691	20 183
60-64	7 626	7 074	7 570	7 225	29 495
65-69	10 398	9 274	10 172	9 489	39 333
70 and over	50 592	46 714	50 451	47 329	195 086
unknown	82	67	80	116	345
total	101 088	93 093	98 688	90 315	383 184

Table 2.8 — Deaths by age, by four-year periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1992  
(continued)

age groups	1979	1980	1981	1982	1979-1982
less than 1	4 172	3 852	3 317	2 992	14 333
1-4	911	856	701	653	3 121
5-9	474	498	422	435	1 829
10-14	470	430	432	396	1 728
15-19	911	961	1 083	991	3 946
20-24	991	975	1 088	1 027	4 081
25-29	845	848	922	883	3 498
30-34	825	911	892	903	3 531
35-39	1 044	1 048	1 132	1 077	4 301
40-44	1 628	1 713	1 683	1 527	6 551
45-49	2 482	2 528	2 679	2 492	10 181
50-54	3 643	3 737	3 792	3 650	14 822
55-59	4 831	5 107	5 214	5 009	20 161
60-64	6 177	6 384	6 554	6 352	25 467
65-69	9 869	10 085	9 789	9 129	38 872
70 and over	53 459	55 038	56 192	55 035	219 724
total	92 732	94 971	95 892	92 551	376 146



Table 2.8 — Deaths by age, by four-year periods based upon the censuses, 1919-1992  
(continued)

age groups	1989	1990	1991	1992	1989-1992
less than 1	1 444	1 279	1 259	1 068	5 050
1-4	416	338	355	324	1 433
5-9	268	255	272	222	1 017
10-14	320	321	322	260	1 223
15-19	720	823	867	793	3 203
20-24	983	986	1 011	998	3 978
25-29	1 016	966	1 053	1 020	4 055
30-34	1 044	1 038	1 161	1 169	4 412
35-39	1 139	1 241	1 268	1 363	5 011
40-44	1 534	1 572	1 633	1 722	6 461
45-49	2 039	2 060	2 125	2 223	8 447
50-54	3 091	3 212	3 150	3 007	12 460
55-59	4 659	4 873	4 887	4 655	19 074
60-64	6 690	6 929	7 188	6 742	27 549
65-69	9 143	9 908	10 002	9 608	38 661
70 and over	61 714	67 314	67 808	65 987	262 823
total	96 220	103 115	104 361	101 161	404 857

## Table 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality

**1919-1921**

Source — Calculations based on Tables 2.2, 2.7 and 2.8.

ages	${}_nq_x$	${}_np_x$	$l_x$	${}_nd_x$	${}_nL_x$	${}_nP_x$	$T_x$	$e_x$
0	0.15544	0.84456	100000	15544	88342	0.77381	4124463	41.24
1	0.15495	0.84505	84456	13087	298565	0.90594	4036121	47.79
5	0.03550	0.96450	71370	2534	350514	0.97212	3737556	52.37
10	0.01998	0.98002	68836	1375	340743	0.97655	3387041	49.20
15	0.02699	0.97301	67461	1821	332752	0.96674	3046299	45.16
20	0.03969	0.96031	65640	2606	321686	0.95909	2713546	41.34
25	0.04218	0.95782	63035	2659	308526	0.95700	2391860	37.95
30	0.04385	0.95615	60376	2648	295261	0.95423	2083334	34.51
35	0.04777	0.95223	57728	2758	281748	0.94932	1788073	30.97
40	0.05374	0.94626	54971	2954	267469	0.94266	1506325	27.40
45	0.06114	0.93886	52017	3180	252134	0.93154	1238856	23.82
50	0.07626	0.92374	48837	3724	234873	0.91083	986722	20.20
55	0.10315	0.89685	45113	4653	213930	0.87330	751849	16.67
60	0.15297	0.84703	40459	6189	186824	0.81606	537920	13.30
65	0.22051	0.77949	34270	7557	152459	0.56576	351095	10.24
70 and over	1.00000	0.00000	26713	—	198636	—	198636	7.44

${}_nq_x$  — probability of death by age group

${}_np_x$  — probability of survival by age group

$l_x$  — survivors from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nd_x$  — deaths from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nL_x$  — number of years lives by the survivors  $l_x$

${}_nP_x$  — probability of survival by complete years

$T_x$  — total number of years lived by the hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

$e_x$  — life expectancy

Table 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality (continued)

**1929-1932**

Source — Nazareth, 1977.

ages	${}_nq_x$	${}_np_x$	$l_x$	${}_nd_x$	${}_nL_x$	${}_nP_x$	$T_x$	$e_x$
0	0.14367	0.85633	100000	14367	91380	0.81909	4965566	49.66
1	0.08938	0.91062	85633	7654	318163	0.94564	4874186	56.92
5	0.01341	0.98659	77979	1046	387280	0.98723	4556023	58.43
10	0.01213	0.98787	76933	933	382333	0.98459	4168743	54.19
15	0.01872	0.98128	76000	1423	376443	0.97666	3786410	49.82
20	0.02805	0.97195	74577	2092	367655	0.97076	3409967	45.72
25	0.03048	0.96952	72485	2209	356903	0.96767	3042312	41.97
30	0.03425	0.96575	70276	2407	345363	0.96423	2685409	38.21
35	0.03734	0.96266	67869	2534	333010	0.96205	2340046	34.48
40	0.03859	0.96141	65335	2521	320373	0.95733	2007036	30.72
45	0.04692	0.95308	62814	2947	306703	0.94928	1686663	26.85
50	0.05471	0.94529	59867	3275	291148	0.93425	1379960	23.05
55	0.07743	0.92257	56592	4382	272005	0.90476	1088812	19.24
60	0.11454	0.88546	52210	5980	246100	0.85733	816807	15.64
65	0.17443	0.82557	46230	8064	210090	0.63060	570707	12.34
70 and over	1.00000	0.00000	38166	—	359717	—	359717	9.43

${}_nq_x$  — probability of death by age group

${}_np_x$  — probability of survival by age group

$l_x$  — survivors from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nd_x$  — deaths from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nL_x$  — number of years lives by the survivors  $l_x$

${}_nP_x$  — probability of survival by complete years

$T_x$  — total number of years lived by the hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

$e_x$  — life expectancy

Table 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality (continued)

**1939-1942**

Source — Nazareth, 1977.

ages	${}_nq_x$	${}_np_x$	$l_x$	${}_nd_x$	${}_nL_x$	${}_nP_x$	$T_x$	$e_x$
0	0.13115	0.86885	100000	13115	91213	0.83510	5087419	50.87
1	0.09106	0.90894	86885	7912	326336	0.93856	4996206	57.50
5	0.01507	0.98496	78973	1188	391895	0.98682	4669870	59.13
10	0.01129	0.98871	77785	878	386730	0.98573	4277975	55.00
15	0.01730	0.98270	76907	1330	381210	0.97957	3891245	50.60
20	0.02362	0.97638	75577	1785	373423	0.97585	3510035	46.44
25	0.02469	0.97531	73792	1822	364405	0.97420	3136612	42.51
30	0.02693	0.97307	71970	1938	355005	0.97104	2772207	38.52
35	0.03106	0.96894	70032	2175	344723	0.96614	2417202	34.52
40	0.03671	0.96329	67857	2491	333052	0.95956	2072479	30.54
44	0.04434	0.95566	65366	2898	319585	0.94937	1739427	26.61
50	0.05722	0.94278	62468	3574	303405	0.93108	1419842	22.73
55	0.08135	0.91865	58894	4791	282493	0.90030	1116437	18.96
60	0.11968	0.88032	54103	6475	254328	0.86308	833944	15.41
65	0.15651	0.84349	47628	7454	219505	0.62129	579616	12.17
70 and over	1.00000	0.00000	40174	—	360111	—	360111	8.96

${}_nq_x$  — probability of death by age group

${}_np_x$  — probability of survival by age group

$l_x$  — survivors from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nd_x$  — deaths from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nL_x$  — number of years lives by the survivors  $l_x$

${}_nP_x$  — probability of survival by complete years

$T_x$  — total number of years lived by the hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

$e_x$  — life expectancy

Table 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality (continued)

**1949-1952**

Source — Nazareth, 1977.

ages	${}_nq_x$	${}_np_x$	$l_x$	${}_nd_x$	${}_nL_x$	${}_nP_x$	$T_x$	$e_x$
0	0.09355	0.90645	100000	9355	92984	0.88317	5921455	59.21
1	0.05140	0.94860	90645	4659	348603	0.96868	5828471	64.30
5	0.00950	0.99050	85986	817	427888	0.99235	5479868	63.73
10	0.00578	0.99422	85169	492	424615	0.99237	5051980	59.32
15	0.00950	0.99050	84677	804	421375	0.98784	4627365	54.65
20	0.01484	0.98516	83873	1245	416253	0.98438	4205990	50.15
25	0.01641	0.98359	82628	1356	409750	0.98308	3789737	45.87
30	0.01745	0.98255	81272	1418	402815	0.98124	3379987	41.59
35	0.02010	0.97990	79854	1605	395258	0.97717	2977172	37.28
40	0.02562	0.97438	78249	2005	386233	0.97042	2581914	33.00
45	0.03363	0.96637	76244	2564	374810	0.96059	2195681	28.80
50	0.04540	0.95460	73680	3345	360038	0.94534	1820871	24.71
55	0.06436	0.93564	70335	4527	340358	0.91997	1460833	20.77
60	0.09678	0.90322	65808	6369	313118	0.87842	1120475	17.03
65	0.14905	0.85095	59439	8859	275048	0.65932	807357	13.58
70 and over	1.00000	0.00000	50580	—	532309	—	532309	10.52

${}_nq_x$  — probability of death by age group

${}_np_x$  — probability of survival by age group

$l_x$  — survivors from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nd_x$  — deaths from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nL_x$  — number of years lives by the survivors  $l_x$

${}_nP_x$  — probability of survival by complete years

$T_x$  — total number of years lived by the hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

$e_x$  — life expectancy

Table 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality (continued)

**1959-1962**

Source — Nazareth, 1979.

ages	${}_nq_x$	${}_np_x$	$l_x$	${}_nd_x$	${}_nL_x$	${}_nP_x$	$T_x$	$e_x$
0	0.08473	0.91527	100000	8473	93645	0.90146	638277	63.83
1	0.03285	0.96715	91527	3007	357087	0.97905	6289132	68.71
5	0.00593	0.99407	88520	525	441288	0.99526	5932045	67.01
10	0.00354	0.99646	87995	311	439198	0.99594	5490757	62.40
15	0.00459	0.99541	87684	403	437413	0.99447	5051559	57.61
20	0.00648	0.99352	87281	565	434993	0.99268	4614146	52.87
25	0.00817	0.99183	86716	709	431808	0.99074	4179153	48.19
30	0.01035	0.98965	86007	890	427810	0.98816	3747345	43.57
35	0.01336	0.98664	85117	1137	422743	0.98474	3319535	39.00
40	0.01720	0.98280	83980	1444	416290	0.97894	2896792	34.49
45	0.02498	0.97502	82536	2062	407525	0.95932	2480502	30.05
50	0.03652	0.96348	80474	2939	395023	0.95427	2072977	25.76
55	0.05528	0.94472	77535	4286	376960	0.92991	1677954	21.64
60	0.08576	0.91424	73249	6282	350540	0.88837	1300994	17.76
65	0.13992	0.86008	66967	9370	311410	0.67236	950454	14.19
70 and over	1.00000	0.00000	57597	—	639044	—	639044	11.10

${}_nq_x$  — probability of death by age group

${}_np_x$  — probability of survival by age group

$l_x$  — survivors from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nd_x$  — deaths from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nL_x$  — number of years lives by the survivors  $l_x$

${}_nP_x$  — probability of survival by complete years

$T_x$  — total number of years lived by the hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

$e_x$  — life expectancy

Table 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality (continued)

**1969-1972**

Source — Nazareth, 1979.

ages	${}_nq_x$	${}_np_x$	$l_x$	${}_nd_x$	${}_nL_x$	${}_nP_x$	$T_x$	$e_x$
0	0.05149	0.94851	100000	5149	95881	0.94287	6772192	67.72
1	0.01268	0.98732	94851	1203	375554	0.99118	6676311	70.39
5	0.00412	0.99588	93648	386	467275	0.99644	6300757	67.28
10	0.00301	0.99699	93262	280	465610	0.96609	5833482	62.55
15	0.00482	0.99518	92982	448	463790	0.99468	5367872	57.73
20	0.00562	0.99418	92534	539	461323	0.99357	4904082	53.00
25	0.00704	0.99296	91995	648	458355	0.99220	4442759	48.29
30	0.00856	0.99144	91347	782	454780	0.98964	3984404	43.62
35	0.01179	0.98821	90565	1067	450158	0.98552	3529624	38.97
40	0.01702	0.98280	89498	1540	443640	0.97923	3079466	34.41
45	0.02440	0.97560	87958	2146	434425	0.97400	2635826	29.97
50	0.02765	0.97235	85812	2373	423128	0.95967	2201401	25.65
55	0.05337	0.94663	83439	4453	406063	0.93155	1778273	21.31
60	0.08438	0.91562	78986	6665	378268	0.89505	1372210	17.37
65	0.12742	0.87258	72321	9215	338568	0.65937	993942	13.74
70 and over	1.00000	0.00000	63106	—	655374	—	655374	10.39

${}_nq_x$  — probability of death by age group

${}_np_x$  — probability of survival by age group

$l_x$  — survivors from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nd_x$  — deaths from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nL_x$  — number of years lives by the survivors  $l_x$

${}_nP_x$  — probability of survival by complete years

$T_x$  — total number of years lived by the hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

$e_x$  — life expectancy

Table 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality (continued)

**1979-1982**

Source — Cónim, 1988.

Remark — The probabilities of survival were calculated by us to ensure uniformity between the tables.

ages	${}_nq_x$	${}_np_x$	$l_x$	${}_nd_x$	${}_nL_x$	${}_nP_x$	$T_x$	$e_x$
0	0.02247	0.97753	100000	2247	98089	0.97590	7290530	72.91
1	0.00488	0.99512	97753	477	389861	0.99546	7192440	73.58
5	0.00264	0.99736	97276	257	485737	0.99742	6802580	69.93
10	0.00252	0.99748	97019	245	484482	0.99588	6316843	65.11
15	0.00572	0.99428	96774	554	482486	0.99385	5832361	60.27
20	0.00659	0.99341	96221	634	479518	0.99351	5349875	55.60
25	0.00639	0.99361	95587	610	476408	0.99334	4870357	50.95
30	0.00693	0.99307	94976	658	473236	0.99184	4393949	46.26
35	0.00940	0.99060	94318	886	469374	0.98828	3920714	41.57
40	0.01407	0.98593	93432	1315	463872	0.98229	3451339	36.94
45	0.02140	0.97860	92117	1971	455658	0.97342	2987467	32.43
50	0.03187	0.96813	90146	2873	443548	0.96108	2531809	28.09
55	0.04619	0.95381	87273	4031	426287	0.94172	2088261	23.93
60	0.70096	0.92904	83242	5907	401442	0.90914	1661974	19.97
65	0.11229	0.88771	77335	8684	364965	0.71047	1260532	16.30
70 and over	1.00000	0.00000	68651	—	895567	—	895567	13.05

${}_nq_x$  — probability of death by age group

${}_np_x$  — probability of survival by age group

$l_x$  — survivors from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nd_x$  — deaths from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nL_x$  — number of years lives by the survivors  $l_x$

${}_nP_x$  — probability of survival by complete years

$T_x$  — total number of years lived by the hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

$e_x$  — life expectancy



Table 2.9 — Abbreviated tables of mortality (continued)

**1989-1992**

Source — Calculations based on Tables 2.2, 2.7 and 2.8.

Remark — Similar results were obtained by Carrilho, Peixoto, 1993.

ages	${}_nq_x$	${}_np_x$	$l_x$	${}_nd_x$	${}_nL_x$	${}_nP_x$	$T_x$	$e_x$
0	0.01084	0.98916	100000	1084	98970	0.98680	7477494	74.77
1	0.00328	0.99672	98916	325	394430	0.99812	7378524	74.59
5	0.00197	0.99803	98591	194	492472	0.99804	6984093	70.84
10	0.00195	0.99805	98398	192	491507	0.99666	6491621	65.97
15	0.00472	0.99528	98205	464	489867	0.99440	6000114	61.10
20	0.00648	0.99352	97741	633	487125	0.99329	5510247	56.38
25	0.00695	0.99305	97108	675	483854	0.99257	5023123	51.73
30	0.00791	0.99209	96433	763	480260	0.99133	4539268	47.07
35	0.00943	0.99057	95671	902	476098	0.98897	4059008	42.43
40	0.01265	0.98735	94769	1199	470846	0.98451	3582910	37.81
45	0.01837	0.96163	93570	1719	463553	0.97713	3112064	33.26
50	0.02746	0.97254	91851	2522	452951	0.96560	2648511	28.83
55	0.04154	0.96846	89329	3711	437368	0.94818	2195560	24.58
60	0.06255	0.93745	85618	5355	414702	0.92040	1758193	20.54
65	0.09778	0.90222	80263	7848	381693	0.71589	1343490	16.74
70 and over	1.00000	0.00000	72414	—	961797	—	961797	13.28

${}_nq_x$  — probability of death by age group

${}_np_x$  — probability of survival by age group

$l_x$  — survivors from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nd_x$  — deaths from a hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

${}_nL_x$  — number of years lives by the survivors  $l_x$

${}_nP_x$  — probability of survival by complete years

$T_x$  — total number of years lived by the hypothetical population of 100 000 individuals

$e_x$  — life expectancy

**Table 2.10 — Legal emigration and estimated illegal emigration, 1885-1988**

Source — Baganha, 1990, Baganha, 1991, Baganha, 1993, Pereira, 1993 and Baganha,1994.

year	legal	illegal	total
1855	11 557	578	12 135
1856	10 288	514	10 802
1857	9 861	493	10 354
1858	8 963	448	9 411
1859	9 309	465	9 774
1860	6 524	326	6 850
1861	5 945	297	6 242
1862	5 674	284	5 958
1863	4 411	221	4 632
1864	4 517	226	4 743
1865	4 175	209	4 384
1866	6 469	323	6 792
1867	7 150	358	7 508
1868	7 127	356	7 483
1869	8 380	419	8 799
1870	9 655	483	10 138
1871	12 728	636	13 364
1872	17 284	864	18 148
1873	12 996	650	13 646
1874	14 835	742	15 577
1875	15 440	772	16 212
1876	11 035	552	11 587
1877	11 057	553	11 610
1878	9 917	496	10 413
1879	13 211	1 717	14 928
1880	12 597	1 638	14 235
1881	14 637	1 903	16 540
1882	18 272	2 375	20 647

year	legal	illegal	total
1883	19 251	2 503	21 754
1884	17 518	2 277	19 795
1885	15 004	1 951	16 955
1886	13 998	1 820	15 818
1887	16 992	2 209	19 201
1888	23 981	3 118	27 099
1889	20 614	2 680	23 294
1890	29 427	3 826	33 253
1891	33 585	4 366	37 951
1892	21 074	3 161	24 235
1893	30 383	4 557	34 940
1894	26 911	4 037	30 948
1895	44 746	6 712	51 458
1896	27 680	4 152	31 832
1897	21 334	3 200	24 534
1898	23 604	3 541	27 145
1899	17 774	2 666	20 440
1900	21 235	3 185	24 420
1901	20 646	3 097	23 743
1902	24 170	3 626	27 796
1903	21 611	3 242	24 853
1904	28 304	4 246	32 550
1905	33 610	5 042	38 652
1906	38 093	5 714	43 807
1907	41 950	6 293	48 243
1908	40 145	6 022	46 167
1909	38 223	5 733	43 956
1910	39 515	5 927	45 442

Table 2.10 — Legal emigration and estimated illegal emigration, 1885-1988 (continued)

year	legal	illegal	total
1911	59 661	4 176	63 837
1912	88 929	6 225	95 154
1913	77 645	5 435	83 080
1914	25 730	1 801	27 531
1915	19 314	1 352	20666
1916	24 897	1 743	26 640
1917	15 825	1 108	16 933
1918	11 853	830	12 683
1919	37 138	2 600	39 738
1920	64 783	4 535	69 318
1921	24 597	1 722	26 319
1922	39 795	2 786	42 581
1923	40 171	2 812	42 983
1924	29 710	2 080	31 790
1925	22 884	1 602	24 486
1926	42 067	2 945	45 012
1927	27 674	1 937	29 611
1928	34 297	2 401	36 698
1929	40 361	2 825	43 186
1930	23 196	1 624	24 820
1931	6 033	?	?
1932	5 909	?	?
1933	8 905	?	?
1934	7 472	?	?
1935	9 140	?	?
1936	12 484	?	?
1937	14 667	?	?
1938	13 609	?	?
1939	17 807	?	?
1940	13 226	?	?
1941	6 260	?	?
1942	2 214	?	?
1943	893	?	?

year	legal	illegal	total
1944	2 424	?	?
1945	5 938	?	?
1946	8 275	?	?
1947	12 838	?	?
1948	12 343	?	?
1949	17 296	?	?
1950	21 892	0	21 892
1951	33 664	351	34 015
1952	47 018	389	47 407
1953	39 686	276	39 962
1954	41 011	179	41 190
1955	29 796	351	30 147
1956	27 017	1 079	28 095
1957	35 356	1 538	36 894
1958	34 030	1 570	35 600
1959	33 458	1 296	34 754
1960	32 318	2 841	35 159
1961	33 526	5 046	38 572
1962	33 539	9 463	43 002
1963	37 829	17 389	55 218
1964	43 320	32 256	75 576
1965	62 752	28 736	91 488
1966	91 607	20 388	111 995
1967	78 515	16 197	94 712
1968	68 981	27 246	96 227
1969	70 165	85 507	155 672
1970	66 360	116 845	183 205
1971	50 400	108 073	158 473
1972	54 084	61 461	115 545
1973	79 517	50 215	129 732
1974	43 397	37 462	80 859
1975	24 811	27 675	52 486
1976	17 493	21 699	39 192

Table 2.10 — Legal emigration and estimated illegal emigration, 1885-1988 (continued)

year	legal	illegal	total
1977	17 226	16 450	33 676
1978	18 659	10 199	28 858
1979	20 574	8 152	28 726
1980	18 071	13 710	31 781
1981	16 513	14 721	31 234
1982	10 276	5 324	15 600

year	legal	illegal	total
1983	7 276	5 521	12 797
1984	6 556	3 972	10 528
1985	7 149	2 396	9 545
1986	6 253	878	7 131
1987	8 108	?	8 108
1988	8 540	?	8 540

**Table 2.11 — Legal emigration by destination, 1886-1988**

Source — Baganha, 1993.

year	Brazil	USA	Canada	total America	France	Germany	rest of Europe	total Europe	other desti- nations	total
1886				13 039				260	699	13 998
1887				15 803				411	718	16 932
1888				22 952				349	680	23 981
1889				18 305				967	1 342	20 614
1890				27 038				482	1 907	29 427
1891	29 630			31 654				351	1 580	33 585
1892	17 321			19 573				297	1 199	21 069
1893	26 130			28 829				290	1 264	30 383
1894	25 773			27 336				239	1 418	28 993
1895	40 390			42 225				283	1 842	44 350
1896	23 998			26 190				330	1 160	27 680
1897	17 793			19 560				228	1 556	21 344
1898	20 131			21 443				207	1 954	23 604
1899	13 348			15 861				235	1 678	17 774
1900	14 493	4 174		18 829				441	1 965	21 235
1901	14 489	3 787		18 426				207	2 013	20 646
1902	15 003	6 841		21 916				290	1 964	24 170
1903	14 527	4 755		19 339				320	1 952	21 611
1904	21 449	4 351		25 963				379	1 962	28 304
1905	24 815	6 057		31 227				292	2 091	33 610
1906	26 147	7 631		34 094				369	3 630	38 093
1907	31 482	8 488		40 152				106	1 692	41 950
1908	36 362	3 105		40 046				83	866	40 995
1909	30 580	6 023		37 295				67	89	37 451
1910	31 280	6 819		39 359				48	268	39 675
1911	48 202	9 892		59 150				253	146	59 661
1912	74 860	10 775		88 383				329	122	88 929
1913	64 407	11 445		77 015				407	3	77 645

Table 2.11 — Legal emigration by destination, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Brazil	USA	Canada	total America	France	Germany	rest of Europe	total Europe	other desti- nations	total
1914	19 344	5 930		25 576				114	40	25 730
1915	11 438	7 070		18 830				390	94	19 314
1916	10 002	11 522		21 662				2 292	943	24 897
1917	6 935	4 560		11 593				3 381	851	15 825
1918	6 107	1 439		7 663				3 219	971	11 853
1919	21 228	5 246		26 883				7 989	2 266	37 138
1920	33 651	24 156		58 618				5 008	1 157	64 783
1921	13 838	3 592		18 387				5 167	1 043	24 597
1922	25 630	3 323		30 536				8 488	771	39 795
1923	22 272	3 706		28 395				11 195	581	40 171
1924	14 964	1 058		17 294				12 003	413	29 710
1925	13 288	589		15 697				6 818	369	22 884
1926	31 339	440		34 538				7 087	442	42 067
1927	21 153	692		24 375				3 073	226	27 674
1928	27 728	851		32 084				2 013	200	34 297
1929	29 792	1 421		35 898				4 122	341	40 361
1930	11 834	1 152		15 805				7 014	377	23 196
1931	2 541	694		4 055				1 328	650	6 033
1932	3 960	344		5 151				557	201	5 909
1933	7 202	424		7 872				720	313	8 905
1934	5 517	641		6 491				623	358	7 472
1935	6 917	596		8 228				434	478	9 140
1936	10 470	659		12 024					460	12 484
1937	11 613	789		13 505					1 162	14 667
1938	9 314	761		11 290					2 319	13 609
1939	16 322	730		17 466					341	17 807
1940	12 260	328		13 013					213	13 226
1941	5 891	125		6 191					69	6 260
1942	1 926	96		2 108					106	2 214
1943	502	158		660					233	893
1944	341	570		2 168					256	2 424

Table 2.11 — Legal emigration by destination, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Brazil	USA	Canada	total America	France	Germany	rest of Europe	total Europe	other desti- nations	total
1945	1 206	639		5 728					210	5 938
1946	6 955	168		8 123					152	8 275
1947	10 875	354		12 128					710	12 838
1948	8 770	637		11 474					869	12 343
1949	11 974	1 505		15 647					1 649	17 296
1950	14 143	938		21 491	319	1	81	401		21 892
1951	28 104	676		33 341	418	2	254	674		34 015
1952	41 518	582		46 544	650	4	209	863		47 407
1953	32 159	1 455		39 026	690		246	936		39 962
1954	29 943	1 918		40 234	747	4	205	956		41 190
1955	18 486	1 328		28 690	1 336		121	1 457		30 147
1956	16 814	1 503	1 612	26 072	1 851	6	167	2 024		28 096
1957	19 931	1 628	4 158	32 150	1 640	5	99	1 744		33 894
1958	19 829	1 596	1 619	29 207	6 264	2	127	6 393		35 600
1959	16 400	4 569	3 961	29 780	4 838	6	130	4 974		34 754
1960	12 451	5 679	4 895	28 513	6 434	54	158	6 646		35 159
1961	16 073	3 370	2 635	27 499	10 492	277	304	11 073		38 572
1962	13 555	2 425	2 739	24 376	16 798	1 393	435	18 626		43 002
1963	11 281	2 922	3 424	22 420	29 843	2 118	837	32 798		55 218
1964	4 929	1 601	4 770	17 232	51 668	4 771	1 905	58 344		75 576
1965	3 051	1 852	5 197	17 557	60 267	12 197	1 467	73 931		91 488
1966	2 607	13 357	6 795	33 266	63 611	11 250	3 868	78 729		111 995
1967	3 271	11 516	6 615	28 584	59 597	4 070	2 461	66 128		94 712
1968	3 512	10 841	6 833	27 014	58 741	8 435	2 037	69 213		96 227
1969	2 537	13 111	6 502	27 383	110 614	15 406	2 269	128 289		155 672
1970	1 669	9 726	6 529	22 659	135 667	22 915	1 964	160 546		183 205
1971	1 200	8 839	6 983	21 962	110 820	24 273	1 418	136 511		158 473
1972	1 158	7 574	6 845	20 122	68 692	24 946	1 785	95 423		115 545
1973	890	8 160	7 403	22 091	63 942	38 444	5 255	107 641		129 732
1974	729	9 540	11 650	25 822	37 727	13 352	3 958	55 037		80 859
1975	1 553	8 975	5 857	19 304	23 436	8 177	1 569	33 182		52 486

Table 2.11 — Legal emigration by destination, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Brazil	USA	Canada	total America	France	Germany	rest of Europe	total Europe	other desti- nations	total
1976	837	7 499	3 285	14 762	17 919	5 913	598	24 430		39 192
1977	557	6 748	2 280	14 826	13 265	4 835	750	18 850		33 676
1978	323	8 171	1 871	16 307	7 406	4 509	636	12 551		28 858
1979	215	8 181	2 805	17 532	5 987	4 400	807	11 194		28 726
1980	230	4 999	2 334	15 281	5 200	4 000	692	9 892		25 173
1981	228	4 295	2 196	14 498	8 600	3 100	4 109	15 809		30 307
1982	187	1 889	1 484	9 420	17 900	1 900	285	20 085		29 505
1983	197	2 437	823	6 242	6 300	1 500	166	7 966		14 208
1984	121	2 651	764	5 747	4 600	1 400	116	6 116		11 863
1985	136	2 783	791	5 842	4 000	1 600	109	5 709		11 551
1986	91	2 704	983	5 024	1 800	3 100	280	5 180		10 204
1987	28	2 643	3 398	7 757	400	3 100	258	3 758		11 515
1988	21	2 112	5 646	8 934	600	3 600	198	4 398		13 332



**Table 2.12 — Numbers of Portuguese emigrants entering some destination countries, 1981-1993**

Source — Baganha, 1990, Baganha, 1991, Baganha, 1993 and Baganha e Peixoto, 1994.

year	Germany	France	Switzer- land	rest of Europe	total Europe	Canada	USA	Australia and New Zealand	total
1981	3 485	8 700	3 200	3 034	18 419	3 562	—	1 711	23 692
1982	2 386	17 900	4 100	3 041	27 427	2 537	—	1 623	31 587
1983	2 029	6 301	3 518	1 707	13 555	1 787	3 478	1 142	19 962
1984	1 991	4 612	4 221	3 165	13 989	1 510	3 749	1 092	20 340
1985	2 126	3 393	8 125	1 470	15 714	1 761	4 016	1 408	22 899
1986	3 801	1 802	10 250	3 379	19 232	3 860	3 764	1 258	28 114
1987	3 687	379	10 945	2 059	17 070	9 423	4 368	1 687	32 548
1988	4 231	592	12 139	2 844	19 806	7 388	3 080	1 304	31 578
1989	6 118	900	14 078	2 508	23 604	12 312	3 972	1 032	40 920
1990	7 806	1 149	19 684	1 837	30 476	8 543	5 223	1 007	45 159
1991	7 806	1 091	19 588	7 540	36 025	5 910	4 524	—	46 459
1992	—	15 368	17 106	7 688	40 162	—	—	—	40 162
1993	10 825	—	13 424	6 134	30 383	—	—	—	30 383

**Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988**

Source — From 1886 to 1896, Movimento da População; from 1897 to 1900 and 1923 to 1940, Anuário Estatístico de Portugal; from 1901 to 1912, Emigração Portuguesa; from 1913 to 1921, Estatística Demográfica — Movimento da População; from 1941 to 1965, Anuário Demográfico; from 1966 to 1988, SECP, A Emigração Portuguesa — Dados Retrospectivos.

year	Aveiro	Beja	Braga	Bragança	C. Branco	Coimbra	Évora
1886	1 356	10	981	97	26	776	15
1887	1 850	9	1 347	115	57	1 559	6
1888	1 689	68	1 761	544	32	1 922	20
1889	1 959	33	1 579	653	54	1 365	22
1890	2 518	486	1 477	1 015	42	2 188	22
1891	3 290	43	2 467	996	60	2 538	21
1892	2 045	18	1 370	358	53	2 174	21
1893	3 806	136	1 784	647	79	3 975	34
1894	3 298	345	1 535	838	117	3 989	26
1895	4 851	222	2 492	1 483	110	5 382	20
1896	2 576	150	1 673	1 304	89	2 269	41
1897	2 482	113	1 432	746	97	1 811	23
1898	2 814	45	1 677	852	122	2 456	18
1899	1 965	48	1 214	414	110	1 977	24
1900	2 571	37	1 423	406	144	1 812	17
1901	2 163	44	1 200	764	154	2 103	21
1902	2 113	51	1 213	550	90	1 805	24
1903	2 173	32	1 318	394	113	1 799	29
1904	2 956	67	1 905	1 767	139	2 325	22
1905	3 455	86	2 173	1 252	172	2 539	23
1906	3 695	79	2 518	980	209	2 677	28
1907	4 330	76	2 604	1 417	146	3 910	27
1908	4 126	159	2 817	3 202	117	3 920	10
1909	3 820	102	2 526	1 675	119	3 238	2
1910	4 511	67	2 431	1 633	208	3 597	12
1911	5 560	1 100	3 421	6 476	345	5 183	12

Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Aveiro	Beja	Braga	Bragança	C. Branco	Coimbra	Évora
1912	6 306	342	4 863	11 532	745	7 583	19
1913	6 111	634	4 087	8 619	754	5 873	51
1914	1 954	36	1 783	1 411	369	2 104	14
1915	1 294	16	948	953	131	1 259	14
1916	1 398	52	1 031	1 211	319	1 147	43
1917	1 309	57	856	851	224	1 076	60
1918	1 122	57	633	766	207	1 157	63
1919	4 757	70	2 977	1 355	469	3 178	93
1920	7 989	83	3 267	1 352	971	5 304	65
1921	2 632	34	1 440	749	301	1 703	58
...							
1923	5 736	70	2 842	2 135	540	2 613	50
1924	3 988	136	3 074	1 536	483	2 950	50
1925	3 424	73	1 863	935	377	2 628	37
1926	5 201	146	2 625	1 999	563	4 605	76
1927	3 185	59	1 836	1 872	431	2 624	13
1928	3 755	50	2 145	2 167	536	3 603	22
1929	4 634	43	2 545	2 113	531	3 731	26
1930	2 877	78	1 615	831	374	1 433	18
1931	771	18	372	140	102	349	21
1932	975	38	459	178	70	414	12
1933	1 383	27	695	320	69	528	17
1934	1 111	27	207	252	83	501	20
1935	1 177	24	556	380	63	785	29
1936	1 727	1	777	704	97	880	2
1937	1 849	0	896	756	164	1 021	8
1938	1 307	6	941	924	147	869	4
1939	2 293	7	910	1 150	102	1 054	5
1940	1 809	11	576	732	89	734	6
1941	918	7	405	384	63	380	6
1942	331	0	127	148	10	126	3
1943	160	1	25	26	4	30	0
1944	187	5	15	34	7	32	3

Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Aveiro	Beja	Braga	Bragança	C. Branco	Coimbra	Évora
1945	784	41	153	78	83	178	6
1946	1 160	26	318	485	113	611	4
1947	1 675	24	519	670	104	828	2
1948	1 618	10	554	528	122	781	14
1949	2 027	22	804	633	224	1 234	5
1950	3 072	21	1 175	1 120	240	1 271	13
1951	4 279	36	1 849	2 411	304	1 919	18
1952	5 052	54	2 802	3 562	376	2 806	35
1953	4 476	40	2 143	3 019	504	2 203	37
1954	4 842	70	2 409	2 461	503	2 117	52
1955	3 856	71	1 642	1 715	468	1 364	35
1956	2 614	44	1 520	1 579	436	1 157	38
1957	3 113	110	2 462	1 959	670	1 368	45
1958	3 001	81	2 450	2 014	727	1 219	26
1959	2 525	92	2 258	1 833	667	995	30
1960	2 431	72	1 860	1 419	680	963	37
1961	2 798	54	2 058	2 074	812	1 091	16
1962	2 794	57	2 504	1 858	1 234	1 119	10
1963	2 902	77	4 217	1 746	2 109	1 092	32
1964	3 015	851	6 536	1 215	3 572	1 134	105
1965	5 477	1 043	9 050	2 458	5 633	2 067	426
1966	8 111	1 098	10 625	4 693	6 777	3 465	718
1967	6 218	1 043	8 888	4 037	5 802	2 738	429
1968	4 664	794	8 117	3 017	4 571	2 384	299
1969	4 411	1 926	6 360	1 934	2 257	2 290	355
1970	4 231	2 066	5 770	1 459	1 900	2 581	465
1971	3 644	1 909	3 141	1 017	847	1 523	582
1972	4 442	1 122	3 774	1 316	1 120	1 977	493
1973	6 177	1 815	5 862	1 892	1 743	4 094	825
1974	3 098	486	2 301	464	687	1 942	169
1975	1 658	150	916	140	301	640	45
1976	1 164	67	582	141	220	443	67
1977	1 073	145	564	194	264	507	69

Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Aveiro	Beja	Braga	Bragança	C. Branco	Coimbra	Évora
1978	1 155	138	699	203	277	536	75
1979	2 091	122	885	270	270	609	56
1980	1 987	93	769	237	265	613	63
1981	1 909	114	785	242	195	549	45
1982	1 544	57	607	55	103	349	32
1983	948	30	384	75	74	220	12
1984	702	19	281	46	64	171	19
1985	786	10	164	112	74	230	7
1986	511	28	79	92	81	299	6
1987	627	17	23	57	89	355	17
1988	780	35	507	32	84	496	13

year	Faro	Guarda	Leiria	Lisboa	Portalegre	Porto	Santarém
1886	179	221	167	290	15	1 880	30
1887	169	482	318	399	17	2 551	43
1888	112	610	367	420	20	3 050	45
1889	194	672	427	568	21	3 084	84
1890	186	916	723	509	41	3 791	67
1891	173	979	859	538	41	5 450	92
1892	143	756	644	523	23	3 310	100
1893	186	938	1 379	662	34	3 865	127
1894	153	1 284	1 303	632	40	3 759	165
1895	199	1 762	1 982	831	45	5 849	285
1896	205	1 064	1 027	712	36	4 148	223
1897	192	1 181	789	614	20	3 240	143
1898	161	1 472	778	523	24	3 214	178
1899	159	874	522	522	27	2 022	122
1900	202	989	622	770	31	2 535	189
1901	163	810	735	598	16	2 050	169
1902	165	821	636	605	34	2 007	166
1903	122	929	497	640	33	2 604	137
1904	150	1602	610	658	23	3 189	155
1905	278	1616	782	679	24	3 863	168

Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Faro	Guarda	Leiria	Lisboa	Portalegre	Porto	Santarém
1906	259	1 813	905	761	20	4 154	191
1907	227	2 353	1 173	340	23	4 675	181
1908	367	2 627	1 658	265	13	4 792	249
1909	389	2 273	1 433	269	10	4 351	173
1910	704	2 614	1 548	267	9	3 652	207
1911	877	3 682	3 095	402	25	4 372	460
1912	1 687	6 992	5 427	638	46	7 837	793
1913	697	7 897	4 166	820	36	6 387	999
1914	274	2 152	865	312	17	2 776	292
1915	357	2 067	589	361	36	1 705	158
1916	312	2 247	793	1 448	91	2 180	403
1917	359	1 354	409	1 315	58	2 150	204
1918	298	1 131	362	1 284	49	1 640	233
1919	760	2 435	1 035	2 464	101	5 085	586
1920	1 322	5 698	2 019	1 911	157	5 704	612
1921	1 000	1 458	874	1 276	53	3 216	519
...							
1923	1 293	734	2 022	1 808	205	5 535	714
1924	973	451	1 835	1 067	121	5 575	679
1925	941	1 740	1 582	878	132	4 120	689
1926	1 331	3 451	2 180	2 231	153	5 841	704
1927	969	2 900	1 381	429	110	3 840	311
1928	1 308	3 011	1 931	420	65	4 417	568
1929	1 543	3 276	2 728	467	99	4 890	746
1930	1 333	1 503	1 443	358	119	3 359	697
1931	749	427	244	143	22	715	155
1932	318	409	186	124	60	728	72
1933	265	481	230	174	30	1 291	92
1934	235	497	176	185	19	904	68
1935	356	669	382	174	20	971	146
1936	391	935	393	153	20	1 528	121
1937	519	1 139	500	229	19	1 783	119
1938	668	913	494	166	10	1 426	100

Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Faro	Guarda	Leiria	Lisboa	Portalegre	Porto	Santarém
1939	387	1 224	585	179	14	2 105	206
1940	296	825	341	165	18	1 499	116
1941	185	379	155	173	2	1 000	43
1942	58	230	61	46	1	280	27
1943	12	51	10	47	1	69	14
1944	23	38	55	29	1	55	23
1945	169	98	150	22	4	498	83
1946	294	650	198	141	7	714	149
1947	399	1 204	347	203	12	1 280	105
1948	433	925	297	203	15	1 145	116
1949	632	1 293	481	402	25	1 488	148
1950	1 061	1 542	607	321	23	2 155	199
1951	905	2 392	1 236	620	27	4 211	385
1952	858	3 101	1 777	977	53	5 600	626
1953	585	2 957	1 595	942	35	4 418	712
1954	786	2 919	1 436	877	56	4 513	767
1955	808	1 925	1 240	655	64	3 083	660
1956	463	1 781	1 035	649	59	2 840	537
1957	707	2 098	1 446	780	76	3 077	999
1958	853	2 411	1 754	805	69	3 344	911
1959	694	2 060	1 507	813	67	2 668	872
1960	842	1 577	1 588	862	70	1 862	830
1961	790	1 709	1 990	1 997	38	2 582	1 147
1962	1 046	1 707	2 440	2 079	48	2 411	1 227
1963	1 249	1 790	3 587	2 931	52	2 939	1 949
1964	2 338	3 212	5 053	5 044	121	4 906	2 539
1965	3 782	7 106	7 549	9 204	365	8 856	3 755
1966	4 390	8 248	9 756	12 335	633	10 708	4 689
1967	2 965	5 443	6 819	7 126	461	8 343	3 525
1968	2 946	4 298	5 881	5 607	355	6 439	2 975
1969	3 538	2 448	4 892	5 215	241	6 249	1 881
1970	2 889	1 852	4 665	7 060	156	5 707	2 048
1971	1 763	1 007	3 259	6 413	146	3 882	1 711

Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Faro	Guarda	Leiria	Lisboa	Portalegre	Porto	Santarém
1972	1 138	1 185	5 072	5 448	187	4 968	2 375
1973	1 590	1 626	6 562	8 790	381	8 152	3 250
1974	502	766	2 968	3 746	147	2 365	1 445
1975	298	351	1 342	4 085	38	960	618
1976	272	450	759	2 398	39	706	540
1977	353	551	696	3 267	36	1 093	437
1978	448	675	698	3 351	40	1 204	409
1979	347	543	1 002	3 104	51	1 324	592
1980	267	394	820	3 147	50	1 284	557
1981	218	354	703	3 432	24	1 336	534
1982	155	180	338	2 052	20	1 168	439
1983	92	144	258	1 238	10	654	193
1984	51	141	266	1 550	20	582	131
1985	45	215	381	1 433	15	625	192
1986	87	207	425	1 059	15	376	234
1987	144	197	563	1 725	23	507	398
1988	80	144	669	1 302	6	417	456

year	Setúbal	V. Castelo	Vila Real	Viseu	Açores	Madeira
1886	—	595	1 074	1 495	2 133	2 658
1887	—	791	1 369	2 124	2 368	1 358
1888	—	897	2 339	2 579	3 952	3 441
1889	—	831	1 797	2 229	3 038	1 876
1890	—	1 036	3 070	3 726	4 699	2 752
1891	—	1 340	2 849	4 404	4 424	2 895
1892	—	883	1 492	2 389	3 032	1 552
1893	—	1 065	2 004	3 220	3 692	2 603
1894	—	997	2 713	3 935	2 608	1 065
1895	—	1 438	4 166	5 436	5 317	2 341
1896	—	1 087	2 573	2 923	3 586	1 868
1897	—	836	1 549	2 265	2 516	1 139
1898	—	1 041	1 894	3 522	1 750	875
1899	—	933	1 312	2 037	2 802	685



Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Setúbal	V. Castelo	Vila Real	Viseu	Açores	Madeira
1900	—	950	1 129	2 206	4 714	480
1901	—	698	1 260	2 316	4 282	1 097
1902	—	784	1 336	2 592	7 867	1 126
1903	—	842	1 171	2 801	4 927	854
1904	—	1 146	1 951	3 569	4 713	1 178
1905	—	1 262	2 290	4 513	6 365	1 844
1906	—	1 591	2 173	4 836	7 691	3 211
1907	—	1 688	2 796	5 240	7 999	2 678
1908	—	1 511	4 059	5 797	3 097	1 347
1909	—	1 614	3 331	4 961	5 444	2 483
1910	—	1 783	3 140	5 416	5 568	2 135
1911	—	2 223	5 356	6 971	7 794	2 298
1912	—	2 981	8 190	11 764	7 953	3 222
1913	—	2 476	6 429	11 733	6 517	3 295
1914	—	1 006	2 484	3 069	3 812	992
1915	—	469	1 500	2 232	3 938	1 271
1916	—	621	1 994	2 072	5 036	2 323
1917	—	334	945	1 551	2 016	611
1918	—	427	676	1 216	247	104
1919	—	1 201	2 424	4 719	1 497	1 695
1920	—	2 703	3 003	8 041	8 073	6 437
1921	—	1 108	1 233	2 767	2 710	1 391
...						
1923	—	2 011	2 621	5 403	1 628	2 112
1924	—	174	1 911	3 581	789	1 271
1925	—	143	1 271	690	295	1 004
1926	—	334	2 120	6 277	870	1 293
1927	52	243	1 822	3 929	754	885
1928	28	1 464	1 814	4 978	871	1 098
1929	45	713	2 276	5 487	1 297	2 136
1930	52	860	1 409	3 030	834	949
1931	18	240	237	681	275	343
1932	6	253	363	816	131	252

Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Setúbal	V. Castelo	Vila Real	Viseu	Açores	Madeira
1933	17	381	662	1 615	190	406
1934	5	288	453	1 341	186	578
1935	13	278	517	1 555	181	821
1936	0	620	824	2 123	920	*
1937	4	593	912	2 390	365	1 097
1938	3	623	619	1 945	360	1 785
1939	14	853	954	2 363	640	2 569
1940	17	461	602	1 651	355	2 783
1941	16	247	265	800	95	659
1942	7	69	131	267	6	243
1943	1	22	37	92	32	203
1944	1	17	21	49	222	1 474
1945	10	95	93	179	133	2 769
1946	20	310	353	817	275	1 370
1947	11	508	553	1 501	295	1 992
1948	25	425	561	1 450	152	2 067
1949	40	682	798	2 025	1 008	2 065
1950	52	997	919	2 377	895	3 147
1951	70	1 602	1 873	4 288	805	3 771
1952	133	2 214	2 910	5 791	544	6 968
1953	124	1 518	2 481	4 537	1 033	5 572
1954	117	1 653	2 196	4 691	2 025	5 510
1955	106	1 232	1 636	2 874	1 126	4 722
1956	104	1 186	1 396	2 630	2 196	4 332
1957	144	2 191	1 904	3 256	3 540	4 910
1958	141	1 896	1 935	3 394	1 993	4 554
1959	123	1 414	1 710	2 462	6 562	3 675
1960	175	1 350	1 458	2 085	7 010	4 707
1961	182	1 584	1 563	2 282	3 940	4 797
1962	226	1 824	1 514	2 045	2 820	4 559
1963	323	2 258	1 341	2 010	3 402	3 494
1964	914	4 350	1 324	2 308	3 522	3 582
1965	2 122	6 349	3 162	3 827	3 687	3 118

Table 2.13 — Legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	Setúbal	V. Castelo	Vila Real	Viseu	Açores	Madeira
1966	2 944	6 989	5 286	4 415	10 704	3 650
1967	1 741	5 117	3 646	3 736	11 232	3 188
1968	1 443	4 161	2 924	3 837	12 813	2 925
1969	1 235	2 450	2 904	4 062	13 125	2 392
1970	1 399	2 154	2 608	5 089	9 871	2 389
1971	1 575	1 346	1 874	2 937	9 361	2 460
1972	1 438	1 742	2 150	3 019	8 624	2 493
1973	3 059	2 344	3 342	5 132	7 893	4 973
1974	782	1 301	1 761	1 701	12 400	4 356
1975	422	689	836	617	7 947	2 751
1976	492	519	760	465	5 610	1 799
1977	822	460	650	558	4 208	1 279
1978	1 015	449	717	791	4 848	931
1979	1 072	656	935	830	5 012	803
1980	863	553	601	727	4 378	403
1981	994	719	770	608	2 544	438
1982	642	474	274	315	1 183	289
1983	292	375	315	246	1 347	189
1984	306	295	303	198	1 281	130
1985	290	186	353	194	1 660	177
1986	401	153	419	151	1 526	122
1987	487	67	337	245	2 074	156
1988	373	334	389	243	3 039	141

\* Value included in that of the Azores.

**Table 2.14 — Summary of legal emigration by district, 1886-1988**

Source — From 1886 to 1896, Movimento da População; from 1897 to 1900 and 1923 to 1940, Anuário Estatístico de Portugal; from 1901 to 1912, Emigração Portuguesa; from 1913 to 1921, Estatística Demográfica — Movimento da População; from 1941 to 1965, Anuário Demográfico; from 1966 to 1988, SECP, A Emigração Portuguesa — Dados Retrospectivos.

district	Aveiro	Beja	Braga	Bragança	C. Branco	Coimbra	Évora
1890-1899	29 645	1 606	17 121	8 653	879	28 759	250
1900-1909	31 402	733	19 697	12 407	1 403	26 128	203
1910-1919	34 322	2 431	23 030	34 807	3 771	32 157	381
1920-1929	40 544	694	23 252	14 858	4 673	28 761	397
1930-1939	15 470	226	7 728	5 635	1 271	7 834	136
1940-1949	10 669	149	3 496	3 718	819	4 934	49
1950-1959	36 830	619	20 710	21 673	4 895	16 419	329
1960-1969	42 821	7 015	60 215	24 451	33 447	18 343	2 427
1970-1979	28 733	8 020	24 494	7 096	7 629	14 852	2 846
1980-1988	9 794	403	3 599	948	1 029	3 282	214

district	Faro	Guarda	Leiria	Lisboa	Portalegre	Porto	Santarém
1890-1899	1 757	11 226	10 006	6 066	331	38 648	1 502
1900-1909	2 322	15 833	9 051	5 585	227	34 220	1 778
1910-1919	6 325	32 571	50 860	9 311	470	37 784	4 335
1920-1929	10 680	22 719	16 552	10 487	1 095	43 138	5 542
1930-1939	5 221	8 197	4 633	1 885	333	14 810	1 776
1940-1949	2 501	5 693	2 095	1 531	86	8 028	824
1950-1959	7 720	23 186	13 633	7 439	529	35 909	6 668
1960-1969	23 886	37 538	49 555	52 400	2 384	55 295	24 517
1970-1979	9 600	9 006	27 023	47 662	1 221	30 361	13 425
1980-1988	1 139	1 976	4 423	16 938	183	6 949	3 134

Table 2.14 — Summary of legal emigration by district, 1886-1988 (continued)

district	Setúbal	V. Castelo	Vila Real	Viseu	Açores	Madeira	total
1890-1899	—	10 656	23 622	33 857	34 426	17 775	276 785
1900-1909	—	12 086	21 496	38 831	57 099	16 298	306 799
1910-1919	—	13 521	33 138	50 743	44 378	17 946	432 281
1920-1929	—	9 893	18 071	41 153	17 287	17 627	327 423
1930-1939	132	4 989	6 950	17 859	4 082	8 800	117 967
1940-1949	148	2 836	3 414	8 831	2 573	15 625	78 019
1950-1959	1 114	15 901	18 960	36 300	20 719	47 161	336 714
1960-1969	11 305	36 432	25 122	30 607	72 255	36 412	646 427
1970-1979	12 076	11 660	15 633	21 139	75 774	24 234	392 484
1980-1988	4 648	3 156	3 761	2 927	19 032	2 045	89 580

**Table 2.15 — Legal emigration by sex, 1886-1988**

Source — From 1886 to 1919, *Anuário Demográfico*, 1951, part I 'Dados Retrospectivos e Comparativos'; from 1920 to 1955, *Anuário Demográfico*, 1968, part I 'Dados Retrospectivos e Comparativos'; from 1956 to 1988, Secretaria de Estado das Comunidades Portuguesas, *Boletim Anual*.

year	men	women	total
1886	10 644	3 354	13 998
1887	13 640	3 292	16 932
1888	18 414	5 567	23 981
1889	15 818	4 796	20 614
1890	21 950	7 477	29 427
1891	25 090	8 495	33 585
1892	15 195	5 874	21 069
1893	23 482	6 901	30 383
1894	21 685	7 308	28 993
1895	32 192	12 158	44 350
1896	19 215	8 465	27 680
1897	15 650	5 694	21 344
1898	18 016	5 588	23 604
1899	13 141	4 633	17 774
1900	15 539	5 696	21 235
1901	15 074	5 572	20 646
1902	17 032	7 138	24 170
1903	15 931	5 680	21 611
1904	20 920	7 384	28 304
1905	25 414	8 196	33 610
1906	28 747	9 346	38 093
1907	32 144	9 806	41 950
1908	31 339	8 806	40 145
1909	29 650	8 573	38 223
1910	30 770	8 745	39 515
1911	43 069	16 592	59 661
1912	62 162	26 767	88 929

year	men	women	total
1913	52 915	24 730	77 645
1914	15 574	10 156	25 730
1915	11 928	7 386	19 314
1916	12 702	12 195	24 897
1917	8 439	7 386	15 825
1918	7 318	4 535	11 853
1919	25 894	11 244	37 138
1920	48 160	16 623	64 783
1921	17 979	6 618	24 597
1922	31 734	8 061	39 795
1923	32 161	8 010	40 171
1924	22 893	6 817	29 710
1925	17 078	5 806	22 884
1926	32 842	9 225	42 067
1927	20 177	7 497	27 674
1928	26 477	7 820	34 297
1929	31 973	8 388	40 361
1930	17 148	6 048	23 196
1931	3 737	2 296	6 033
1932	3 903	2 006	5 909
1933	5 646	3 259	8 905
1934	4 216	3 256	7 472
1935	5 824	3 316	9 140
1936	8 313	4 171	12 484
1937	9 578	5 089	14 667
1938	9 389	4 220	13 609
1939	12 427	5 380	17 807

Table 2.15 — Legal emigration by sex, 1886-1988 (continued)

year	men	women	total
1940	8 788	4 438	13 226
1941	4 081	2 179	6 260
1942	1 325	889	2 214
1943	585	308	893
1944	1 933	491	2 424
1945	5 158	780	5 938
1946	6 337	1 938	8 275
1947	8 017	4 821	12 838
1948	7 272	5 071	12 343
1949	10 524	6 772	17 296
1950	14 962	6 930	21 892
1951	23 406	10 258	33 664
1952	31 236	15 782	47 018
1953	23 976	15 710	39 686
1954	25 349	15 330	40 679
1955	18 250	11 546	29 796
1956	15 822	11 195	27 017
1957	23 118	12 238	35 356
1958	21 133	12 897	34 030
1959	18 034	15 424	33 458
1960	17 531	14 787	32 318
1961	19 590	13 936	33 526
1962	19 843	13 696	33 539
1963	25 149	14 370	39 519
1964	38 559	17 087	55 646

year	men	women	total
1965	59 139	29 917	89 056
1966	72 234	48 005	120 239
1967	48 117	44 385	92 502
1968	37 413	43 039	80 452
1969	40 505	29 660	70 165
1970	43 332	23 028	66 360
1971	29 225	21 175	50 400
1972	30 585	23 499	54 084
1973	51 660	27 857	79 517
1974	22 357	21 040	43 397
1975	12 287	12 524	24 811
1976	8 694	8 799	17 493
1977	8 896	8 330	17 226
1978	9 948	8 711	18 659
1979	10 953	9 621	20 574
1980	10 652	7 419	18 071
1981	10 178	6 335	16 513
1982	6 156	4 120	10 276
1983	3 986	3 110	7 096
1984	3 467	3 089	6 556
1985	3 759	3 390	7 149
1986	3 102	3 169	6 271
1987	4 136	3 972	8 108
1988	4 843	4 697	9 540

**Table 2.16 — Demographic characteristics of legal emigration, 1890-1988**

Sources — From 1890 to 1900, Movimento da População; from 1901 to 1912, Emigração Portuguesa; from 1913 to 1921, Movimento da População; from 1922 to 1940, Anuário Estatístico; from 1941 to 1955, Anuário Demográfico; from 1956 to 1988, Secretaria de Estado das Comunidades Portuguesas, Boletim Anual.

Remarks:

1 — Between 1936 and 1940, no data are available about emigrants' marital status.

2 — In 1976 and 1977, no data are available about emigrants classified by age group.

years	sex		age		marital status			total
	men	women	< 14	> 14	single	married	other	
1890-1899	205 616	72 593	61 562	221 647	153 157	115 904	9 142	278 209
1900-1909	231 790	76 197	58 682	248 805	162 335	135 352	10 300	307 987
1910-1919	270 771	129 736	80 479	329 528	219 731	169 880	10 896	400 507
1920-1929	281 474	84 865	23 374	347 929	181 310	174 670	10 359	366 339
1930-1939	80 181	39 041	14 948	104 274	24 810	33 647	2 198	119 222
1940-1949	54 020	27 687	12 030	74 677	24 170	19 405	1 189	81 707
1950-1959	215 286	127 310	70 595	271 585	169 020	136 387	5 521	342 596
1960-1969	378 080	268 882	171 434	475 528	306 954	329 594	10 207	646 962
1970-1979	227 937	164 584	99 757	293 615	184 026	202 502	5 989	392 521
1980-1988	50 279	39 301	21 695	67 867	39 545	47 789	2 228	89 580



**Table 2.17 — Legal emigration by sex and age group, 1955-1988**

Source — Secretaria de Estado das Comunidades Portuguesas, *Boletim Anual*.

Remark — No data are available about emigrants' sex and groups for 1976 and 1977.

year	total	0-14		15-19		20-24	
		men	women	men	women	men	women
1955	29 796	3 698	3 461	3 677	1 002	3 400	1 723
1956	27 017	3 575	3 125	3 576	1 052	3 115	1 715
1957	35 356	3 698	3 134	5 176	1 297	3 952	1 999
1958	34 030	3 960	3 408	4 637	1 382	3 691	2 179
1959	33 458	4 895	4 422	3 607	1 492	2 653	2 293
1960	32 318	4 942	4 170	3 413	1 507	2 229	2 142
1961	33 526	4 242	3 682	5 170	1 690	2 407	2 113
1962	33 539	4 240	3 580	5 514	1 654	1 213	2 032
1963	39 519	4 477	3 938	6 100	1 679	1 380	1 969
1964	55 646	5 686	5 014	4 701	1 683	2 597	2 277
1965	89 056	9 877	9 045	4 104	2 428	4 266	3 886
1966	120 239	16 126	14 584	5 631	4 069	5 403	6 299
1967	92 502	15 951	14 119	4 737	4 113	2 637	5 845
1968	80 452	15 299	13 533	3 164	3 977	1 340	5 932
1969	70 165	9 986	8 943	1 670	3 175	2 886	4 195
1970	66 360	6 620	5 747	546	2 598	3 268	3 774
1971	50 400	7 718	6 757	695	2 303	2 609	3 087
1972	54 084	8 949	8 002	1 059	2 608	4 564	3 543
1973	79 517	9 785	8 528	1 173	3 319	9 234	4 811
1974	43 397	8 916	7 942	1 241	2 330	3 214	2 778
1975	24 811	4 972	4 746	681	1 456	2 013	1 508
...							
1978	18 659	2 820	2 687	900	1 073	1 374	1 325
1979	20 574	2 797	2 771	1 179	1 281	1 571	1 662
1980	18 071	2 096	2 051	914	967	1 692	1 311
1981	16 513	1 807	1 660	985	850	1 760	1 184

Table 2.17 — Legal emigration by sexes and age group, 1955-1988 (continued)

year	total	0-14		15-19		20-24	
		men	women	men	women	men	women
1982	7 103	1 057	1 032	* 1 843	* 1 331		
1983	7 096	809	780	478	395	773	505
1984	6 556	873	794	386	370	582	494
1985	7 149	905	811	422	395	663	663
1986	6 253	718	737	359	453	564	554
1987	8 108	1 324	1 186	346	411	564	536
1988	9 540	1 537	1 518	452	464	608	597

year	total	25-44		45-64		65 or over	
		men	women	men	women	men	women
1955	29 796	6 712	4 244	673	927	90	189
1956	27 017	4 869	4 079	606	1 007	81	217
1957	35 356	9 109	4 298	863	1 066	320	444
1958	34 030	7 788	4 587	938	1 064	119	277
1959	33 458	5 642	5 622	1 089	1 303	148	292
1960	32 318	5 442	5 388	1 388	1 328	117	252
1961	33 526	6 287	4 676	1 329	1 431	155	344
1962	33 539	7 282	4 677	1 419	1 408	175	345
1963	39 519	11 089	4 922	1 896	1 522	207	340
1964	55 646	22 285	6 325	3 096	1 480	194	308
1965	89 056	36 755	12 087	3 948	2 120	189	351
1966	120 239	39 092	18 986	5 707	3 550	275	517
1967	92 502	20 550	16 295	3 943	3 465	299	548
1968	80 452	14 099	15 189	3 151	3 776	360	632
1969	70 165	22 553	10 032	3 065	2 734	345	581
1970	66 360	29 603	8 458	3 023	2 030	272	421
1971	50 400	16 447	7 138	1 537	1 533	219	357
1972	54 084	14 566	7 617	1 278	1 438	169	291
1973	79 517	29 427	9 164	1 838	1 683	203	352
1974	43 397	7 546	6 039	1 238	1 624	202	327
1975	24 811	3 395	3 289	1 017	1 240	209	285

Table 2.17 — Legal emigration by sexes and age group, 1955-1988 (continued)

year	total	25-44		45-64		65 or over	
		men	women	men	women	men	women
...							
1978	18659	3 847	2 547	882	926	125	153
1979	20 574	4 213	2 667	1 064	1 072	129	168
1980	18 071	4 801	2 092	1 024	842	125	156
1981	16 513	4 688	1 818	854	680	84	143
1982	7 103	2 665	1 198	493	450	99	109
1983	7 096	1 458	907	391	402	77	121
1984	6 556	1 176	947	383	407	67	77
1985	7 149	1 298	960	384	463	87	98
1986	6 253	1 021	915	339	415	79	99
1987	8 108	1 488	1 354	359	400	55	85
1988	9 540	1 804	1 647	381	391	57	84

\* These values refer to the 15-24 age group.

**Table 2.18 — Movement of passengers between Portugal and the Overseas Provinces, 1937-1974**

Source — From 1937 to 1959, *Anuário Demográfico*, 1959, part I 'Dados Retrospectivos e Comparativos'; from 1960 to 1974, *Estatísticas Demográficas*.

**A — Emigrants**

year	Cape Verde	Guinea	São Tomé and Príncipe	Angola	Mozambique	others (a)	total
1937	387	230	162	2 235	1 882	0	4 896
1938	274	295	197	2 752	2 330	0	5 848
1939	264	256	205	3 183	2 691	0	6 599
1940	324	250	145	2 714	2 535	0	5 968
1941	402	206	159	2 526	2 254	0	5 547
1942	390	368	152	2 808	1 499	0	5 217
1943	400	507	171	3 699	1 851	0	6 628
1944	216	301	137	2 616	1 855	54	5 179
1945	215	336	181	4 290	3 141	104	8 267
1946	320	373	194	4 990	3 854	489	10 220
1947	357	343	273	7 966	6 004	256	15 199
1948	289	337	337	7 882	4 813	150	13 808
1949	406	514	326	9 248	5 553	48	16 095
1950	330	400	319	12 369	5 610	15	19 043
1951	405	528	359	12 611	5 700	84	19 687
1952	354	645	410	16 871	6 420	385	25 085
1953	387	480	439	15 586	5 846	545	23 283
1954	551	527	443	16 062	5 758	358	23 699
1955	721	651	438	18 764	6 450	322	27 346
1956	786	701	461	17 683	7 991	223	27 845
1957	763	733	468	17 458	7 682	181	27 285
1958	853	747	522	19 896	9 368	283	31 669
1959	850	849	575	21 886	10 319	292	34 771
1960	917	1014	795	17 714	11 170	418	32 028

Table 2.18 — Movement of passengers between Portugal and the Overseas Provinces, 1937-1974 (continued)

A — Emigrants (continued)

year	Cape Verde	Guinea	São Tomé and Príncipe	Angola	Mozam- bique	others (a)	total
1961	808	860	500	12 448	8 177	306	23 099
1962	947	907	704	28 047	9 649	236	40 490
1963	1 094	1 005	568	21 146	10 134	203	34 150
1964	1 214	692	408	23 652	10 788	158	36 912
1965	1 376	698	620	24 493	11 276	172	38 635
1966	1 563	518	620	24 309	8 605	134	35 749
1967	1 890	433	449	20 980	6 330	102	30 184
1968	1 937	434	536	24 464	7 574	172	35 117
1969	1 594	404	582	21 050	7 231	47	30 908
1970	1 530	293	412	18 212	5 946	45	26438
1971	906	117	376	16 265	4 583	9	22 256
1972	1 716	140	336	16 355	2 960	8	21 515
1973	1 817	56	260	12 978	2 218	0	17 329
1974	526	0	78	7 644	54	0	8 302

(a) India, Macau and Timor

**B — Returned emigrants**

year	Cape Verde	Guinea	São Tomé and Príncipe	Angola	Mozam- bique	others (b)	total
1937	296	242	185	2 079	1 202	0	4 004
1938	256	227	181	2 271	1 276	0	4 211
1939	236	183	157	2 135	1 326	0	4 037
1940	314	109	149	2 078	1 202	0	3 852
1941	190	199	148	1 643	1 086	0	3 266
1942	334	293	158	1 865	1 432	0	4 082
1943	434	291	95	2 250	1 731	0	4 801

Table 2.18 — Movement of passengers between Portugal and the Overseas Provinces, 1937-1974 (continued)

B — Returned emigrants (continued)

year	Cape Verde	Guinea	São Tomé and Príncipe	Angola	Mozam- bique	others (b)	total
1944	243	244	187	2 284	1 477	63	4 498
1945	421	329	173	3 197	2 001	120	6 241
1946	405	393	213	3 480	2 450	877	7 818
1947	336	406	220	3 503	1 894	256	6 615
1948	278	334	291	4 963	2 821	103	8 790
1949	626	387	196	4 801	2 391	237	8 638
1950	357	314	213	5 392	2 765	145	9 186
1951	485	465	261	4 988	2 585	237	9 021
1952	499	388	303	6 737	3 128	457	11 512
1953	407	432	284	7 155	3 126	555	11 959
1954	466	489	282	7 242	3 169	720	12 368
1955	560	548	287	9 514	3 341	217	14 467
1956	529	624	404	9 105	3 024	451	14 137
1957	541	556	411	10 733	3 734	641	16 616
1958	485	592	509	12 414	3 863	453	18 316
1959	498	687	481	13 207	4 328	541	19 742
1960	671	802	531	13 849	4 233	549	20 635
1961	1 043	951	618	20 641	5 153	1 087	29 493
1962	1 655	607	549	12 564	5 229	2 162	22 766
1963	1 874	769	434	16 319	5 966	297	25 659
1964	2 247	620	521	15 366	6 204	430	25 388
1965	1 626	545	682	15 823	5 067	235	23 978
1966	2 018	567	554	16 348	4 711	242	24 440
1967	2 306	457	515	17 210	5 942	368	26 798
1968	2 479	460	499	16 400	4 934	225	24 997
1969	1 867	416	622	14 696	4 809	57	22 467
1970	2 749	236	377	14 867	4 578	126	22 933
1971	2 732	233	613	14 205	3 300	44	21 127
1972	2 427	77	679	10 322	1 990	133	15 628

Table 2.18 — Movement of passengers between Portugal and the Overseas Provinces, 1937-1974 (continued)

B — Returned emigrants (continued)

year	Cape Verde	Guinea	São Tomé and Príncipe	Angola	Mozam- bique	others (b)	total
1973	2 785	82	1 554	12 388	2 604	42	19 455
1974	1 443	0	745	11 645	1 158	10	15 001

(b) India, Macau and Timor

**C — Balance of emigration**

year	Angola	Mozambique	others (c)	total
1937	+ 156	+ 680	+ 56	+ 892
1938	+ 481	+ 1 054	+ 102	+ 1 637
1939	+ 1 048	+ 1 365	+ 149	+ 2 562
1940	+ 636	+ 1 333	+ 147	+ 2 116
1941	+ 883	+ 1 168	+ 230	+ 2 281
1942	+ 943	+ 67	+ 125	+ 1 135
1943	+ 1 449	+ 120	+ 258	+ 1 827
1944	+ 332	+ 378	- 29	+ 681
1945	+ 1 093	+ 1 140	- 207	+ 2 026
1946	+ 1 510	+ 1 404	- 512	+ 2 402
1947	+ 4 463	+ 4 110	+ 11	+ 8 584
1948	+ 2 919	+ 1 992	+ 107	+ 5 018
1949	+ 4 447	+ 3 162	- 152	+ 7 457
1950	+ 6 977	+ 2 845	+ 35	+ 9 857
1951	+ 7 623	+ 3 115	- 72	+ 10 666
1952	+ 10 134	+ 3 292	+ 147	+ 13 573
1953	+ 8 431	+ 2 720	+ 173	+ 11 324
1954	+ 8 820	+ 2 589	- 78	+ 11 331
1955	+ 9 250	+ 3 109	+ 520	+ 12 879
1956	+ 8 578	+ 4 967	+ 163	+ 13 708

Table 2.18 — Movement of passengers between Portugal and the Overseas Provinces, 1937-1974 (continued)

C — Balance of emigration (continued)

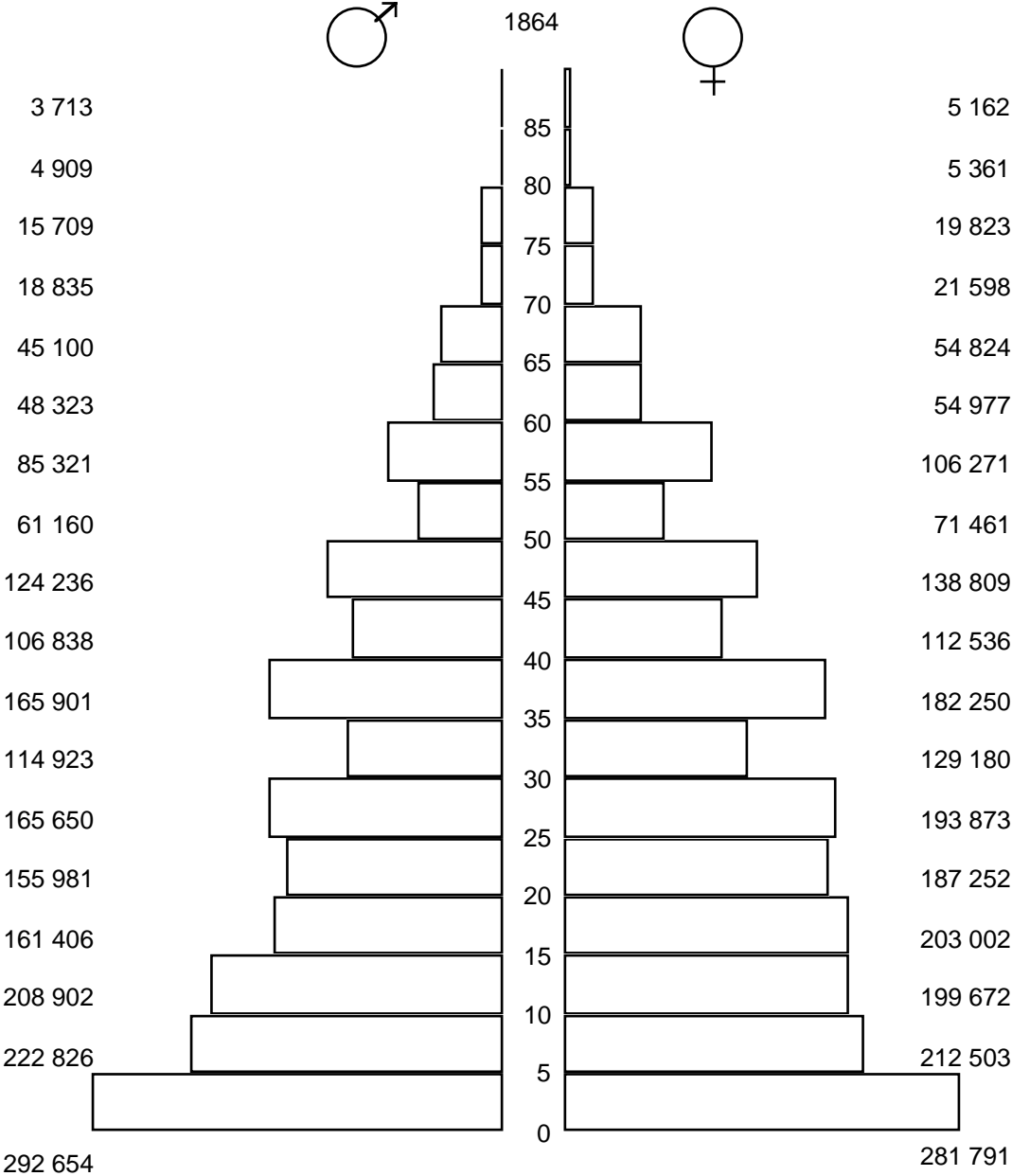
year	Angola	Mozambique	others (c)	total
1957	+ 6 725	+ 3 948	- 4	+ 10 669
1958	+ 7 482	+ 5 505	+ 366	+ 13 353
1959	+ 8 679	+ 5 991	+ 359	+ 15 029
1960	+ 3 865	+ 6 937	+ 591	+ 11 393
1961	- 8 193	+ 3 024	- 1 225	- 6 394
1962	+ 15 483	+ 4 420	- 2 179	+ 17 724
1963	+ 4 827	+ 4 168	- 504	+ 8 491
1964	+ 8 286	+ 4 584	- 1 346	+ 11 524
1965	+ 8 670	+ 6 209	- 222	+ 14 657
1966	+ 7 961	+ 3 894	- 546	+ 11 309
1967	+ 3 770	+ 388	- 772	+ 3 386
1968	+ 8 064	+ 2 640	- 584	+ 10 120
1969	+ 6 354	+ 2 422	- 335	+ 8 441
1970	+ 3 345	+ 1 368	- 1 208	+ 3 505
1971	+ 2 060	+ 1 283	- 2 214	+ 1 129
1972	+ 6 033	+ 970	- 1 116	+ 5 887
1973	+ 590	- 386	- 2 330	- 2 126
1974	- 4 001	- 1 104	- 1 594	- 6 699

(c) Cape Verde, Guinea, São Tomé and Príncipe, India, Macau and Timor.

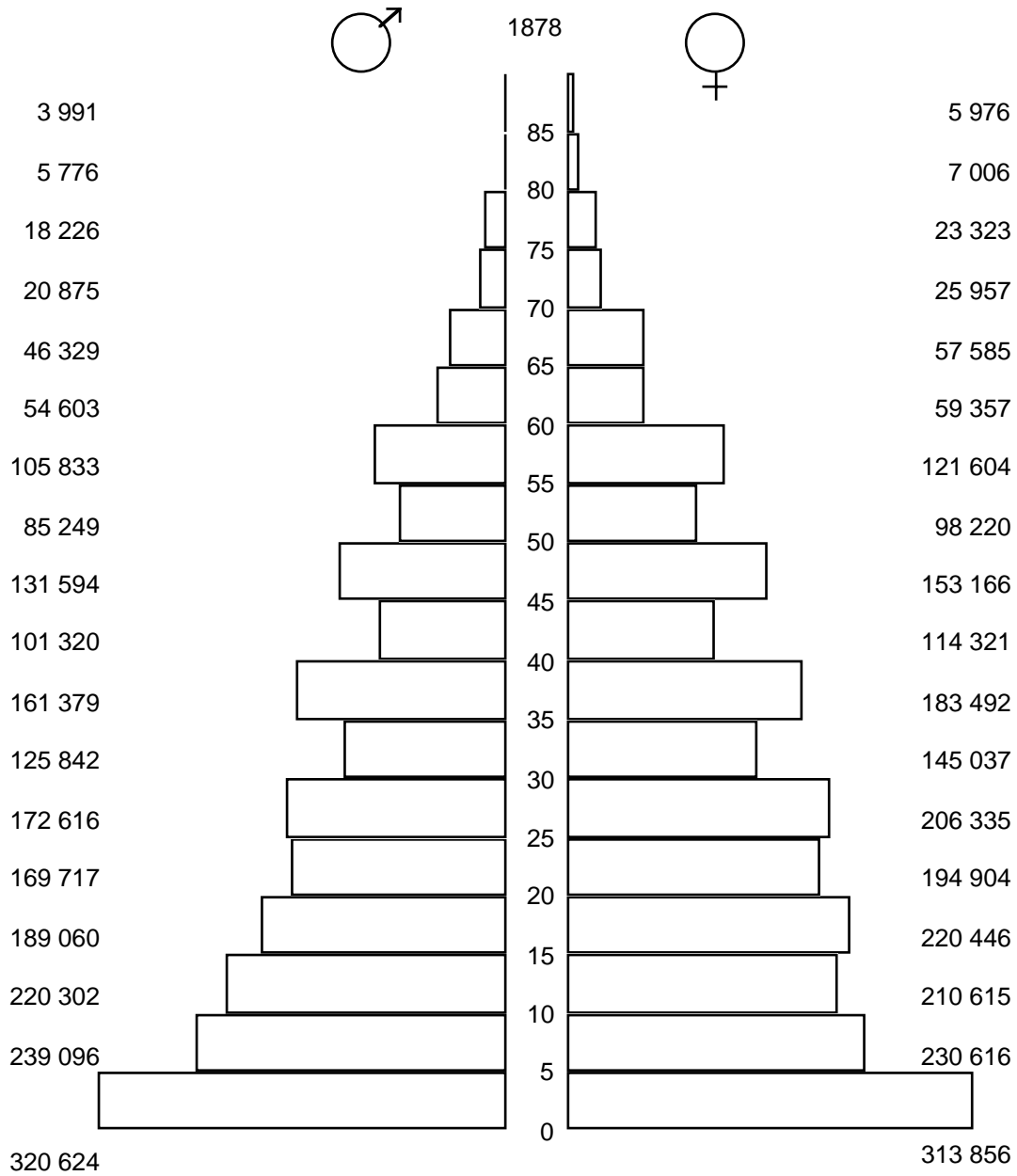


# Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids

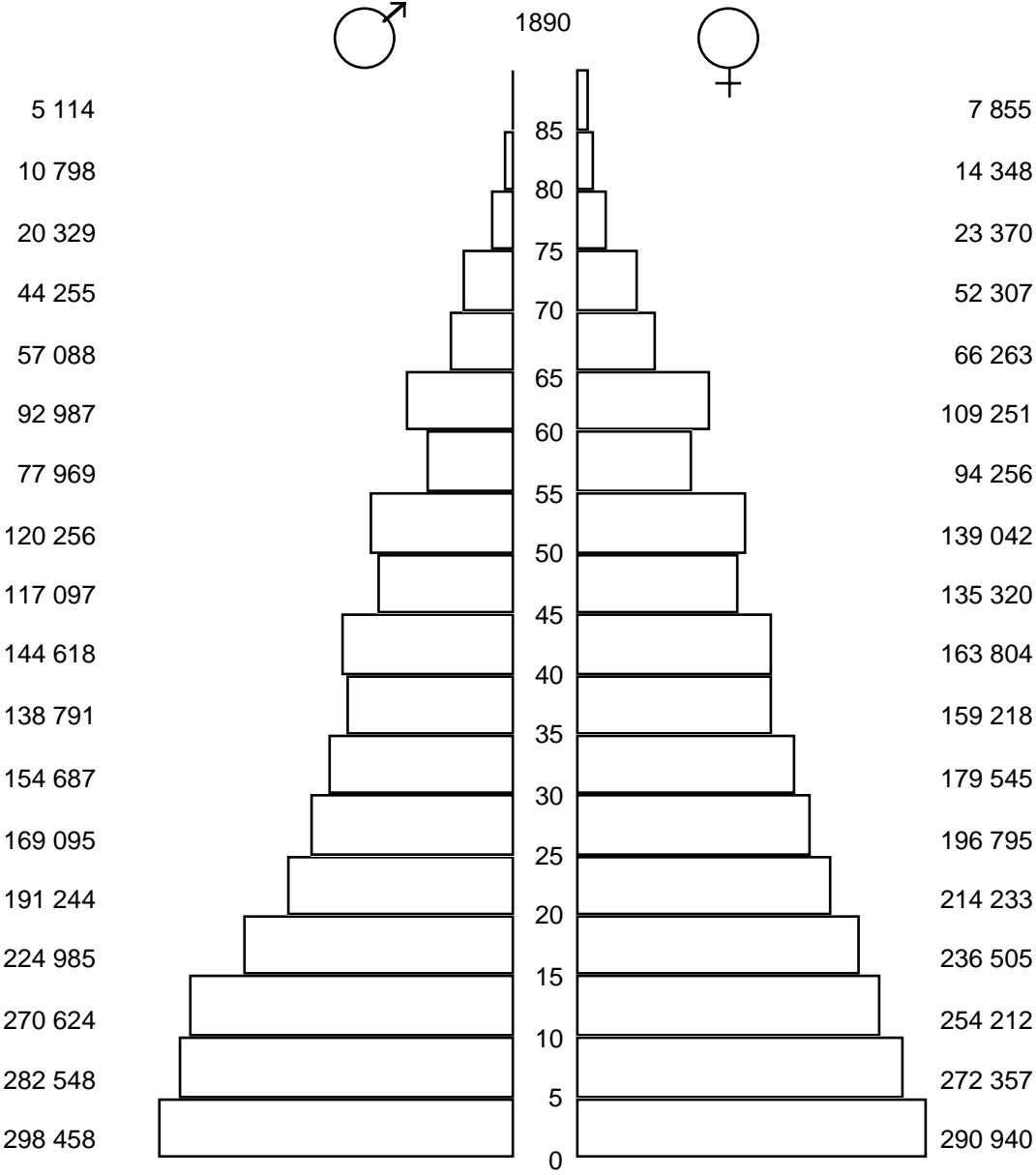
Source — Census for the respective year.



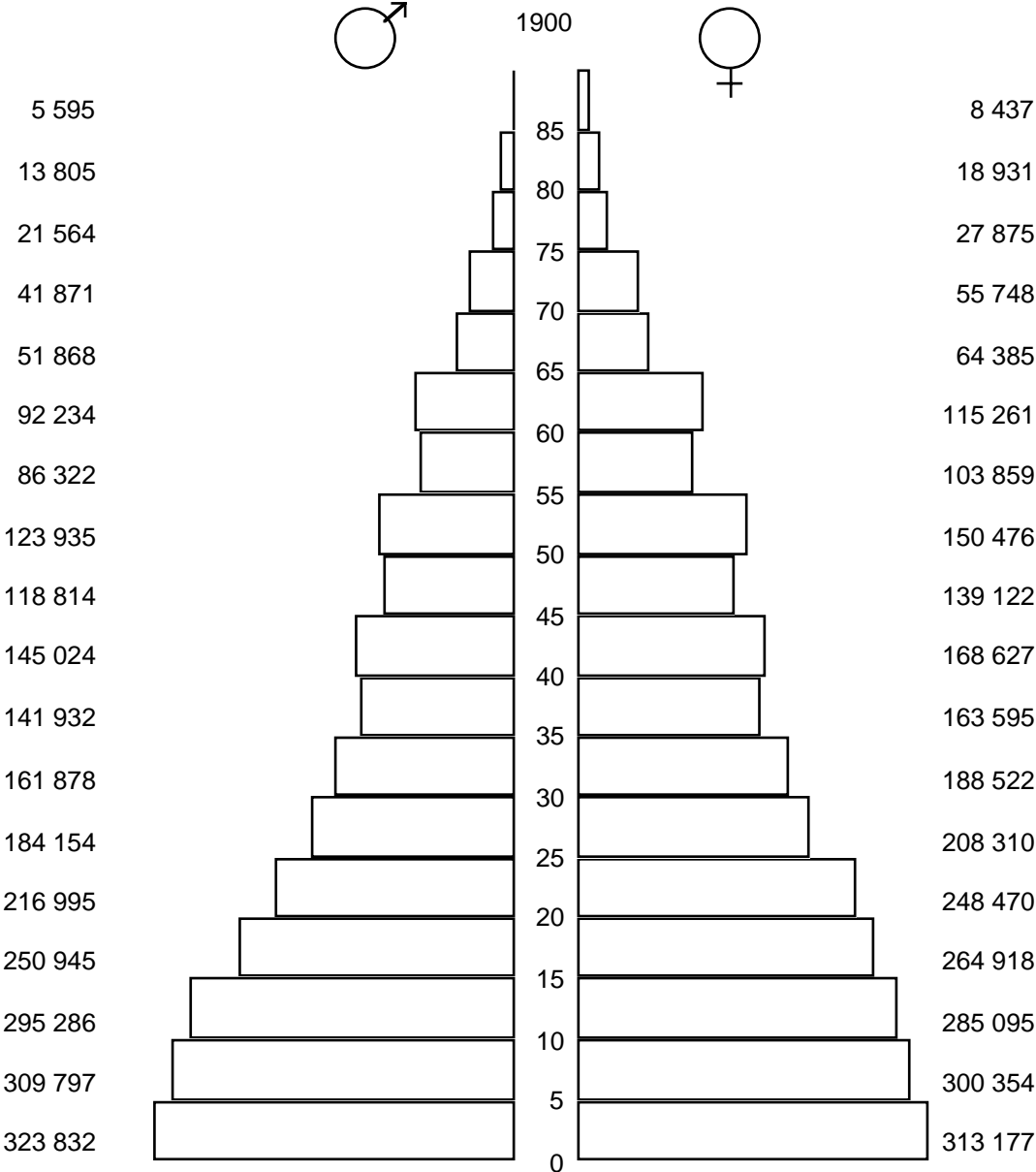
Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



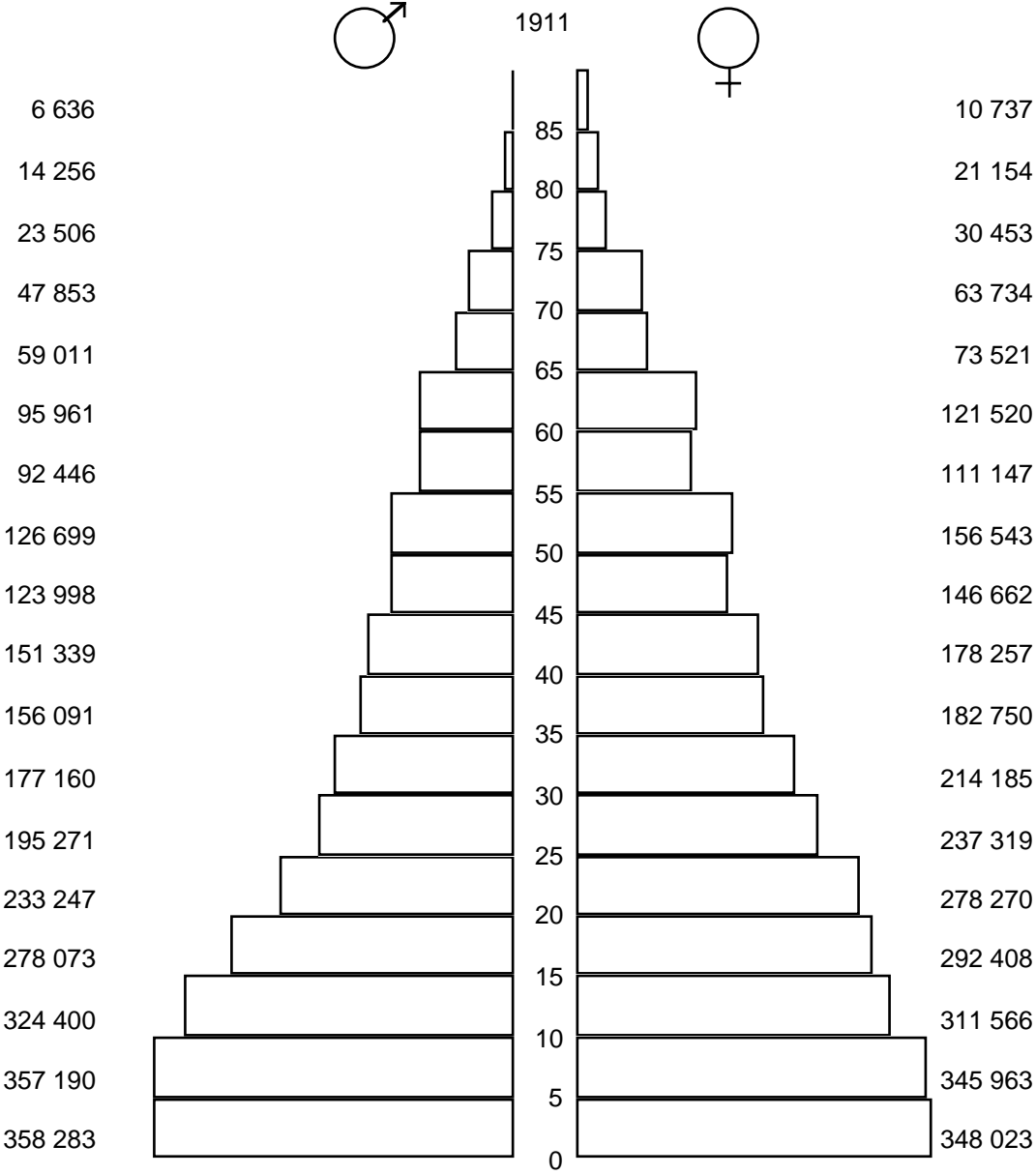
Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



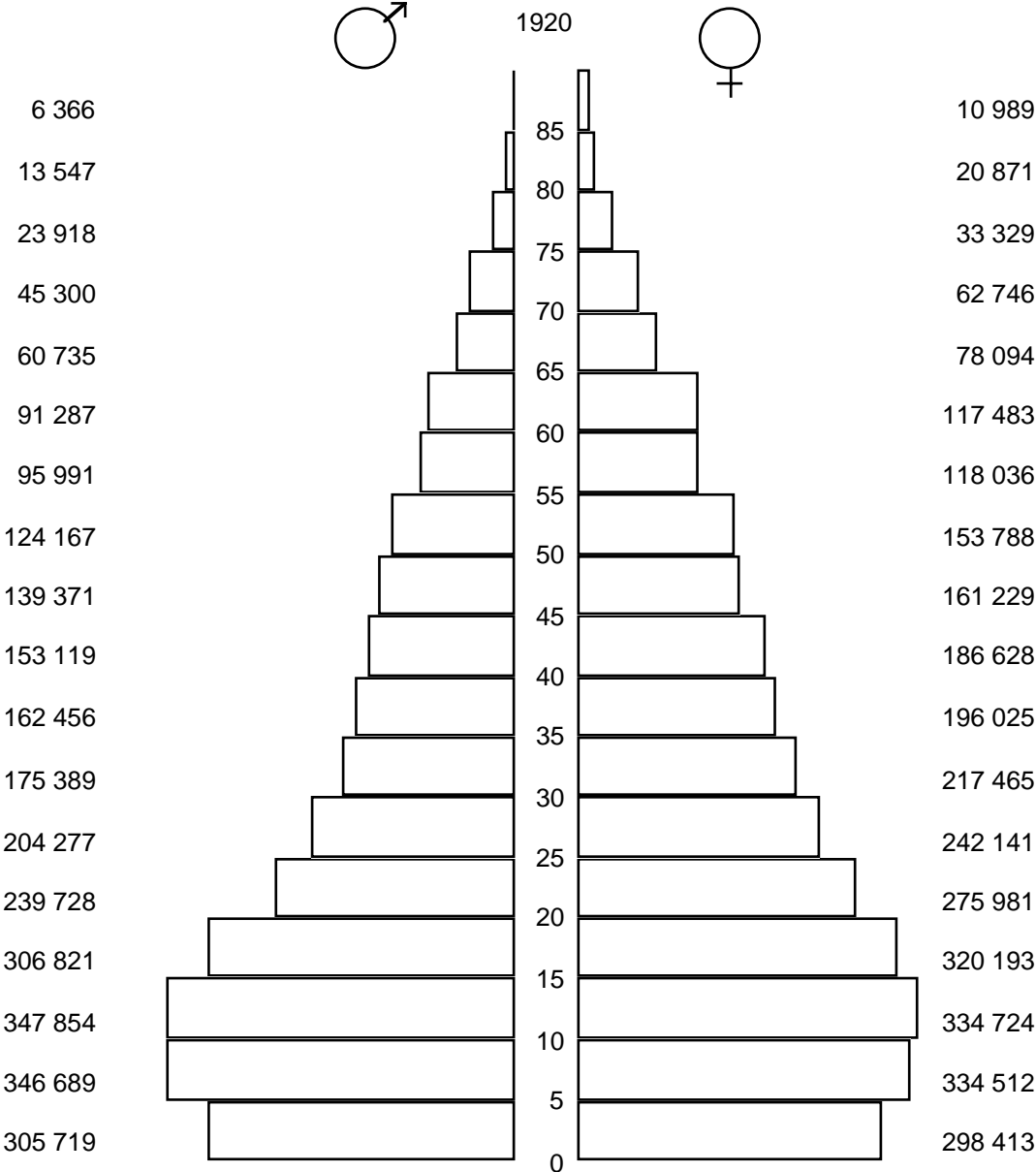
Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



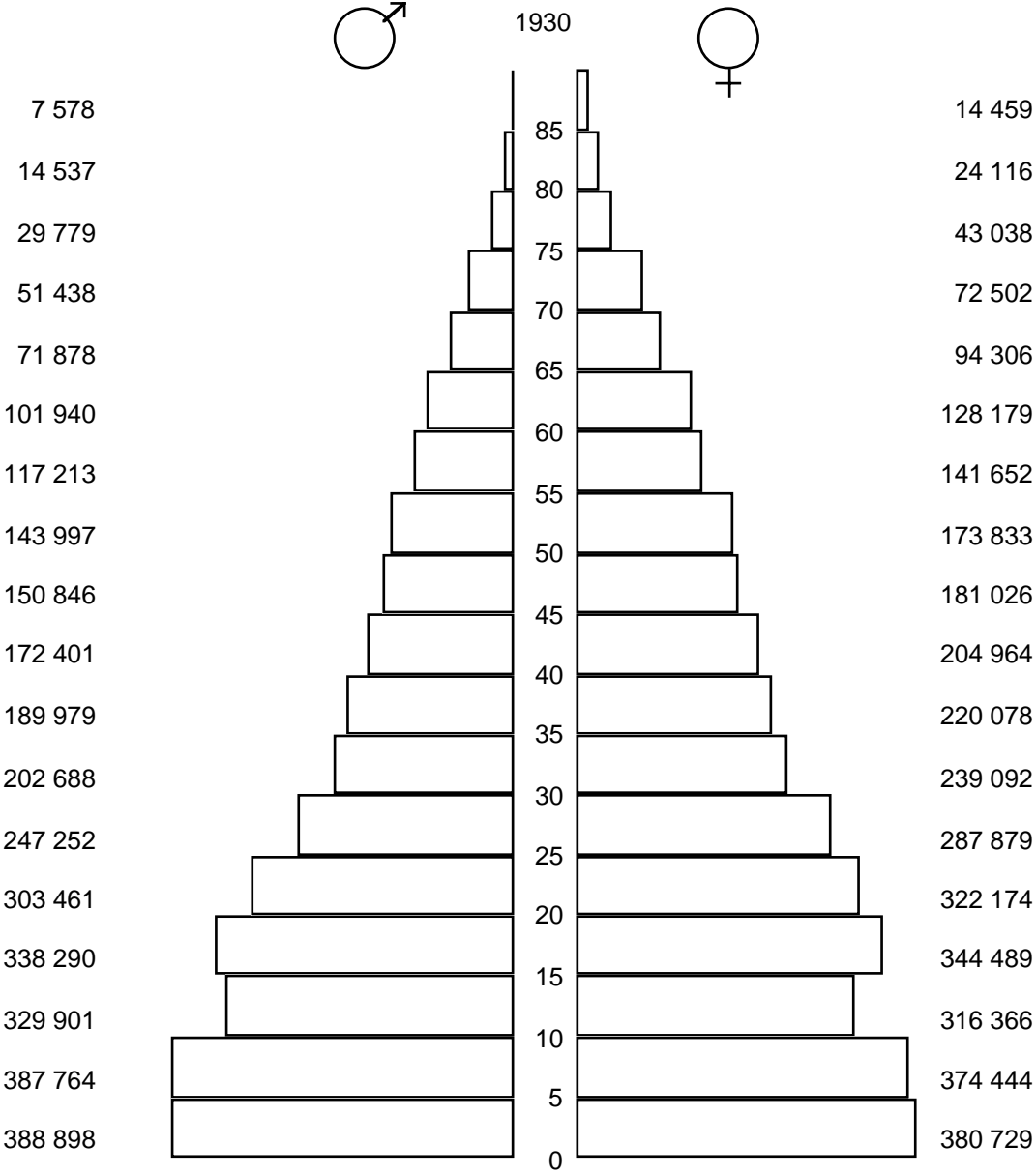
Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



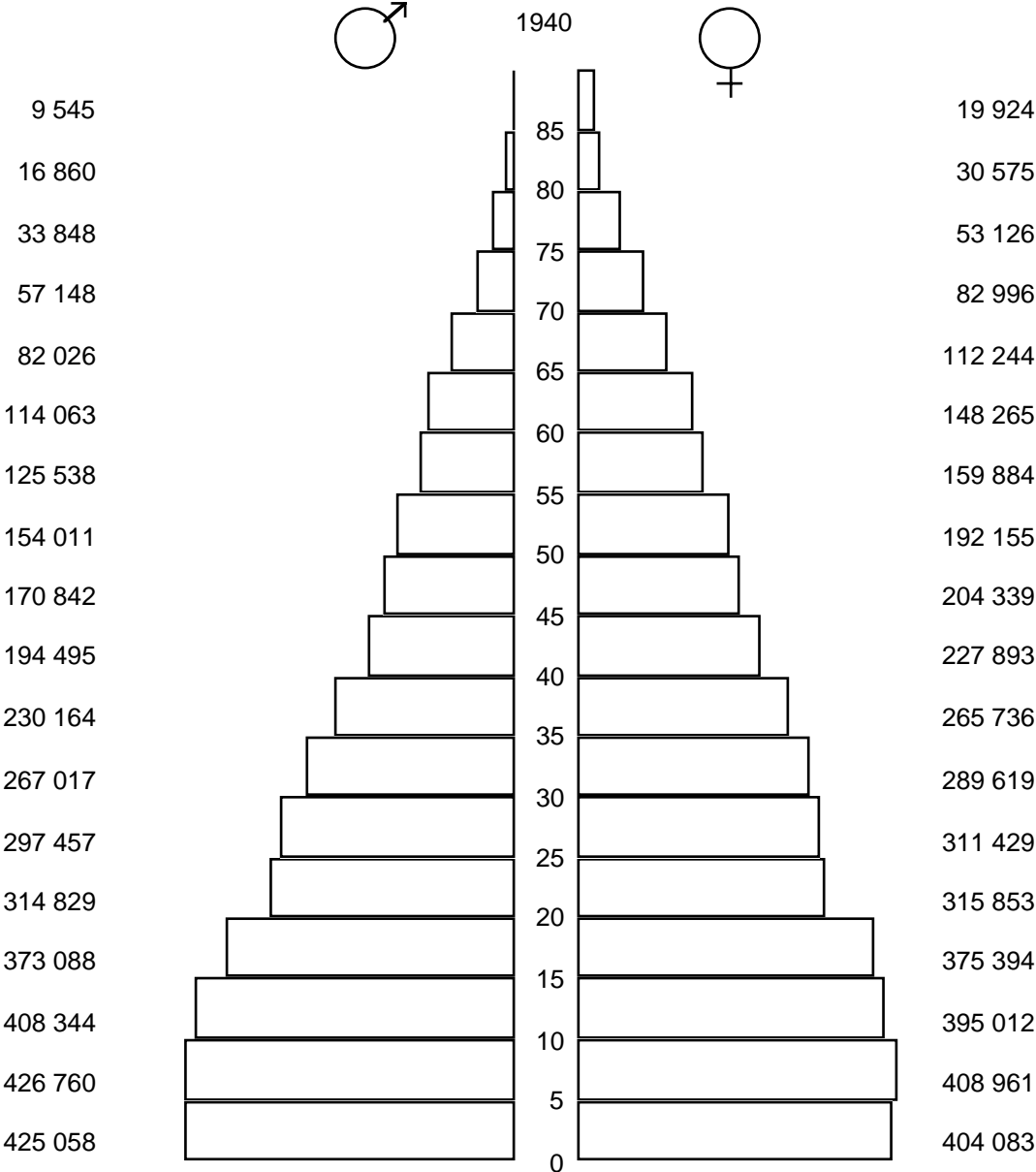
Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids

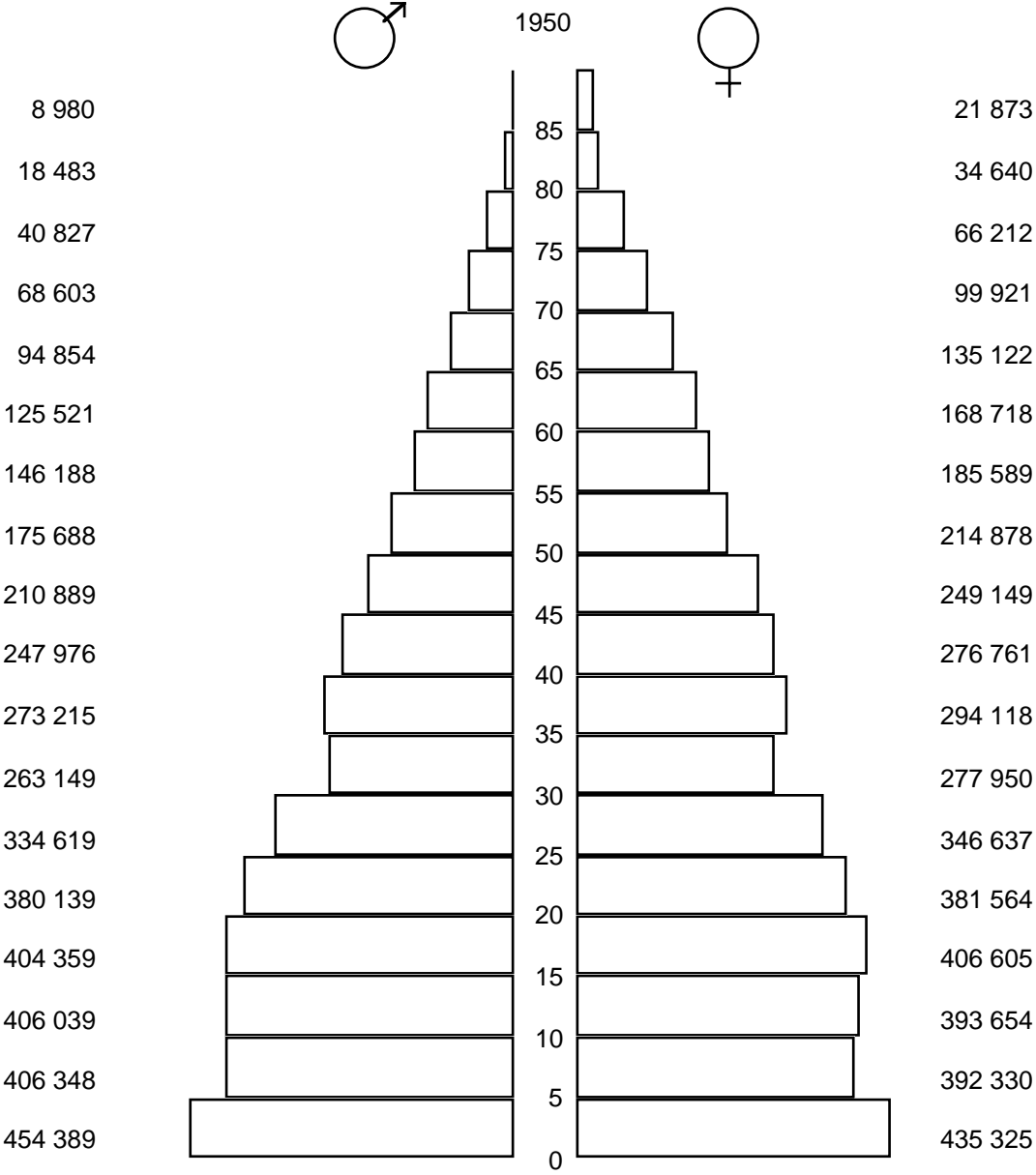


Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids

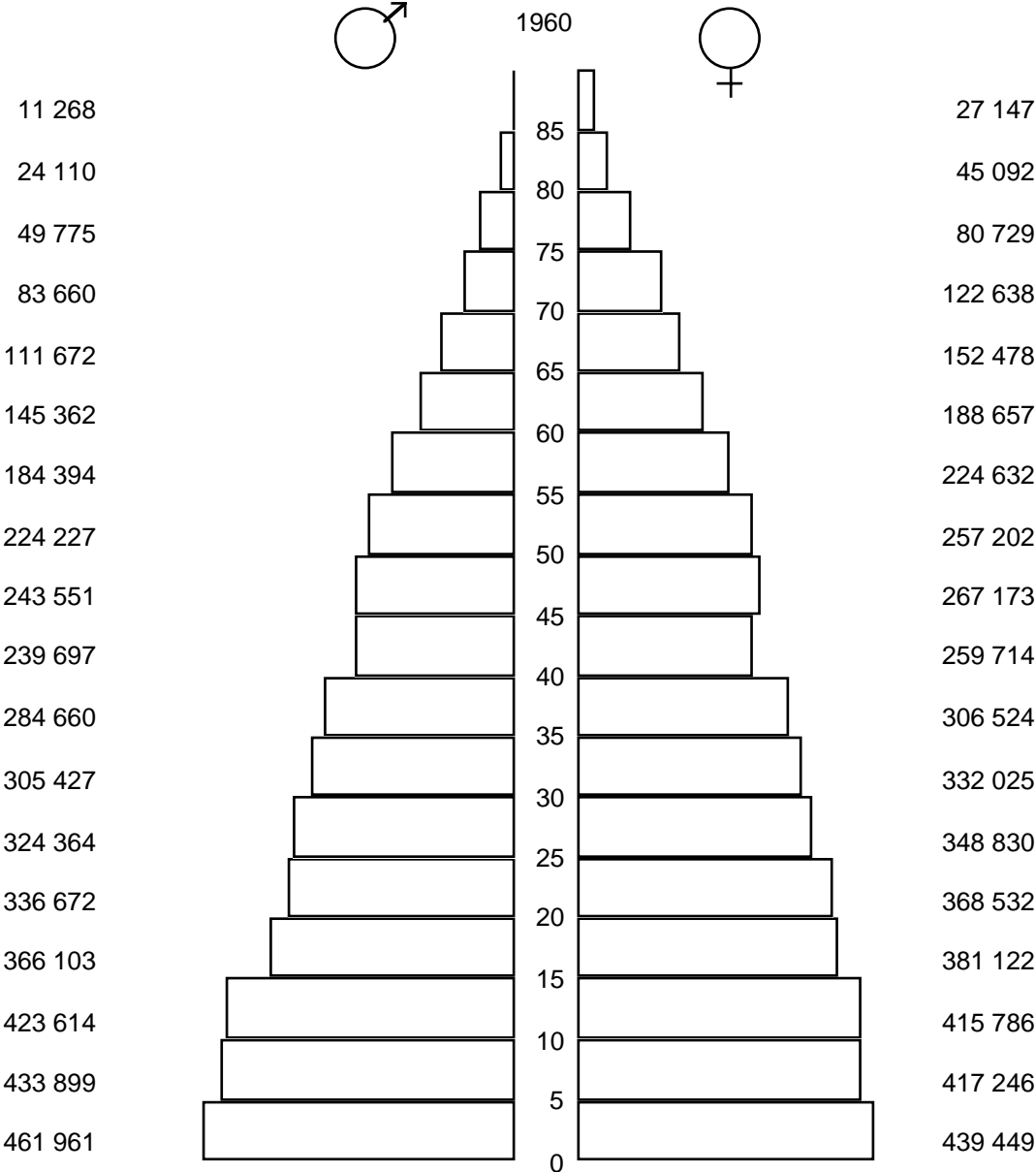




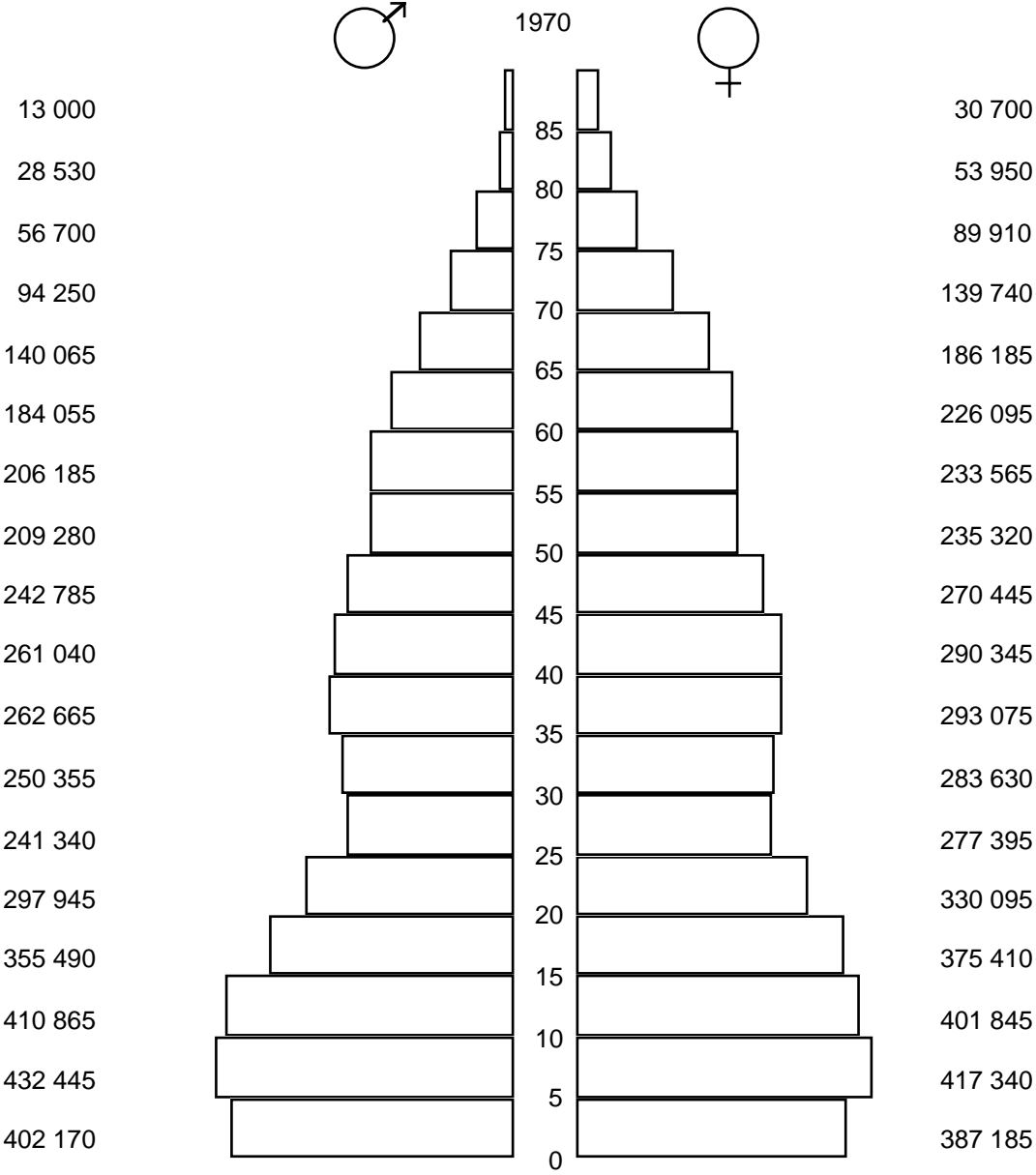
Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



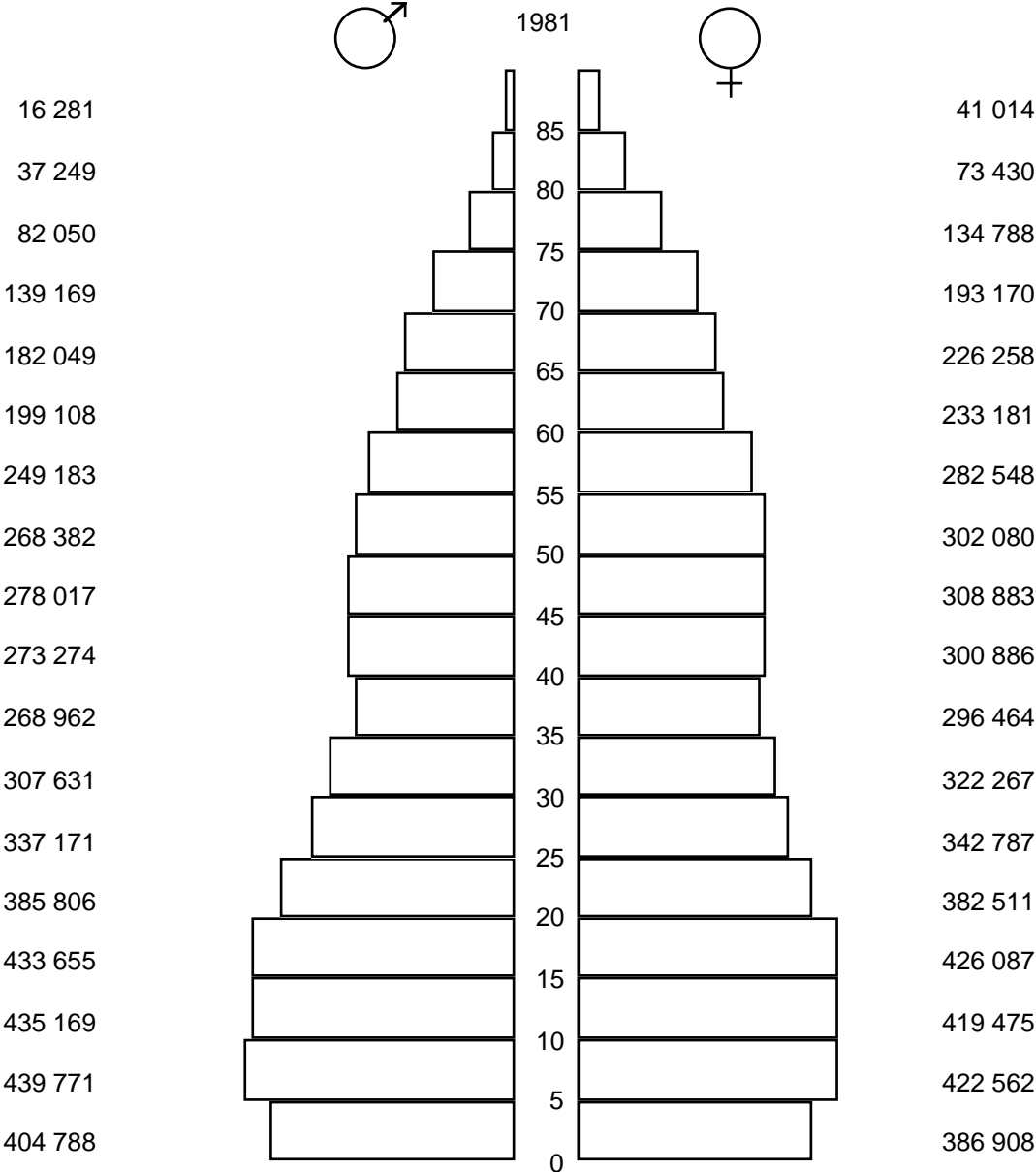
Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



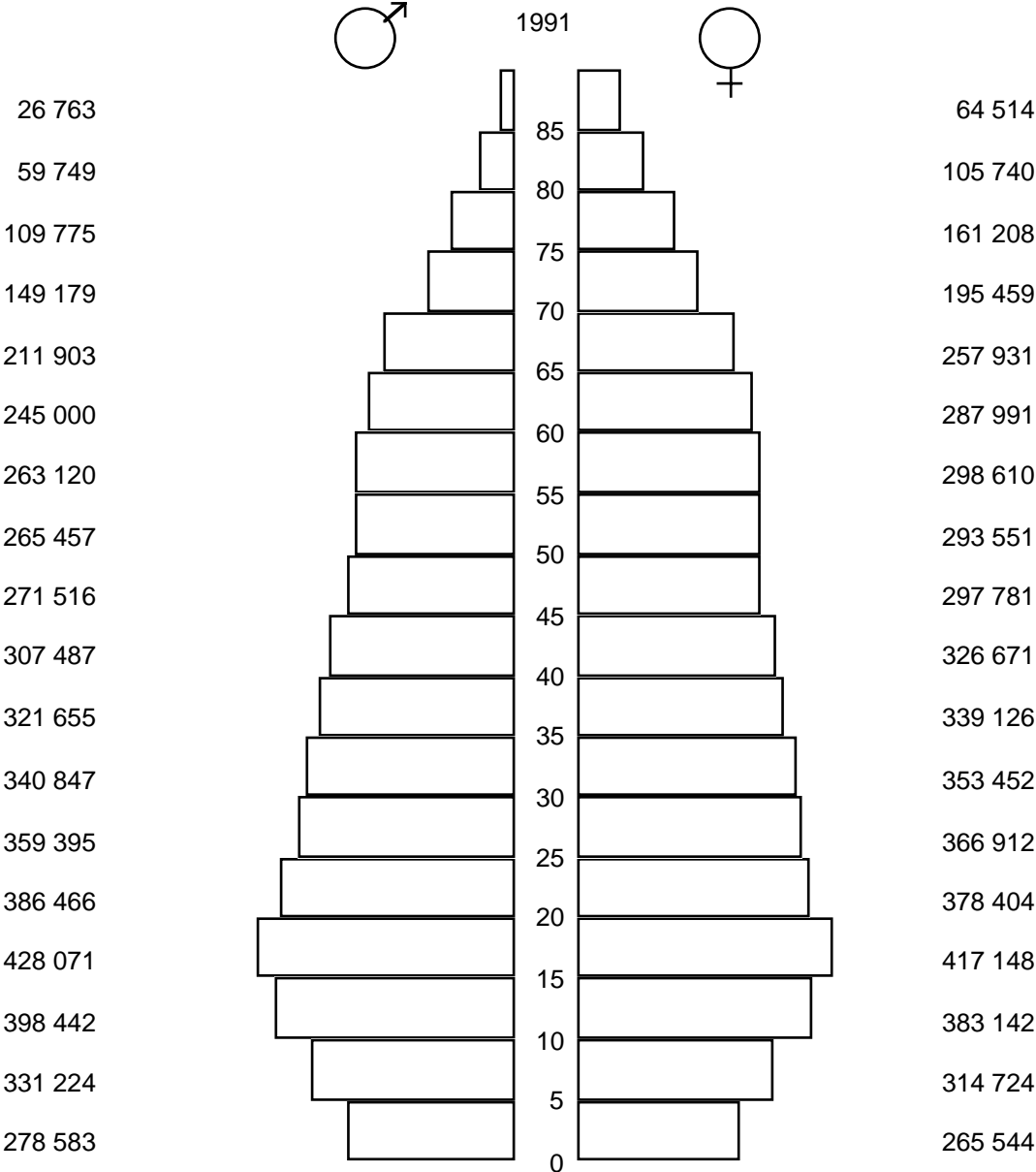
Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



Appendix to chapter 2 — Age pyramids



## CHAPTER 3 — CITIES

ANA TOMÁS (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

Teixeira, 1993 and the contributions made towards Pereira, Mata, 1996 are two recent syntheses of urban history in Portugal and about Portugal which remove the need for any lengthy introduction to this chapter. All that is required is a brief presentation of the tables that are included hereafter.

As is known, there are several different criteria for defining what should be considered as a town. The tables presented provide the necessary data for identifying Portuguese cities in keeping with two of these criteria: the legal criterion (Table 3.1) and the demographic criterion (Table 3.2). In the first case, it is possible to go back in time to the origins of Portuguese society, using the data provided by Oliveira, 1994 and the laws referred to in the table. In the second case, it is only possible to present, with any certainty, the data that may be collected from the General Population Censuses, using the methodology proposed by Nunes, 1996.

### References

- NUNES, Ana Bela — "Portuguese urban system: 1891-1991". In Pereira, Mata, 1996.
- OLIVEIRA, Miguel de — História eclesiástica de Portugal. Mem Martins: Europa-América, 1994.
- PEREIRA, Pedro Telhado; MATA, Maria Eugénia (editors) — Urban dominance and labour market differentiation of a European capital city, Lisbon 1890-1990. Norwell (Mass.): Kluwer Academic Publishers, 1996.
- TEIXEIRA, Manuel — "História urbana em Portugal", Análise Social, volume XXVIII, nº 121, 1993.

### Tables

3.1 — Cities according to the legal criterion

3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion

## Table 3.1 — Cities according to the legal criterion

Sources — [Oliveira, 1994](#) and the laws referred to in the table.

order	name	date
001	Braga	1070 — restoration of the diocese
002	Coimbra	1080 — restoration of the diocese
003	Porto	1112 — restoration of the diocese
004	Lisboa	1147 — restoration of the diocese
005	Lamego	1147 — restoration of the diocese
006	Viseu	1147 — restoration of the diocese
007	Évora	1165 — restoration of the diocese
008	Guarda	1203 — restoration of the diocese of Egitânia (Idanha)
009	Silves	1253 — restoration of the diocese of Ossónoba (Faro)
010	Bragança	1464 — royal charter of 20 February
011	Funchal	1508 — royal charter of 21 August
012	Elvas	1513 — royal charter of 21 April
013	Tavira	1520 — royal charter of 16 March
014	Beja	1521 — royal charter of 10 April
015	Angra do Heroísmo	1534 — royal charter of 21 August
016	Faro	1540 — royal charter of 7 September
017	Leiria	1545 — royal charter of 13 June
018	Miranda do Douro	1545 — royal charter of 10 July
019	Ponta Delgada	1546 — royal charter of 2 April
020	Portalegre	1550 — royal charter of 23 May
021	Lagos	1573 — royal charter of 27 January
022	Aveiro	1759 — charter of 11 April
023	Penafiel	1770 — charter of 3 March
024	Pinhel	1770 — charter of 25 August
025	Castelo Branco	1771 — charter of 20 March
026	Horta	1833 — decree of 13 July
027	Tomar	1844 — decree of 13 February
028	Viana do Castelo	1848 — decree of 20 January
029	Guimarães	1853 — decree of 22 June
030	Setúbal	1860 — decree of 19 April
031	Santarém	1868 — decree of 24 December

Table 3.1 — Cities according to the legal criterion (continued)

order	name	date
032	Covilhã	1870 — decree of 20 October
033	Figueira da Foz	1882 — decree of 20 September
034	Abrantes	1916 — law 601 of 14 June
035	Portimão	1924 — law 1726 of 11 December
036	Vila Real	1925 — law 1804 of 20 July
037	Estremoz	1926 — decree 12227 of 31 August
038	Caldas da Rainha	1927 — decree 14157 of 26 August
039	Barcelos	1928 — decree 15929 of 6 September
040	Chaves	1929 — decree 16621 of 18 March
041	Almada	1973 — decree-law 308/73 of 16 June
042	Espinho	1973 — decree-law 309/73 of 16 June
043	Póvoa de Varzim	1973 — decree-law 310/73 of 16 June
044	Torres Vedras	1979 — law 5/79 of 3 February
045	Amadora	1979 — law 59/79 of 17 September
046	Praia da Vitória	1981 — regional decree-law 7/81/A of 20 June
047	Ribeira Grande	1981 — regional decree-law 9/81/A of 20 June
048	Ovar	1984 — law 9/84 of 28 June
049	Matosinhos	1984 — law 10/84 of 28 June
050	Mirandela	1984 — law 12/84 of 28 June
051	São João da Madeira	1984 — law 13/84 of 28 June
052	Vila Franca de Xira	1984 — law 14/84 of 28 June
053	Gaia	1984 — law 15/84 of 28 June
054	Oliveira de Azeméis	1984 — law 22/84 of 28 June
055	Barreiro	1984 — law 23/84 of 28 June
056	Águeda	1985 — law 30/85 of 14 August
057	Amarante	1985 — law 31/85 of 14 August
058	Montijo	1985 — law 32/85 of 14 August
059	Olhão da Restauração	1985 — law 33/85 of 14 August
060	Peso da Régua	1985 — law 34/85 of 14 August
061	Ponte de Sor	1985 — law 35/85 of 14 August
062	Rio Maior	1985 — law 36/85 of 14 August
063	Santo Tirso	1985 — law 37/85 of 14 August
064	Torres Novas	1985 — law 38/85 of 14 August
065	Santa Maria da Feira	1985 — law 39/85 of 14 August
066	Famalicão	1985 — law 40/85 of 14 August



Table 3.1 — Cities according to the legal criterion (continued)

order	name	date
067	Fafe	1986 — law 28/86 of 23 August
068	Seia	1986 — law 28/86 of 23 August
069	Albufeira	1986 — law 28/86 of 23 August
070	Mangualde	1986 — law 28/86 of 23 August
071	Maia	1986 — law 28/86 of 23 August
072	Loulé	1988 — law 4/88 of 1 February
073	Vila do Conde	1988 — law 5/88 of 1 February
074	Gouveia	1988 — law 6/88 of 1 February
075	Peniche	1988 — law 7/88 of 1 February
076	Moura	1988 — law 8/88 of 1 February
077	Tondela	1988 — law 9/88 of 1 February
078	Fundão	1988 — law 36/88 of 19 April
079	Vila Real de Santo António	1988 — law 37/88 of 19 April
080	Marinha Grande	1988 — law 38/88 of 19 April
081	Montemor-o-Novo	1988 — law 39/88 of 19 April
082	Ílhavo	1990 — law 34/90 of 9 August
083	Loures	1990 — law 35/90 of 9 August
084	Alverca do Ribatejo	1990 — law 36/90 of 9 August
085	Odivelas	1990 — law 38/90 of 10 August
086	Valongo	1990 — law 39/90 of 10 August
087	Ermesinde	1990 — law 40/90 of 10 August
088	Felgueiras	1990 — law 41/90 of 10 August
089	Gondomar	1991 — law 65/91 of 16 August
090	Santiago do Cacém	1991 — law 66/91 of 16 August
091	Paredes	1991 — law 67/91 of 16 August
092	Entroncamento	1991 — law 68/91 of 16 August
093	Cantanhede	1991 — law 69/91 of 16 August
094	Almeirim	1991 — law 70/91 of 16 August
095	Pombal	1991 — law 71/91 of 16 August
096	Ourém	1991 — law 72/91 of 16 August
097	Amora	1993 — law 20/93 of 2 July
098	Esmoriz	1993 — law 21/93 of 2 July
099	Marco de Canaveses	1993 — law 22/93 of 2 July
100	Oliveira do Hospital	1993 — law 23/93 of 2 July
101	Paços de Ferreira	1993 — law 24/93 of 2 July

Table 3.1 — Cities according to the legal criterion (continued)

order	name	date
102	Seixal	1993 — law 25/93 of 2 July
103	Vale de Cambra	1993 — law 26/93 of 2 July
104	Vendas Novas	1993 — law 27/93 of 2 July
105	Esposende	1993 — law 28/93 of 2 July
106	Trofa	1993 — law 29/93 of 2 July
107	Alcobaça	1995 — law 37/95 of 30 August
108	Cartaxo	1995 — law 38/95 of 30 August
109	Lixa	1995 — law 39/95 of 30 August
110	Rio Tinto	1995 — law 40/95 of 30 August
111	Santa Cruz	1996 — regional decree-law
111	Santa Cruz	1996 — regional decree-law 14/96/M of 2 August
112	Machico	1996 — regional decree-law 15/96/M of 2 August
113	Câmara de Lobos	1996 — regional decree-law 17/96/M of 2 August
114	Vila Baleira	1996 — regional decree-law 18/96/M of 2 August
115	Foz Côa	1997 — law 41/97 of 12 July
116	Fátima	1997 — law 42/97 of 12 July
117	Alcácer do Sal	1997 — law 43/97 of 12 July
118	Sines	1997 — law 44/97 of 12 July
119	Sacavém	1997 — law 45/97 of 12 July
120	Queluz	1997 — law 88/97 of 24 July
121	Quarteira	1999 — law 52/99 of 24 June
122	Valpaços	1999 — law 53/99 of 24 June
123	Póvoa de Santa Iria	1999 — law 54/99 of 24 June
124	Macedo de Cavaleiros	1999 — law 55/99 of 24 June
125	Santa Comba Dão	1999 — law 56/99 of 24 June

## Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion

Source — Census for the respective year.

Remarks:

1 — The censuses for the years 1864, 1878, 1890, 1900, 1920 and 1930 do not provide any values for the population of places, but only for the population of parishes. For this reason, the figures relating to the population of cities in the years 1864, 1878, 1890, 1900, 1920 and 1930 are estimates based on the population of totally or partially urban parishes and on the proportion of the urban population in the total population of these parishes in 1911 and 1940, accepting the premise that the proportion of the urban population in the total population of these parishes for the years 1864, 1878, 1890 and 1900 was identical to that of 1911 and for the years 1920 and 1930 was identical to that of 1940. The figures for the population of the cities for the years 1911, 1940, 1950, 1960, 1970, 1981 and 1991 are those shown in the respective censuses.

2 — Estimates were constructed for the population of Greater Lisbon and Greater Porto for the period after the Second World War (from 1950 onwards). The boroughs of Lisboa, Almada, Amadora, Barreiro, Cascais, Loures, Moita do Ribatejo, Montijo, Oeiras, Seixal, Sintra and Vila Franca de Xira were grouped together as Greater Lisbon, whilst the boroughs of Porto, Espinho, Gaia, Gondomar, Maia, Matosinhos and Valongo were grouped together as Greater Porto. The upper limits shown for the population of Greater Lisbon and Greater Porto correspond to the sum of the population of these boroughs. The lower limits shown for the population of Greater Lisbon and Greater Porto correspond to the sum of the population of places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants situated within these boroughs.

3 — Estimates were made for the aggregate population of some groups of places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants that formed interconnecting urban complexes, although they were considered to be separate both legally and administratively. This is the case with the group of Lisbon + Barreiro between 1920 and 1940, the group of Porto + Matosinhos in 1930 and 1940, the group of Póvoa de Varzim + Vila do Conde from 1970 onwards and the group of Aveiro + Gafanha da Nazaré in 1991.

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

**1864 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Lisboa	190.3
Porto	86.8
Braga	16.9
Funchal	14.7
Ponta Delgada	14.1
Coimbra	11.5
Angra do Heroísmo	11.2
Setúbal	10.7

**1878 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Lisboa	240.7
Porto	105.8
Braga	17.8
Funchal	16.5
Ponta Delgada	15.8
Setúbal	12.5
Coimbra	12.1
Angra do Heroísmo	10.7
Évora	10.1

**1890 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Lisboa	301.2
Porto	138.9
Braga	20.7
Funchal	15.8

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1890 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Coimbra	15.4
Ponta Delgada	15.1
Setúbal	14.9
Covilhã	14.0
Évora	11.8
Póvoa de Varzim	11.8
Angra do Heroísmo	10.6

**1900 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Lisboa	356.0
Porto	168.0
Braga	21.7
Setúbal	18.8
Funchal	17.4
Coimbra	16.4
Ponta Delgada	15.9
Évora	12.4
Covilhã	12.4
Póvoa de Varzim	12.0
Angra do Heroísmo	10.4
Elvas	10.4

**1911 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Lisboa	435.4
Porto	194.0

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1911 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Setúbal	25.5
Braga	22.1
Funchal	20.3
Coimbra	18.4
Ponta Delgada	14.5
Évora	13.8
Covilhã	12.5
Póvoa de Varzim	11.5
Olhão	10.5

**1920 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Lisboa + Barreiro	498.6
Lisboa	486.4
Barreiro	10.2
Porto	203.1
Setúbal	30.8
Funchal	19.9
Braga	19.6
Coimbra	18.6
Ponta Delgada	13.4
Évora	11.9
Póvoa de Varzim	11.7
Covilhã	11.2
Olhão	10.6
Faro	10.2

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

**1930 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name		thousand inhabitants
Lisboa + Barreiro		610.5
	Lisboa	594.4
	Barreiro	16.1
Porto + Matosinhos		252.0
	Porto	232.3
	Matosinhos	19.7
Setúbal		37.7
Funchal		31.4
Coimbra		25.7
Braga		25.0
Évora		18.3
Ponta Delgada		18.0
Faro		15.0
Olhão		13.9
Póvoa de Varzim		13.1
Beja		10.8
Covilhã		10.6
Viana do Castelo		10.5
Guimarães		10.2

**1940 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name		thousand inhabitants
Lisboa + Barreiro		719.0
	Lisboa	709.2
	Barreiro	19.8
Porto + Matosinhos		281.8
	Porto	262.3
	Matosinhos	19.5
Funchal		39.6

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1940 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Setúbal	37.1
Braga	28.5
Coimbra	27.3
Évora	21.9
Ponta Delgada	21.0
Faro	17.1
Olhão	13.6
Póvoa de Varzim	13.4
Viseu	13.4
Viana do Castelo	12.4
Beja	12.1
Guimarães	12.1
Aveiro	11.2
Elvas	11.2
Lamego	10.7
Covilhã	10.6
Santarém	10.5
Figueira da Foz	10.1

**1950 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Greater Lisboa	[830.7 ; 1 157.0]
Lisboa	783.2
Barreiro	22.2
Montijo	13.3
Almada	12.0
Greater Porto	[348.5 ; 652.1]
Porto	281.4
Gaia	38.0
Matosinhos	29.1



Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1950 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Setúbal	44.2
Coimbra	42.0
Funchal	37.0
Braga	32.2
Évora	25.7
Ponta Delgada	22.4
Covilhã	20.4
Guimarães	18.3
Faro	17.6
Póvoa de Varzim	16.9
Olhão	16.6
Beja	14.1
Viana do Castelo	14.0
Aveiro	13.4
Viseu	13.2
Santarém	13.1
Castelo Branco	13.1
Portimão	12.1
Chaves	11.3
Elvas	10.8
Portalegre	10.5
Figueira da Foz	10.5
Angra do Heroísmo	10.3
Peniche	10.1
Caldas da Rainha	10.0

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

**1960 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Greater Lisboa	[992.9 ; 1 364.6]
Lisboa	802.2
Amadora	36.3
Almada	30.7
Barreiro	30.4
Moscavide	22.1
Montijo	17.8
Cova da Piedade	15.3
Queluz	14.7
Baixa da Banheira	12.5
Cascais	10.9
Greater Porto	[433.2 ; 746.4]
Porto	303.4
Gaia	45.7
Matosinhos	37.7
Espinho	13.5
Gondomar	11.2
Valbom	10.9
Ermesinde	10.8
Coimbra	46.3
Setúbal	44.4
Funchal	43.3
Braga	41.0
Póvoa de Varzim + Vila do Conde	30.5
Póvoa de Varzim	17.7
Vila do Conde	12.8
Évora	24.1
Guimarães	23.2
Covilhã	23.1
Ponta Delgada	22.3
Faro	18.9
Viseu	17.0

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1960 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Santarém	16.4
Olhão	16.0
Aveiro	16.0
Beja	15.7
Castelo Branco	14.8
Viana do Castelo	14.4
Angra do Heroísmo	13.5
Chaves	13.2
Portimão	12.1
São João da Madeira	11.9
Elvas	11.7
Peniche	11.4
Portalegre	11.0
Figueira da Foz	10.9
Caldas da Rainha	10.6
Vila Real	10.3

**1970 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Greater Lisboa	[1185.4 ; 1 664.1]
Lisboa	769.0
Amadora	66.2
Barreiro	53.2
Almada	38.7
Odivelas	26.0
Queluz	25.9
Montijo	25.9
Moscavide	21.6
Cova da Piedade	21.0
Baixa da Banheira	18.5

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1970 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Damaia	17.2
Cascais	14.6
Pontinha	14.4
Algueirão - Mem Martins	14.0
Sacavém	13.0
Vila Franca de Xira	13.0
Brandoa	12.5
Venda Nova	10.6
Alverca do Ribatejo	10.1
Greater Porto	[457.7 ; 831.9]
Porto	306.2
Gaia	50.2
Matosinhos	22.5
Gondomar	15.5
Ermesinde	14.1
Leça da Palmeira	13.1
São Mamede de Infesta	12.7
Espinho	11.8
Valbom	11.6
Coimbra	56.6
Setúbal	50.7
Braga	49.7
Funchal	40.1
Póvoa de Varzim + Vila do Conde	34.0
Póvoa de Varzim	17.6
Vila do Conde	16.4
Covilhã	27.0
Guimarães	25.1
Évora	24.0
Ponta Delgada	21.3
Faro	20.7
Aveiro	20.7
Castelo Branco	19.2

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1970 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Santarém	18.1
Viseu	16.6
Beja	15.9
Angra do Heroísmo	14.3
São João da Madeira	14.2
Viana do Castelo	13.5
Caldas da Rainha	13.2
Peniche	12.5
Entroncamento	11.7
Olhão	11.0
Tomar	10.9
Portalegre	10.9
Figueira da Foz	10.8
Chaves	10.6
Portimão	10.4
Elvas	10.4
Guarda	10.0
Bragança	10.0

**1981 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Greater Lisboa	[1 573.2 ; 2 268.7]
Lisboa	807.2
Amadora	95.5
Barreiro	50.9
Almada	42.6
Queluz	42.2
Odivelas	38.3
Aigualva - Cacém	34.3
Oeiras	32.5

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1981 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Cova da Piedade	28.3
Algueirão - Mem Martins	28.2
Sacavém	24.1
Damaia	23.3
Montijo	23.0
Baixa da Banheira	21.4
Laranjeiro	20.4
Algés	20.4
Linda-a-Velha	19.7
Cascais	19.4
Alverca do Ribatejo	19.2
Moscavide	17.8
Brandoa	17.8
Vila Franca de Xira	17.5
Cruz de Pau	16.2
Feijó	14.0
Lavradio	13.9
Paço de Arcos	13.3
Corroios	13.2
Pontinha	12.7
Póvoa de Santo Adrião	12.4
Carnaxide	12.2
Quinta da Lomba	11.2
Buraca	10.1
Greater Porto	[500.7 ; 1 001.4]
Porto	327.4
Gaia	62.5
Matosinhos	26.4
Oliveira do Douro	18.9
Gondomar	18.9
Espinho	12.9
Valbom	12.2
Leça da Palmeira	11.4

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1981 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Ermesinde	10.1
Setúbal	77.9
Coimbra	74.6
Braga	63.0
Póvoa de Varzim + Vila do Conde	44.3
Póvoa de Varzim	23.7
Vila do Conde	20.6
Funchal	44.1
Évora	34.9
Aveiro	28.6
Faro	28.0
Marinha Grande	22.0
Guimarães	21.9
Covilhã	21.8
Castelo Branco	21.3
Ponta Delgada	21.2
Olhão	20.1
Viseu	20.1
Santarém	19.8
Beja	19.6
Portimão	19.6
Caldas da Rainha	17.0
São João da Madeira	16.4
Peniche	15.5
Viana do Castelo	15.2
Portalegre	15.1
Bragança	14.2
Guarda	14.0
Tomar	13.6
Elvas	12.9
Vila Real	12.9
Figueira da Foz	12.6
Angra do Heroísmo	12.3

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1981 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Leiria	11.5
Chaves	11.5
Entroncamento	11.4
Torres Vedras	11.0
Barcelos	10.4
Lagos	10.2

**1991 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants**

name	thousand inhabitants
Greater Lisboa	[1 558.6 ; 2 314.7]
Lisboa	663.3
Amadora	122.1
Aigualva - Cacém	55.3
Odivelas	48.8
Barreiro	47.9
Queluz	42.9
Algueirão - Mem Martins	37.4
Linda-a-Velha	25.0
Cova da Piedade	24.9
Montijo	23.2
Laranjeiro	23.1
Baixa da Banheira	22.9
Almada	22.6
Alverca do Ribatejo	21.9
Santo António dos Cavaleiros	21.2
Cascais	19.0
Algés	18.4
Massamá	17.8
Vila Franca de Xira	17.2
Portela	16.9



Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1991 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Sacavém	16.2
Brandoa	15.6
Cruz de Pau	15.5
Moscavide	14.5
Póvoa de Santo Adrião	14.5
Buraca	13.8
Póvoa de Santa Iria	13.6
Pontinha	13.4
Carnaxide	13.3
Vale da Amoreira	13.3
Feijó	13.2
Lavradio	12.7
Moita do Ribatejo	12.1
Alfornelos	11.9
Vialonga	11.8
Parede	11.7
Quinta da Lomba	11.4
Miratejo	11.4
Dr. Augusto de Castro	11.1
Forte da Casa	10.7
Pinhal Novo	10.5
Corroios	10.5
Paivas	10.5
Oeiras	10.3
Greater Porto	[596.5 ; 1 035.3]
Porto	302.5
Gaia	68.3
Matosinhos	29.8
Maia	25.9
Oliveira do Douro	20.6
Gondomar	20.6
Senhora da Hora	20.0
São Mamede de Infesta	17.8

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1991 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name		thousand inhabitants
	Pedroso	16.9
	Leça da Palmeira	15.6
	Valbom	13.3
	Espinho	11.9
	Vilar de Andorinho	11.5
	São Martinho	11.0
	Avintes	10.8
Funchal		99.2
Coimbra		89.6
Braga		86.3
Setúbal		83.2
Guimarães		47.4
Póvoa de Varzim + Vila do Conde		43.9
	Póvoa de Varzim	23.9
	Vila do Conde	20.0
Aveiro + Gafanha da Nazaré		43.3
	Aveiro	32.8
	Gafanha da Nazaré	10.5
Évora		38.0
Faro		31.6
Leiria		27.8
Castelo Branco		26.1
Figueira da Foz		25.9
Olhão		24.6
Santarém		23.7
Marinha Grande		22.0
Covilhã		21.8
Caldas da Rainha		21.1
Viseu		20.7
Ponta Delgada		19.8
Beja		19.2
Portalegre		19.2
São João da Madeira		18.5

Table 3.2 — Cities according to the demographic criterion (continued)

1991 — Places with more than 10 thousand inhabitants (continued)

name	thousand inhabitants
Guarda	17.9
Portimão	16.8
Bragança	15.6
Elvas	15.4
Peniche	15.3
Tomar	14.0
Entroncamento	13.9
Vila Real	13.8
Torres Vedras	13.4
Ílhavo	13.1
Santo Tirso	12.3
Lagos	11.7
Chaves	11.7
Fafe	11.6
Ovar	11.5
Angra do Heroísmo	10.8
Almeirim	10.0

## CHAPTER 4 — ECONOMIC ACTIVITY OF THE POPULATION

ANA BELA NUNES (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

The relevant quantitative information available for the study of the economic activity of the population in Portugal is fundamentally based on the primary statistical sources provided by the National Statistical Institute (*Instituto Nacional de Estatística* — INE), which replaced the General-Directorate of Statistics (*Direcção-Geral de Estatística* — DGE) in 1935, and the ministries responsible for the areas of labour, employment and social security (MT), the names of which have changed quite considerably over the years<sup>1</sup>. The Population Censuses (organised either by the DGE or INE) and the (Permanent) Employment Surveys (INE and MT) are highlighted here from amongst the other statistical publications and reports produced by these organisations, largely because of the greater number of economic activities that they cover. Publications by other national and international organisations also provide overall (or almost complete) data on the

---

<sup>1</sup> The changes in the names of the Ministry (and the statistical service) since the launch of the first employment surveys have been as follows:

a) January 1963: Ministry of Corporations and Social Welfare (Ministério das Corporações e Previdência Social — MCPS); Labour Force Development Fund (Fundo de Desenvolvimento da Mão-de-Obra — FDMO); Statistical Division (Divisão de Estatística).

b) September 1972: MCPS; FDMO; Statistical Service (Serviço de Estatística).

c) January 1974: Ministry of Corporations and Social Security (Ministério das Corporações e Segurança Social — MCSS); FDMO; Statistical Service.

d) May 1974: Ministry of Labour (Ministério do Trabalho — MT); FDMO; Statistical Service.

e) October 1974: MT; Statistical Service.

f) October 1983: Ministry of Labour and Social Security (Ministério do Trabalho e Segurança Social — MTSS); Statistical Service.

g) October 1985: MTSS; Statistical Department (Departamento de Estatística).

h) October 1987: Ministry of Employment and Social Security (Ministério do Emprego e Segurança Social — MESS); Statistical Department.

i) January 1996: Ministry for Qualification and Employment (Ministério para a Qualificação e Emprego — MQE); Statistical Department.

j) April 1998: Ministry of Labour and Solidarity (Ministério do Trabalho e Solidariedade — MTS); Department of Labour, Employment and Vocational Training Statistics (Departamento de Estatística do Trabalho, Emprego e Formação Profissional — DETEFP).

active population, employment and unemployment. This is the case with the Statistical Yearbooks (DGE and INE) and the reports of the Bank of Portugal (*Banco de Portugal* — BP), the Organisation for Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD), the International Labour Organisation (ILO) and the European Economic Community (EEC), later the European Communities (EC) and then the European Union (EU), although these documents almost always restrict themselves to reproducing the results first made public in the above-mentioned Portuguese publications, or sometimes to producing estimations from these same statistics based on criteria designed to ensure the international compatibility of results.

Other statistical sources of a sectoral nature present series of varying lengths referring to specific sectors of activity and very often covering only certain types of economic units. For a fairly exhaustive description of these types of sources, see the chapter of the methodological notes on '*População, Emprego e Desemprego*' (Population, Employment and Unemployment) in the volumes appendixd to the work recently published by the Bank of Portugal, which is henceforth referred to as Pinheiro, 1997.

There are also a number of studies on the economic activity of the population of a markedly statistical nature that are either dedicated to the compilation and analysis of series from primary sources, for different periods and with varying degrees of coverage, or else estimate annual series of varying lengths on the basis of these sources, for periods that are not covered by these, and making use of other variables, particularly demographic ones. In addition to the studies undertaken by the statistical departments of the INE and MT, the most important of these studies are: Confraria, Monteiro, 1988, Nunes, 1991, Barreto, Preto, 1996 and Pinheiro, 1997.

In view of the obvious impossibility of reproducing here all the statistical information available in the different publications, it seems reasonable to select and present some tables containing relevant data on the economic activity of the population, grouping these together in keeping with their type of source and the periods covered, with particular attention being paid to the most important primary sources. In section 1, a summary is presented of the evolution of the active population, of their occupational status and of both employment and unemployment, based on the population censuses, information which largely tends to be provided in relation to ten-year periods. In section 2, a synthesis is provided of the evolution of these same variables in accordance with the series obtained from data that have been either compiled or estimated from employment surveys. Such information is provided for regular periods of one year or less. In section 3, long series are introduced of some fundamental variables relating to the economic activity of the population, estimated from primary information produced by the various official organisations.

Naturally, more detailed reference will be made in the following pages to the various publications mentioned and to some problems that arise with regard to the temporal analysis of the series.

## **1 — The active population, their occupational status, employment and unemployment, according to the population censuses**

The General Population Censuses (*Recenseamentos Gerais da População* — RGP), organised by the DGE and later by the INE, present the longest standing aggregate information available. This makes it possible to accompany the evolution of the active population with an occupation or job, over regular periods of almost always ten years. As the 1864 census did not provide any information about the economic activity of the population and as such data were not published in the 1878 and 1920 censuses, only ten censuses include data on the distribution of the population by occupation or by industries and sectors of activity. In concrete terms, the published information is that collected in the censuses of 1890, 1900, 1911, 1930, 1940, 1950, 1960, 1970 (although in this particular case only provisional data are available based on a 20% estimate), 1981 and 1991. In 1925, an Extraordinary Census of the Population of the Cities of Lisbon and Porto was also held, which includes data on the economic activity of the population of these two cities.

The first four censuses present tables with a breakdown into occupational groups (by sex and age group), in accordance with Bertholet's classification. The 1890, 1900 and 1911 censuses divide the population into only twelve groups. In addition to the number of people with an occupation, the tables show the number of family members in the household and the number of servants employed in domestic service. The 1930 census provides a breakdown into 58 occupational groups (by sex), distinguishing between what it considers to be the active population — the number of people surveyed who have an occupation and the members of the household who help them — and the non-active population — the number of individuals supported by those who have an occupation. In relation to these particular censuses, it is not possible to give precise details about the concepts used, nor is any criterion established for the age at which an individual can be considered as belonging to the active population. At the same time, those people living exclusively off their own income and the 'unproductive' population are incorrectly considered as constituting occupational groups.

After 1940, in addition to the data on occupations, the RGPs include information by industries or sectors of activity (by sex and age), in accordance with classifications and forms of presentation that have gradually been altered over time (with reference to the CITA and CAE international classifications). The breakdown by occupations and sectors varied quite considerably between the different censuses and it was not easy to be very precise about the compatibility of classifications over time, even though some equivalent classifications had been published, namely

between the censuses of 1940, 1950 and 1960. Nonetheless, this question still remains particularly complicated in the case of occupational categories. At the same time, however, the concepts involved began to be made more explicit (for these changed quite considerably in the half century under review) and the minimum age was established after which individuals were considered to be of an economically active age (10 years old in 1940, 1960 and 1970; 12 years old in 1950, 1981 and 1991). It should be noted that in 1940 and 1950, individuals in so-called 'unprofessional situations' who had 'occupations', were still incorrectly considered as belonging to the active population. This group includes housewives, people with illegal activities and property and security owners living off their own income.

The RGPs present information at a regional, district (until 1981) and municipal level, and at the level of the great urban centres of Lisbon and Porto. In the case of the 1991 Census, district-level information is replaced by regional data (NUTE II).

More details about the RGPs can be found in [Nunes, 1989](#), including data about the active population by sector with an occupation (or in employment), broken down into districts for mainland Portugal and into autonomous regions. [Nunes, 1989](#) also contains an annual estimation of the active population by sectors of activity and with the same breakdown, for the period from 1890 (or 1930 in the case of the manufacturing industry) to 1980, to which reference will be made later on in section 3. The data from the RGPs, referring to the country as a whole, are reproduced here in Tables 4.1 and 4.2, together with information about the breakdown by sex, compiled and analysed in [Nunes, 1991](#). The data presented, particularly its collection into sectors, reflect the concern and efforts made to guarantee that the information provided either explicitly or implicitly by the RGPs throughout the last century is compatible with modern-day data. Some observations are then made to complement the notes contained in the tables, although these cannot be thought of as a replacement for the need to consult the sources for more precise details.

It was decided to present data by sectors and not by occupations, as it is particularly difficult to compare these over time and there are no systematic studies on occupational equivalencies. In fact, as the technological and organisational complexities of economies increase, occupations tend to become more diversified and to change in nature. This state of affairs makes it impossible to infer a sectoral structure from an occupational structure, despite the fact that it seems reasonable to do this for those phases when the level of such complexity was still quite low. And this is what is suggested when placing the data obtained from the censuses for the period 1890-1991 in the tables, as it is known that, strictly speaking, the first four occasions relate to occupational and not sectoral data.

According to the RGP of 1991, a person's occupational status is understood to be "an active individual's relationship of dependence in the performance of his occupation". Once more, the range of statuses determined and presented in the censuses (only after 1930) varies quite considerably. It therefore seemed reasonable to present the available figures in Table 4.3, after

an attempt had been made to render these compatible. We have dispensed with the need for a description for each census one by one or for a further explanation of the fairly obvious definition of the contents of each category, so that the most relevant observations have been left for the notes to the table.

There is some information available on occupational statuses by sectors of activity or occupation, and in some censuses this information is also available by age groups. The censuses also provide information at a regional level, namely for each district — planning region in the case of 1991 — and municipality.

Beginning in 1940, the RGPs include data on employment conditions. Whilst the comparison over time of the active population with an occupation already gives rise to some of the above-mentioned difficulties, the concepts of the unemployed active population and inactive population (or those without any economic activity) have also changed quite significantly. Any effort to make the data compatible is further exacerbated by the almost non-existent breakdown of the different groups and the already mentioned diversity in terms of the age at which a surveyed person may be classified as potentially active.

Whilst in 1940 and 1950 the unemployed population respectively included only people aged over 10 and 12 years who were seeking new employment — with unemployed first job seekers being included amongst the inactive population — from the 1960 RGP onwards, first job seekers over the established threshold age were also considered as unemployed. In 1991, the concept was made even more precise by distinguishing the concept of unemployed in the broad sense (i.e. those who are jobless but available for work) from the concept of unemployed in the narrow sense of the term (i.e. with the respondents to the survey being required to be actively taking steps to find paid or unpaid employment). The status of those people doing compulsory military service was also given different treatment in the various censuses. In the 1940 and 1950 censuses, no reference was made to this group; in the 1960 census, it appears as a sub-group of the unemployed active population; in the 1970 and 1981 censuses, those doing compulsory military service were considered to represent a third status within the economically active population, alongside active persons with an occupation and the unemployed; in 1991, the group is not distinguished at all, although it is included in the active population (in the broad sense) and apparently included in the group of active persons with an occupation (in employment).

Typically considered as inactive groups are the retired, pensioners, unpaid housekeepers, people living off their own income, students and invalids, with the latter generally being considered as a distinct group in the censuses.

Nonetheless, it was still considered possible to draw up Table 4.4 from the figures made available in the different censuses, showing people's situation with regard to employment (or economic activity) and the activity and unemployment rates. It was decided to make the figures for the last four censuses compatible with each other (namely in regard to the calculation of the



unemployment rate), since it was not possible to determine the share of unemployed first job seekers in the case of the 1940 and 1950 RGPs. For this purpose, the criterion used in the 1991 census was applied, in which individuals doing their compulsory military service were included amongst the active population in employment. The notes to the table make it possible to understand the main differences to be found in the criteria used.

The RGPs include data on the unemployed population seeking new jobs classified according to their economic activity and, in some cases, according to their occupational status, educational levels, age groups and period of unemployment.

In all of these cases, information is available at a regional level (district or planning region and municipality) and, in some cases, a breakdown is provided between urban centres and rural areas.

## **2 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to the employment surveys**

Annual estimates (or ones covering shorter periods) on the economic activity of the population only began to be produced from the 1960s onwards, almost always only for mainland Portugal and based on employment surveys. In Confraria, Monteiro, 1988, the main series available for the period 1960-1985 are presented, with a reference to the definitions, methodology and sources used in these, as well as a comparative analysis of the results. When the concepts and methodology that are used are known, it is possible to see how these differ with regard to the technical aspects of the surveys, including the periods covered, the sample, place and date on which they are carried out. The result of this is a great disparity in the figures obtained by the different series.

Two bodies are directly or indirectly responsible for most of the available estimates: the INE and the MT.

\*

Since 1974, the INE has published the results of employment surveys (compiled as from the second half of 1972) in three series: in the first series, occurring between 1974 and 1982, the surveys were carried out every six months, covering only mainland Portugal and based on the concepts of the RGP of 1970, including the threshold age of 10 years for being considered as belonging to the economically active population; in the second series, between 1983 and 1991, the surveys began to be held every three months, although they now also covered the

autonomous regions (even though this information was not actually published), were closer to the methodology and concepts used in the EEC's Labour Force Survey and the 1981 RGP, including the threshold of 12 years for the active age of the population, compiled more information and improved the analysis of earlier collections of similar data; in the third series, after 1992, surveys continued to be held every three months, although the methodology was altered in accordance with the concepts and criteria underlying the 1991 RGP, whilst the threshold for the active age of the population was raised to 14. Strictly speaking, these facts, amongst others, make it very difficult to compare the information of the three series. A further reference should be made to the deficiencies to be found in the 1974, 1975 and 1976 surveys, which were recognised in the 1979 survey, where the retrospective series of 1974-1977 is presented. These deficiencies derive from the fact that the *retornados* (those returning to Portugal from the ex-colonies) were not considered in the same way as the remainder of the population, for they were housed in communal forms of accommodation, units that were not covered by the survey.

The published information only relates to mainland Portugal, with data being obtained for sub-regions that vary over time, particularly those of the planning regions for the NUTEs in their various breakdowns. After 1982, the INE began to publish the list of tables that were compiled, made available and yet not published. The published tables vary over time, including data that are very often to be found cross-referenced elsewhere on situations with regard to employment and the rate of activity, occupational status, employment by industries and sectors of activity (only after the second quarter of 1983 is it possible to break down the manufacturing industry) and by large occupational groups, normal working hours, unemployment, the unemployment rate and its causes, the duration of unemployment and the steps taken to combat it, the number of economically active and unemployed workers per family and the number of self-employed workers and employees by contract type. Generally speaking, the information is provided by sex and age group and is sometimes cross-referenced with educational levels.

\*

The Madeira Regional Planning and Finance Office and the Azores Regional Statistical Office began, in the second quarter of 1983 and the first quarter of 1985 respectively, to publish the results of employment surveys for the respective autonomous regions (in the case of the Azores, the survey also began to be implemented in 1983, with the exception of the island of Corvo). Both the methodology used and the information compiled and published tended to be similar to those of the INE employment surveys. In DREPA, 1987 annual employment data are published for the period 1977-1985 (except for 1982) based on the information provided by the job centres of Ponta Delgada, Angra do Heroísmo (both of which were created in 1971) and Horta (created in 1976).

Other INE publications of a sectoral nature also include employment data. This is the case with the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics), Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics), Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics), Estatísticas da Educação (Education Statistics), Estatísticas da Saúde (Health Statistics), Estatísticas da Cultura e Recreio (Cultural and Recreational Statistics), Estatísticas da Construção e Habitação (Building and Housing Statistics). A further mention should also be made of INE, 1971, which presents annual employment figures for mainland Portugal for the period 1960-1970 by sectors of activity.

\*

Antunes, 1996 provides a detailed history of the implementation and development of the surveys conducted by the MT's statistical services since 1968 (July), which was the date when the first survey was launched, involving a sample of 8000 companies. This number has gradually been increased over time, but only from 1991 onwards did it begin to include companies with less than 10 employees.

Strictly speaking, as is in fact underlined in this same study, the Statistical Division of the Labour Force Development Fund (*Fundo de Desenvolvimento de Mão-de-Obra* — FDMO) of the Ministry of Corporations and Social Welfare (*Ministério das Corporações e Previdência Social* — MCPS) collected information on the labour force from the surveys carried out after 1963, based on the employment records that the companies were obliged to fill in and send to the Ministry. The information relating to the 1963 and 1964 surveys was not published, unlike that from 1965 (Collection of data on the labour force) and 1967 (Survey of the needs of the labour force), which was published in fortnightly bulletins (and their supplements) issued by the FDMO.

Only after April 1971 did these surveys become regular and were conducted every quarter. Despite the multiple alterations introduced since then in terms of the formulation of surveys and the determination of the final data, there are two occasions in particular that represent major changes: January 1984, when the Quarterly Employment Survey (*Inquérito Trimestral ao Emprego* — ITE) was set up, and April 1991, when the ITE was replaced by the Structured Employment Survey (*Inquérito ao Emprego Estruturado* — IEE). It should be noted that the surveys, whose sample continued to expand over time to include an ever greater number of companies, do not cover the agricultural sector, the fisheries sector (as from 1973) and some services sectors such as the civil service and domestic services (as from 1973), as well as services rendered to the community and to companies (until 1973); until 1992 the classification that was used was that of the CAE, adapted by the INE from the CITA classification. After 1984, the data from the autonomous regions ceased to be published.

The aspects covered by the surveys and their form of presentation have changed over time. Generally speaking, information about employment, pay and working hours has always been available, although until 1981 only employment was surveyed during some quarters. The type of employment relationship that employees enjoyed, the reasons for people starting and leaving their jobs, the reasons for increases and reductions in employment, the rotativity of the labour force, the numbers of people taking part in vocational training schemes and those earning the minimum wage were progressively surveyed and the results published. Such information tends to be organised by sex, age group and qualification level.

In Antunes, 1996: 16 (summary-table 2) the publications in which the results, methodology and analysis of employment surveys are presented are referred to in detail. Such publications include the different issues of the FDMO bulletins and supplements, the Estatísticas Series, the Inquéritos Series, the MT Textos and the Relatórios e Análises — Estatísticas do Trabalho e Síntese de Resultados e Informação Estatística (síntese) Series. Reference should also be made here to the information that has been available on a regular basis since 1981 in the Quadros de Pessoal.

It should be noted that, in the annual volumes of the Relatórios de Conjuntura produced by the Studies and Planning Department (*Departamento de Estudos e Planeamento* — DEP) as from the second half of 1981, in which there are statistical appendices, most of the tables present retrospective series that date back to 1983 or 1984, for which the source is the INE. The Estudos series and, after 1982, the D (Employment, Vocational Training and Rehabilitation) series from the Relatórios e análíticos collection (DEP) include several quantitative studies on employment.

The source for the annual figures presented in the reports on the economic situation published by the Bank of Portugal is the MT.

\*

Most international organisations (OECD, ILO, UN, etc.) publish information based fundamentally on the data made available by national bodies, which are generally adapted to comply with international definitions and may sometimes be subject to estimation for a number of years. The main exception to this rule are the European Union (EU) organisations, which base their information, through Eurostat, on their own surveys of the labour forces of the Member States. Portugal became the subject of such surveys from 1986 onwards, even though the first data presented in that year were still provided by the Portuguese bodies. In studies of a general nature conducted by the Directorate-General of Economic and Financial Affairs (Commission of the European Communities), such as, for example, that outlining the main economic policy guidelines for 1966, there are long statistical appendices in which it is possible to find annual

series of statistics on employment and the unemployment rate for the country as a whole since 1960. The Labour Force Surveys include regional data on several aspects of the economic activity of the population (activity rate amongst young persons, employment of non-national population by educational level, cause of absence from work, characteristics of unemployment, etc.) Besides the weekly bulletins Unemployment — rapid statistics, mention should also be made of the volumes Employment and Unemployment, corresponding to theme 3 (Population and social conditions) Series C (Accounts, surveys and statistics). These include retrospective information (the last fifteen or twenty years), whilst the last of these volumes presents aggregate data for the period 1980-1994. The volumes published at the end of the 1980s present data for the period from 1970 (or 1975) to 1989.

\*

In Table 4.5, we have chosen to reproduce some of the results made available in the INE employment surveys in detriment to the surveys produced under the auspices of the MT. This choice was based on the fact that, despite the difficulties in detecting the evolution in the behaviour of the economic activity of the population on the basis of either of these sources, the second source is less exhaustive. The table makes use of the selection made in Barreto, 1996 by António Barreto and Clara Valadas Preto in Chapter 4, part 1 (Employment and working conditions).

### **3 — The active population, employment and unemployment — long series**

Some works have had as their aim the estimation of long homogeneous series of variables relating to the economic activity of the Portuguese population, based on the fundamental sources that were referred to earlier. Some of these series have been selected and are reproduced here.

\*

As was said in section 1, Nunes, 1989 contains an annual estimation of the active employed population by sectors of activity with an identical breakdown to the one presented in Tables 4.1 and 4.2. Tables 4.6 and 4.7 reproduce this information for the main sectors of activity for the period 1890 to 1981 and for the manufacturing industry for the period from 1930 to 1981 respectively.

The method used in the estimation of these series was based on the annual estimation (to 31 December) of the resident population (itself based on the application of an equation of concordance to the variations in the population between censuses and to the statistics of the physiological movements and legal emigration that had taken place, as well as on the correction of the discrepancies found in this same equation based on the hypothesis that the balances of the migratory flows are proportional to legal emigration), on the estimation of the structure of the regional distribution of the population (through the linear interpolation of these structures at the date of the censuses), on the estimation of the rate of activity in each region (through the linear interpolation of these structures at the date of the censuses) and finally on the estimation of the sectoral structure in each region (through the linear interpolation of these structures at the date of the censuses).

It should be mentioned that a correction was made of the original figures from the 1930 census, given the improbability that such a sharp fall would have occurred in that year in the share of the agricultural sector or that there would have been such a significant increase in the share of the sundry services sector when compared with the information contained in the 1911 and 1940 censuses. The share of the agricultural sector was taken as the figure resulting from the linear interpolation between the values of 1911 and 1940 and the difference between this share and the original figure was subtracted from the original share calculated for the sundry services sector. No other correction was made to the original data except for its aggregation into sectors, so that in this way the limitations referred to in section 1 that reduce the degree of homogeneity of the series have been taken fully into account.

\*

In the chapter 'Population statistics, employment and unemployment', in Pinheiro, 1997, which is the responsibility of Maria José Valério and Fátima Silva, series of these variables (and also of the resident population) are presented for the period 1953-1993. There is an appendix volume with copious and detailed methodological notes about the "estimation procedures", including a criticism of the various available sources that were used (as well as a justification of the fact that others were not used).

In short, the estimations of employment are, generally speaking, based on the figures of the censuses, corrected through a comparison with the Quadros de Pessoal of the MT (from 1981 onwards) and with the Estatísticas das Sociedades of the INE (1950-1985) and interpolated in accordance with the variation rates of these sources, adjusted for the calculation of the number of employees. Total employment was estimated on the basis of the previous estimation (employees), taking into account the relationship (reflected in the censuses sources) between these two variables after linear interpolation for the years between the censuses. In the case of

unemployment, the ratios between unemployment and employment were calculated in the years between the censuses and applied to the total employment figures previously calculated after interpolation with different methodologies for the periods 1951-1973 and 1974-1993. Whereas, for the first subperiod, the lack of annual unemployment data led firstly to the calculation of a series for the active population and then, through the difference with the estimation of total employment, to the figures being obtained for unemployment, for the subperiod 1974-1993 it was possible to calculate the annual ratios as there existed annual unemployment data (through the Permanent Employment Survey).

It should be noted that the attempt to establish homogeneity for the series, which was generally both important and correct, was sometimes achieved at the expense of greater historical accuracy, more specifically in regard to the adoption of the same age limit for considering someone as being economically active (and inactive) throughout the period (12 years of age), when the evolution of this age limit over time in the basic sources reflects different historical realities.

The basic reference concepts are those used in the 1991 RGP (active population in the broad sense, inactive population and unemployment), or those of the SEC 79 (total employment and employees).

As to the sectors into which the series of 'total employment' and 'employees' are broken down, the classification used was the CAE Rev1.

Tables 4.8, 4.9 and 4.10 reproduce part of the information contained in the work referred to ([Pinheiro, 1997](#)).

Table 4.8 reproduces the aggregate figures for the resident population (included in order to allow for the calculation of the activity rate), for the economically active population (in the broad sense), for total employment, and unemployment, making it possible to easily obtain the activity rate through the calculation of the ratio of active population / resident population and the unemployment rate through the calculation of the ratio of unemployment / active population.

Table 4.9 reproduces the breakdown of total employment in accordance with the nine main sectors of activity of the CAE Rev1. On pages 173-177 of [Pinheiro, 1997](#), a more detailed breakdown into two-digit categories by subsectors is provided.

Table 4.10 presents the breakdown into two-digit categories (nine subsectors) of total employment in the manufacturing industry.

## Sources

— [Anuário Estatístico](#) — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1875-....

## Chapter 4 — Economic activity of the population

- Desemprego — Estatísticas rápidas — EUROSTAT, monthly bulletin.
- Emprego e Desemprego: 1970(1975)-1988 — EUROSTAT (tema 3: população e condições sociais, série C: Contas, inquéritos e estatísticas), 1989.
- Emprego e Desemprego: 1980-1994 — EUROSTAT (tema 3: população e condições sociais, série C: Contas, inquéritos e estatísticas), 1996.
- Estatísticas da Construção e Habitação — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1970-1988
- Estatísticas da Cultura e Recreio — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1979-....
- Estatísticas da Educação — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1950-....
- Estatísticas das Empresas — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1990-....
- Estatísticas da Saúde — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1969-....
- Estatísticas das Sociedades — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1950-1985.
- Estatísticas para o Planeamento — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1971.
- Inquérito comunitário sobre as forças de trabalho — EUROSTAT.
- Inquérito Permanente ao Emprego — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1974-1982.
- Inquérito ao Emprego — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1983-....
- Inquérito ao Emprego, anos 90. Metodologia — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1993.
- Inquérito ao Emprego — Relatórios de Conjuntura Anual — Ministério do Trabalho, 1971-1983.
- Inquérito Trimestral ao Emprego — Estatísticas do Trabalho — Ministério do Trabalho, 1984-1990.
- Inquérito Emprego Estruturado — Estatísticas do Trabalho — Ministério do Trabalho, 1991-....
- Labor Force Statistics — Organisation for Economic Cooperation and Development, 1970-1984.
- Quadros de Pessoal — Ministério do Trabalho / Ministério do Emprego / Ministério do Emprego e da Segurança Social, 1981-....
- Recenseamento Geral da População — Direcção-Geral de Estatística / Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1890, 1910, 1911, 1930, 1940, 1950, 1960, 1970, 1981, 1991.
- Recenseamento Industrial — Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1957-59, 1964, 1972 e 1984.
- Relatório de Conjuntura — Ministério do Trabalho / Ministério do Emprego / Ministério do Emprego e da Segurança Social, 1981- ....



## References

ANTUNES — Os inquéritos de emprego aos estabelecimentos 1963-1995. Lisboa: Ministério da Qualificação e Emprego, Departamento de Estatística, 1996.

BARRETO, António; Preto, Clara Valadas — Emprego e condições de trabalho. In BARRETO, António (editor) — A situação social em Portugal, 1960-1995. Lisboa: Instituto de Ciências Sociais (Universidade de Lisboa), 1996.

CONFRARIA, João; MONTEIRO, Manuel — Notas sobre o problema da precisão das observações económicas — o caso das estatísticas de emprego e da emigração em Portugal (1960-1985). Estudos nº 13, Departamento de Economia, Faculdade de Ciências Humanas, Universidade Católica Portuguesa, Lisboa, 1988.

CONFRARIA, João — Nota sobre a dimensão e a evolução provável do trabalho clandestino em Portugal (1983-1986). Estudos nº 15, Departamento de Economia, Faculdade de Ciências Humanas, Universidade Católica Portuguesa, Lisboa, 1989.

CORDOVIL, Francisco C.; ANTUNES, Carlos J. — Repartição regional da população, emprego e desemprego. IACEP-GEBEI, 1977.

— DREPA (Região Autónoma dos Açores) — Demografia emprego e desemprego nos Açores 1950-1981. 1987.

HENRIQUES, Cláudia — O desemprego regional em Portugal: caracterização, ensaio interpretativo e políticas. M. A. dissertation presented at the ISEG — UTL, 1994.

NUNES, Ana Bela — População activa e actividade económica em Portugal dos finais do século XIX à actualidade. Uma contribuição para o crescimento económico português. Ph. D. dissertation presented at the ISEG — UTL, 1989.

NUNES, Ana Bela — A evolução da estrutura, por sexos, da população activa em Portugal — um indicador do crescimento económico (1890-1981). Análise Social, no. 112-113, 1991.

PINHEIRO, Maximiliano (editor) — Séries Longas para a Economia portuguesa — Pós II Guerra Mundial. Volume I — Séries Estatísticas, parte IV (Estatísticas da população, emprego e desemprego). Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1997.

## Tables

4.1 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to General Population Censuses, 1890-1991

4.2 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to General Population Censuses, 1930-1991

4.3 — Active population by occupational status, according to General Population Censuses, 1930-1991

4.4 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to General Population Censuses, 1940-1991

4.5 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to Employment Surveys, 1974-1992

4.6 — Active population by sectors of activity — long series, 1890-1981

4.7 — Active population in the manufacturing industry in the broad sense by sectors — long series, 1930-1981

4.8 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1992

4.9 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1992

4.10 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1992

## **Table 4.1 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to the General Population Censuses, 1890-1991**

Sources — Recenseamento Geral da População of 1890, 1900, 1911, 1930, 1940, 1950, 1960, 1970, 1981 and 1991; Nunes. 1989; Nunes. 1991.

Unit — Thousands

Remarks:

1 — Strictly speaking, the values of the first four censuses correspond to occupational groups — see comments in the introductory text.

2 — The 1970 data are provisional data based on 20% estimates (the definitive data of this census were never published).

3 — Until 1940, the total value does not include the categories 'unknown' and 'ill defined' as their score was more than 1% of the total (in the case of the first censuses, the score for these items is actually between 3 and 5%); the solution of including these items in one of the other categories, namely sundry services, is a reasonable one when their score is negligible and does not have a random effect on the sectoral structure. This was the procedure adopted in subsequent years.

4 — For more information, namely regarding the evolution of concepts, breakdowns and aggregate scores, see the sources.

5 — The fact that the totals possibly do not match the sum of the part scores is due to the effects of rounding up the figures.

Table 4.1 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to the General Population Censuses, 1890-1991 (continued)

**A — Both sexes**

year	active population	agriculture	fishing	mining quarrying	manufacturing industry	transport communications	trade	administration defence	services
1890	2 530.5	1 536.4	26.6	4.5	447.6	52.5	103.3	58.0	301.7
1900	2 457.3	1 507.6	21.5	4.3	455.3	66.4	141.8	52.1	208.3
1911	2 545.0	1 442.4	19.4	9.2	547.8	76.8	154.3	54.3	240.7
1930	2 516.7	1 237.0	39.4	11.0	467.8	71.9	145.4	88.2	456.0
1940	2 775.2	1 423.7	36.9	19.3	566.1	83.9	190.1	100.9	354.3
1950	3 196.5	1 523.1	46.0	25.1	757.4	107.3	255.3	114.8	367.4
1960	3 315.6	1 398.3	46.8	26.2	932.5	122.2	308.6	119.2	362.0
1970	3 060.9	965.9	36.9	12.2	1 009.2	147.3	377.2	155.6	356.6
1981	3 848.7	705.3	32.6	18.0	1 480.4	191.7	581.6	253.0	586.2
1991	4 127.6	418.8	26.8	16.1	1 547.1	189.6	800.8	329.0	799.4

**B — Men**

year	active population	agriculture	fishing	mining quarrying	manufacturing industry	transport communications	trade	administration defence	services
1890	1 609.3	1 054.4	21.9	4.3	289.9	50.3	72.2	57.9	58.5
1900	1 726.3	1 127.3	19.7	4.0	320.0	62.0	96.0	51.9	45.4
1911	1 848.1	1 107.9	19.0	8.9	392.6	73.4	124.6	53.9	67.9
1930	1 823.8	1 072.7	38.2	10.6	367.3	68.1	125.7	85.8	55.5
1940	2 143.0	1 202.8	36.1	18.1	433.0	75.9	159.2	97.6	120.3
1950	2 471.8	1 284.5	45.1	23.4	585.3	99.7	216.6	105.9	111.3
1960	2 713.0	1 292.6	45.9	25.4	757.6	111.4	260.9	108.1	111.0
1970	2 263.1	788.3	35.8	11.8	744.9	129.6	282.7	122.4	147.6
1981	2 544.4	445.8	31.6	17.2	1 108.1	161.7	382.8	171.1	226.2
1991	2 475.8	264.2	25.3	14.8	1 057.9	150.9	488.1	215.9	258.6

Table 4.1 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to the General Population Censuses, 1890-1991 (continued)

**C — Women**

year	active population	agriculture	fishing	mining quarrying	manufacturing industry	transport communications	trade	administration defence	services
1890	921.2	482.0	4.7	0.2	157.7	2.2	31.1	0.1	243.2
1900	731.0	380.3	1.8	0.3	135.3	4.4	45.8	0.2	162.9
1911	696.9	334.5	0.4	0.3	155.2	3.4	29.7	0.4	172.8
1930	692.9	164.3	1.2	0.4	100.5	3.8	19.7	2.4	400.5
1940	632.2	220.9	0.8	1.2	133.1	8.0	30.9	3.3	234.0
1950	724.7	238.6	0.9	1.7	172.1	7.6	38.7	8.9	256.1
1960	602.6	105.7	0.9	0.8	174.9	10.8	47.7	11.1	251.0
1970	797.8	177.6	1.1	0.4	264.3	17.7	94.5	33.2	209.0
1981	1 304.3	259.5	1.0	0.8	372.3	30.0	198.8	81.9	360.0
1991	1 651.8	154.6	1.5	1.3	489.2	38.7	312.7	113.1	540.8

## **Table 4.2 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the General Population Censuses, 1930-1991**

Sources — Recenseamento Geral da População of 1930, 1940, 1950, 1960, 1970, 1981 and 1991; Nunes. 1989; Nunes. 1991.

Unit — Thousands

Remarks:

1 — Strictly speaking, the values for 1930 correspond to occupational groups — see comments in the introductory text.

2 — The 1970 data are provisional data based on 20% estimates (the definitive data of this census were never published).

3 — For more information, namely regarding the evolution of concepts, breakdowns and aggregate scores, see the sources.

4 — The fact that the totals possibly do not match the sum of the part scores is due to the effects of rounding up the figures.

Table 4.2 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the General Population Censuses, 1930-1991 (continued)

**A — Both sexes**

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork furniture	paper printing publishing	building materials
1930	467.8	36.9	162.9	40.1	9.3	8.1
1940	566.1	65.9	199.1	58.9	12.8	16.0
1950	757.4	77.3	240.4	92.4	18.1	25.9
1960	932.5	72.8	254.4	100.9	26.9	39.4
1970	1 009.2	60.8	264.1	107.8	31.3	48.3
1981	1 480.4	106.0	312.0	117.0	49.5	65.4
1991	1 547.1	98.8	439.0	69.2	54.6	69.5

year	manufac- turing industry	chemicals	machinery electrical and transport eq.	sundry manu- facturing industries	building public works	electricity gas, water sewage
1930	467.8	2.9	53.2	23.6	124.9	5.8
1940	566.1	8.9	57.1	14.7	127.1	5.7
1950	757.4	10.5	84.0	44.2	154.7	9.9
1960	932.5	30.8	144.2	21.5	227.2	14.4
1970	1 009.2	39.8	158.7	26.1	256.1	16.3
1981	1 480.4	75.5	246.2	36.9	442.3	29.4
1991	1 547.1	63.9	219.1	63.2	442.4	27.4

Table 4.2 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the General Population Censuses, 1930-1991 (continued)

**B — Men**

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork furniture	paper printing publishing	building materials
1930	367.3	29.0	83.9	37.8	8.2	7.2
1940	433.0	46.1	105.0	52.3	10.4	13.7
1950	585.3	52.9	121.9	84.4	14.1	22.1
1960	757.6	48.1	139.9	93.0	21.5	34.3
1970	744.9	35.6	94.1	94.9	23.6	39.3
1981	1 108.1	65.2	108.8	99.6	36.4	51.2
1991	1 057.9	59.5	138.0	55.8	38.6	47.6

year	manufac- turing industry	chemicals	machinery electrical and transport eq.	undry manu- facturing industries	building public works	electricity gas, water sewage
1930	367.3	2.6	52.0	18.8	122.2	5.7
1940	433.0	6.8	55.6	12.1	125.5	5.4
1950	585.3	8.0	81.7	37.1	153.6	9.5
1960	757.6	25.3	138.7	17.8	225.4	13.7
1970	744.9	29.9	143.8	16.1	253.0	14.5
1981	1 108.1	53.8	209.6	24.4	432.8	26.5
1991	1 057.9	44.3	177.9	49.4	423.4	23.2



Table 4.2 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the General Population Censuses, 1930-1991 (continued)

**C — Women**

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork furniture	paper printing publishing	building materials
1930	100.5	7.9	79.0	2.3	1.1	0.9
1940	133.1	19.8	94.1	6.6	2.4	2.3
1950	172.1	24.4	118.5	8.0	4.0	3.8
1960	174.9	24.7	114.5	7.9	5.4	5.1
1970	264.3	25.2	170.0	12.9	7.7	9.0
1981	372.3	40.8	203.2	17.4	13.1	14.2
1991	489.2	39.3	301.0	13.4	16.0	21.9

year	manufac- turing industry	chemicals	machinery electrical and transport eq.	undry manu- facturing industries	building public works	electricity gas, water sewage
1930	100.5	0.3	1.2	4.8	2.7	0.1
1940	133.1	2.1	1.5	2.6	1.6	0.3
1950	172.1	2.5	2.3	7.1	1.1	0.4
1960	174.9	5.5	5.5	3.7	1.8	0.7
1970	264.3	9.9	14.9	10.0	3.1	1.8
1981	372.3	21.7	36.6	12.5	9.5	2.9
1991	489.2	19.6	41.2	13.8	19.0	4.2

**Table 4.3 — Active population by occupational status, according to the General Population Censuses, 1930-1991**

Sources — Recenseamento Geral da População of 1940, 1950, 1960, 1970, 1981 and 1991.

Unit — Thousands

Remarks:

1 — 'Unknown and ill defined occupations' were always included.

2 — The value of the item 'self-employed workers' for 1930 includes those who are considered as employers in the following censuses.

3 — The value of the item 'others' in 1940 corresponds to unknown occupational statuses; in 1950, 1960 and 1970 it includes unpaid non-family employees; in 1981 and 1991, it includes production cooperatives.

4 — Although the table for the 1930 census includes a column entitled 'family member helping the respective heads of household'. which is included in the active population group, its value highlights the inclusion of many workers who do not belong to the active population, namely 1 156.4 women.

**A — Both sexes**

year	total	employers	self-employed workers	employees	unpaid family members	others
1930	2 631.7	?	873.1	1 758.6	?	?
1940	2 920.2	336.6	290.1	1 758.6	202.1	525.6
1950	3 196.5	241.7	438.9	2 295.3	199.2	21.5
1960	3 315.6	193.2	436.7	2 453.2	201.2	31.4
1970	3 163.9	73.2	582.8	2 364.0	128.9	15.1
1981	3 848.7	130.0	630.1	2 956.5	100.2	32.0
1991	4 127.6	265.1	558.1	3 167.2	80.8	56.4

Table 4.3 — Active population by occupational status, according to the General Population Censuses, 1930-1991 (continued)

**B — Men**

year	total	employers	self-employed workers	employees	unpaid family members	others
1930	1 919.6	?	557.3	1 362.3	?	?
1940	2 270.1	300.3	243.9	1 216.6	139.0	370.3
1950	2 471.8	220.9	370.0	1 699.5	169.5	12.0
1960	2 713.0	180.1	390.8	1 934.5	186.0	21.7
1970	2 334.4	66.4	493.2	1 692.1	71.9	10.8
1981	2 544.4	109.4	435.1	1 936.8	42.2	20.9
1991	2 475.8	190.7	369.5	1 854.4	28.7	32.4

**C — Women**

year	total	employers	self-employed workers	employees	unpaid family members	others
1930	712.1	?	315.8	396.3	?	?
1940	650.1	36.3	46.2	542.0	63.1	155.3
1950	724.7	20.8	68.9	595.8	29.7	9.5
1960	602.6	13.1	45.9	518.7	15.2	9.7
1970	829.5	6.8	89.6	671.9	57.0	4.3
1981	1 304.3	20.6	195.0	1 019.7	58.0	11.1
1991	1 651.8	74.4	188.6	1 312.8	52.1	24.0

## Table 4.4 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to the Population Censuses, 1940-1991

Sources — Recenseamento Geral da População of 1940. 1950. 1960. 1970. 1981 e 1991.

Remarks:

1 — The active population with an occupation or in employment always includes the category of 'unknown and ill defined occupations'.

2 — The inactive population in 1940 and 1950 includes those seeking employment for the first time, who were considered by the censuses to be in 'unprofessional situations' (1940) and 'active workers with an occupation' (1950) — see section 1 of the introductory text.

3 — The following definitions were used:

active population = employed population + unemployed population + compulsory military service

activity rate = active population / total population

unemployment rate = unemployed population / active population

### A — Both sexes

year	active population thousands	employed population thousands	unemployed population thousands	compulsory military service thousands	activity rate percentage	unemployment rate percentage
1940	3 016.1	2 886.5	129.6	?	39	4.3
1950	3 288.5	3 196.5	92.0	?	39	2.8
1960	3 436.2	3 315.6	82.1	38.5	26	2.4
1970	3 395.9	3 163.9	90.8	141.2	39	2.7
1981	4 134.2	3 848.7	285.5	?	42	6.9
1991	4 395.9	4 128.1	267.8	?	52	6.1

Table 4.4 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to the Population Censuses, 1940-1991 (continued)

### B — Men

year	active population thousands	employed population thousands	unemployed population thousands	compulsory military service thousands	activity rate percentage	unemployment rate percentage
1940	2 341.8	2 240.2	101.6	?	63	4.3
1950	2 551.3	2 471.8	79.5	?	63	3.1
1960	2 830.0	2 713.0	78.5	38.5	66	2.8
1970	2 538.9	2 334.4	63.3	141.2	58	2.5
1981	2 656.2	2 544.4	111.8	?	56	4.2
1991	2 583.4	2 476.2	107.2	?	65	4.1

### C — Women

year	active population thousands	employed population thousands	unemployed population thousands	compulsory military service thousands	activity rate percentage	unemployment rate percentage
1940	674.3	646.3	28.0	0	17	4.2
1950	737.2	724.7	12.5	0	17	1.7
1960	606.2	602.6	3.6	0	13	0.6
1970	857.0	829.5	27.5	0	19	3.2
1981	1 478.0	1 304.3	173.7	0	29	11.8
1991	1 812.5	1 651.9	160.6	0	41	8.9

## Table 4.5 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to employment surveys, 1974-1992

Source — Barreto, 1996.

Remarks:

1 — Values correspond to annual averages.

2 — For details about the evolution of concepts, see the introductory text. For more information, see the sources.

3 — The following definitions were used:

primary sector = agriculture + forestry + hunting + fishing + mining and quarrying

secondary sector = manufacturing industry + electricity, gas and water + building and public works

tertiary sector = wholesale and retail trade, restaurants and hotels + transport, storage and communications + banks and other financial institutions, insurance and real estate operations + public administration and defence + educational services + health and veterinary services + sanitary and similar services

activity rate = active population / total population

unemployment rate in the broad sense = unemployed population in the broad sense / active population in the broad sense

unemployment rate in the narrow sense = unemployed population in the narrow sense / active population in the narrow sense

Table 4.5 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to employment surveys, 1974-1992 (continued)

year	active population thousands	employed population thousands	primary sector thousands	secondary sector thousands	terciary sector thousands
1974	3 910.1	3 753.5	1 286.6	1 240.5	1 226.6
1975	3 933.1	3 760.1	1 274.7	1 264.6	1 220.7
1976	4 072.2	3 819.1	1 290.8	1 278.7	1 249.8
1977	4 124.3	3 829.2	1 259.4	1 260.8	1 309.2
1978	4 142.7	3 824.8	1 193.0	1 327.3	1 304.5
1979	4 239.0	3 914.6	1 193.1	1 361.5	1 360.2
1980	4 293.2	3 976.2	1 132.8	1 426.6	1 417.0
1981	4 367.2	4 022.1	1 069.8	1 461.8	1 490.6
1982	4 306.6	4 000.0	1 033.2	1 476.9	1 489.9
1983	4 840.4	4 352.8	1 025.0	1 542.5	1 785.2
1984	4 783.9	4 288.2	1 019.0	1 450.1	1 819.2
1985	4 767.0	4 269.7	1 016.1	1 482.2	1 771.4
1986	4 767.8	4 289.1	940.6	1 447.0	1 901.5
1987	4 808.1	4 405.8	976.3	1 521.5	1 908.1
1988	4 851.7	4 512.8	942.4	1 562.0	2 008.4
1989	4 907.9	4 613.2	876.8	1 612.0	2 124.5
1990	4 991.0	4 717.5	846.0	1 625.3	2 246.1
1991	5 101.6	4 857.4	848.1	1 630.0	2 379.3
1992	4 805.6	4 543.1	522.3	1 499.5	2 521.3

Table 4.5 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to employment surveys, 1974-1992 (continued)

year	activity rate percentage	unemployment broad sense thousands	unemployment rate broad sense percentage	unemployment narrow sense thousands	unemployment rate narrow sense percentage
1974	44.3	156.7	4.0	111.7	2.9
1975	44.3	173.1	4.4	137.9	3.5
1976	44.9	253.1	6.2	189.1	4.7
1977	45.0	295.0	7.2	215.5	5.3
1978	45.0	318.0	7.7	204.8	5.1
1979	45.5	324.4	7.7	164.6	4.0
1980	45.7	317.1	7.4	152.4	3.7
1981	46.0	345.2	7.9	165.3	3.9
1982	45.1	306.6	7.1	146.0	3.5
1983	48.4	487.6	10.1	365.7	7.8
1984	47.4	495.7	10.4	393.9	8.4
1985	46.9	497.3	10.4	405.4	8.7
1986	46.5	478.7	10.0	393.6	8.4
1987	46.7	402.3	8.4	329.2	7.0
1988	47.1	338.9	7.0	272.9	5.7
1989	47.5	294.7	6.0	243.5	5.0
1990	48.2	273.6	5.5	231.1	4.7
1991	49.3	244.2	4.8	207.5	4.1



**Table 4.6 — Active population by sectors of activity — long series, 1890-1981**

Source — Nunes, 1989.

Unit — Thousands.

Remarks:

1 — Values are estimations as at 31 December, except for the 1981 figure which represents the value at the date of the census (16 March).

2 — The fact that the totals possibly do not match the sum of the part scores is due to the effects of rounding up the figures.

3 — See further methodological remarks in parts 1 and 3 of the introductory text.

year	active population	agriculture	fishing	mining quarrying	manufacturing industry	transport communications	trade	administration defence	services
1890	2 529.8	1 536.1	26.5	4.4	447.7	52.6	103.5	57.9	300.9
1891	2 523.0	1 533.7	26.1	4.4	448.5	53.9	107.4	57.3	291.7
1892	2 521.2	1 535.6	25.6	4.4	450.1	55.4	111.5	56.9	283.0
1893	2 516.0	1 532.7	25.2	4.4	451.3	56.8	115.4	56.3	273.9
1894	2 507.5	1 529.1	24.6	4.4	451.8	58.2	119.2	55.7	264.4
1895	2 494.8	1 522.9	24.1	4.4	451.6	59.4	122.8	55.0	254.5
1896	2 482.0	1 516.7	23.5	4.4	451.4	60.7	126.4	54.3	244.6
1897	2 473.7	1 513.2	23.0	4.4	452.0	62.1	130.2	53.7	235.2
1898	2 465.5	1 509.7	22.4	4.3	452.6	63.5	134.0	53.1	225.8
1899	2 461.1	1 508.5	21.9	4.3	454.0	65.0	138.1	52.5	215.7
1900	2 458.3	1 507.3	21.4	4.4	456.0	66.4	141.9	52.1	208.6
1901	2 465.2	1 501.2	21.2	4.8	463.9	67.3	142.9	52.3	211.4
1902	2 476.2	1 497.4	21.1	5.2	472.7	68.3	144.2	52.6	214.6
1903	2 489.7	1 495.0	20.9	5.7	482.0	69.4	145.7	52.9	218.0
1904	2 599.7	1 491.0	20.8	6.1	490.1	70.4	147.0	53.2	221.2
1905	2 509.0	1 485.3	20.6	6.6	499.3	71.4	148.2	53.4	224.2

Table 4.6 — Active population by sectors of activity — long series, 1890-1981 (continued)

year	active popula- tion	agricul- ture	fishing	mining quarrying	manufac- turing industry	transport commu- nications	trade	adminis- tration defence	services
1906	2 511.9	1 476.4	20.4	7.0	506.7	72.2	149.0	53.5	226.7
1907	2 516.2	1 468.2	20.1	7.4	514.5	73.0	149.9	53.7	229.3
1908	2 518.6	1 458.8	19.9	7.9	521.9	73.8	150.7	53.7	231.7
1909	2 522.9	1 450.6	19.7	8.3	529.7	74.7	151.7	53.8	234.4
1910	2 531.4	1 444.6	19.5	8.8	538.4	75.7	152.8	54.0	237.4
1911	2 545.8	1 442.4	19.5	9.2	547.6	76.8	154.3	54.5	241.4
1912	2 530.0	1 428.5	20.4	9.3	540.4	76.1	153.0	55.9	246.3
1913	2 511.3	1 413.0	21.2	9.5	532.7	75.3	151.5	57.2	251.0
1914	2 514.1	1 409.6	22.3	9.4	529.5	75.2	151.3	59.0	257.7
1915	2 519.2	1 407.4	23.4	9.5	526.8	75.2	151.2	60.9	264.7
1916	2 517.9	1 401.7	24.4	9.6	522.7	74.9	150.8	62.6	271.1
1917	2 516.4	1 395.8	25.4	9.7	518.6	74.6	150.3	64.3	277.4
1918	2 465.7	1 362.8	25.9	9.6	504.4	72.9	146.9	64.8	278.2
1919	2 439.4	1 344.4	26.7	9.6	495.3	71.9	145.0	65.8	281.6
1920	2 423.1	1 329.6	27.5	9.6	488.3	71.3	143.7	67.1	286.0
1921	2 431.7	1 329.3	28.6	9.8	486.3	71.3	143.8	69.1	293.4
1922	2 440.5	1 329.2	29.8	9.9	484.2	71.4	144.0	71.1	301.4
1923	2 444.0	1 326.2	30.9	10.0	481.1	71.3	143.8	73.0	307.6
1924	2 454.5	1 326.9	32.0	10.2	479.3	71.4	144.1	75.1	315.4
1925	2 469.1	1 329.8	33.3	10.3	478.3	71.6	144.5	77.4	323.8
1926	2 480.6	1 331.0	34.5	10.5	476.6	71.7	144.8	79.6	331.8
1927	2 489.1	1 330.4	35.8	10.6	474.3	71.7	144.9	81.8	339.5
1928	2 500.2	1 331.3	37.0	10.7	472.4	71.9	145.2	84.0	347.7
1929	2 507.6	1 330.1	38.2	10.9	469.8	71.8	145.2	86.2	355.4
1930	2 519.8	1 331.5	39.4	11.1	468.8	72.0	145.8	88.4	362.9
1931	2 547.3	1 342.1	39.2	11.8	478.5	73.2	150.1	89.7	362.6
1932	2 573.8	1 351.3	39.0	12.6	488.1	74.4	154.4	90.9	362.1
1933	2 599.4	1 361.5	38.8	13.4	497.6	75.6	158.7	92.2	361.4
1934	2 624.8	1 370.8	38.6	14.2	507.2	76.7	163.0	93.4	360.6
1935	2 649.0	1 379.4	38.3	15.0	516.7	77.9	167.4	94.6	359.6

Table 4.6 — Active population by sectors of activity — long series, 1890-1981 (continued)

year	active popula- tion	agricul- ture	fishing	mining quarrying	manufac- turing industry	transport commu- nications	trade	adminis- tration defence	services
1936	2 676.2	1 389.3	38.1	15.9	526.8	79.1	172.0	96.0	358.9
1937	2 702.0	1 398.6	37.8	16.7	536.7	80.3	176.5	97.2	358.0
1938	2 728.3	1 408.0	37.5	17.0	546.9	81.6	181.2	98.5	357.0
1939	2 755.6	1 417.8	37.2	18.5	557.3	82.8	186.0	99.8	356.1
1940	2 776.5	1 424.0	36.9	19.3	566.7	83.9	190.4	100.9	354.4
1941	2 805.6	1 428.4	37.6	19.8	581.9	85.7	195.6	101.9	354.6
1942	2 840.5	1 435.6	38.4	20.2	598.6	87.8	201.3	103.0	355.4
1943	2 881.7	1 445.8	39.3	20.8	616.8	90.0	207.6	104.4	356.9
1944	2 924.8	1 456.6	40.2	21.4	635.7	92.3	214.0	105.9	358.5
1945	2 971.1	1 468.8	41.2	22.0	655.6	94.8	220.8	107.4	360.4
1946	3 013.7	1 478.9	42.1	22.6	674.9	97.2	227.4	108.8	361.7
1947	3 056.8	1 489.0	43.0	23.2	694.6	99.6	234.1	110.2	362.9
1948	3 109.1	1 503.3	44.1	23.8	716.7	102.3	241.6	112.0	365.0
1949	3 152.9	1 513.1	45.1	24.5	737.2	104.8	248.6	113.4	366.0
1950	3 197.5	1 522.8	46.0	25.1	758.2	107.4	255.8	114.8	367.0
1951	3 207.9	1 510.3	46.1	25.2	774.7	108.8	260.8	115.2	366.4
1952	3 212.2	1 494.8	46.1	25.3	785.7	110.1	265.4	115.4	365.1
1953	3 219.7	1 480.7	46.1	25.3	805.9	111.4	270.2	115.7	364.2
1954	3 224.5	1 465.3	46.1	25.4	821.3	112.6	274.8	115.9	362.9
1955	3 241.7	1 455.3	46.2	25.6	840.0	114.3	280.5	116.7	363.0
1956	3 254.3	1 443.2	46.3	25.7	857.8	115.8	285.9	117.0	362.6
1957	3 266.3	1 430.6	46.4	25.8	875.5	117.3	291.3	117.4	362.1
1958	3 282.8	1 419.8	46.5	25.9	894.5	118.9	297.0	118.0	362.0
1959	3 298.7	1 408.5	46.6	26.1	913.6	120.5	302.9	118.6	362.0
1960	3 315.8	1 396.9	46.7	26.0	933.2	122.3	309.0	119.4	362.1
1961	3 318.3	1 362.7	46.2	24.9	949.8	126.2	319.0	124.4	364.8
1962	3 322.6	1 329.1	45.6	23.6	967.1	130.2	329.8	129.5	367.6
1963	3 318.8	1 292.4	44.9	22.3	981.9	134.4	339.4	134.3	369.6
1964	3 306.5	1 252.5	44.1	20.9	994.3	137.1	348.2	138.6	370.7
1965	3 268.9	1 203.5	42.9	19.4	998.8	139.2	354.1	142.2	368.8

Table 4.6 — Active population by sectors of activity — long series, 1890-1981 (continued)

year	active popula- tion	agricul- ture	fishing	mining quarrying	manufac- turing industry	transport commu- nications	trade	adminis- tration defence	services
1966	3 205.7	1 146.2	41.4	17.7	995.0	140.1	356.9	144.1	364.0
1967	3 161.8	1 097.0	40.2	16.3	996.8	141.8	361.5	146.8	361.4
1968	3 125.0	1 051.1	39.1	14.9	1 000.4	143.6	366.7	149.7	359.5
1969	3 092.5	1 007.3	38.0	13.5	1 005.1	145.5	372.2	152.8	358.1
1970	3 065.3	965.6	36.9	12.2	1 011.3	147.6	378.1	156.0	357.6
1971	3 147.7	948.3	36.9	12.8	1 056.6	152.3	397.1	165.1	378.6
1972	3 233.0	930.2	36.8	13.5	1 103.5	157.1	416.9	174.6	400.4
1973	3 326.4	912.6	36.7	14.1	1 153.9	162.3	445.1	184.6	423.9
1974	3 403.9	889.0	36.4	14.7	1 199.4	166.7	457.7	194.0	445.8
1975	3 478.0	863.1	36.0	15.3	1 244.3	171.0	477.2	203.3	467.7
1976	3 531.4	835.8	35.5	15.8	1 289.5	175.1	496.9	212.7	489.9
1977	3 625.9	807.4	35.0	16.4	1 335.5	179.3	517.1	222.3	512.8
1978	3 695.5	776.8	34.3	16.9	1 380.3	183.2	536.9	231.8	535.3
1979	3 766.6	745.4	33.6	17.4	1 426.0	187.2	557.2	241.4	558.4
1980	3 835.0	712.3	32.8	17.9	1 471.1	190.9	577.4	251.0	581.4
1981	3 848.7	705.2	32.6	18.0	1 480.3	191.7	581.6	253.0	586.2

**Table 4.7 — Active population in the manufacturing industry in the broad sense by sectors — long series, 1930-1981**

Source — Nunes, 1989.

Unit — Thousands.

Remarks:

1 — Values are estimations as at 31 December, except for the 1981 figure which represents the value at the date of the census (16 March).

2 — The fact that the totals possibly do not match the sum of the part scores is due to the effects of rounding up the figures.

3 — See further methodological remarks in parts 1 and 3 of the introductory text.

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork furniture	paper printing publishing	building materials
1930	468.8	37.1	163.2	40.2	9.3	8.1
1931	478.5	39.8	166.8	42.0	9.7	8.9
1932	488.1	42.6	170.3	43.8	10.0	9.6
1933	497.6	45.4	173.8	45.7	10.3	10.3
1934	507.2	48.2	177.3	47.5	10.7	11.1
1935	516.7	51.0	180.8	49.3	11.0	11.9
1936	526.8	53.9	184.5	51.2	11.4	12.7
1937	536.7	56.9	188.2	53.2	11.7	13.5
1938	546.9	59.9	192.0	55.1	12.1	14.3
1939	557.3	63.0	195.8	57.1	12.4	15.2
1940	566.7	65.9	199.2	59.0	12.8	16.0
1941	581.9	66.8	202.3	61.8	13.2	16.9
1942	598.6	67.7	205.9	64.8	13.7	17.7
1943	616.8	68.9	209.9	68.0	14.2	18.7
1944	635.7	70.1	214.0	71.3	14.7	19.6
1945	655.6	71.3	218.5	74.7	15.3	20.6

Table 4.7 — Active population in the manufacturing industry in the broad sense by sectors — long series, 1930-1981 (continued)

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork furniture	paper printing publishing	building materials
1946	674.9	72.5	222.6	78.1	15.8	21.6
1947	694.6	73.6	226.9	81.6	16.3	22.7
1948	716.7	75.0	231.8	85.3	17.0	23.8
1949	737.2	76.2	236.1	88.9	17.5	24.8
1950	758.2	77.3	240.5	92.5	18.1	25.9
1951	774.7	76.9	241.8	93.3	19.0	27.2
1952	785.7	76.3	242.7	93.9	19.8	28.4
1953	805.9	75.8	243.8	94.6	20.6	29.7
1954	821.3	75.2	244.6	95.2	21.4	31.0
1955	840.0	74.9	246.4	96.2	22.3	32.4
1956	857.8	74.5	247.9	97.0	23.2	33.7
1957	875.5	74.0	249.3	97.9	24.1	35.1
1958	894.5	73.6	251.0	98.9	25.0	36.5
1959	913.6	73.2	252.7	99.9	26.0	38.0
1960	933.2	72.8	254.5	101.0	26.9	39.0
1961	949.8	72.2	257.6	102.7	27.6	40.8
1962	967.1	71.7	260.9	104.4	28.3	42.2
1963	981.9	70.9	263.6	105.9	29.0	43.5
1964	994.3	70.0	265.7	107.1	29.6	44.6
1965	998.8	68.5	265.8	107.5	30.0	45.4
1966	995.0	66.5	263.7	106.9	30.1	45.8
1967	996.8	64.9	263.2	107.0	30.4	46.4
1968	1 000.4	63.5	263.3	107.2	30.7	47.0
1969	1 005.1	62.1	263.7	107.5	31.0	47.7
1970	1 011.3	61.0	264.4	107.9	31.4	48.4
1971	1 056.6	64.9	270.0	109.5	33.0	50.1
1972	1 103.5	69.0	275.7	111.1	34.8	51.8
1973	1 153.9	73.3	282.0	112.8	36.6	53.7
1974	1 199.4	77.5	286.9	113.9	38.4	55.4
1975	1 244.3	81.6	291.4	115.0	40.1	57.0

Table 4.7 — Active population in the manufacturing industry in the broad sense by sectors — long series, 1930-1981 (continued)

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork furniture	paper printing publishing	building materials
1976	1 289.5	85.8	295.7	115.5	41.8	58.7
1977	1 335.5	90.1	300.0	116.1	43.6	60.3
1978	1 380.3	94.4	303.9	116.5	45.4	61.9
1979	1 426.0	98.8	307.8	116.9	47.3	63.5
1980	1 471.1	103.2	311.3	117.0	49.1	65.1
1981	1 480.3	104.2	312.0	117.0	49.5	65.4

year	manufac- turing industry	chemicals	machinery electrical and transport eq.	undry manu- facturing industries	building public works	electricity gas, water sewage
1930	468.8	3.0	53.2	23.6	125.0	5.8
1931	478.5	3.5	53.7	22.8	125.4	5.8
1932	488.1	4.1	54.1	22.0	125.8	5.8
1933	497.6	4.6	54.5	21.1	126.0	5.8
1934	507.2	5.2	54.9	20.3	126.3	5.8
1935	516.7	5.8	55.2	19.4	126.4	5.8
1936	526.8	6.4	55.6	18.5	126.7	5.8
1937	536.7	7.0	56.0	17.6	126.8	5.7
1938	546.9	7.6	56.4	16.6	127.0	5.7
1939	557.3	8.3	56.8	15.7	127.2	5.7
1940	566.7	8.9	57.1	14.8	127.1	5.7
1941	581.9	9.0	59.3	17.2	129.3	6.1
1942	598.6	9.1	61.7	19.8	131.6	6.4
1943	616.8	9.2	64.2	22.5	134.3	6.8
1944	635.7	9.4	66.8	25.2	137.1	7.2
1945	655.6	9.6	69.6	28.2	140.1	7.7
1946	674.9	9.7	72.3	31.1	142.9	8.1
1947	694.6	9.9	75.1	34.2	145.7	8.5
1948	716.7	10.1	78.2	37.5	149.0	9.0
1949	737.2	10.3	81.1	40.9	151.8	9.5

Table 4.7 — Active population in the manufacturing industry in the broad sense by sectors — long series, 1930-1981 (continued)

year	manufac- turing industry	chemicals	machinery electrical and transport eq.	sundry manu- facturing industries	building public works	electricity gas, water sewage
1950	758.2	10.5	84.2	44.1	155.0	9.9
1951	774.7	12.4	89.9	42.0	161.9	10.4
1952	785.7	14.3	95.4	39.8	168.5	10.8
1953	805.9	16.2	101.1	37.6	175.3	11.2
1954	821.3	18.2	106.7	35.3	182.0	11.6
1955	840.0	20.2	112.9	33.1	189.5	12.1
1956	857.8	22.2	118.9	30.8	196.8	12.5
1957	875.5	24.3	125.0	28.5	204.2	13.0
1958	894.5	26.5	131.4	26.0	211.8	13.5
1959	913.6	28.6	137.8	23.8	219.6	13.9
1960	933.2	30.8	144.3	21.5	227.4	14.4
1961	949.8	32.1	147.0	22.2	232.7	14.8
1962	967.1	33.4	149.9	22.8	238.1	15.1
1963	981.9	34.6	152.4	23.5	242.9	15.4
1964	994.3	35.7	154.6	24.0	247.1	15.7
1965	998.8	36.5	155.6	24.4	249.2	15.8
1966	995.0	37.0	155.3	24.6	249.3	15.8
1967	996.8	37.6	155.8	24.9	250.1	15.9
1968	1 000.4	38.3	156.7	25.3	252.4	16.1
1969	1 005.1	39.1	157.7	25.7	254.3	16.2
1970	1 011.3	39.9	159.0	26.1	256.9	16.4
1971	1 056.6	42.9	166.8	27.1	274.4	17.6
1972	1 103.5	46.0	175.0	28.2	292.6	18.9
1973	1 153.9	49.4	183.9	29.4	311.7	20.2
1974	1 199.4	52.7	192.2	30.4	329.8	21.5
1975	1 244.3	56.1	200.4	31.4	347.7	22.8
1976	1 289.5	59.6	208.9	32.5	365.7	24.1
1977	1 335.5	63.2	217.7	33.5	348.1	25.3
1978	1 380.3	66.9	226.3	34.5	402.1	26.6
1979	1 426.0	70.7	235.3	35.6	420.4	27.9



Table 4.7 — Active population in the manufacturing industry in the broad sense by sectors — long series, 1930-1981 (continued)

year	manufac- turing industry	chemicals	machinery electrical and transport eq.	sundry manu- facturing industries	building public works	electricity gas, water sewage
1980	1 471.1	74.7	244.3	36.6	438.5	29.2
1981	1 480.3	75.5	246.2	36.9	442.3	29.4

**Table 4.8 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993**

Source — Pinheiro, 1997.

Methodological remarks contained in point 3 of the introductory text. For further details, see the source.

year	resident population thousands	active population thousands	activity rate percentage	employed population thousands	employees thousands	unemployed population thousands	unemployment rate percentage
1953	8 579.0	3 242.7	37.8	3 143.6	2 282.5	99.2	3.1
1954	8 632.1	3 248.4	37.6	3 121.5	2 272.9	126.9	3.9
1955	8 692.6	3 266.2	37.6	3 150.3	2 297.9	115.9	3.5
1956	8 756.0	3 295.0	37.6	3 199.0	2 343.4	96.1	2.9
1957	8 817.7	3 328.9	37.8	3 233.2	2 375.5	95.7	2.9
1958	8 888.6	3 358.4	37.8	3 265.2	2 405.0	93.3	2.8
1959	8 961.6	3 379.3	37.7	3 278.8	2 425.5	100.6	3.0
1960	9 036.7	3 390.4	37.5	3 309.0	2 439.4	81.3	2.4
1961	9 031.2	3 398.4	37.6	3 294.5	2 432.6	103.3	3.0
1962	9 019.8	3 408.3	37.8	3 298.8	2 432.0	109.2	3.2
1963	9 081.6	3 431.6	37.8	3 317.6	2 439.7	114.4	3.3
1964	9 122.5	3 476.7	38.1	3 358.9	2 471.7	119.2	3.4
1965	9 128.9	3 531.0	38.7	3 440.3	2 540.4	92.6	2.6
1966	9 108.8	3 581.9	39.3	3 517.7	2 609.7	65.7	1.8
1967	9 103.0	3 625.5	39.8	3 535.0	2 627.2	92.0	2.5
1968	9 115.1	3 660.0	40.2	3 549.6	2 642.2	111.9	3.1
1969	9 097.2	3 692.8	40.6	3 599.4	2 691.9	94.6	2.6
1970	9 044.2	3 735.7	41.3	3 637.2	2 734.5	99.9	2.7
1971	8 990.5	3 772.2	42.0	3 681.8	2 776.9	91.5	2.4
1972	8 970.5	3 815.1	42.5	3 747.8	2 834.3	68.3	1.8
1973	8 976.0	3 850.7	42.9	3 796.3	2 877.8	55.1	1.4

Table 4.8 — Active population, employment and unemployment, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993 (continued)

year	resident population thousands	active population thousands	activity rate percentage	employed population thousands	employees thousands	unemployed population thousands	unemployment rate percentage
1974	9 098.3	3 862.5	42.5	3 780.9	2 874.1	82.5	2.1
1975	9 425.8	3 848.4	40.8	3 695.6	2 812.2	153.6	4.0
1976	9 666.0	3 843.4	39.8	3 624.4	2 721.9	220.4	5.7
1977	9 735.9	3 934.9	40.4	3 671.9	2 762.1	264.6	6.7
1978	9 801.4	4 064.3	41.5	3 770.0	2 867.4	295.0	7.3
1979	9 856.5	4 166.2	42.3	3 862.4	2 936.6	305.3	7.3
1980	9 909.3	4 236.1	42.7	3 943.7	3 030.6	293.5	6.9
1981	9 956.9	4 251.0	42.7	3 939.5	3 037.6	311.5	7.3
1982	10 059.1	4 268.6	42.4	3 965.3	3 035.1	303.4	7.1
1983	10 122.6	4 230.7	41.8	3 878.8	2 979.9	351.9	8.3
1984	10 196.7	4 329.8	42.5	3 937.3	3 017.8	392.5	9.1
1985	10 173.4	4 347.9	42.7	3 932.2	3 005.6	415.7	9.6
1986	10 199.2	4 326.6	42.4	3 900.0	2 992.8	426.6	9.9
1987	10 228.0	4 388.9	42.9	4 006.9	3 055.2	382.0	8.7
1988	10 254.3	4 435.6	43.3	4 096.2	3 144.7	339.5	7.7
1989	10 281.4	4 556.9	44.3	4 236.1	3 265.2	320.8	7.0
1990	10 301.7	4 593.2	44.6	4 279.2	3 301.7	313.9	6.8
1991	10 303.6	4 628.9	44.9	4 335.2	3 314.9	293.8	6.3
1992	10 280.2	4 600.6	44.8	4 359.6	3 327.6	241.0	5.2
1993	10 313.2	4 599.7	44.6	4 295.2	3 243.9	304.6	6.6

**Table 4.9 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993**

Source — Pinheiro, 1997.

Unit — Thousands.

Methodological remarks contained in point 3 of the introductory text. For further details, see the source.

year	active population	agriculture forestry hunting	fishing	mining quarrying	manufac- turing industry	electricity gas water
1953	3 143.6	1 490.4	43.4	30.1	576.3	10.1
1954	3 121.5	1 474.7	43.5	28.5	572.4	10.5
1955	3 150.3	1 460.0	42.4	28.2	592.9	11.6
1956	3 199.0	1 445.1	42.2	31.0	616.7	12.2
1957	3 233.2	1 428.6	42.3	31.9	636.4	13.1
1958	3 265.2	1 413.3	44.1	29.2	645.7	14.1
1959	3 278.8	1 397.4	45.8	26.5	654.6	14.5
1960	3 309.0	1 381.3	45.4	25.6	680.7	15.2
1961	3 294.5	1 325.9	48.0	22.5	696.0	15.8
1962	3 298.8	1 281.3	48.2	19.2	722.0	16.3
1963	3 317.6	1 245.6	47.8	19.4	749.6	16.6
1964	3 358.9	1 207.8	48.6	19.2	788.8	16.9
1965	3 440.3	1 166.0	49.7	18.3	842.8	16.9
1966	3 517.7	1 121.6	48.4	18.8	891.6	17.4
1967	3 535.0	1 079.9	45.7	19.0	903.0	18.3
1968	3 549.6	1 042.2	44.8	18.4	902.4	18.6
1969	3 599.4	1 002.8	43.2	18.8	916.8	18.6
1970	3 637.2	960.3	42.8	18.1	920.8	18.1
1971	3 681.8	920.8	42.8	17.2	937.2	18.0
1972	3 747.8	887.9	41.0	17.4	961.1	18.2
1973	3 796.3	859.2	39.6	18.9	989.1	17.9
1974	3 780.9	837.8	39.7	18.9	979.4	18.4

Table 4.9 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993 (continued)

year	active population	agriculture forestry hunting	fishing	mining quarrying	manufac- turing industry	electricity gas water
1975	3 695.6	820.6	40.3	17.3	944.8	18.5
1976	3 624.4	834.2	37.2	15.5	911.7	18.5
1977	3 671.9	819.9	34.5	15.3	929.9	21.0
1978	3 770.0	764.2	34.5	16.5	973.2	23.4
1979	3 862.4	762.9	33.3	17.7	1 001.1	25.1
1980	3 943.7	725.5	32.9	18.9	1 025.0	27.6
1981	3 939.5	686.0	32.3	18.2	1 000.7	29.2
1982	3 965.3	662.5	30.4	18.4	1 013.1	29.1
1983	3 878.8	627.1	28.2	17.4	992.1	31.0
1984	3 937.3	640.6	28.1	17.4	1 017.0	31.7
1985	3 932.2	643.3	27.9	16.9	1 013.5	32.4
1986	3 900.0	593.0	26.9	16.5	1 013.8	32.5
1987	4 006.9	618.9	24.8	15.7	1 034.7	32.6
1988	4 096.2	593.1	23.4	16.1	1 061.4	32.0
1989	4 236.1	553.1	27.0	17.7	1 114.3	30.7
1990	4 279.2	531.9	27.8	18.4	1 120.0	29.4
1991	4 335.2	536.7	25.7	18.2	1 093.7	28.7
1992	4 359.6	525.3	21.9	17.1	1 067.1	27.3
1993	4 295.2	518.2	19.9	16.3	1 016.3	27.5

year	active population	building public works	wholesale and retail trade	transport and communica- tions	banking insurance real estate	sundry services
1953	3 143.6	133.6	209.0	109.8	23.2	517.8
1954	3 121.5	133.8	208.9	112.1	24.1	513.1
1955	3 150.3	143.7	226.3	109.5	24.7	511.2
1956	3 199.0	167.4	235.4	110.0	25.5	513.5
1957	3 233.2	179.8	243.8	113.7	26.1	517.5
1958	3 265.2	197.3	253.7	115.6	26.9	525.4
1959	3 278.8	206.4	259.1	117.9	28.1	528.6

Table 4.9 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993 (continued)

year	active population	building public works	wholesale and retail trade	transport and communications	banking insurance real estate	sundry services
1960	3 309.0	211.3	271.0	120.5	29.0	529.2
1961	3 294.5	220.2	283.6	125.8	30.0	526.8
1962	3 298.8	215.1	306.8	126.5	31.0	532.5
1963	3 317.6	205.6	327.8	125.8	32.5	546.7
1964	3 358.9	214.3	344.4	128.3	34.8	555.7
1965	3 440.3	242.1	369.7	129.7	37.3	567.7
1966	3 517.7	254.4	399.7	133.0	40.0	592.8
1967	3 535.0	252.2	424.9	136.4	43.3	612.4
1968	3 549.6	251.8	445.6	143.5	48.4	634.1
1969	3 599.4	259.4	463.1	154.1	55.6	667.0
1970	3 637.2	274.5	477.0	158.7	61.9	704.9
1971	3 681.8	309.8	496.3	162.6	66.3	710.8
1972	3 747.8	339.6	521.6	165.9	71.3	723.8
1973	3 796.3	352.8	548.4	166.6	78.4	725.4
1974	3 780.9	333.0	548.4	167.4	82.9	755.1
1975	3 695.6	329.6	529.3	174.7	80.1	740.4
1976	3 624.4	314.8	503.7	176.7	75.8	736.3
1977	3 671.9	316.5	507.3	183.8	78.6	765.1
1978	3 770.0	352.9	534.5	198.0	85.4	787.4
1979	3 862.4	364.3	548.0	201.3	90.5	818.1
1980	3 943.7	415.0	564.5	199.5	97.8	837.1
1981	3 939.5	448.6	574.9	193.9	105.6	850.0
1982	3 965.3	470.7	560.5	199.4	119.2	861.9
1983	3 878.8	438.3	556.6	196.9	123.1	868.0
1984	3 937.3	417.5	560.3	197.2	129.4	898.0
1985	3 932.2	396.5	567.6	192.8	127.3	914.2
1986	3 900.0	393.6	582.3	186.4	126.6	928.5
1987	4 006.9	421.1	596.6	188.2	129.2	945.2
1988	4 096.2	433.1	627.3	192.3	137.8	979.5
1989	4 236.1	434.6	674.5	201.5	156.0	1 026.7

Table 4.9 — Active population by sectors of activity, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993 (continued)

year	active population	building public works	wholesale and retail trade	transport and communications	banking insurance real estate	sundry services
1990	4 279.2	429.2	696.7	204.8	162.1	1 058.9
1991	4 335.2	434.9	726.7	208.4	173.9	1 088.3
1992	4 359.6	444.6	765.4	206.0	179.5	1 105.3
1993	4 295.2	438.3	773.0	200.6	181.0	1 104.0

**Table 4.10 —Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993**

Source — Pinheiro, 1997.

Unit — Thousands.

Methodological remarks contained in point 3 of the introductory text. For further details, see the source.

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork furniture	paper printing publishing	chemicals rubber petroleum
1953	576.3	73.7	223.9	92.8	22.5	47.7
1954	572.4	77.8	210.4	89.5	23.5	49.7
1955	592.9	79.2	212.5	94.2	25.0	53.5
1956	616.7	80.9	208.7	101.2	26.0	58.4
1957	636.4	82.4	206.6	102.6	25.6	63.7
1958	645.7	84.0	205.0	98.2	25.1	72.1
1959	654.6	83.6	202.9	98.1	25.6	75.2
1960	680.7	82.1	207.2	100.5	26.1	80.4
1961	696.0	83.5	211.1	110.2	27.0	73.7
1962	722.0	83.8	212.8	126.6	28.0	72.2
1963	749.6	85.5	223.4	133.3	31.5	72.0
1964	788.8	89.8	248.2	135.9	33.1	73.4
1965	842.8	95.7	275.2	134.5	35.0	76.2
1966	891.6	100.8	290.5	133.4	38.0	75.8
1967	903.0	103.2	294.9	134.4	38.4	73.2
1968	902.4	106.6	297.2	131.7	40.2	72.4
1969	916.8	109.2	301.0	127.2	42.5	72.1
1970	920.8	107.4	298.1	122.2	43.7	74.0
1971	937.2	105.1	303.3	121.5	44.9	75.9
1972	961.1	103.5	314.7	124.9	46.4	75.0
1973	989.1	102.1	329.8	125.0	48.0	75.1



Table 4.10 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993 (continued)

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork furniture	paper printing publishing	chemicals rubber petroleum
1974	979.4	102.0	322.1	120.4	48.2	73.9
1975	944.8	100.9	300.0	116.9	46.8	70.8
1976	911.7	96.5	293.9	111.8	41.0	67.4
1977	929.9	98.9	293.2	111.4	38.1	76.6
1978	973.2	105.5	299.6	116.3	47.6	80.2
1979	1 001.1	108.9	309.4	119.1	55.3	81.1
1980	1 025.0	112.1	315.9	121.5	58.5	84.2
1981	1 000.7	109.3	316.4	116.9	53.0	73.6
1982	1 013.1	114.5	321.5	112.4	54.4	73.7
1983	992.1	113.8	320.5	102.7	53.6	74.9
1984	1 017.0	117.2	342.2	108.7	53.5	72.6
1985	1 013.5	117.5	355.3	106.0	52.8	71.8
1986	1 013.8	116.8	369.7	105.0	52.3	71.4
1987	1 034.7	116.8	393.6	103.2	52.0	69.6
1988	1 061.4	119.1	413.8	103.4	52.3	67.9
1989	1 114.3	124.7	436.6	106.0	54.9	70.2
1990	1 120.0	124.6	445.5	103.6	54.9	64.7
1991	1 093.7	120.9	433.2	99.2	54.5	63.2
1992	1 067.1	118.1	414.8	99.0	53.7	61.2
1993	1 016.3	115.1	385.7	97.5	52.0	57.6

year	manufac- turing industry	non- metallic minerals	iron and steel	metal products machinery	sundry manufacturing industries
1953	576.3	27.6	14.7	67.8	5.7
1954	572.4	29.7	11.8	74.1	5.8
1955	592.9	33.4	11.6	77.3	6.1
1956	616.7	37.8	7.4	90.2	6.1
1957	636.4	40.8	3.7	105.0	6.0

Table 4.10 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993 (continued)

year	manufac- turing industry	non- metallic minerals	iron and steel	metal products machinery	sundry manufacturing industries
1958	645.7	44.6	5.0	105.2	6.4
1959	654.6	50.3	6.0	106.3	6.6
1960	680.7	56.2	8.9	112.2	7.1
1961	696.0	57.2	10.2	113.8	9.2
1962	722.0	58.0	11.7	119.1	9.7
1963	749.6	58.6	14.0	122.4	8.9
1964	788.8	58.4	15.1	125.6	9.3
1965	842.8	61.8	16.0	138.4	9.8
1966	891.6	65.4	19.2	158.2	10.3
1967	903.0	64.5	19.6	164.3	10.5
1968	902.4	63.3	17.8	162.5	10.6
1969	916.8	62.8	19.9	171.4	10.8
1970	920.8	61.4	22.0	180.8	11.0
1971	937.2	61.1	23.4	190.5	11.5
1972	961.1	62.6	23.9	198.2	12.0
1973	989.1	64.1	24.6	207.8	12.6
1974	979.4	62.5	22.5	215.1	12.6
1975	944.8	62.7	19.1	215.3	12.3
1976	911.7	63.5	18.0	210.4	9.2
1977	929.9	67.9	21.2	209.5	13.1
1978	973.2	70.5	26.1	213.7	13.7
1979	1 001.1	68.6	27.6	217.6	13.4
1980	1 025.0	69.5	29.3	221.0	13.0
1981	1 000.7	69.1	30.1	220.7	11.6
1982	1 013.1	72.3	29.6	223.1	11.5
1983	992.1	69.4	31.3	214.9	11.0
1984	1 017.0	68.3	32.2	211.3	11.0
1985	1 013.5	66.1	31.1	202.1	10.7
1986	1 013.8	64.4	30.3	193.1	11.0
1987	1 034.7	66.3	29.3	192.8	11.1

Table 4.10 — Active population in the manufacturing industry by sectors, according to the Bank of Portugal, 1953-1993 (continued)

year	manufac- turing industry	non- metallic minerals	iron and steel	metal products machinery	sundry manufacturing industries
1988	1 061.4	68.5	28.5	196.5	11.5
1989	1 114.3	72.0	28.2	209.2	12.4
1990	1 120.0	75.0	26.2	213.0	12.6
1991	1 093.7	76.1	24.4	209.7	12.5
1992	1 067.1	74.7	22.7	211.3	11.7
1993	1 016.3	71.5	21.1	205.8	10.0

## **CHAPTER 5 — PRODUCTION**

Due to the heterogeneous nature of the information contained in this chapter, it is divided into different sections, corresponding to the nomenclature given to the sectors in the European System of Accounts (ESA 1995).

# **SECTION A — AGRICULTURE, ANIMAL HUSBANDRY, FORESTRY AND HUNTING**

EVA NUNES (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

## **1 — Resources used**

One of the first aspects to be considered in the statistical study of agricultural activity in the broad sense is that of the use made of resources.

Amongst these resources, it is, of course, natural resources that appear to be the most important, and amongst these the most significant one is land. The first table in this section therefore summarises the main data available about land use in Portugal.

No data are included here about the use of human resources, because the active population in agriculture has already been dealt with in Chapter 4, relating to the economic activity of the population.

As far as the use of produced resources is concerned, the most important categories are evidently buildings and constructions, animals and instruments. There are no systematic data available regarding the buildings and constructions given over to agricultural activity in the broad sense, the importance of which can be clearly seen through the simple observation of the rural landscape. There are constructions ranging from buildings used for storage purposes (barns, for example) to those involving the permanent transformation of the land (terraces, for example). The second table in this section summarises the main data available about livestock numbers in Portugal. The third table in this section summarises the main data available about the machinery used in Portuguese agriculture.

## **2 — Agricultural production**

The statistical knowledge about agricultural production in Portugal can be said to have passed through four different stages. The first period, lasting until the mid-nineteenth century, was characterised by the almost complete absence of collected and published data. The second period, from the mid-nineteenth century to the First World War, was characterised by the irregular collection and publication of frequently incomplete data about the main productions. The third period, corresponding to the years between the First and Second World Wars, was characterised

by the regularisation and gradual improvement in the collection and publication of data about the main productions. The fourth period, beginning in the mid-twentieth century, has been marked by the expansion and improvement in the collection and publication of data, which now cover an ever greater number of productions, a situation which is, in fact, the result of significant alterations in the actual structure of Portuguese agricultural production.

The data on agricultural production in the broad sense are presented here in three tables, relating to three of the four subsectors that comprise this sector.

a) Agriculture in the narrow sense — Included here are the productions of cultivated plant products or crops, namely cereals, liquids, fruits and vegetables and sundry plants.

b) Animal husbandry — Included here are the productions of products of animal origin, namely meat, milk, eggs and some textile fibres.

c) Forestry — Included here are the productions of forestry products, namely cork, wood, fuelwood and sundry forestry products.

Omitted here is a fourth subsector, hunting, because there are no official statistical series available for hunting production. This is a gap that is not very significant, due to the relative unimportance of this economic activity.

## Bibliography

JUSTINO, David — A formação do espaço económico nacional. Portugal 1810-1913. (2 volumes) Lisbon: Vega, 1988-1989.

LAÍNS, Pedro; SOUSA, Paulo Silveira — Estatística e produção agrícola em Portugal, 1848-1914, Análise Social, 149, 1998.

NEVES, Pedro — A agricultura portuguesa no período entre as guerras. Uma avaliação quantitativa. Master's degree dissertation presented at the Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão of the Universidade Técnica de Lisboa, 1995.

## Tables

5A.1 — Land use and farms

5A.2 — Livestock numbers

5A.3 — Agricultural machinery

5A.4 — Agricultural production

5A.5 — Animal production

5A.6 — Forestry production

## Table 5A.1 — Land use and farms

Source — Estatísticas Agrícolas.

### A — Estimates and official assessments of land use

Remarks:

1 — The values marked with an asterisk are estimates. All other values are official assessments.

2 — The values marked with a C refer only to mainland Portugal.

3 — Agricultural area includes land used as sown fields and for horticultural crops, vines, olive-groves and orchards.

4 — Forested area includes groves of pine trees, holm-oaks, cork-oaks, sweet chestnuts, eucalyptus and sundry stands.

5 — Uncultivated area includes fallow land.

6 — Unproductive area includes rocky outcrops, sand-pits, swamps, rivers and watercourses.

7 — Social area includes areas occupied by buildings, constructions and other infrastructures. The values for the social area that are marked with a question mark (?) are included in the figures for the unproductive area.

year	agricultural area 10 <sup>3</sup> ha	forested area 10 <sup>3</sup> ha	uncultivated area 10 <sup>3</sup> ha	unproductive area 10 <sup>3</sup> ha	social area 10 <sup>3</sup> ha
1875 C*	1 886	640	2 116	3 961	291
1902 C	3 111	1 957	1 926	1 900	?
1920 C*	3 229	2 058	1 639	1 584	384
1929 C*	3 283	2 332	1 565	1 714	?
1934 C*	3 352	2 520	1 335	1 303	384
1939 C*	3 380	2 467	1 484	1 179	384
1951 C	4 762	2 750	740	490	152



Table 5A.1 — Land use and farms (continued)

**B — Agricultural surveys**

year	agricultural area 10 <sup>3</sup> ha	farms		
		owner occupied thousands	rented thousands	others thousands
1979	5 182	534	68	183
1989	4 006	541	156	38
1993	3 950	450	102	46
1995	3 925	416	90	36

## Table 5A.2 — Livestock numbers

Source — Estatísticas Agrícolas.

Unit — Thousands.

### A — Cattle registers

Remarks — The values shown are taken from general registers, unless otherwise indicated through the following notes:

C — Mainland Portugal only.

C\* — Mainland Portugal only, through estimates of the livestock inspectors.

CA — Mainland Portugal in 1925 + Azores in 1926.

year	horses	mules	asses	bovines	sheep	goats	swines
1852	72	41	132	606	2 576	1 148	934
1870 C	80	51	138	520	2 707	937	777
1906 C*	88	58	144	703	3 073	1 034	1 111
1920 C	?	?	?	741	3 851	1 493	921
1925 CA	84	90	243	852	3 711	1 580	1 156
1934	90	122	275	905	3 274	1 296	1 206
1940	85	123	245	973	3 948	1 244	1 253
1955	74	127	237	1 074	3 642	738	1 516
1972	20	73	158	1 072	2 420	741	1 977
1979	17	56	102	1 173	2 081	733	2 450

### B — Poultry and hatched animals registers

year	chickens	ducks	turkeys	pigeons	rabbits
1934	6 233	114	133	846	1 007
1940	5 807	138	136	658	1 044
1955	8 176	203	217	1 026	2 104

Table 5A.2 — Livestock numbers (continued)

**C — Current surveys**

year	layer chickens	bovines	sheep	goats	swines
1967	543	.	.	.	.
1968	836	.	.	.	.
1969	1 237	.	.	.	.
1970	1 358	.	.	.	.
1971	2 039	.	.	.	.
1972	2 122	.	.	.	.
1973	2 453	.	.	.	.
1974	2 523	.	.	.	.
1975	2 388	.	.	.	.
1976	2 724	.	.	.	.
1977	3 583	.	.	.	.
1978	3 335	.	.	.	.
1979	4 091	.	.	.	.
1980	3 513	.	.	.	.
1981	3 133	.	.	.	.
1982	3 136	.	.	.	.
1983	3 538	.	.	.	.
1984	2 993	.	.	.	.
1985	3 034	.	.	.	.
1986	3 112	.	.	.	.
1987	3 100	1 332	3 075	808	2 455
1988	3 352	1 359	3 187	840	2 326
1989	?	1 335	3 347	857	2 598
1990	3 120	1 375	3 360	857	2 664
1991	4 021	1 416	3 380	862	2 564
1992	3 817	1 345	3 348	858	2 547
1993	3 844	1 322	3 305	836	2 664
1994	4 565	1 329	3 416	819	2 416
1995	4 908	1 324	3 428	799	2 412
1996	4 758	1 311	3 380	781	2 344
1997	5 238	1 285	3 414	785	2 365

## Table 5A.3 — Agricultural machinery

Source — Estatísticas Agrícolas.

Unit — Thousands.

year	threshers	combine harvesters	tractors
1951	3	+ 0	?
1952	3	+ 0	3
1953	3	+ 0	3
1954	3	+ 0	4
1955	4	+ 0	4
1956	4	+ 0	5
1957	4	+ 0	6
1958	5	+ 0	7
1959	5	+ 0	8
1960	5	+ 0	10
1961	5	+ 0	11
1962	5	1	12
1963	5	1	13
1964	5	1	14
1965	6	1	16
1966	6	1	18
1967	6	1	19
1968	6	2	22
1969	6	2	23
1970	6	3	28
1971	6	3	32
1972	6	3	34
1973	6	3	38
1974	6	4	42
1975	6	4	44
1976	6	4	50
1977	6	4	57

Table 5A.3 — Agricultural machinery (continued)

year	threshers	combine harvesters	tractors
1978	6	4	61
1979	6	4	66
1980	6	5	73
1981	6	5	77
1982	6	5	81
1983	?	?	83
1984	?	?	81
1985	?	?	79
1986	?	?	76
1987	?	?	79
...			
1989	?	4	109
...			
1993	?	4	119
...			
1995	?	4	121

## Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production

Sources — From 1845 to 1915, Lains, Sousa, 1998 and Justino, 1988-1989; from 1916 to 1947, Neves, 1995; from 1948 onwards, Estatísticas Agrícolas.

### A — Cereals

year	wheat 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sweetcorn 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rye 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rice 10 <sup>3</sup> t	oats 10 <sup>3</sup> t	barley 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1845	161	364	127	?	?	?
1846	122	349	100	?	?	?
1847	158	320	123	6	?	?
1848	180	348	127	6	?	?
1849	155	344	120	5	?	?
1850	134	371	96	6	?	?
1851	183	326	137	7	?	?
1852	199	331	157	7	?	?
1853	163	381	113	9	?	?
1854	204	275	120	9	?	?
1855	172	404	155	6	?	?
1856	65	406	73	9	?	?
1857	194	442	149	9	?	?
1858	123	316	128	7	?	?
1859	131	439	108	8	?	?
1860	156	405	120	7	?	?
1861	153	406	117	9	?	?
1862	116	336	110	11	?	?
...						
1865	150	372	122	9	?	?
...						
1867	158	420	148	9	?	?
1868	?	?	?	12	?	?
1869	137	430	85	17	?	?

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	wheat 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sweetcorn 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rye 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rice 10 <sup>3</sup> t	oats 10 <sup>3</sup> t	barley 10 <sup>3</sup> t
...						
1873	167	405	133	9	?	?
...						
1875	?	?	?	9	?	?
...						
1879	?	?	?	9	?	?
...						
1882	162	319	127	?	?	?
1883	155	348	128	?	?	?
1884	155	336	125	?	?	?
1885	137	283	136	9	?	?
...						
1887	146	485	176	?	?	?
...						
1893	155	518	195	?	?	?
1894	156	?	?	?	?	?
...						
1898	202	566	207	?	?	?
1899	150	?	?	?	?	?
1900	177	?	?	?	?	?
1901	272	447	148	8	?	?
1902	343	655	216	10	?	?
1903	295	539	144	12	?	?
1904	247	403	117	10	?	?
1905	216	?	?	12	?	?
1906	266	?	?	27	?	?
1907	196	?	?	13	?	?
1908	168	?	?	14	?	?
1909	263	418	132	14	?	?
1910	271	555	131	16	?	?
1911	325	?	?	13	?	?
1912	123	?	?	?	?	?

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	wheat 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sweetcorn 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rye 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rice 10 <sup>3</sup> t	oats 10 <sup>3</sup> t	barley 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1913	159	?	?	?	?	?
1914	191	272	?	?	?	?
1915	183	277	?	17	?	?
1916	205	263	80	21	57	28
1917	206	250	90	16	68	33
1918	265	236	123	23	68	34
1919	226	246	99	21	69	32
1920	286	295	131	24	92	40
1921	256	280	117	20	84	38
1922	277	290	137	20	87	41
1923	365	261	133	16	121	55
1924	292	294	133	18	94	47
1925	345	365	129	17	94	50
1926	237	309	92	18	71	34
1927	317	381	119	22	82	45
1928	209	361	101	20	76	32
1929	294	376	119	22	84	44
1930	374	421	124	25	117	53
1931	360	446	129	26	95	46
1932	648	364	119	34	95	47
1933	443	312	107	47	64	44
1934	711	308	123	55	115	46
1935	609	288	118	58	102	43
1936	235	305	89	64	86	36
1937	399	349	101	85	104	41
1938	430	319	102	68	98	40
1939	527	391	103	72	101	41
1940	268	391	75	82	26	27
1941	449	414	91	89	85	50
1942	524	388	124	78	136	69
1943	295	361	99	74	70	41
1944	368	418	130	64	77	58



Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	wheat 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sweetcorn 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rye 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rice 10 <sup>3</sup> t	oats 10 <sup>3</sup> t	barley 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1945	315	272	122	44	72	50
1946	508	416	147	63	217	108
1947	348	356	151	86	115	76
1948	356	383	124	92	92	71
1949	405	257	149	78	104	81
1950	575	516	170	121	141	111
1951	580	461	194	141	148	117
1952	579	488	175	141	134	102
1953	690	374	182	140	132	105
1954	781	440	195	154	125	104
1955	508	437	155	183	82	72
1956	558	481	171	160	97	78
1957	797	427	202	162	128	101
1958	809	425	209	149	143	102
1959	624	387	175	163	89	66
1960	492	466	138	151	61	50
1961	430	632	119	177	65	52
1962	645	591	171	174	104	72
1963	592	523	216	166	99	61
1964	472	596	167	181	68	46
1965	623	502	209	139	99	72
1966	324	605	145	154	63	49
1967	651	624	175	146	111	74
1968	763	597	199	149	129	94
1969	470	598	167	176	79	55
1970	564	628	156	195	72	54
1971	809	570	168	162	125	85
1972	621	562	164	164	85	63
1973	533	559	134	168	79	57
1974	546	532	143	129	99	75
1975	611	506	146	133	121	87
1976	694	429	165	97	127	117

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	wheat 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sweetcorn 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rye 10 <sup>3</sup> t	rice 10 <sup>3</sup> t	oats 10 <sup>3</sup> t	barley 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1977	229	491	103	102	60	40
1978	265	499	123	135	64	44
1979	252	506	120	145	69	41
1980	433	532	138	155	96	54
1981	319	420	126	112	72	41
1982	426	464	119	143	86	51
1983	329	461	92	109	99	54
1984	468	499	103	134	152	91
1985	397	550	97	147	119	65
1986	502	628	100	149	152	90
1987	534	655	108	144	155	80
1988	396	658	77	146	81	51
1989	616	679	106	147	127	84
1990	296	666	86	159	72	79
1991	618	656	80	170	76	124
1992	362	628	70	110	45	63
1993	422	638	66	69	76	98
1994	462	726	64	132	79	96
1995	360	766	36	125	58	53
1996	406	854	54	172	60	69
1997	325	841	41	164	44	29
1998	150	1 020	32	162	26	26

## B — Vegetables and liquids

year	broad beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	kidney beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	chickpeas 10 <sup>3</sup> t	potatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wine 10 <sup>3</sup> hl	olive-oil 10 <sup>3</sup> hl
1845	?	?	?	?	3 955	?
...						
1848	?	?	?	172	4 218	150
1849	?	?	?	129	2 787	79

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	broad beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	kidney beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	chickpeas 10 <sup>3</sup> t	potatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wine 10 <sup>3</sup> hl	olive-oil 10 <sup>3</sup> hl
1850	?	?	?	91	2 908	118
1851	?	?	?	78	3 439	218
1852	?	?	?	116	2 750	97
1853	?	?	?	?	2 990	102
1854	?	?	?	?	1 966	123
1855	?	?	?	?	1 913	584
1856	?	?	?	111	668	344
1857	?	?	?	?	598	230
1858	?	?	?	?	1 663	217
1859	?	?	?	?	655	147
1860	?	?	?	?	758	179
1861	?	?	?	?	1 128	153
1862	?	?	?	129	1 368	360
...						
1866	?	?	?	?	1 291	?
1867	?	?	?	124	?	?
1868	?	?	?	?	1 938	161
1869	?	?	?	135	2 024	111
1870	?	?	?	?	?	191
1871	?	?	?	?	2 070	187
1872	?	?	?	?	1 598	278
1873	?	?	?	100	2 041	128
...						
1880	?	?	?	?	2 452	?
1881	?	?	?	?	2 243	269
1882	?	?	?	?	2 811	381
1883	?	?	?	?	2 556	289
1884	?	?	?	?	3 256	337
1885	?	?	?	?	4 463	262
...						
1887	?	?	?	?	5 256	?
...						

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	broad beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	kidney beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	chickpeas 10 <sup>3</sup> t	potatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wine 10 <sup>3</sup> hl	olive-oil 10 <sup>3</sup> hl
1892	?	?	?	?	3 523	509
1893	?	?	?	?	3 000	?
1894	?	?	?	?	3 083	?
1895	?	?	?	?	4 500	?
1896	?	?	?	?	5 000	?
1897	?	?	?	?	1 550	?
1898	?	?	?	?	4 269	600
1899	?	?	?	?	5 660	?
1900	?	?	?	?	5 760	?
1901	?	?	?	272	5 705	450
1902	?	?	?	259	4 898	297
1903	?	?	?	284	3 523	290
1904	?	?	?	?	6 200	?
1905	?	?	?	?	5 026	?
1906	?	?	?	?	4 654	?
1907	?	?	?	?	4 078	?
1908	?	?	?	?	7 760	360
1909	?	?	?	166	6 035	272
1910	?	?	?	115	4 335	202
1911	?	?	?	?	5 378	419
1912	?	?	?	?	4 430	?
1913	?	?	?	?	3 923	?
1914	?	?	?	?	4 770	?
1915	?	28	3	?	4 837	292
1916	26	25	5	171	4 583	290
1917	26	23	6	165	4 406	418
1918	28	22	7	152	4 270	299
1919	27	22	6	154	5 133	311
1920	33	26	9	169	3 384	198
1921	27	25	7	175	4 607	257
1922	32	28	8	180	5 794	322
1923	41	18	7	180	6 161	483

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	broad beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	kidney beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	chickpeas 10 <sup>3</sup> t	potatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wine 10 <sup>3</sup> hl	olive-oil 10 <sup>3</sup> hl
1924	28	27	7	193	5 246	438
1925	33	34	9	339	5 672	427
1926	23	24	6	259	3 666	314
1927	36	35	9	311	9 267	986
1928	25	28	7	262	4 525	286
1929	27	30	6	341	6 600	842
1930	40	38	11	565	5 785	200
1931	30	44	9	607	7 380	716
1932	28	44	8	672	6 150	481
1933	39	39	11	620	9 200	818
1934	46	40	11	556	10 805	240
1935	32	39	12	513	5 924	574
1936	32	43	11	517	3 709	303
1937	41	40	12	596	8 049	1 081
1938	28	29	14	596	10 955	371
1939	35	40	13	606	7 720	842
1940	17	36	11	616	5 187	383
1941	30	43	10	625	7 374	1 003
1942	45	54	13	835	8 259	418
1943	37	37	12	891	13 940	960
1944	25	31	10	896	14 507	397
1945	15	27	6	742	10 167	442
1946	61	41	18	940	6 689	487
1947	30	49	12	1 024	10 111	1 018
1948	42	47	14	1 018	8 176	316
1949	27	28	12	790	7 927	1 074
1950	42	58	19	1 131	8 725	437
1951	45	61	21	1 390	9 490	1 158
1952	51	62	17	1 073	5 802	571
1953	46	40	12	1 120	11 736	1 330
1954	45	41	14	1 073	12 185	529
1955	40	54	15	1 105	11 336	750

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	broad beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	kidney beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	chickpeas 10 <sup>3</sup> t	potatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wine 10 <sup>3</sup> hl	olive-oil 10 <sup>3</sup> hl
1956	37	47	17	1 102	10 965	1 017
1957	47	45	20	1 196	9 576	1 102
1958	41	46	18	1 087	8 585	673
1959	46	51	24	860	8 924	1 000
1960	28	50	21	1 041	11 458	942
1961	25	69	27	1 056	7 420	1 257
1962	38	58	21	894	15 268	580
1963	41	60	26	1 145	12 979	1 084
1964	29	66	23	1 143	13 595	450
1965	30	51	15	913	14 749	788
1966	27	61	23	991	8 928	414
1967	35	58	30	1 371	9 740	879
1968	39	54	26	1 157	11 690	581
1969	31	54	21	1 201	8 081	790
1970	30	58	20	1 285	11 328	735
1971	37	59	16	1 181	8 835	458
1972	33	54	14	1 198	8 197	588
1973	28	54	15	1 148	11 086	457
1974	31	45	14	1 184	13 994	526
1975	29	39	15	1 098	8 969	539
1976	31	37	15	1 003	9 409	391
1977	18	42	11	1 292	6 792	327
1978	23	47	15	1 225	6 497	439
1979	21	43	13	1 110	14 268	625
1980	23	46	15	1 200	10 175	349
1981	19	35	8	928	8 959	251
1982	20	41	10	1 082	10 135	867
1983	18	43	8	1 007	8 350	96
1984	19	46	14	1 102	8 393	517
1985	19	47	13	1 215	9 567	361
1986	18	47	12	1 122	7 615	557
1987	19	47	12	1 178	10 779	425

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	broad beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	kidney beans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	chickpeas 10 <sup>3</sup> t	potatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wine 10 <sup>3</sup> hl	olive-oil 10 <sup>3</sup> hl
1988	17	48	12	936	3 609	157
1989	19	48	12	1 131	7 495	446
1990	15	43	12	1 120	10 974	263
1991	1	28	3	1 397	9 749	669
1992	0	22	2	1 542	7 517	225
1993	0	17	2	1 214	4 642	351
1994	0	15	2	1 300	6 398	345
1995	?	15	2	1 436	6 400	478
1996	?	15	2	1 326	7 900	516
1997	?	14	2	1 047	5 634	424
1998	?	14	?	1 226	3 457	381

### C — Fruits

year	oranges 10 <sup>3</sup> t	apples 10 <sup>3</sup> t	pears 10 <sup>3</sup> t	peaches 10 <sup>3</sup> t	plums 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1950	?	48	19	17	?
1951	?	37	43	27	?
1952	?	38	18	12	?
1953	?	38	30	30	?
1954	?	43	27	26	?
1955	?	58	35	13	?
1956	?	57	13	22	?
1957	?	51	43	35	?
1958	?	62	32	18	?
1959	?	74	37	18	?
1960	?	54	51	17	?
1961	?	70	50	40	?
1962	?	58	42	22	?
1963	?	92	58	31	?
1964	?	84	48	15	?

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	oranges 10 <sup>3</sup> t	apples 10 <sup>3</sup> t	pears 10 <sup>3</sup> t	peaches 10 <sup>3</sup> t	plums 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1965	?	96	62	36	?
1966	?	86	43	17	?
1967	?	90	82	38	?
1968	92	71	59	27	12
1969	110	82	47	29	16
1970	98	89	46	35	16
1971	92	95	35	43	14
1972	130	115	58	56	9
1973	130	143	59	51	9
1974	114	122	50	53	8
1975	120	141	62	63	7
1976	104	155	65	79	8
1977	116	94	44	33	4
1978	97	117	45	36	6
1979	114	107	49	31	6
1980	92	128	59	33	6
1981	78	97	50	30	6
1982	117	105	75	33	9
1983	93	115	68	38	8
1984	98	86	71	26	6
1985	96	95	57	29	7
1986	99	76	50	31	7
1987	105	88	46	40	8
1988	92	74	41	36	8
1989	104	202	91	107	8
1990	101	178	94	89	9
1991	162	260	94	95	15
1992	168	277	100	108	16
1993	164	261	95	92	16
1994	180	208	116	92	18
1995	209	235	74	90	18
1996	179	257	101	76	18



Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	oranges 10 <sup>3</sup> t	apples 10 <sup>3</sup> t	pears 10 <sup>3</sup> t	peaches 10 <sup>3</sup> t	plums 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1997	176	264	164	89	18
1998	271	166	20	67	?

year	cherries 10 <sup>3</sup> t	figs 10 <sup>3</sup> t	kiwis 10 <sup>3</sup> t	bananas 10 <sup>3</sup> t	pineapples 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1965	?	?	?	?	3
1966	?	?	?	36	3
1967	?	?	?	35	4
1968	22	106	?	29	4
1969	15	83	?	38	3
1970	21	138	?	34	2
1971	7	155	?	32	2
1972	24	94	?	28	2
1973	16	45	?	26	2
1974	15	88	?	26	2
1975	15	84	?	26	2
1976	21	62	?	23	2
1977	12	48	?	26	0
1978	10	49	?	26	2
1979	12	52	?	23	2
1980	11	51	?	34	2
1981	11	50	?	32	2
1982	13	46	?	34	1
1983	13	45	?	41	1
1984	12	46	?	42	1
1985	13	45	?	43	1
1986	10	30	?	46	1
1987	8	35	?	48	1
1988	4	32	?	50	1
1989	8	20	3	45	1
1990	9	19	2	46	?
1991	14	16	5	?	?

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	cherries 10 <sup>3</sup> t	figs 10 <sup>3</sup> t	kiwis 10 <sup>3</sup> t	bananas 10 <sup>3</sup> t	pineapples 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1992	13	14	10	?	?
1993	11	12	10	?	?
1994	10	7	9	?	?
1995	8	6	9	?	?
1996	9	6	11	?	?
1997	9	6	10	?	?

### D — Nuts

year	almonds 10 <sup>3</sup> t	hazel nuts 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sweet chestnuts 10 <sup>3</sup> t	walnuts 10 <sup>3</sup> t	peanuts 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1950	18	?	13	?	?
1951	18	?	12	?	?
1952	19	?	22	?	?
1953	25	?	18	?	?
1954	34	?	24	?	?
1955	41	?	23	?	?
1956	31	?	26	?	?
1957	16	?	26	?	?
1958	12	?	24	?	?
1959	12	?	25	?	?
1960	10	?	21	?	?
1961	21	?	22	?	?
1962	24	?	21	?	?
1963	21	?	16	?	?
1964	15	?	90	?	?
1965	16	?	47	?	0.3
1966	?	?	?	?	0.2
1967	?	?	?	?	0.2
1968	17	1	36	7	0.1
1969	9	1	41	7	0.1

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	almonds 10 <sup>3</sup> t	hazel nuts 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sweet chestnuts 10 <sup>3</sup> t	walnuts 10 <sup>3</sup> t	peanuts 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1970	20	0.7	46	4	?
1971	24	1	26	7	?
1972	22	1	46	6	?
1973	24	1	47	7	?
1974	18	0.9	32	6	?
1975	11	1	33	5	?
1976	19	1	33	6	?
1977	12	1	29	8	?
1978	18	1	28	8	?
1979	4	1	22	7	?
1980	6	1	20	7	?
1981	8	1	18	6	?
1982	18	1	17	6	?
1983	21	1	19	6	?
1984	17	1	18	6	0.1
1985	16	1	17	7	0.1
1986	14	2	16	7	0.1
1987	17	2	18	9	0.1
1988	9	2	14	8	0.1
1989	22	2	18	7	0
1990	18	2	17	6	0
1991	21	2	16	6	0
1992	20	2	15	4	0
1993	19	1	13	4	0
1994	10	1	19	3	0
1995	7	0.8	19	3	0
1996	8	0.9	20	3	0
1997	12	0.9	20	4	0

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

**E — Industrial crops**

year	tomatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sunflowers 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tobacco 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1966	810	?	14
1967	700	?	22
1968	898	?	23
1969	827	?	12
1970	692	1	10
1971	623	2	?
1972	856	2	?
1973	925	2	?
1974	716	3	?
1975	827	8	?
1976	494	9	0
1977	667	7	0
1978	633	15	1
1979	555	12	1
1980	458	22	1
1981	396	8	1
1982	524	24	1
1983	559	11	2
1984	730	28	7
1985	737	28	8
1986	657	33	4
1987	464	29	4
1988	458	58	4
1989	621	46	5
1990	827	61	5
1991	698	34	5
1992	450	51	4
1993	509	45	3
1994	879	40	5
1995	839	26	5

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	tomatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sunflowers 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tobacco 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1996	914	38	6
1997	792	35	6
1998	1 089	36	7

### F — Sundry crops

year	olives 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tea 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sugar cane 10 <sup>3</sup> t	beetroot 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sweet potatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1965	?	0.5	?	?	?
1966	?	0.5	50	?	?
1967	?	0.4	53	116	74
1968	22	0.5	46	123	70
1969	22	0.4	49	105	70
1970	20	0.3	52	66	68
1971	21	0.3	46	67	69
1972	18	0.4	48	100	68
1973	22	0.3	31	95	66
1974	21	0.3	42	70	68
1975	20	0.3	30	93	67
1976	19	0.2	28	113	67
1977	21	0.3	35	128	65
1978	20	0.3	28	46	65
1979	20	0.3	24	46	65
1980	21	0.2	22	38	65
1981	21	0.2	22	29	46
1982	20	0.2	15	30	45
1983	19	0.2	9	42	53
1984	21	0.2	7	55	40
1985	21	0.1	7	31	46
1986	21	0.2	6	39	35
1987	19	0.2	6	19	30

Table 5A.4 — Agricultural production (continued)

year	olives 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tea 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sugar cane 10 <sup>3</sup> t	beetroot 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sweet potatoes 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1988	20	0.2	4	8	27
1989	21	0.2	4	12	4
1990	20	0.2	4	13	3
1991	23	0.1	?	12	3
1992	16	0.1	?	19	3
1993	11	+0	?	32	3
1994	10	+0	?	34	2
1995	8	0.1	?	35	3
1996	9	0.1	?	21	2
1997	9	+0	?	17	2

## Table 5A.5 — Animal production

Sources — From 1845 to 1915, Lains, Sousa, 1998 and Justino, 1988-1989; from 1916 to 1947, Neves, 1995; from 1948 onwards, Estatísticas Agrícolas.

### A — Meat

year	10 <sup>3</sup> t	year	10 <sup>3</sup> t	year	10 <sup>3</sup> t	year	10 <sup>3</sup> t
1848	4	1871	13	1886	23	1902	31
...		1872	16	1887	24	1903	35
1851	5	1873	17	1888	23	1904	38
...		1874	21	1889	26	1905	31
1855	5	1875	15	1890	25	1906	42
1856	7	1876	17	1891	24	1907	45
...		1877	15	1892	26	1908	39
1861	8	1878	12	1893	25	1909	40
...		1879	12	1895	30	1910	47
1865	10	1880	19	1896	31	1911	47
1866	10	1881	20	1897	35	1912	50
1867	12	1882	25	1898	32	1913	52
1868	12	1883	21	1899	28	1914	44
1869	13	1884	23	1900	30	...	
1870	20	1885	23	1901	33		

year	adult beef 10 <sup>3</sup> t	adoles- cent beef 10 <sup>3</sup> t	mutton 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goat meat 10 <sup>3</sup> t	pig meat 10 <sup>3</sup> t	lard 10 <sup>3</sup> t	bacon 10 <sup>3</sup> t	horse meat 10 <sup>3</sup> t	poultry and rabbit meat 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1916	18	2	14	4	40	9	26	?	?
1917	12	2	14	3	40	9	26	?	?
1918	20	2	14	4	39	9	26	?	?
1919	14	2	15	4	39	9	26	?	?

Table 5A.5 — Animal production (continued)

year	adult beef  10 <sup>3</sup> t	adoles- cent beef  10 <sup>3</sup> t	mutton  10 <sup>3</sup> t	goat meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t	pig meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t	lard  10 <sup>3</sup> t	bacon  10 <sup>3</sup> t	horse meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t	poultry and rabbit meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t
1920	12	1	17	4	39	9	26	?	?
1921	14	3	16	4	37	8	24	?	?
1922	21	5	17	4	39	9	26	?	?
1923	16	3	16	5	42	9	27	?	?
1924	11	2	15	5	43	10	28	?	?
1925	19	4	16	4	44	10	29	?	?
1926	21	5	16	5	45	10	29	?	?
1927	19	5	16	5	45	10	29	?	?
1928	17	4	18	5	44	10	29	?	?
1929	18	5	17	4	44	10	29	?	?
1930	19	5	17	4	43	10	28	?	?
1931	17	7	16	4	44	10	29	?	?
1932	21	8	17	5	43	10	28	?	?
1933	19	6	17	4	44	11	30	?	?
1934	18	7	16	4	43	10	29	?	?
1935	18	6	15	4	42	10	28	?	?
1936	18	6	15	4	44	10	29	?	?
1937	17	6	15	4	44	10	29	?	?
1938	20	8	17	4	45	10	30	0,2	11
1939	23	9	18	4	45	10	30	?	?
1940	23	7	18	4	47	10	31	?	?
1941	19	7	19	4	47	10	30	?	?
1942	12	4	18	4	48	10	31	?	?
1943	16	6	19	4	47	10	30	?	?
1944	21	8	21	4	46	10	30	?	?
1945	23	7	20	4	48	10	31	?	?
1946	17	4	20	4	48	10	31	?	?
1947	14	4	19	3	50	11	32	0,3	14
1948	24	8	13	3	46	10	29	0,4	13



Table 5A.5 — Animal production (continued)

year	adult beef  10 <sup>3</sup> t	adoles- cent beef  10 <sup>3</sup> t	mutton  10 <sup>3</sup> t	goat meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t	pig meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t	lard  10 <sup>3</sup> t	bacon  10 <sup>3</sup> t	horse meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t	poultry and rabbit meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t
1949	25	10	13	3	45	11	29	0,5	14
1950	24	7	16	3	49	13	32	0,6	14
1951	22	7	15	3	48	12	31	0,7	15
1952	22	8	15	3	52	14	35	0,7	15
1953	25	11	16	3	53	12	34	0,8	15
1954	28	13	16	3	48	9	30	1	16
1955	28	12	17	3	50	10	32	2	16
1956	23	10	17	2	50	10	31	2	10
1957	23	10	17	2	51	12	33	3	12
1958	25	13	18	2	47	9	29	2	13
1959	30	14	19	3	48	9	30	2	11
1960	28	13	21	3	52	10	32	3	13
1961	29	16	22	3	52	10	33	2	18
1962	35	16	24	2	54	11	34	2	28
1963	34	14	24	2	51	10	32	3	35
1964	31	12	24	2	50	9	31	3	40
1965	45	13	26	2	47	8	29	2	43
1966	49	11	26	2	48	9	30	2	44
1967	40	10	22	2	52	9	32	2	47
1968	46	12	17	2	58	10	35	1	50
1969	62	17	18	3	62	11	38	2	53
1970	71	17	19	3	57	10	35	2	58
1971	60	14	18	3	59	10	36	2	67
1972	58	15	18	3	64	11	39	2	75
1973	63	18	20	3	69	13	43	1	83
1974	66	19	18	3	70	13	43	1	100
1975	70	28	18	4	81	15	50	1	100
1976	59	20	19	4	78	14	48	1	115
1977	55	22	20	3	87	16	54	0,7	134

Table 5A.5 — Animal production (continued)

year	adult beef  10 <sup>3</sup> t	adoles- cent beef  10 <sup>3</sup> t	mutton  10 <sup>3</sup> t	goat meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t	pig meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t	lard  10 <sup>3</sup> t	bacon  10 <sup>3</sup> t	horse meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t	poultry and rabbit meat  10 <sup>3</sup> t
1978	64	24	19	4	93	17	58	0,8	137
1979	67	22	18	3	79	14	49	1	133
1980	72	25	20	4	95	18	59	1	170
1981	82	32	20	4	110	21	68	0,9	164
1982	83	34	21	4	110	21	69	1	156
1983	74	28	23	4	108	20	67	1	168
1984	64	28	22	3	113	21	70	2	146
1985	58	33	21	3	108	19	66	1	143
1986	85	6	22	3	108	20	70	1	162
1987	86	4	22	3	126	26	82	1	177
1988	96	5	24	3	116	24	75	1	179
1989	101	5	24	3	128	26	83	1	181
1990	110	7	25	3	170	34	109	0,9	184
1991	121	8	27	3	158	28	105	0,9	188
1992	114	9	24	3	172	29	93	0,8	216
1993	108	9	24	3	200	34	108	0,7	216
1994	88	7	24	3	205	35	110	0,7	234
1995	95	10	24	3	198	34	107	0,6	233
1996	89	11	23	3	211	36	114	0,7	246
1997	91	13	24	3	215	36	116	0,5	267

## B — Dairy produce

year	cow's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	ewe's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	goat's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	cow cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	ewe cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goat cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	butter 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1916	58	52	55	?	?	?	?
1917	58	53	57	?	?	?	?
1918	59	54	58	?	?	?	?
1919	60	55	60	?	?	?	?

Table 5A.5 — Animal production (continued)

year	cow's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	ewe's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	goat's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	cow cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	ewe cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goat cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	butter 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1920	61	56	61	?	?	?	?
1921	62	55	61	?	?	?	?
1922	63	54	60	?	?	?	?
1923	64	53	60	?	?	?	?
1924	65	52	59	?	?	?	?
1925	66	51	59	?	?	?	?
1926	68	51	58	?	?	?	?
1927	69	51	58	?	?	?	?
1928	71	50	58	?	?	?	?
1929	73	50	57	?	?	?	?
1930	75	50	57	?	?	?	?
1931	77	50	57	?	?	?	?
1932	80	50	56	?	?	?	?
1933	82	49	56	?	?	?	?
1934	84	51	56	?	?	?	?
1935	92	52	56	?	?	?	?
1936	100	54	55	?	?	?	?
1937	109	56	55	?	?	?	?
1938	119	57	55	0,4	9	2	2
1939	130	59	55	?	?	?	?
1940	142	59	55	?	?	?	?
1941	147	59	53	?	?	?	?
1942	153	60	51	?	?	?	?
1943	159	60	50	?	?	?	?
1944	165	60	48	?	?	?	?
1945	172	60	47	?	?	?	?
1946	179	60	45	?	?	?	?
1947	186	61	44	1	10	2	1
1948	220	61	43	1	13	2	2
1949	234	63	41	2	13	2	2
1950	240	81	42	1	13	2	2
1951	246	80	40	2	13	2	2

Table 5A.5 — Animal production (continued)

year	cow's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	ewe's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	goat's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	cow cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	ewe cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goat cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	butter 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1952	261	73	37	2	12	2	2
1953	267	73	36	2	12	2	3
1954	284	74	34	2	12	1	3
1955	290	90	35	2	15	1	2
1956	307	95	34	2	16	1	2
1957	308	90	33	2	15	1	3
1958	309	96	32	2	16	1	3
1959	326	99	31	3	17	1	3
1960	329	82	30	3	14	1	3
1961	336	102	31	3	17	1	2
1962	345	104	30	3	17	1	3
1963	351	96	28	3	16	1	2
1964	351	87	27	4	15	1	2
1965	366	108	28	4	18	1	2
1966	357	91	27	3	15	1	2
1967	348	78	26	3	13	1	1
1968	404	77	25	3	13	1	2
1969	444	89	34	4	15	1	2
1970	458	86	35	4	14	1	2
1971	433	81	35	4	13	1	2
1972	447	87	36	7	14	1	1
1973	462	84	36	9	14	1	1
1974	484	80	36	7	13	2	2
1975	515	76	36	8	13	1	1
1976	528	74	35	11	12	1	1
1977	560	78	36	13	13	1	2
1978	569	80	36	16	13	1	3
1979	656	84	36	19	14	2	3
1980	734	82	37	22	14	2	4
1981	791	76	35	22	13	1	4
1982	793	80	36	22	13	2	4
1983	797	82	37	20	14	2	4

Table 5A.5 — Animal production (continued)

year	cow's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	ewe's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	goat's milk 10 <sup>6</sup> l	cow cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	ewe cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goat cheese 10 <sup>3</sup> t	butter 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1984	793	83	37	21	14	2	3
1985	843	85	37	23	14	2	4
1986	926	81	37	21	14	2	5
1987	998	82	41	23	14	2	5
1988	1034	83	41	25	14	2	6
1989	1059	86	42	28	14	2	7
1990	1177	88	42	28	15	2	10
1991	1189	89	43	34	15	2	11
1992	1334	93	44	33	16	2	12
1993	1216	94	44	33	16	2	11
1994	1239	97	43	34	16	2	11
1995	1697	98	43	47	17	2	19
1996	1731	96	42	49	16	2	19
1997	1770	97	42	47	16	2	21

### C — Sundry

year	eggs 10 <sup>6</sup> dozen	honey 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wool 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1916	22	?	8
1917	23	?	8
1918	22	?	8
1919	22	?	8
1920	22	?	9
1921	22	?	9
1922	23	?	9
1923	23	?	9
1924	23	?	8
1925	24	?	8
1926	24	?	8
1927	24	?	8

Table 5A.5 — Animal production (continued)

year	eggs 10 <sup>6</sup> dozen	honey 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wool 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1928	24	?	8
1929	26	?	8
1930	28	?	8
1931	26	?	8
1932	28	?	8
1933	28	?	8
1934	28	?	8
1935	28	?	8
1936	28	?	8
1937	27	?	7
1938	28	2	8
1939	28	?	9
1940	29	?	9
1941	29	?	9
1942	29	?	9
1943	29	?	9
1944	29	?	9
1945	30	?	9
1946	30	?	9
1947	30	2	9
1948	30	2	10
1949	32	2	10
1950	37	2	11
1951	38	2	10
1952	39	2	10
1953	40	2	11
1954	40	2	11
1955	41	2	11
1956	42	2	11
1957	48	2	12
1958	44	2	12
1959	45	2	12

Table 5A.5 — Animal production (continued)

year	eggs 10 <sup>6</sup> dozen	honey 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wool 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1960	46	2	12
1961	47	2	13
1962	48	2	13
1963	49	2	13
1964	50	2	13
1965	50	2	13
1966	51	2	12
1967	52	3	9
1968	53	3	8
1969	54	3	9
1970	55	3	7
1971	56	3	8
1972	57	3	8
1973	61	3	9
1974	65	3	8
1975	68	3	8
1976	67	3	10
1977	79	3	10
1978	85	3	9
1979	92	3	9
1980	93	3	9
1981	96	3	9
1982	102	3	9
1983	94	3	9
1984	84	3	9
1985	108	3	9
1986	109	3	9
1987	110	3	9
1988	113	3	9
1989	118	3	9
1990	135	3	9
1991	133	3	9

Table 5A.5 — Animal production (continued)

year	eggs 10 <sup>6</sup> dozen	honey 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wool 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1992	139	3	9
1993	139	4	9
1994	147	4	9
1995	136	4	9
1996	129	4	9
1997	129	4	9



## Table 5A.6 — Forestry production

Sources — From 1845 to 1915, Lains, Sousa, 1998 and Justino, 1988-1989; from 1916 to 1947, Neves, 1995; from 1948 onwards, Estatísticas Agrícolas.

year	cork 10 <sup>3</sup> t	resin 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wood 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	fuelwood 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	pulp 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>
1848	4	?	?	?	?
...					
1855	5	?	?	?	?
1856	7	?	?	?	?
...					
1861	8	?	?	?	?
...					
1865	10	?	?	?	?
1866	10	?	?	?	?
1867	12	?	?	?	?
1868	12	?	?	?	?
1869	13	?	?	?	?
1870	20	?	?	?	?
1871	13	?	?	?	?
1872	16	?	?	?	?
1873	17	?	?	?	?
1874	21	?	?	?	?
1875	15	?	?	?	?
1876	17	?	?	?	?
1877	15	?	?	?	?
1878	12	?	?	?	?
1879	12	?	?	?	?
1880	19	?	?	?	?
1881	20	?	?	?	?
1882	25	?	?	?	?
1883	21	?	?	?	?
1884	23	?	?	?	?
1885	23	?	?	?	?

Table 5A.6 — Forestry production (continued)

year	cork 10 <sup>3</sup> t	resin 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wood 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	fuelwood 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	pulp 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>
1886	23	?	?	?	?
1887	24	?	?	?	?
1888	23	?	?	?	?
1889	26	?	?	?	?
1890	25	?	?	?	?
1891	24	?	?	?	?
1892	26	?	?	?	?
1893	25	?	?	?	?
1894	25	?	?	?	?
1895	30	?	?	?	?
1896	31	?	?	?	?
1897	35	?	?	?	?
1898	32	?	?	?	?
1899	28	?	?	?	?
1901	33	?	?	?	?
1902	31	?	?	?	?
1903	35	?	?	?	?
1904	38	?	?	?	?
1905	31	?	?	?	?
1906	42	?	?	?	?
1907	45	?	?	?	?
1908	39	?	?	?	?
1909	40	?	?	?	?
1910	47	?	?	?	?
1911	47	?	?	?	?
1912	50	?	?	?	?
1913	52	?	?	?	?
1914	44	?	?	?	?
...					
1938	196	77	7	?	?
1939	?	33	?	?	?
1940	?	55	?	?	?

Table 5A.6 — Forestry production (continued)

year	cork 10 <sup>3</sup> t	resin 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wood 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	fuelwood 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	pulp 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>
1941	170	41	?	?	?
1942	154	61	?	?	?
1943	107	46	?	?	?
1944	128	29	?	?	?
1945	150	34	?	?	?
1946	177	52	?	?	?
1947	178	70	8	?	?
1948	158	49	8	?	?
1949	121	53	7	?	?
1950	203	70	7	?	?
1951	247	92	8	?	?
1952	184	32	8	?	?
1953	165	29	8	?	?
1954	226	49	8	?	?
1955	233	65	8	?	?
1956	208	58	8	?	?
1957	172	66	8	?	?
1958	160	59	9	?	?
1959	220	68	9	?	?
1960	214	76	9	?	?
1961	186	99	9	?	?
1962	195	78	9	?	?
1963	262	76	9	?	?
1964	248	93	10	?	?
1965	219	92	10	?	?
1966	201	89	10	?	?
1967	167	91	10	?	?
1968	235	92	10	?	?
1969	189	94	11	?	?
1970	154	107	11	?	?
1971	175	111	11	?	?
1972	219	121	11	?	?

Table 5A.6 — Forestry production (continued)

year	cork 10 <sup>3</sup> t	resin 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wood 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	fuelwood 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	pulp 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>
1973	217	138	?	?	?
1974	177	147	?	?	?
1975	134	138	?	?	?
1976	107	100	?	?	?
1977	190	124	?	?	?
1978	175	96	10	?	?
1979	134	106	10	?	?
1980	119	134	10	?	?
1981	113	124	?	?	?
1982	125	127	?	?	?
1983	116	102	?	?	?
1984	151	108	?	?	?
1985	108	104	?	?	?
1986	198	108	?	?	?
1987	174	95	?	?	?
1988	145	80	?	?	?
1989	141	41	6	?	6
1990	168	50	6	?	6
1991	175	40	6	?	7
1992	154	25	6	?	7
1993	143	20	5	0,6	7
1994	101	9	6	0,6	6
1995	157	15	5	0,6	6
1996	147	?	5	0,7	5
1997	107	?	4	0,7	5

## SECTION B — FISHING AND AQUACULTURE

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

### 1 — Fishing

Official statistical data were published about fishing activity in five main sources:

a) The Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the Direcção-Geral de Estatística (Directorate-General of Statistics), later the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute). The presentation of data on fishing activity in this source began in 1892 and covered the years 1889, 1896 to 1903 and from 1912 onwards for the country as a whole.

b) The Estatística das Pescas Marítimas (Marine Fisheries Statistics) of the Direcção das Pescarias do Ministério da Marinha (Directorate of Fisheries at the Ministry of the Navy). The presentation of data on fishing activity in this source covered the years from 1896 to 1969 for the country as a whole.

c) The Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) of the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute). The presentation of data on fishing activity in this source began in 1943 and ended in 1964, covering the years from 1939 to 1964, but only for mainland Portugal.

d) The Estatísticas Agrícolas (Agricultural Statistics) of the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute). The presentation of data on fishing activity in this source began in 1965 and ended in 1968, covering the year 1946 only for mainland Portugal and the years from 1947 to 1968 for the country as a whole.

e) The Estatísticas das Pescas (Fisheries Statistics) of the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute). This specialised publication began in 1969, presenting data for the years from 1967 onwards for the country as a whole.

The data contained in these sources relate to the fishermen engaged in this activity, the boats and the instruments used on them and the catches made. The data that are transcribed here are those relating to the size and composition of the fishing fleet (Table 5B.1) and the quantity and value of the catches brought ashore (Table 5B.2).

## 2 — Aquaculture

Official statistical data about aquaculture have only been available since 1989 and were published in the Estatísticas das Pescas (Fisheries Statistics). Those data relating to the amounts of production are transcribed here in Table 5B.2.

### Tables

5B.1 — Fishing boats

5B.2 — Catches brought ashore and aquaculture

## Table 5B.1 — Fishing boats

Source — Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) for 1889. Estatística das Pescas Marítimas (Marine Fisheries Statistics) from 1896 to 1969 and Estatísticas da Pesca (Fisheries Statistics) from 1970 onwards.

Remark — grt = gross register tons. 1 gross register ton = 2.832 m<sup>3</sup>.

year	boats		with engine		without engine	
	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt
1889	10	20	?	?	?	?
...						
1896	8	26	?	?	?	?
1897	8	26	?	?	?	?
1898	9	27	?	?	?	?
1899	9	27	?	?	?	?
1900	9	27	?	?	?	?
1901	9	27	?	?	?	?
1902	11	33	?	?	?	?
1903	10	30	?	?	?	?
1904	10	32	?	?	?	?
1905	10	30	?	?	?	?
1906	10	31	?	?	?	?
1907	11	30	?	?	?	?
1908	10	30	?	?	?	?
1909	12	41	?	?	?	?
1910	11	42	?	?	?	?
1911	11	49	?	?	?	?
1912	11	49	?	?	?	?
1913	12	48	?	?	?	?
1914	12	58	+0	10	12	48
1915	13	52	+0	10	13	40
1916	12	53	+0	9	12	41
1917	12	38	+0	6	12	31
1918	12	38	+0	6	12	31

Table 5B.1 — Fishing boats (continued)

year	boats		with engine		without engine	
	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt
1919	13	47	+0	11	12	35
1920	13	48	+0	13	13	35
1921	13	49	+0	15	13	35
1922	14	53	+0	15	14	38
1923	15	55	+0	14	15	41
1924	15	61	+0	19	15	41
1925	15	45	+0	10	14	35
1926	15	63	+0	24	14	39
1927	14	61	+0	24	14	38
1928	14	55	+0	24	14	33
1929	14	66	+0	26	13	40
1930	14	61	1	28	14	34
1931	14	59	1	29	14	28
1932	14	65	1	26	14	40
1933	14	55	1	28	13	27
1934	14	54	1	26	13	28
1935	14	54	1	28	14	27
1936	13	58	1	28	12	30
1937	13	57	1	27	12	30
1938	13	71	1	40	12	32
1939	13	68	1	42	12	26
1940	13	66	1	41	12	25
1941	14	68	1	42	13	26
1942	14	67	1	41	13	26
1943	15	82	1	53	14	28
1944	16	82	1	54	15	28
1945	16	87	1	60	15	27
1946	16	89	1	62	15	27
1947	15	93	1	67	14	26
1948	16	104	1	77	15	26
1949	16	113	1	87	15	26
1950	16	132	1	105	15	26



Table 5B.1 — Fishing boats (continued)

year	boats		with engine		without engine	
	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt
1951	17	118	1	92	15	25
1952	17	121	2	96	15	25
1953	16	124	2	101	15	24
1954	17	129	2	105	15	24
1955	17	134	2	110	15	24
1956	17	139	2	115	15	23
1957	17	139	2	117	15	22
1958	17	146	2	124	15	21
1959	18	152	3	131	15	22
1960	18	154	3	132	15	22
1961	19	163	3	141	16	22
1962	19	160	3	139	15	21
1963	19	162	4	141	15	21
1964	19	166	4	144	15	22
1965	19	167	4	146	15	21
1966	18	172	4	152	15	21
1967	18	183	4	162	14	21
1968	18	187	4	168	14	20
1969	18	189	4	170	14	19
1970	18	194	4	175	13	19
1971	17	187	4	169	13	19
1972	17	190	4	173	13	17
1973	17	197	4	180	13	17
1974	17	194	4	178	13	16
1975	17	196	5	182	12	15
1976	17	195	5	181	12	14
1977	18	216	5	201	12	14
1978	18	221	6	207	12	15
1979	19	220	6	205	13	15
1980	19	220	6	205	13	15
1981	19	225	7	211	12	15
1982	18	220	6	205	13	15

Table 5B.1 — Fishing boats (continued)

year	boats		with engine		without engine	
	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> grt
1983	19	223	7	208	12	15
1984	19	209	7	193	12	15
1985	19	211	7	196	12	15
1986	18	209	7	195	11	14
1987	18	210	8	200	10	11
1988	?	?	?	?	?	?
1989	17	196	9	188	8	8
1990	16	186	9	179	7	7
1991	15	176	9	170	6	7
1992	14	162	9	155	6	6
1993	13	145	8	139	5	5
1994	13	132	10	129	3	3
1995	12	124	9	121	3	3
1996	12	120	9	118	3	2

## Table 5B.2 — Catches brought ashore and aquaculture

Source — Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) for 1889. Estatística das Pescas Marítimas (Marine Fisheries Statistics) from 1896 to 1966 and Estatísticas da Pesca (Fisheries Statistics) from 1967 onwards.

Remark — After 1985, the catching of cetaceans was banned.

year	total 10 <sup>3</sup> t	fish 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tuna 10 <sup>3</sup> t	cod 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sar- dine 10 <sup>3</sup> t	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t	crusta- ceans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	mol- luscs 10 <sup>3</sup> t	value million escudos	average price esc/kg	ceta- ceans units
1889	?	?	?	?	?	?	?	?	3.2	?	?
...											
1896	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	3.7	?	37
1897	?	?	?	1	?	?	?	?	4.0	?	54
1898	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	3.8	?	54
1899	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	4.1	?	79
1900	?	?	?	?	?	?	?	?	3.9	?	83
1901	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	4.5	?	49
1902	?	?	?	3	?	?	?	?	4.3	?	102
1903	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	4.1	?	99
1904	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	4.5	?	91
1905	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	4.5	?	39
1906	?	?	?	4	?	?	?	?	5.1	?	117
1907	?	?	?	4	?	?	?	?	5.9	?	124
1908	?	?	?	4	?	?	?	?	6.1	?	136
1909	?	?	?	5	?	?	?	?	6.1	?	98
1910	?	?	?	5	?	?	?	?	6.4	?	124
1911	?	?	?	5	?	?	?	?	6.4	?	120
1912	?	?	?	4	?	?	?	?	7.0	?	72
1913	?	?	?	3	?	?	?	?	7.4	?	68
1914	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	6.9	?	35
1915	?	?	?	4	?	?	?	?	9.5	?	33
1916	?	?	?	3	?	?	?	?	11.0	?	71

Table 5B.2 — Catches brought ashore and aquaculture (continued)

year	total 10 <sup>3</sup> t	fish 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tuna 10 <sup>3</sup> t	cod 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sar- dine 10 <sup>3</sup> t	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t	crusta- ceans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	mol- luscs 10 <sup>3</sup> t	value million escudos	average price esc/kg	ceta- ceans units
1917	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	17.0	?	128
1918	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	20	?	183
1919	?	?	?	1	?	?	?	?	26	?	135
1920	?	?	?	2	?	?	?	?	45	?	124
1921	?	?	?	4	?	?	?	?	58	?	51
1922	?	?	?	4	?	?	?	?	104	?	121
1923	?	?	?	4	?	?	?	?	208	?	177
1924	?	?	?	7	?	?	?	?	297	?	71
1925	?	?	?	5	?	?	?	?	206	?	311
1926	?	?	?	7	?	?	?	?	198	?	451
1927	?	?	?	6	89	?	?	2	218	?	344
1928	?	?	?	6	120	?	?	1	248	?	194
1929	?	?	?	5	76	?	?	1	233	?	219
1930	?	?	?	4	114	?	?	1	239	?	99
1931	?	?	?	4	118	?	?	1	159	?	80
1932	?	?	?	5	112	?	?	2	172	?	179
1933	?	?	?	8	76	?	?	2	188	?	261
1934	?	?	?	9	137	?	?	2	196	?	234
1935	?	?	?	10	142	?	?	2	208	?	379
1936	?	?	?	13	122	?	?	2	201	?	387
1937	?	?	?	16	108	?	?	2	193	?	417
1938	219	203	3	15	114	71	13	3	204	0.93	417
1939	200	179	2	19	88	70	17	4	225	1.12	400
1940	195	185	2	21	98	64	8	2	303	1.55	552
1941	192	177	2	21	77	77	10	5	547	2.85	442
1942	202	183	3	21	83	76	13	4	653	3.23	548
1943	256	237	3	23	134	77	15	4	713	2.79	796
1944	243	224	2	25	128	69	15	4	703	2.89	724
1945	244	221	2	29	109	81	18	5	790	3.24	581
1946	260	239	4	31	108	96	16	5	918	3.53	831
1947	231	220	3	34	98	85	7	4	800	3.46	836

Table 5B.2 — Catches brought ashore and aquaculture (continued)

year	total 10 <sup>3</sup> t	fish 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tuna 10 <sup>3</sup> t	cod 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sar- dine 10 <sup>3</sup> t	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t	crusta- ceans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	mol- luscs 10 <sup>3</sup> t	value million escudos	average price esc/kg	ceta- ceans units
1948	220	209	3	36	79	91	7	5	892	4.05	1 001
1949	215	204	5	45	59	95	7	4	910	4.23	656
1950	230	224	3	53	83	85	3	3	979	4.26	503
1951	235	229	4	51	79	95	2	4	948	4.03	955
1952	256	249	7	55	90	97	2	4	1 038	4.05	785
1953	296	289	7	69	97	116	3	4	1 078	3.64	635
1954	309	299	5	67	113	114	5	6	1 127	3.65	807
1955	290	282	8	72	92	110	2	7	1 276	4.40	839
1956	325	317	7	79	100	131	2	6	1 395	4.29	705
1957	306	300	10	72	113	105	1	6	1 260	4.12	842
1958	339	332	7	63	132	130	1	6	1 281	3.78	701
1959	323	316	9	57	121	129	1	6	1 322	4.09	572
1960	355	348	9	66	139	134	1	7	1 575	4.44	606
1961	374	366	9	71	139	147	1	7	1 599	4.28	501
1962	377	369	11	77	130	151	1	7	1 531	4.06	583
1963	384	377	9	83	118	167	1	7	1 722	4.48	658
1964	434	427	9	76	164	178	1	7	1 930	4.45	611
1965	425	415	12	71	138	194	1	8	1 846	4.34	530
1966	374	367	6	71	125	165	1	7	1 974	5.28	410
1967	419	406	11	97	115	183	1	12	2 288	5.46	425
1968	366	348	3	79	80	186	1	17	2 140	5.85	149
1969	334	318	8	63	64	183	1	15	2 123	6.36	226
1970	365	356	7	66	69	214	1	9	2 225	6.10	244
1971	348	337	6	57	85	189	1	11	2 686	7.72	353
1972	343	330	6	50	88	186	1	12	2 833	8.26	390
1973	375	363	9	47	101	206	1	11	3 350	8.93	420
1974	297	289	11	49	75	154	1	7	3 952	13.31	259
1975	285	277	8	39	95	135	0	8	4 271	14.99	237
1976	287	278	6	40	79	153	0	9	6 439	22.44	126
1977	291	282	9	35	80	158	0	8	7 891	27.12	152
1978	255	244	5	30	84	125	0	11	9 671	37.93	173

Table 5B.2 — Catches brought ashore and aquaculture (continued)

year	total 10 <sup>3</sup> t	fish 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tuna 10 <sup>3</sup> t	cod 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sar- dine 10 <sup>3</sup> t	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t	crusta- ceans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	mol- luscs 10 <sup>3</sup> t	value million escudos	average price esc/kg	ceta- ceans units
1979	245	238	6	23	91	118	0	6	11 359	46.36	184
1980	272	260	9	19	107	125	1	11	14 433	53.06	198
1981	264	253	7	15	114	117	0	11	16 652	63.08	236
1982	240	232	8	9	101	114	1	7	16 779	69.91	73
1983	223	214	7	40	86	81	2	8	20 719	92.91	41
1984	243	234	9	14	95	116	2	8	26 391	108.60	63

year	total 10 <sup>3</sup> t	fish 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tuna 10 <sup>3</sup> t	cod 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sar- dine 10 <sup>3</sup> t	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t	crusta- ceans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	mol- luscs 10 <sup>3</sup> t	value million escudos	average price esc/kg
1985	274	262	9	17	111	134	2	9	31 940	117
1986	332	318	14	20	104	194	3	11	46 658	141
1987	313	291	14	7	90	194	4	17	50 030	160
1988	314	292	17	13	95	184	4	18	58 056	185

year	total 10 <sup>3</sup> t	fish 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tuna 10 <sup>3</sup> t	cod 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sar- dine 10 <sup>3</sup> t	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t	crusta- ceans 10 <sup>3</sup> t	mol- luscs 10 <sup>3</sup> t	value million escudos	average price esc/kg	aqua- culture 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1989	305	267	13	19	91	157	4	34	67 253	221	8
1990	310	278	13	20	93	165	4	28	73 358	237	4
1991	305	267	15	20	87	160	3	35	79 178	260	6
1992	278	239	15	5	83	151	1	37	65 595	236	6
1993	269	237	17	2	90	145	2	30	60 390	224	6
1994	246	218	13	5	94	119	2	26	58 563	238	7
1995	244	220	22	5	88	127	2	22	61 528	252	5
1996	217	192	17	4	83	105	2	23	56 161	259	?

## SECTION C — MINING AND QUARRYING

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

In 1875, the first Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) included information about the mining concessions existing in Portugal and, in 1884, the second Anuário Estatístico began publication of data about their production. However, it was only from 1921 onwards that the publication of these data became a regular procedure and only in the 1930s did relatively complete information begin to appear (in particular covering not only mines, but also quarries). From 1942 onwards, the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) and, from 1991 onwards, the Estatísticas da Produção Industrial (Industrial Production Statistics) became the two publications where it is possible to find the best synthesis of statistical information about mining and quarrying.

Mention should also be made of the Boletim de Minas (Mining Bulletin), published by the respective Directorate-General, where even more detailed data can be found, especially about the legal and administrative framework of mining and quarrying activities.

### Tables

5C.1 — Extraction of energy products

5C.2 — Extraction of non-radioactive metal ores

5C.3 — Extraction of non-metallic minerals

## Table 5C.1 — Extraction of energy products

Source — Until 1942, Anuário Estatístico; from 1943 to 1989, Estatísticas Industriais; from 1991 onwards, Estatísticas da Produção Industrial.

Remark — Of the three types of products into which the extraction of energy products is normally broken down, one, petroleum, has never been extracted for economic purposes in Portugal, whilst another product, radioactive metal ores, only became significant as an energy product from the 1940s onwards. The mining of radioactive metal ores has, however, been included in this table, starting at the time when it first began to appear in official statistics.

year	coal 10 <sup>3</sup> t	radioactive metal ores t
1882	16	-
1883	18	-
1884	12	-
1885	15	-
1886	16	-
1887	18	-
1888	19	-
1889	15	-
1890	16	-
1891	17	-
1892	17	-
1893	23	-
1894	22	-
1895	19	-
1896	17	-
1897	10	-
1898	14	-
1899	21	-
1900	24	-
1901	15	-
1902	17	-

year	coal 10 <sup>3</sup> t	radioactive metal ores t
1903	12	-
...		
1911	11	0
1912	15	0
1913	25	0
1914	29	0
1915	60	0
...		
1920	169	0
1921	152	0
1922	143	0
1923	154	0
1924	133	1
1925	125	0
1926	232	0
1927	204	0
1928	228	0
1929	226	0
1930	247	0
1931	227	0
1932	202	0



Table 5C.1 — Extraction of energy products (continued)

year	coal 10 <sup>3</sup> t	radioactive metal ores t
1933	220	0
1934	218	0
1935	231	0
1936	237	1
1937	282	1
1938	326	0
1939	335	1
1940	433	1
1941	519	0
1942	606	0
1943	499	0
1944	535	0
1945	599	0
1946	520	0
1947	478	0
1948	490	0
1949	558	0
1950	512	0
1951	502	0
1952	519	0
1953	550	0
1954	497	0
1955	492	0
1956	560	0
1957	682	0
1958	724	0
1959	687	0
1960	591	0
1961	628	0
1962	558	0
1963	558	0

year	coal 10 <sup>3</sup> t	radioactive metal ores t
1964	545	0
1965	517	0
1966	471	0
1967	481	0
1968	428	0
1969	424	0
1970	271	0
1971	253	0
1972	252	0
1973	221	0
1974	230	0
1975	222	0
1976	193	101
1977	195	111
1978	180	102
1979	179	120
1980	177	80
1981	184	107
1982	179	118
1983	185	109
1984	195	121
1985	238	124
1986	210	117
1987	229	149
1988	205	167
1989	184	152
1990	216	131
1991	202	32
1992	221	34
1993	197	38
1994	147	28

Table 5C.1 — Extraction of energy products (continued)

year	coal 10 <sup>3</sup> t	radioactive metal ores t
1995	0	22
1996	0	17

year	coal 10 <sup>3</sup> t	radioactive metal ores t
1997	0	20
1998	0	22

## Table 5C.2 — Extraction of non-radioactive metal ores

Source — Until 1942, Anuário Estatístico; from 1943 to 1989, Estatísticas Industriais; from 1991 onwards, Estatísticas da Produção Industrial.

Remark — The data presented are obviously the official ones. This explains why, for example, it is not possible to see any exceptional increase in the mining of wolfram during the period of the Second World War, and why mining of this metal ceases completely from mid-1944 to 1946, due to its legal prohibition.

year	iron 10 <sup>3</sup> t	copper 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tin 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wolfram 10 <sup>3</sup> t	gold kg	silver kg	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1882	25	136	0	0	0	0	19
1883	12	399	0	0	0	0	11
1884	7	110	0	0	4	0	12
1885	10	69	0	0	7	0	10
1886	8	84	0	0	3	0	13
1887	13	89	0	0	3	0	16
1888	1	98	0	0	1	0	20
1889	2	81	0	0	3	0	3
1890	22	119	0	0	1	0	8
1891	5	130	0	0	0	0	3
1892	11	111	0	0	0	0	3
1893	0	188	0	0	0	0	5
1894	0	253	0	0	0	0	7
1895	0	210	0	0	0	0	2
1896	0	211	0	0	0	0	2
1897	0	280	0	0	17	0	3
1898	3	263	0	0	7	0	4
1899	15	348	0	0	1	0	3
1900	19	405	0	0	3	0	5
1901	22	446	0	0	2	0	1
1902	20	416	0	0	2	0	1
1903	15	378	0	0	1	0	2
...							

Table 5C.2 — Extraction of non-radioactive metal ores (continued)

year	iron 10 <sup>3</sup> t	copper 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tin 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wolfram 10 <sup>3</sup> t	gold kg	silver kg	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1911	15	15	0	1	3	3 667	1
1912	29	17	0	1	35	4 640	0
1913	49	376	0	1	1	64	1
1914	7	294	0	1	0	88	3
1915	15	182	0	1	0	669	1
...							
1920	13	1	0	0	0	38	1
1921	10	2	0	10	0	0	1
1922	18	14	0	1	0	6	1
1923	9	20	1	0	0	0	1
1924	9	1	1	0	0	0	1
1925	2	1	0	0	0	0	4
1926	2	2	0	0	0	0	1
1927	8	1	1	0	0	0	1
1928	14	1	1	0	0	0	1
1929	9	3	1	0	0	0	1
1930	0	2	1	0	0	0	1
1931	0	1	1	0	0	0	0
1932	0	1	1	0	0	0	0
1933	5	1	1	0	12	0	1
1934	3	1	1	1	1	0	0
1935	1	3	1	1	0	0	0
1936	0	0	1	1	0	0	1
1937	0	0	2	2	1	6	2
1938	1	0	2	3	10	832	2
1939	0	1	1	2	185	866	0
1940	0	1	0	4	296	1 077	1
1941	1	0	2	4	3	1	4
1942	57	0	3	3	35	7	3
1943	0	1	3	3	91	273	5
1944	0	1	1	2	52	156	4
1945	0	2	1	0	20	60	3

Table 5C.2 — Extraction of non-radioactive metal ores (continued)

year	iron 10 <sup>3</sup> t	copper 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tin 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wolfram 10 <sup>3</sup> t	gold kg	silver kg	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1946	0	2	0	0	252	754	2
1947	0	2	0	2	377	1 133	1
1948	0	2	1	2	367	1 100	1
1949	0	3	1	2	323	994	1
1950	0	2	1	2	481	2 123	1
1951	11	3	1	3	571	2 035	6
1952	44	3	1	3	558	2 418	7
1953	72	0	1	3	462	1 849	7
1954	56	2	1	3	686	2 026	6
1955	95	2	1	3	896	1 832	3
1956	119	2	1	3	688	1 790	3
1957	143	2	1	3	724	1 938	4
1958	116	2	1	1	552	1 424	3
1959	121	3	1	1	646	1 684	3
1960	151	3	1	1	682	1 646	2
1961	123	3	1	2	696	1 501	5
1962	134	3	1	2	682	1 646	5
1963	135	3	1	1	681	1 506	6
1964	113	4	1	1	663	1 517	3
1965	96	4	1	1	670	1 950	3
1966	93	4	1	1	584	11 028	5
1967	96	4	1	2	573	11 806	7
1968	200	5	1	2	541	1 284	5
1969	163	4	0	2	508	11 957	6
1970	126	4	0	2	373	8 703	6
1971	99	4	1	2	426	2 046	3
1972	43	1	1	2	520	7 162	3
1973	57	1	1	2	456	3 914	1
1974	53	1	0	2	357	743	0
1975	56	0	0	2	356	774	0
1976	49	0	0	2	312	881	0
1977	53	0	0	1	275	801	0

Table 5C.2 — Extraction of non-radioactive metal ores (continued)

year	iron 10 <sup>3</sup> t	copper 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tin 10 <sup>3</sup> t	wolfram 10 <sup>3</sup> t	gold kg	silver kg	others 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1978	55	0	0	1	284	703	0
1979	60	1	0	2	320	1 095	0
1980	57	1	0	2	244	861	0
1981	37	1	0	2	244	714	0
1982	27	0	0	2	211	732	0
1983	36	0	0	1	199	631	0
1984	36	0	0	2	193	693	0
1985	73	0	0	2	229	624	0
1986	55	0	0	2	303	714	0
1987	27	0	0	2	320	887	0
1988	23	8	0	2	317	877	0
1989	13	104	0	2	294	815	0
1990	14	160	1	2	276	722	0
1991	16	159	3	1	264	832	2
1992	15	609	7	2	Ag	889	25
1993	16	615	10	1	0	0	5
1994	14	535	8	0	0	0	0
1995	15	537	8	2	0	0	0
1996	19	446	8	1	0	0	0
1997	19	444	7	2	0	0	0
1998	20	469	6	1	0	0	+ 0

Ag — Gold production is added to that of silver.

## Table 5C.3 — Extraction of non-metallic minerals

Source — Until 1942, Anuário Estatístico; from 1943 to 1989, Estatísticas Industriais; from 1991 onwards, Estatísticas da Produção Industrial.

Remark — The series are subject to certain irregularities because of a variation in the universe covered. An attempt is made below to indicate the intended coverage and the main gaps.

Sand — Includes ordinary sand, marl for cement and gravel. The values preceded by an asterisk do not include marl.

Clay — Includes potter's earth, refractory clay, kaolin and clay used for making stoneware. The values preceded by an asterisk do not include potter's earth.

Sulphur — From 1972 onwards, the source only indicates the quantity of pyrites extracted. Sulphur production was estimated through the application of a coefficient of 0.447.

Stone — Includes slate, basalt, limestone, granite, marble, schist and various rocks.

Salt — Includes rock salt and sea salt. The values preceded by an asterisk do not include sea salt.

year	sand 10 <sup>3</sup> t	clay 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sulphur 10 <sup>3</sup> t	gypsum 10 <sup>3</sup> t	stone 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	salt 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1911	?	?	272	?	?	?
1912	?	?	351	?	?	?
1913	?	?	27	?	?	?
1914	?	?	0	?	?	?
1915	?	?	2	?	?	?
...						
1929	?	?	?	1	23	* + 0
1930	?	?	?	2	22	* + 0
1931	82	?	?	1	96	* + 0
1932	81	36	?	2	356	* + 0
1933	109	42	?	4	368	* + 0
1934	184	142	1	10	582	* + 0
1935	295	66	9	6	471	* + 0
1936	259	72	10	10	832	* + 0

Table 5C.3 — Extraction of non-metallic minerals (continued)

year	sand 10 <sup>3</sup> t	clay 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sulphur 10 <sup>3</sup> t	gypsum 10 <sup>3</sup> t	stone 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	salt 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1937	518	73	10	12	606	* + 0
1938	315	118	12	15	1 050	* + 0
1939	544	117	321	13	675	* + 0
1940	432	592	192	15	1 846	* + 0
1941	498	104	66	15	911	* + 0
1942	335	153	61	18	782	* + 0
1943	368	135	49	4	873	* + 0
1944	397	161	59	29	1 246	* + 0
1945	302	181	77	12	929	* + 0
1946	359	179	142	28	862	* + 0
1947	515	209	175	34	1 491	* + 0
1948	450	218	253	43	1 916	* + 0
1949	802	207	280	43	1 839	* + 0
1950	1 312	204	276	36	2 380	* + 0
1951	732	213	328	30	1 990	* + 0
1952	935	221	340	40	2 138	* + 0
1953	886	274	293	46	1 941	* + 0
1954	864	278	263	58	1 912	* + 0
1955	876	298	302	58	1 858	* + 0
1956	1 188	366	301	55	2 213	* + 0
1957	1 141	307	307	65	2 421	* 28
1958	1 109	379	275	43	2 482	* 59
1959	1 606	400	291	54	2 948	* 62
1960	* 330	444	301	62	1 923	* 70
1961	* 315	595	300	72	2 466	340
1962	* 420	317	295	73	2 767	389
1963	* 359	260	277	60	2 731	347
1964	* 573	612	279	65	2 520	321
1965	* 501	* 71	284	81	3 573	499
1966	* 540	* 129	257	113	4 502	436
1967	* 988	* 42	243	104	5 678	442
1968	* 1 265	* 87	254	106	5 581	414



Table 5C.3 — Extraction of non-metallic minerals (continued)

year	sand 10 <sup>3</sup> t	clay 10 <sup>3</sup> t	sulphur 10 <sup>3</sup> t	gypsum 10 <sup>3</sup> t	stone 10 <sup>3</sup> m <sup>3</sup>	salt 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1969	* 1 140	* 111	235	95	5 932	308
1970	* 1 642	* 118	213	115	7 718	401
1971	* 2 656	* 106	249	178	8 697	396
1972	* 2 961	* 73	247	135	10 594	498
1973	5 349	* 131	238	100	12 386	523
1974	4 826	* 183	228	143	17 157	533
1975	5 761	* 147	207	150	18 684	508
1976	5 463	* 179	186	102	23 496	469
1977	7 035	* 179	161	159	16 391	499
1978	12 312	3 882	140	176	18 040	476
1979	13 768	4 011	156	241	18 300	576
1980	15 664	5 323	159	236	18 439	620
1981	14 615	4 444	137	244	20 103	663
1982	13 723	4 027	117	237	21 435	655
1983	12 894	3 995	125	249	20 526	418
1984	9 340	2 377	149	228	18 349	416
1985	?	?	159	242	?	544
1986	8 939	2 527	474	265	22 900	522
1987	10 089	2 057	428	323	17 862	545
1988	11 077	2 016	433	338	24 575	498
1989	11 578	2 225	204	197	25 622	730
1990	11 309	1 053	44	309	38 171	765
1991	12 135	1 074	5	359	39 373	753
1992	12 628	1 461	0	471	38 014	* 563
1993	14 197	1 712	0	497	41 716	* 525
1994	13 420	* 659	0	521	43 968	* 519
1995	15 204	1 628	0	537	45 737	* 587
1996	16 423	1 288	0	521	47 467	* 604
1997	18 963	3 637	0	566	63 310	* 596

## SECTION D — MANUFACTURING INDUSTRY

MANUEL LISBOA (Faculdade de Ciências Sociais e Humanas — Universidade Nova de Lisboa)

### Introduction

The study of the evolution of the Portuguese industrial structure has proved to be a complex process, beginning with the difficulties in compiling suitable data to support the analysis. The lack of credible statistics and the almost complete impossibility of finding our way through the labyrinths and pitfalls that are placed before us by existing statistics have contributed to the scarcity of quantitative studies about the manufacturing industry.

In the nineteenth century, the data were somewhat scattered and it is therefore difficult to construct the sort of series that would make it possible to analyse the evolution of the industrial structure. In the first half of the twentieth century, the situation was quite similar. All that we therefore have available are the statistics from the second half of the same century, in which, despite the evident gaps, the existing data represent the only quantitative information that has been produced about the manufacturing industry; a fact which, by itself, is sufficient to justify the attention of researchers, for these gaps themselves are also a significant reflection of the state of the industry. However, any approach implies, firstly, adopting a sharply critical attitude towards the sources and, secondly, constructing statistical series that show those data that can be homogenised and those that, because of their very nature or because of the characteristics of the instruments used to gather the respective information, must be considered in their diversity.

In view of the extremely limited nature of available data, it was also considered appropriate to include some indices of industrial production that, although they are constructed in accordance with different criteria, make it possible to provide a broader view of the evolution of the manufacturing industry from the mid-nineteenth century until the present day.

The data presented here are the result of a research study in which such methodological precaution proved to be a constant concern. The critical attitude adopted towards the sources represents an attempt to make the results obtained more precise and to understand the choices made in the construction of the statistical series <sup>1</sup>.

---

<sup>1</sup> The data benefit greatly from the research undertaken by the author in the course of his Ph.D. thesis (Lisbon, 1998), in which a critical analysis is made of the Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics) and the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics), which are broken down at the level of the multiple sub-sectors appearing between 1945 and 1989.

## 1 — Brief description of the evolution of the manufacturing industry throughout the twentieth century

Throughout the twentieth century, the Portuguese manufacturing industry grew, but in keeping with a model of slow growth, it progressed only in small leaps and bounds and without the heroism of a sudden take-off. It always lagged behind in relation to the more industrialised countries<sup>2</sup>.

At the technological level, the backwardness of the industry in comparison with the more highly developed European countries was particularly significant and showed a tendency to reproduce itself: when the other countries were passing through the crises that preceded their abandonment of the leadership of a technological system, here in Portugal we were still going through the throes of its implantation. Thus, as a semi-peripheral country, we were caught up in technological counter-cycles which it was impossible for us to control: even nowadays, the main base of our industrial production is textiles, clothing and footwear, whilst in the more industrialised countries the main industries are machinery and electronics.

However, despite the Industrial Conditioning Law and the relative political isolation that the country experienced before the 1970s, Portuguese industry allowed itself to be affected by the growing internationalisation of the economy after the Second World War. The industrial growth of the 1950s and 1960s was already marked by this external influence, but foreign investment was still coming here in search of cheap labour and, although they incorporated more and more manufactured products, exports were still poor in quality or involved a low level of processing.

The industrial structure changed in an asymmetrical and lagged fashion in its various sub-sectors: the fish canning industry lost its importance, as did hat-making, match production and the woollen textiles industry; whilst there was an increase in the importance of dairy products, cotton textiles, clothing, footwear, knitted fabrics, chemicals and, somewhat belatedly, in the importance of iron and steel, non-electrical machinery and electrical equipment and machinery.

Nonetheless, the structure continued to be pyramid-shaped, with a predominance of small-sized labour-intensive companies matched by a significant number of capital-intensive industries at the opposite end of the scale and with a clearly insufficient number of medium-sized companies. The industrial structure changed at different rates, depending on the economic situation: before the 1970s, its renewal was a slow process; afterwards, it began to change quite rapidly and, generally speaking, at the expense of small enterprises. Gross industrial product grew with the increase in turbulence and the establishment of industrial companies. In the last three decades, although the renewal of the industrial fabric has continued to be intense, it has been slower than

---

<sup>2</sup> For the period from 1870 to 1914, see also [Lains, 1992](#) and [Reis, 1993](#).

that of services and commerce. There are also clear signs that the growth of the manufacturing industry has been overtaken by the growth of the tertiary sector.

## 2 — A brief criticism of the sources of industrial statistics <sup>3</sup>

### 2.1 — Two centuries of ambiguity and inaccuracy

The lack of any precise industrial statistics over such a long period as the one seen in Portugal may in itself be considered as an indicator of the country's industrial backwardness. In fact, the history of industrial statistics in Portugal is fairly revealing as to the general 'lack of direction' that beset Portuguese industry throughout the twentieth century. Thus, the compilation of complete series of statistics on the manufacturing industry proves to be a complex task, due to a series of factors that are bound up with the specific problems of introducing this type of statistics into our country and other more general problems linked to the perception of the importance of statistics and their use.

The nineteenth century was still very much an introductory period in terms of economic statistics in Portugal, so that the various attempts made to carry out national surveys show a number of limitations that today make it difficult to use the information gathered at that time. In 1814, the *Real Junta de Comércio, Agricultura, Fábricas e Navegação* (Royal Board of Trade, Agriculture, Manufacturing and Shipping) launched the first survey designed to ascertain the state of the industry. Using rather deficient techniques and based on the data obtained by the *corregedores* (magistrates) of Lisbon's various quarters and the country's other district courts, the survey's results do not allow us to do much more than to know that, of the 511 factories in existence at that time, 7 were closed, 240 were in a state of decay, 130 were in a stationary state and 134 were in a so-called progressive state. The 1839 survey already used the direct method, but even so the results continued to be partial and incomplete, so that they were not even gathered together and published officially <sup>4</sup>. In 1845, a new survey was carried out, with the results being made known through the Mappas das fábricas existentes no Continente e Ilhas Adjacentes (Tables of the factories existing in Mainland Portugal and the Adjacent Islands) <sup>5</sup>. In

---

<sup>3</sup> A substantial part of the text presented here on the criticism of the sources is taken from Lisboa, 1998: Vol. I, Part I, Chapter 3.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Introduction to the General Volume of the Industrial Survey of 1957-1959.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Justino, 1989.

1852, the country was passing through a period of relative economic dynamism, with the continuous creation of organisations such as the Ministry of Public Works, the General Board of Trade, Agriculture and Manufactures, the Lisbon Industrial Institute, the Porto Industrial School and the Manufactures Office. The Manufactures Office was given the responsibility of compiling industrial statistics, having launched a survey of factories employing more than ten workers. The indirect method was used, with the information being provided by the civil governors of the administrative districts and the scope of the questions covered the number of factories, their respective industrial activity, the number of workers — classified by sex and identifying the number of workers under sixteen years of age —, details of existing steam-powered machines — including the year of their installation, their motive power and the place where they were built — and the quality of the factory.

Taking advantage of the great dynamism of Fradesso da Silveira and his body of inspectors, an industrial and commercial survey was launched in 1860. Before the direct administration of the questionnaire, the officers collected information from the Treasury delegates, exchequer registrars and borough administrators, and consulted all the documents that might be of use to them for the visit that they would then make to all manufacturing and commercial establishments. The questionnaire had a much broader scope than the previous one, with information being collected about the company's date of foundation and its history, its size in economic and financial terms, the organisation of production, the scope and size of its trading and its owner. However, the scope of the survey was not uniform, being simultaneously a national survey and a detailed study of some industries, so that the data present certain limitations in terms of comparative analysis. In fact, although the survey took seven years to complete (1860-1867), the published volumes do not include all the data that were collected.

As the trade agreement signed with France in 1866 was drawing to the end of its period of validity and the need was felt to renegotiate this, the General Board of Trade, Industry and Agriculture suggested that the government should order the holding of a broad-based industrial survey. This national survey was carried out in 1881, making use of both the direct and indirect methods of administration. The questionnaire was fairly extensive and covered various questions relating to external trade, particularly with France, but the poor response of those asked to take part and the deficient quality of their answers limit the validity of the data collected <sup>6</sup>.

In 1890, another national survey was carried out into fishing, mining and manufacturing industries. The manufacturing industry was surveyed first through a questionnaire addressed to each manufacturer and then directly in order to complete and rectify what had been discovered in the 'office survey'. The detailed nature of the questionnaire was not matched by the participation

---

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Introduction to the General Volume of the Industrial Survey of 1957-1959.

of the manufacturers themselves, which led the actual committee responsible for carrying out the survey to question the validity of the results obtained.

Despite their obvious shortcomings, the 1881 and 1890 surveys are the most complete and even today still represent one of the main statistical sources for that period <sup>7</sup>.

In the first half of the twentieth century, various attempts were made to organise national surveys, but they did not amount to any more than this. Examples of such attempts are those made in 1907, 1909, 1917, 1924, 1931 and 1950. Only in 1957 was a national survey once more carried out with the aim of collecting data on the manufacturing industry. It is true that the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics), which were also based on an annual survey carried out with a sample of companies (these will be analysed in detail later on), had been published since 1943, but a much broader-based view of the state of the industry throughout the national territory was still needed. With this aim in mind, the 1957-1959 survey was designed in keeping with more elaborate techniques and a pilot survey was planned to be held before the actual survey itself. The survey covered the Portuguese mainland and its unit of inquiry was the establishment, except in the case of the building industry where the company was the unit used. An attempt was made to define a set of criteria that made it possible to eliminate very small units and those in which it was difficult to establish a clear border between factories and autonomous households and home-based work <sup>8</sup>. This distinction was not always clear, for the reality of the various industries was so different that, in some cases, home-based work is practically excluded, whilst, in others, it is the majority situation. For example, in 1958, in the food industry, whilst only factories were considered in the case of chocolate and cocoa manufacture, for flour-milling, factories, windmills and water-mills were taken into account. Those conducting the survey were given specific training for their actual field work, whilst those administering the survey sought to exercise a more rigorous control than previously. In spite of the precautions introduced for the holding of the survey, those who were responsible for its undertaking had no illusions as to the relativity of the information collected <sup>9</sup>. Immediately, there were limitations at the level of managers, who were afraid that the results might be used against them. Furthermore, the survey took three years to complete, which was a relatively long period for a survey, for the changes that might have occurred in the industrial structure, such as the formation and disappearance of companies, certainly affected the results. Nonetheless, the 1957-1959 survey represented the first major attempt in the twentieth century to compile a broad national statistical base on industry.

---

<sup>7</sup> Justino, 1989 also refers to a survey of the weaving industry in Oporto in 1888.

<sup>8</sup> Home-based and autonomous household work lies on the border between workshop and industrial production. See Lisboa, 1992: 283-296, with regard to the importance of the distinction between these two types of production.

<sup>9</sup> Cf. Introduction to the General Volume of the Industrial Survey of 1957-1959: pp. xxi-xxii.

In 1964, a survey of the same type was held, but only in 1972 was an Industrial Census carried out. The proposal had been made by the United Nations Secretariat, which in 1968 had suggested a world programme of industrial surveys amongst its member states, and the Portuguese government passed a law making the National Statistical Institute responsible for carrying out this initiative. The census covered the whole of the Portuguese territorial space — mainland Portugal and the Islands. Three different forms were used for recording data — Forms 1, 2 and 3 — in which all establishments and industrial and building companies were surveyed, with any number of employees (even though there were differences in the questions asked, depending on whether they had more or less than five employees).

In 1984, in what was now a completely different economic and political framework, the National Statistical Institute carried out a new Industrial Census. Reflecting the changes that had taken place in 1974, a working party of users was appointed — with representatives from the government, employers' associations and trade union federations — who discussed the project beforehand. The Census also covered mainland Portugal and the Islands and the establishment was used as the unit of observation in the case of the manufacturing industry.

The history of industrial statistics, particularly throughout the twentieth century, clearly mirrors the ostracism to which industry had been condemned and the successive governments' lack of concern about discovering its structure with any real accuracy, measuring the changes that had taken place and correcting situations of disequilibrium. In fact, after the series of failed attempts made before 1957, more recent surveys were conducted within a context of international influence, although this was not always matched by the necessary frequency. For the governments, it seemed that the somewhat inaccurate annual industrial statistics were considered sufficient. Despite their inaccuracies, these statistics nonetheless remained the most complete instrument available.

These statistics will play an important part in this study, since they are the only ones that make it possible to carry out an annual analysis, whilst at the same time having a sufficiently detailed breakdown to allow for an observation of the evolution of the industrial sub-sectors. The Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics), which were first published in 1939 (although publication was immediately interrupted for the 1941-1949 period), also provide information about the manufacturing industry, but their use as a main source is not recommended for two reasons: the data refer to companies and not to establishments, as in the industrial statistics, which makes it impossible to carry out analyses into the average size of these establishments; and the sub-sectors are grouped together on the basis of criteria that change over time, making it difficult to

achieve a breakdown in the statistical series for the desired period <sup>10</sup>. The 1950 publication of these statistics explains the reasons why detailed results did not “come to light” about companies in the period from 1941 to 1949. In the introductory note, it is explained that the comparison between the figures recorded for 1939 and 1940 “resulted in the idea that the numbers relating to the activity of companies were not particularly interesting when observed in consecutive years, or even in separate years”. These arguments are vague and rather unenlightening, but they do advise against using information about a decade that was important for the manufacturing industry, for the summaries that have been made do not make it possible to discern the internal movements of the industrial structure. Nonetheless, in conjunction with the data from the 1957-1959 and 1964 surveys and the 1972 and 1984 censuses, these statistics will be used to criticise the data from the industrial statistics and to complete these when they are lacking in information.

The use of the Estatísticas Industriais (industrial statistics) requires a very careful critical analysis, both because of the volume of information that is contained within them and because of the constant changes in the criteria that were used for selecting the samples and grouping together the published data, as we shall have the chance to show in the next section.

## **2.2 — The Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) and the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) (1943-1989)**

The Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) has contained information on the manufacturing industry since the nineteenth century, namely in relation to the firms paying industrial tax. However, the available data are limited to the number of establishments, the persons employed in some occupations and the occupational associations, but only in 1929 was information provided about production, namely fertiliser and cement. Thereafter, the data cover an increasing number of products and begin to include the number of establishments, employees and the motive power.

In 1943, the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) appeared, which were published until 1989, and the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) began to contain only a summary of some data. From 1990 onwards, and as a consequence of the statistical standardisation resulting from membership of the European Union, the data from the surveys carried out since 1986 are used, and the former Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) are replaced by the Estatísticas

---

<sup>10</sup> For example, in any of the years, they do not make it possible to isolate the production of cork, which is always joined to that of wood and furniture, and in 1982 it includes tobacco with food and beverages.



da Produção Industrial (Industrial Production Statistics) and by the Estatísticas das Empresas — Indústria (Firm Statistics — Industry). In fact, this is a new instrument for data collection, using a different sample and different criteria, which represents an added difficulty for the continued analysis of the previous series<sup>11</sup>. Thus, 1943 and 1989 correspond to the longest possible period for analysing the manufacturing industry on the basis of one single source, namely the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics).

As has already been said, the critical analysis of the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) poses various methodological problems, for it implies a comparison with other sources and a dismantling of the internal process followed in the construction of the respective data. In relation to the first of these two aspects, a comparison is made between these results and those of the 1957-59 Survey, the results of the 1972 and 1984 censuses and those of the Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics). As far as the second aspect is concerned, the various sizes of the statistical groups are analysed in an attempt to give an overall picture of the evolution of the statistics, as well as the alteration in the criteria used over the years. A set of problems are also looked at relating to the definition of the variables, the construction of series, the errors made in calculation and the internal incoherence of the data. Although the reports accompanying the realisation of the surveys were consulted, an analysis also needs to be made of the political guidelines and the correlation of forces between the agents responsible for carrying them out, for these may have influenced the criteria adopted and the actual production of the respective data.

---

<sup>11</sup> Besides using different files for creating the sample (the survey of the former Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) used the licensing of the activity of establishments — from the Ministry of Industry and Energy — whilst the new survey uses the Central File of Companies and Establishments (*Ficheiro Central de Empresas e Estabelecimentos — FCEE*) of the National Statistical Institute), the survey of the former Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) used the establishment as the basis for its survey, administering the questionnaire at all the 11 500 units of the universe contained in its file, covering 154 activities and breaking the results down at the level of administrative districts (*distritos*) and boroughs (*concelhos*), whereas the new survey uses the firm as the basis for its survey, administering the questionnaire to a sample of 26 400 units from a universe of 65 000, covering 328 activities — including mining and quarrying, manufacturing, electricity, gas and water supply and breaking the results down at the level of NUT II, which can be extended to NUT III and the borough (*concelho*) for companies with 20 or more employees.

### — Evolution of the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) and the changes in criteria

The publication of the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) began in 1943 and was intended to systematise the statistical information that was collected each year about the state of industry. It was thought that the number of companies under observation was already sufficient to compile such data. As far as their accuracy was concerned, the results were still somewhat uncertain, although they were considered to be “encouraging” (Estatísticas Industriais, 1943), so that their critical assessment was to be reserved for a future census, which would only take place some fourteen years later. The information gathered was fairly limited, although an attempt was made to provide a breakdown of the data at the level of individual boroughs (*concelhos*) and to carry out a survey at the establishments themselves. The following aspects were covered: establishments, in terms of their activities and motive power; production, covering both products and raw materials; operating machinery, seeking to find out their level of activity; motive power, in terms of both type and potency, and other aspects of a technical nature; personnel, with distinctions being made between the various categories, distinguishing between white-collar workers and manual workers and between permanent and casual workers.

The first two years in which these statistics were published, 1943 and 1944, were still marked by the introduction and refinement of the statistical instruments used, so that the data gathered for these two years reveal a series of gaps that would only be resolved in the next few years. For example, the value of production in escudos was only calculated as from 1945. For reasons that are perfectly understandable in terms of accuracy, and for the purposes of calculation, only the data published after 1945 will be used.

In 1945, except for the value of production, there were no significant alterations in relation to the structure of the information already provided in 1943, although the number of industrial sectors surveyed was larger — 25 sectors including electricity production and distribution. Until 1952, alterations related in particular to the number of industrial sectors covered by the survey, which increased slightly: in 1946-48, 26 sectors were covered; in 1949, 28; and in 1952, 39.

According to suggestions made by the Statistics Committee of the United Nations Economic and Social Council, in 1953, the National Statistical Institute introduced alterations into the statistics of manufacturing industries: electricity ceased to be included and twenty new sectors were taken into consideration. At the same time, in the statistical tables relating to personnel, the extent of the discrimination made between different kinds of employees was reduced and the division into permanent and casual workers was eliminated. In the case of manual workers, however, there was an increase in the distinctions made, distinguishing between those receiving a weekly wage, those receiving a monthly salary and those not receiving any remuneration at all.

This alteration is important, for the industrial structure was dominated by small-sized enterprises with an abundance of family workers who did not receive any periodical payment in monetary terms. At the same time, the situation of personnel employed as piece workers was also taken into account. In 1956, further changes were made in the data relating to personnel, with no distinction being made between paid and unpaid workers in the breakdown by administrative district (*distrito*). Until the end of the 1960s, and reflecting a situation that has implications for this study, there were no significant changes made to the structure of industrial statistics. It should also be added that, in 1960, the number of industrial workers stopped being calculated at 31 December and began to be reckoned in the last complete working week of the same month, whilst the number of industrial sectors being surveyed continued to increase: 73 in 1957 and 119 in 1969. In 1970, the National Statistical Institute considered it appropriate to include an explanatory note on the concepts that were used in order to facilitate the interpretation of results. But, essentially, the structure of the data remained the same until 1971.

In 1971, internationally recommended adjustments (of variables and concepts) were made to industrial statistics. This year also brought an important alteration in the production of industrial statistics: a new questionnaire was adopted, with coverage being extended to include new sectors (more than 40 in 1970) and information being collected directly by the National Statistical Institute, contrary to the procedure followed in previous years when it was commissioned from outside. As well as providing a greater breakdown in terms of industrial sectors, there was also a concern with giving manufacturing industry an autonomous status, so that this began to be published in a separate volume from the extractive industry, electricity and gas. But the scope of these alterations also included the variables that were calculated: gross production value, which until 1970 was calculated by considering intermediate goods in some industries, implying a relative undervaluation of this figure, began to be calculated in a more selective fashion <sup>12</sup> and gross fixed capital formation also now began to be calculated <sup>13</sup>. This statistical structure essentially remained in force until 1989, although there were some alterations made to the manner of publication in

---

<sup>12</sup> Until 1970, the calculation was made by adding together the value of the products produced, the value of electricity sold, the value of the waste products sold and the value of industrial works carried out on behalf of other persons, whereas from 1971 onwards, it began to be calculated by adding together the value of finished products, the value of the fixed capital goods produced for own use, the value of industrial works carried out on behalf of other persons and the value of products in the process of being manufactured at the end of the year, subtracting the value of products in the process of being manufactured at beginning of the year.

<sup>13</sup> Cf. *Estatísticas Industriais* (Industrial Statistics), Vol. II, with a breakdown between new and old, as well as a breakdown by plots of land, buildings, land improvements and other constructions, transport and machinery and other equipment.

1983, 1984 and 1985, with the data being joined together in just one volume. Since 1989, the publications produced by the National Statistical Institute seem to have been brought somewhat closer to the requirements of the non-specialised final consumers and moved away from those of researchers, with there having been substantial alterations in the definition of the variables that made it practically impossible to reconstitute information from the published data in order to include it in continuous series with previous years. Our series therefore ends in 1989.

What is therefore available are forty-five years of data on the manufacturing industry (1945-1989), which have never before been worked upon within this time scale and with this level of breakdown.

### — Definition of the variables and construction of the series

The construction of complete series covering time periods that are as long as possible proves to be a difficult task because of the alterations that were made to the collection and calculation of data. Three sets of variables have therefore been selected that, since they revealed sufficient internal consistency, made it possible to provide a segmented picture by industrial sector of the changes occurring in the manufacturing industry in the second half of the twentieth century. The variables selected are those that are normally used in macroeconomic research: the number of establishments, the number of employees and the gross production value (GPV).

As far as the economic variables were concerned, there was no need to make their values compatible with each other as these were already determined in such a way as to make the calculation possible. In the case of employees, links had to be established between the different breakdowns used over the years, such as permanent and casual workers, paid and unpaid workers and piece workers. Thus, for the period from 1943 to 1952, the following aggregation formula was used:

$$L = A1 + A2 + B1 + B2 + C$$

where:

L = total no. of employees

A1 = technical staff (administrative + technical + office staff)

A2 = foremen, charge-hands and supervisors

B1 = workmen

B2 = casual workers (after 1944, this included manual workers and other wage earners)

C = other employees and non-specified wage-earners

The sum of A1 and A2 provides what is normally referred to in statistics as employees, whilst adding B1 to B2 provides the figure for wage-earners. On the other hand, the figure resulting from the difference between L and B2 provides the total number of permanent workers (sum of A1, A2, B1 and C). As from 1952, no distinction was made between permanent and casual workers, although a distinction was now made between paid and unpaid workers.

The following formula shows the composition of employees in the period from 1953 to 1957:

$$L = A1 + A2 + B1 + B2 + C$$

where:

L = total no. of employees

A1 = paid technical, administrative and office staff

A2 = unpaid technical, administrative and office staff

B1 = paid manual workers

B2 = unpaid manual workers

C = piece workers

### **— Errors in calculations and solutions for the internal incoherence of the data**

The two most frequent levels of breakdown in the data that we have been analysing are the sector of economic activity and the administrative district. In order to detect signs of internal incoherence in the data and with the aim of assessing the consistency of the figures obtained, a battery of tests was undertaken starting from two breakdowns. At this level, two types of error were detected in several cases: the values for mainland Portugal do not correspond to the sum of the districts and the values of the total amounts are different from those of the sum of the economic activities. Sometimes, this is clearly the result of errors in the calculation of the totals, but in other cases it is due to the use of different instruments for the calculation of the totals and the data of the part scores. For example, in a given year, it is known that the number of establishments in mainland Portugal has one particular value, but in relation to their distribution by districts, the data are only known for some of these. In such cases, when these are not provided for in the calculation, a new undifferentiated category has to be constructed that corresponds to the other districts. The same thing happens in relation to the Classification of Economic Activities

(*Classificação das Actividades Económicas — CAE*). There are similarly situations in which the sum of the parts is greater than the figure calculated for the mainland. In any case, in relation to the variables for the number of establishments, the number of employees and the gross production value, the calculations made for all the years in the 1945-1989 period show that the greatest difference in relation to the value calculated for the mainland is never more than 5 %, and, furthermore, this only happens in some years (for example, in relation to the number of establishments, in 1945 and 1988). In view of these figures, and because the main reason for using these data is to analyse both regional differences and the differences between the sectors of economic activity in relation to the development of the manufacturing industry, it was decided that the figures for the separate parts (districts and sectors of activity) should be used, with the percentage figures then being calculated in relation to their sum total.

### — Correction of the series

In 1945, Portugal was still essentially a rural country with a craft-based industry shaped in accordance with this particular context. Apart from the heavy share of agriculture in the country in this year, the excessive number of food establishments, more than 80 %, clearly reflects the backward nature of the manufacturing industry, especially if we take into account that the vast majority of such establishments were connected with the milling of flour (59.8 % in total) and that these consisted essentially of small local water-mills and wind-mills. After these had been left out of the calculations in 1951-54, there was then a long period (from 1955 to 1970) when the share of these mills increased in the statistics to values that amounted to as much as 86 % in 1962. The fact that these high scores continued until the beginning of the 1970s may be interpreted as an indicator of the predominance of craft-based production units in an industrial structure that was already beginning to show signs of wanting to modernise in other industrial sectors. Only after 1970 does the food sector stop provoking disequilibrium in the structure of the statistical data <sup>14</sup>. The analysis of the evolution of establishments in the remaining industrial sectors, within a structure that was unbalanced by the number of flour mills, is therefore made very difficult, so that it was decided to remove these from the food industry, all the more so because the statistics are incomplete in relation to the number of employees and production. Similarly, in 1969 and 1970, olive-oil presses were included, although these were essentially craft-based and mostly formed part of a logic of self-consumption (sometimes being used in a 'communal' fashion) in the villages to the north of the River Tagus, which helps to distort the structure in those years, since they

---

<sup>14</sup> Cf. Lisboa, 1998.

represent 66 % and 64 % of the total number of establishments <sup>15</sup>. Even though it should be remembered how underdeveloped the manufacturing industry of this food sub-sector was, it was decided not to consider it in the calculations of the series.

Other adjustments were also made in the sub-sectors, in order to construct the most extensive and homogeneous series possible. The criterion adopted consisted of grouping together the sub-sectors throughout the period in accordance with their most up-to-date classification <sup>16</sup>.

### — The particular cases

From 1945 to 1952, the data for the manufacturing industry included the production and sale of electricity, but the calculation was made in a different way: the total number of employees working in the sector in mainland Portugal includes both public service companies and distribution companies, whilst the data for the districts only include public service companies. In the following years, until 1989, electricity began to be considered separately from the manufacturing industry. Thus, it was decided to remove electricity for the period from 1945 to 1952, in order to construct a homogeneous series until 1989.

For some years and for certain industries, the data were recorded by borough, or by industrial centres (as they were called from 1960 to 1971), where the establishments were, and not by district, as was the case from 1971 onwards. For example, in 1945, the fish canning industry was recorded in the figures for Lagos, Portimão, Olhão, Vila Real de Santo António,

---

<sup>15</sup> Cf. Lisboa, 1998.

<sup>16</sup> The clarifying and refining of olive-oil and other edible oils and animal feeds, which until 1960 were classified under chemicals and chemical products, were considered thereafter to be food products. Until 1970, alcohol production was given the name of *industrial* and appeared under chemical products. From this year onwards, it was referred to as *ethyl* alcohol and included under beverages. Its classification was standardised with its inclusion under beverages. Until 1976, metal furniture was grouped together with wooden furniture. In 1977 and the following years, it was included under metal products. Its classification was standardised with its inclusion under metal products. In 1961, scales and weighing apparatus were included under other industries, but thereafter this item was classified under non-electrical machinery. Ice, which between 1961 and 1975 was included under other industries, was moved to food products. Wiredrawing, which was included under the manufacture of basic metals from 1961 to 1975, was moved to metal products. Finally umbrellas and sunshades, which has been included under clothing until 1975, were moved to other manufacturing industries.

Peniche and Matosinhos. In these cases, the data have been grouped by their respective districts, in order to be able to compare them with the other years in the series.

In 1948 and 1950, the totals of sausage-making establishments and confectioneries included those of both an industrial and of a home-production type, even though to judge by the data from both previous years and later years this does not seem to have significantly affected the results. In 1949, the same problem was noted in relation to sausage-making establishments, whilst there is no such reference made for confectioneries (because of deficiencies occurring in the preparation of the tables). In 1951, the same aggregation occurs in relation to sausage-making and textiles made of cotton and other fibres (in which the manufacturing sector was said to be 'conditioned') and there is no reference made for wheat flour-milling (again because of deficiencies occurring in the preparation of the tables). In 1953 and 1954, home-production establishments and industrial factories were joined together in the case of sausage-making and meat preservation, as well as for textiles made of cotton and other fibres. In 1954, such aggregation only occurred in the case of cotton textiles.

In 1950, 1951 and 1952, the figures relating to the number of rubber factories do not include a number of units as these did not possess certain equipment (mixers). Thus, in 1950, in addition to the 29 factories recorded in the statistics, a further 8 were omitted, located in Lisbon (2), Castelo de Vide (1), Porto (4) and Vila Nova de Gaia (1). In 1951, in addition to the 31 recorded, a further 11 were left out, located in Lisbon (2) Castelo de Vide (1), Porto (4) and Vila Nova de Gaia (4). In 1952, in the case of rubber, in addition to the 34 factories recorded, 13 were not mentioned, located in Lisbon (2), Portalegre (1) and Porto (10). In this same year, in the case of glass manufacturing, in addition to the 33 factories included, a further 22 were left out, in Aveiro (1), Leiria (7), Lisbon (6) and Porto (7), as they did not have melting furnaces and used glass tubes as their raw material. In the same year, as well as in 1953 and 1954, because of a deficiency in the recording procedure, wheat flour-milling was not included. In 1953 and 1954, the manufacture of rubber articles recorded a score of 12 factories less — in Lisbon (2), Portalegre (1) and Porto (9) — again because they did not have mixers. In 1955, 1956 and 1957, for the same reasons, the manufacture of rubber articles recorded a score of 7 factories less — Lisbon (2) and Porto (5). In this latter year, 11 factories were not recorded in the manufacture of glass and glass articles, as they did not have melting furnaces — Leiria (4), Lisbon (5) and Porto (2).

In 1964, in the case of rubber articles, the data relating to gross production value were not broken down for Funchal and Ponta Delgada. However, if we compare these results with other years, it can be seen that the importance of these districts is quite limited and that they do not affect the analyses made in relation to mainland Portugal.



### 2.3 — The Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics) (1947-1993)

Using various sources, it is possible to construct series on companies covering fifty-six years (1947-1993), a period that is sufficiently broad to allow for a clear understanding of the dynamics of Portuguese companies after the Second World War. The homogenisation of the series for the highest possible number of variables, based on the multiple grids for data collection that were considered necessary, means that all the items have to be compared year by year, as well as implying a critical analysis of the sources, in which an attempt is made to reconstruct the legal processes and constraints used in the production of the data.

Essentially, two sources were used: the Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics) and the Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras (Monetary and Financial Statistics). The first of these began to be published in 1939, but they contain more complete information about the formation and dissolution of companies from 1955 to 1985. They were published a year after the second set of statistics (for example, the company statistics published data from 1974 in March 1976, whereas the monetary and financial statistics were published in June 1975). They are also more precise than the second set of statistics, in so far as they contain all the already corrected data, for the monetary and financial statistics are sometimes incomplete in relation to newly-formed companies in certain cases, when data were not collected in time to be included in the publication. However, the differences are not very significant<sup>17</sup>, so that it is possible to use either of the series.

The Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras (Monetary and Financial Statistics), as they are known nowadays, were derived from the Situação Bancária (Banking Situation), which was published for the first time in 1923 through the Ministry of Finance and already contained data from 1920 and 1922 on banks, savings banks and credit companies, and kept the same name until 1947, when they began to be published by the National Statistical Institute under the name of Estatísticas Financeiras (Financial Statistics). Unlike earlier publications, they included data about companies other than just credit societies, including agricultural, industrial and commercial companies and other services. In 1969, the Financial Statistics were divided into two publications: the Estatísticas das Finanças Públicas (Public Finance Statistics) and the Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras (Monetary and Financial Statistics), which have continued in this way until the present day. The data contained in this publication are very similar to those collected through the

---

<sup>17</sup> In mainland Portugal, in relation to formed companies, the differences in 1975, 1976, 1977, 1978, 1980, 1981, 1982, 1983, 1984 and 1985 were respectively: 2 (out of 4739), 1 (6554), 2 (8614), 1 (7804), 6 (7730), 3 (9895), 4 (9452), 1 (6520), 1 (7035) and 4 (8537). In the case of dissolved companies, there were only differences in 1975 and 1981, which were: 1 (out of 673) and 1 (979).

company statistics, but from 1947 to 1958 they contained information on the formation and dissolution of companies, which continued after 1985. However, there is no indication given of the companies by industrial sectors, so that it was decided to use them only in relation to company formation and dissolution, with the company statistics being used for the other indicators, even though these do not provide what would be the most desirable level of breakdown for the different activities<sup>18</sup>.

Another aspect which is worthy of some critical attention has to do with the nature of the variables used in the statistics. First of all, the breakdown obtained in the manufacturing industry does not reach the same level as the one which is to be found in the industrial statistics, with the consequent loss of the particular dynamic features inherent in the different activities.

Secondly, it should be borne in mind that the statistics presented here refer to companies and not enterprises or establishments. In fact, they cover different social and economic universes and, although this does not present any obstacle for the analysis of the renewal of the industrial structure and its dynamism, it does, however, make it difficult to make more detailed comparisons with the data of the industrial statistics.

Finally, a reference should be made to what is meant by the terms formation and dissolution of companies. The formation of a company need not refer to the actual formation of a new one: it may represent the change from one form of company to another one — involving a change in, or maintaining, its legal nature — or it may even be the result of a merger between several companies. In the same way, dissolution may similarly not represent a case of bankruptcy, but may be a change to another form of company.

---

<sup>18</sup> The data relating to existing companies will only be used until 1982, for in 1983 alterations were made to their calculations, which introduced a bias into the series: in 1983 and 1984, the data published for mainland Portugal refer to companies from group A of the industrial tax, whilst in the autonomous regions of Madeira and the Azores, they included companies from groups A and B; in 1985, the last year of publication of the Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics), the data are the result of a survey, which in mainland Portugal covered only a “panel of companies that, because of their nature, [...] were considered to be fundamental, in particular taking into account the safeguarding of the needs of the National Accounts”, whilst, in the islands, the questionnaire was administered exhaustively to all companies

## **2.4 — Validation of the data: comparative analysis of the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) with the survey of 1957-1959, the censuses of 1972 and 1984 and the Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics)**

Comparing the data from the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) with those of the 1957-59 survey, it can be seen that there are significant differences in only a few sectors and, in such cases, this is due more to the criteria used for grouping together the activities in the sector than to actual alterations resulting from the structure itself. For example, the industrial statistics overvalue textiles and undervalue clothing, since most of the companies in this sub-sector are included in the figures for textiles in general. This is particularly visible in relation to the number of establishments and employees, which are the indicators that most reveal the importance of small clothing production units. Also in the case of wood, furniture and cork there are differences connected with the way in which activities are joined together, although, as a whole, the figures are largely equal to one another. As far as the other sectors are concerned, there are no great differences, except in chemicals (overvalued in the industrial statistics) and in metal products (undervalued).

The 1971-72 Industrial Census was the first complete compilation of statistics about the manufacturing industry made in the twentieth century, so that its comparison with the industrial statistics is important for assessing the accuracy of the data obtained in the latter series. The same phenomenon is repeated in relation to textiles and clothing and food is now relatively overvalued in the indicators relating to employees and production; the other sectors do not present any differences in relation to the previous comparison. It should, however, be noted that metal products continue to be undervalued in the industrial statistics.

The results of the comparison with the data of the 1984 census do not reveal any significant alterations in relation to the previous census, except for the even higher undervaluation of metal products (for all indicators) and food, wood and furniture (for employees and production). The differences noted in textiles, chemicals and petroleum and coal must be interpreted as deficiencies in the census itself, as can be seen from the analysis of the data of the company statistics.

This first comparative analysis between sources, at three separate stages during the selected period, highlights the fact that there is a relative undervaluation of metal products in the industrial statistics. This fact must be taken into consideration in any analysis that is made of the data <sup>19</sup>.

---

<sup>19</sup> Cf. Lisboa, 1998; the breakdown by sub-sectors allows for a more precise criticism of this undervaluation.

In view of the way in which the data are broken down, the Company Statistics only allow for a comparison of the indicators relating to employees and production. Immediately, observation of these data reveals that some sectors are not included in the industrial statistics (as is the case, for example, with non-electrical machinery, which only first began to be recorded in 1961), thus confirming the observation made by [Moura, 1957:30](#) about the undervaluation of metal manufacturing industries, as can be seen if we extend the comparison to other metal products and electrical machinery. However, in the other sectors, no significant alterations were noted. As the industrial statistics gradually begin to include more activities, especially after 1971, the differences with the company statistics become increasingly insignificant.

## 2.5 — Industrial production indices

The absence of statistics on industrial production, relating to homogeneous series covering a broader period than the one already mentioned for the [Estatísticas Industriais](#) (Industrial Statistics), represents a limitation for the analysis of the evolution of the industrial structure. Some authors, such as [Reis, 1986](#), [Lains, 1990](#), [Lains, 1992](#) and [Baptista et alii, 1972](#), resort to proxy variables generally related to the external trade of raw materials and products, and construct industrial production indices covering the period from 1851 to 1958. From 1976 onwards, the National Statistical Institute began to publish industrial production indices covering the last three decades of the twentieth century.

However, the fact that the indices were constructed on the basis of data drawn from different sources, as well as differences in regard to the aggregation of activities, the variables used and the criteria followed for weighting, serves as a warning that their fallibility and discontinuous nature over time should always be borne in mind.

There now follows a brief synthesis containing some information that might help to explain the criteria used in the construction of the indices.

The index proposed by Pedro Lains for the period from 1851 to 1914 (with the year 1900 serving as the base) corresponds to the extension of another index drawn up by Jaime Reis for the years from 1870 to 1914, so that they should be analysed together. Beginning in 1851, the series was interrupted in 1852-1852, 1857-1860 and 1862-1864. It includes canned fish, tobacco, woollen products, cotton textiles, linen textiles, cork, paper and metals. In each industry specific

samples are chosen in accordance with their characteristics, and different criteria are used for the weighting of production <sup>20</sup>.

The industrial production index constructed by Dina Baptista, Carlos Martins, Maximiano Pinheiro and Jaime Reis covers the period from 1910 to 1958 (with 1958 as the base year) and, in relation to the previous index, covers a much broader group of industries, namely: food products, beverages, textiles, clothing and footwear, leather, wood, cork and furniture, paper, printing, basic chemical products, non-metallic mineral products, electrical machinery and equipment and transport equipment. The main sources used are the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics), the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) and the Industrial Survey of 1957-1959. However, for the period prior to the publication of the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics), or whenever these statistics do not have sufficient data for calculating production, use is made of external trade or other forms that are considered pertinent for the product in question. By way of example, two cases are mentioned here: firstly, the construction of non-electrical machinery, the calculation of which is based on the data from the imports of basic metal products that are used as the raw material, since exports are not relevant; and, secondly, transport material, which includes shipbuilding and the repair of vehicles with or without an engine. In order to estimate the figures for boatbuilding, the data from the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) are used, relating to the total tonnage of boats registered at the ports of mainland Portugal. As far as the repair of vehicles is concerned, use is made of the indicator of the number of vehicles existing in each year and registered at the Directorate-General for Road Traffic Services (*Direcção-Geral dos Serviços de Viação*).

From 1976 onwards, the National Statistical Institute began to publish annual and monthly industrial production indices, with data that was retrospective until 1970. Here only the annual indices are presented. The first series covers the period from 1970 to 1985 (with 1970 as the base year) and has a higher level of breakdown than earlier indices. It is considered to represent an overall value for the manufacturing industry, as well as for food products, beverages, tobacco,

---

<sup>20</sup> Some examples show the differences in the criteria used for calculations: wool production is estimated in the following way: production = 1.83 x the value of imported raw wool + 1.19 of the value of imported wool yarn + 0.6 x (2500 - the weight of exported washed wool - 0.5 x the weight of exported unwashed wool); in the case of cotton textiles, production is given by the formula: 2.1 x the value of raw cotton + 1.1 x the value of imported cotton yarn including customs duties; in the case of iron and steel, production is calculated through the formula: 2.8 x (the value of crude iron and iron products + the value of the imports of crude steel and steel products + the value of the imports of other crude metals and metals products); in the case of cork, production = the total value of cork exports + 0.25 x 0.40 x the weight of exported cork x the price of cork stoppers.

textiles, paper, publishing, petroleum and coal, chemical products, rubber, plastic products, non-metallic mineral products, base metallurgy, metal products, transport equipment, sundry products and, now broken down separately, clothing, leather, footwear, wood, furniture, non-electrical machinery and electrical machinery and equipment.

The data from the monthly survey of industry that are used as the basis for the calculations are complemented by the data from additional surveys that make it possible to widen the basic coverage of the sample. The indices are calculated on the basis of an index of quantities, weighted according to the values of production in the base year. In the successive aggregations, the CVA (census value added, which is the same as the gross production value minus the materials and energy consumed) is used. Whenever quantitative series are not available, production values are calculated deflated by a price index and, whenever this latter index is not available, simple indices are constructed from the number of hours worked, not corrected by productivity.

In 1986, there was a change in the base year, which became 1980, with a series being constructed from 1980 to 1989. Some alterations were introduced in order to broaden the basic coverage (changing from 63% of the CVA in the base year of 1970 to 90% of GVAfc<sup>21</sup> in the base year of 1980) and to increase the number of series and products. In the successive aggregations, the GVAcf began to be used instead of the CVA.

In 1990, there was another change in the base year to 1985 and the period considered was from 1985 to 1993. The number of series constructed increased, as well as the number of products per aggregation. As far as the weighting systems were concerned, only the GVAcf was now used and, whenever no data were available, the gross production value was used.

In 1994, the base year changed yet again to 1990, and the series now covered the years from 1990 to 1998. The changes were introduced in order to bring this statistical instrument into line with Community recommendations, broadening and improving the data collection base and altering the surveys in order to embody what the National Statistical Office called the *new integrated system for industrial surveys*.

---

<sup>21</sup> Gross value added at factor cost in the base year, which is calculated from the gross production value minus intermediate expenditure plus production subsidies minus indirect taxes.

### 3 — Presentation and analysis of the data

There now follows a brief analysis of the data relating to the sources mentioned earlier. In the case of the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) and the industrial production indices, there is an overlapping of a part of the periods covered by the two sources. Thus, in the first case, comments are directed towards the analysis of the relative importance of the industries within the structure and, in the second case, towards the evolution in the periods considered in each index.

#### 3.1 — The data of the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics)

Seven years (1945, 1953, 1959, 1966, 1973, 1980 and 1989) were chosen to characterise the evolution of the structure of the Portuguese manufacturing industry.

##### 1945-1953

The first snapshot to give an idea of the backwardness of Portuguese industry could have been taken immediately after the end of the Second World War. Although the flour-mills had been removed from the statistics, food still accounted for 54 % of establishments and 25 % of employees in 1945. Next came textiles (20 %), cork (13 %), leather (5 %), non-metallic minerals (3 %), chemicals (2 %), paper (1.4 %) and, with scores of less than 1 %, beverages, tobacco and rubber. If we take the number of employees as an indicator, except for non-metallic minerals, the alterations in the ranking of the shares of the different sectors are relatively insignificant. Production values only appeared in 1953, and now textiles and food represented 60% of production (31.5 % and 28.7 %). After this came chemicals (12 %), non-metallic minerals (6 %), tobacco (6 %), leather (3 %) and paper (2 %). With values of less than 2% were rubber, base metallurgy, electrical equipment, metal products, beverages, plastic products, clothing and wood and furniture. Except for chemicals, where it is possible to detect the effects of industrial concentration, with the appearance of what, at that time, essentially amounted to modern capital-intensive companies, there were few alterations in the structure in relation to 1945.

In short, at the beginning of the period after the Second World War, the structure is clearly dominated by industries such as textiles, food and cork. Except for chemicals, the industries that might have been considered 'high-tech' at that time, such as metallurgy, metal products, non-electrical machinery and equipment and electrical equipment were still relatively insignificant. In the case of non-electrical machinery and equipment, for example, there are not even any statistical

values recorded until 1962<sup>22</sup> and, as far as the other sectors are concerned, when they were all added together in 1953, they represented 6.3 % of establishments, 5.6 % of employees and 4.5 % of the volume of sales. In other words, besides the fact of their shares in the structure being low, it can also be seen that these companies were more labour-intensive than capital-intensive.

## 1959

In comparison with the previous period, food (in terms of establishments) and textiles (in terms of employees) continued to be the dominant industries in the overall industrial structure. After this came non-metallic minerals, chemicals and cork. In terms of production value, textiles<sup>23</sup> had the greatest share, followed by food, chemicals and cork. In the case of textiles, the difference between the shares of employees, establishments and volume of sales continues to show that these companies were more labour-intensive than capital-intensive, so that, if any strengthening of this industrial sector is to be noted from 1945 to 1958, this was largely achieved at the expense of labour-intensive companies<sup>24</sup>.

## 1966

Beginning with establishments, food now has the largest share, followed by textiles, cork, non-metallic minerals, chemicals, leather, paper, rubber and plastic products. The remaining industries have scores of less than 2 %. As for employees, the situation remained similar to that of 1959.

In the case of gross production value, textiles continued to have the largest share, followed by food, chemicals, non-metallic minerals, paper and cork. There was, however, an increase in the share of base metallurgy in the structure. Nonetheless, with the exception of chemicals, which

---

<sup>22</sup> In the Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics), non-electrical machinery were recorded since 1939, but, in 1963, they still only represented 2.9% of employees and 1.6% of production in the manufacturing industry.

<sup>23</sup> As was said in the criticism of the sources, textiles should be considered to also include most of the clothing section, so that the data compiled should be relativised.

<sup>24</sup> Even the Industrial Survey of 1957-1959 shows that 20.1% of the labour force worked in textiles, which, besides being the highest value of the whole of the manufacturing industry, is higher than the 17.3% share of the production value.



maintained its 1959 share, the group of more advanced industries for the time continued to have modest shares in each of the indicators: the group composed of electrical and non-electrical machinery and equipment and metal products represented 2.6 % of establishments, 4.2 % of employees and 3.4 % of gross production value.

The data that have been analysed show that until the mid-1960s, the industrial structure did not change as much as might have been expected. Textiles continued to be the predominant industry and electrical and non-electrical machinery and equipment continued to be of little significance.

## 1973

The data for 1973 allow for a preliminary assessment of the previous cycle of growth. Had the Portuguese manufacturing industry as a whole “taken off” from its traditional ways during the 1960s ? Even though they are included in the same cycle of growth, the first three years of the 1970s are already highlighted by various authors as representing a period when there was a definite slowing down in the rate of growth, partly as a result of the increased competition from abroad <sup>25</sup>.

1973 was also the year that marked a political turning point in Portugal, the consequences of which in terms of industrial development are still relatively unknown. Data show that the number of food establishments continued to be twice that of textiles (24 % as opposed to 10 %), but now wood and furniture appeared in second place (20 %) <sup>26</sup>. After this came non-metallic minerals (9 %), publishing and printing (7 %), chemicals (5 %), cork (4 %), metal products (4 %), footwear (4 %), clothing (2 %) and base metallurgy (2 %)

As far as employees were concerned, textiles had now reached 23 %, twice as much as the share of food (12 %), which seemed to have lost some importance, just like non-metallic minerals (9 %). Wood and furniture contributed 7 % to the total, followed by electrical material (5 %),

---

<sup>25</sup> See Confraria, 1995 and Lopes, 1996.

<sup>26</sup> As far as the statistics in general were concerned, it can be seen that in 1971 there were alterations in the production of the Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics), which made it difficult to make longitudinal comparisons with the values of previous years. Thus, the shares of the different sectors in 1973 must only be compared with those of 1966 at the level of their relative positions. In relation to the food sector, under analysis here, it must be stressed that its companies were only accounted for in a more systematic manner from 1971 onwards.

chemicals (5 %), metal products (5 %), publishing and printing (4 %), cork (3 %), base metallurgy (3 %), non-electrical machinery and equipment (2 %) and plastic products (2 %).

Gross production value also highlighted the primacy of food (19 %) and textiles (17 %), followed by chemicals (10 %), transport equipment (8 %), non-metallic minerals (5 %), base metallurgy, wood and furniture and electrical machinery and equipment, all of which scored 4 %, and publishing and printing, cork, paper and non-electrical machinery and equipment, all of which scored less than 4 %.

There were some improvements noted in relation to the previous period, but these were still relatively insignificant. Industries such as electrical machinery and equipment and metal products already represented 5 % of establishments, 12 % of employees and 10 % of gross production value. Clothing and footwear also had significant values at the level of capital and labour intensification, since the share in terms of the number of establishments had decreased, whilst the other indicators had not done so.

Overall, it is possible to make a preliminary assessment of the period from 1945 to 1973, both in terms of those situations that had remained the same and those that had changed within the industrial structure. There was clearly a growing predominance of textiles and a maintenance of the importance of food. More than anything, the 1960s was the decade of textiles. In relation to changes, two apparently contradictory phenomena should be noted in terms of the modernisation of the industrial structure. On the one hand, there was a clear strengthening of the shares of industries such as chemicals (throughout the 1960s and the beginning of the 1970s), and, albeit somewhat more slowly, of machinery, electrical machinery and equipment, metal products and base metallurgy (especially at the beginning of the 1970s). On the other hand, there was also a growth in the share of industries such as non-metallic minerals and wood furniture. A major contribution was certainly made towards the growth of these industries, as well as towards the growth of a part of base metallurgy, by the 'boom' in the building industry throughout the 1960s, making these industries particularly sensitive to the (equally speculative) movements that accompanied their activity during this period. Although those industries that were reliant on more advanced technology also increased their share during this period, they still remained in a minority in the industrial structure as a whole <sup>27</sup>.

---

<sup>27</sup> When the concepts of 'advanced technology' or 'high technology' are used in contrast to 'traditional' or more 'backward' technology, this is intended to mean that there is an international scale of technological development for each period which goes beyond the internal dynamics of each specific economic activity. It should be borne in mind that within an industrial sector occupying a low position on the scale there are companies that may use the most advanced technology for this sector. This does not, however, invalidate the fact that, overall, in relation to other sectors, these sectors continue to be less advanced.

## 1980

By 1980, Portuguese manufacturing industry had already begun to take stock of the profound alterations that had been introduced in the second half of the previous decade. The data revealed significant alterations in the structure, since the nationalisations carried out in 1975 had affected the large-sized companies in particular (Viegas, 1996).

In comparison with the 1973 data, no significant differences were noted in the shares of the number of establishments in the different industrial sectors. In the case of the technologically more advanced industries, there was even a slight increase to be noted in their share. As far as employees were concerned, their relative position in the structure did not undergo any notable changes <sup>28</sup>. The share of non-electrical machinery and equipment increased from 2 % to 3.2 %, as did that of metal products from 5.2 % to 5.9 %, whereas the shares of chemicals and electrical machinery and equipment remained unchanged at 5.3 % and 4.5 % respectively. Clearly these changes are not particularly significant in numerical terms, the amplitude of which may be covered by the actual margin of error of the official statistics, so that it may be somewhat rash to attempt to draw any conclusions as to their increase solely on the basis of these observations, but everything would seem to indicate that they reveal a definite change in the industrial structure.

## 1989

The 1980s were marked by Portugal's accession to the EEC. Although a part of the economy was still seeking to adapt to the new conditions presented by the opening up of the economy in 1974 and the privatisations at the beginning of the 1980s, the basic context within which industry had to operate was that of a European market open to competition with companies that were better equipped in technological and organisational terms than the Portuguese ones. It is clear that things can change significantly in the space of ten years.

As far as the indicator of the number of establishments was concerned, the 1989 industrial structure did not present any significant alterations in comparison with 1980 (although there was a slight increase in clothing, footwear, plastic products and metal and electrical industries), the same thing happening with the number of employees (although it should be noted that, except in the case of transport, there was a decrease in the share of the technologically more developed industries, whereas, amongst the traditional industries there was a significant increase only in the

---

<sup>28</sup> Textiles continued to have the largest share with 21%, even though this share had fallen in relation to 1973 (23%).

cases of clothing and footwear). In relation to gross production value, the structure also remained the same.

In short, in comparison with 1980, the industrial structure did not undergo any great changes, except in the paper (pulp) and transport equipment industries<sup>29</sup>. However, there was greater specialisation in highly labour-intensive industries such as textiles, footwear and clothing.

### **3.2 — The data of the Estatísticas das Sociedades (Company Statistics)**

The major periods of renewal in the industrial structure in the second half of the twentieth century were the 1970s and 1980s. In the 1950s and 1960s, changes took place more slowly.

The political climate in the 1950s initially favoured the formation of small-sized companies, but later in the 1960s, the average size rose considerably to limits that were difficult to assess, even though it is known that the industrial conditioning law protected the already existing large companies against the appearance of competitors. In the 1970s and 1980s, now freed from earlier restrictions, the renewal of the industrial fabric based on the formation of small companies was quite extensive.

However, the intensification of this process of renewal after the 1970s, when seen only from the viewpoint of the manufacturing industry, was less significant than it was in the case of commerce and services. Similarly, in the case of building and public works, there was less dynamism in the formation of companies, despite the 'knock-on effect' that some authors attribute to this industry.

The relative loss of importance experienced by the manufacturing industry at the level of company formation may not represent a sign of backwardness if, for example, those that survived increased in size. However, the Portuguese case shows a poor tendency towards forming the type of industrial dynasties that sustain such growth (Lisboa, 1998).

In Portugal, after the 1970s, industry was freed from various political and economic constraints and there was a 'boom' in company formation. It was as if the industrial model that had previously been followed ran counter to its development and finally, in a favourable context, the true nature of the industry might be expressed by its structural characteristics at this stage of development. It was difficult to conceive of a forward thrust based on a 'controlled model' of companies that tended to be dissolved at the end of one or two generations.

---

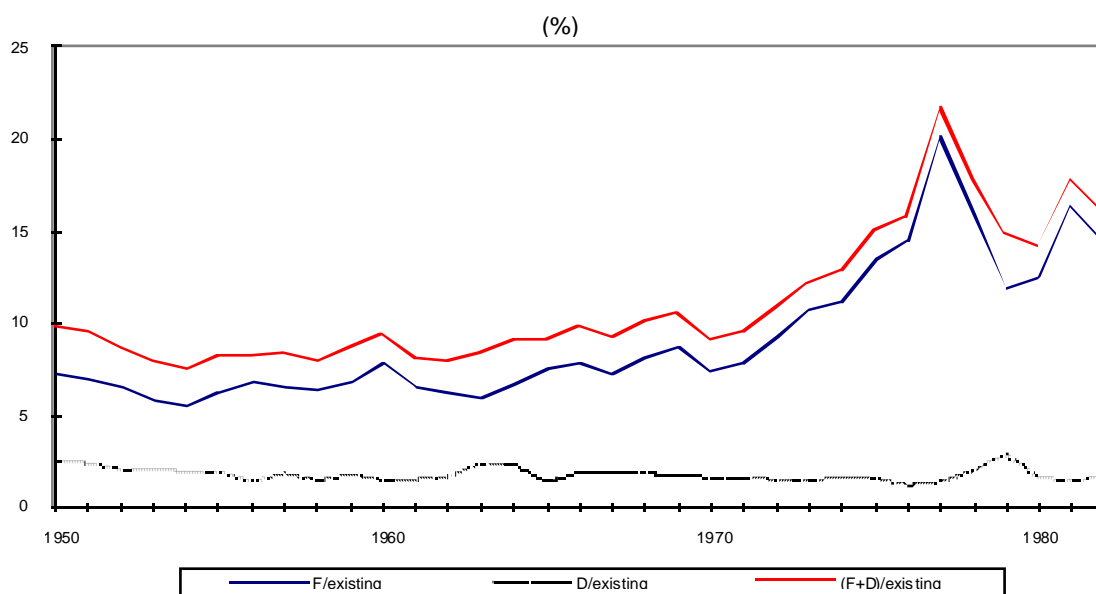
<sup>29</sup> In the case of the increase in the share of paper and transport equipment, attention should be paid to the role of the multinational companies that produce for export purposes.

### Graph 5DA — Indicators of turbulence in the manufacturing industry 1950-1982

Source — Lisboa, 1998: 264.

F — newly-formed companies

D — dissolved companies



An analysis of the sub-sectors of the Portuguese manufacturing industry reveals that both the turbulence and fixing of companies were to be noted much more acutely in the textile — clothing — footwear — leather, wood — cork — furniture and metal products — machinery and equipment — transport equipment groups, so that these sectors were the ones that most contributed towards the renewal of the industrial structure.

### 3.3 — The data of the industrial production indices

The following comments refer to the period considered for each index.

### **1851-1914**

Canned fish and metal products are the industries that grew most during this period. After a period of relative decline from 1851 to 1870 (Lains, 1990), woollen products grew considerably over the following decades. The production of cotton textiles, however, grew until the end of the century and then decreased in the following years. Paper and cork only increased their production significantly from the 1880s onwards.

### **1910-1958**

During this period, there was a significant increase in production in several industries, most notably non-metallic minerals, textiles, beverages, leather, basic chemicals, paper, and, in the last two decades of this period, electrical machinery and equipment.

### **1970-1985**

In view of the overall growth in the production of the manufacturing industry, which was more notable in the 1980s, the industries that showed the highest level of growth were footwear, clothing, electrical machinery and equipment, paper, plastic products, beverages, non-metallic minerals, chemicals and non-electrical machinery. Amongst the other industries, attention should be drawn to the decline in the production of transport equipment.

### **1980-1989**

In relation to the series analysed earlier, the most notable aspect in this new period was the decline in production in clothing, electrical machinery and equipment and wood.

### **1985-1993**

From 1990 to 1993, the production index of the manufacturing industry shows a fall in production in almost all industries, except for non-metallic minerals and wood. Textiles, rubber,

chemicals, leather, non-electrical machinery, clothing and transport equipment are the industries that recorded the sharpest fall.

## 1990-1998

After 1993, the overall framework was one of a certain recovery in the production of the manufacturing industry. Such recovery was most notable in the industries of rubber, non-ferrous metals, electrical machinery and equipment, metal products, petroleum and coal, plastic products, wood, paper, base metallurgy, beverages and food. The other industries seem to show greater difficulty in recovering.

## Bibliography

### 1 — Statistics on the manufacturing industry

Banco de Portugal (Bank of Portugal) — Relatório do Conselho de Administração. 1969-1994.

Centro de Estudos e de Planeamento (Centre of Studies and Planning) — Índices de Produção Industrial.

Imprensa Nacional (National Stationery Office) — Situação Bancária. 1920-1946.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Estatísticas Industriais. 1943-1989.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Estatísticas da Produção Industrial. 1990-1998.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Estatísticas das Empresas — Indústria. 1990-1998.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Estatísticas Financeiras. 1947-1968.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras. 1969-1993.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Estatísticas das Sociedades. 1939-1985.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Inquérito Industrial. 1957-1959.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Recenseamento Industrial. 1972.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — II Recenseamento Industrial. 1984.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Boletim Mensal das Estatísticas Industriais.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Índices de Produção Industrial. 1976-1999.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Anuário Estatístico de Portugal.

Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) — Inquérito Trimestral de Conjuntura à Indústria Transformadora.

European Commission — Panorama of EU Industry 94. 1994.

Ministério da Indústria e Energia (Ministry of Industry and Energy) — PEDIP - Relatório de Execução (1988-1992). 3 volumes.

Ministério para a Qualificação e Emprego (Ministry for Qualification and Employment) — Quadros de Pessoal. 1986-1994.

OECD — Main Economic indicators — Historical Statistics, 1960-1979. Paris: OCDE, 1980.

OECD — Main Economic indicators. Paris: OCDE, 1990.

OCDE — Études Économiques de l'OCDE 1993-1994, Portugal. Paris: OCDE, 1994.

I Plano de Fomento (1953-1958)

II Plano de Fomento (1958-1964)

Plano Intercalar de Fomento (1965-1967)

III Plano de Fomento (1968-1973)

## 2 — Secondary sources

ALVES, Jorge — O emergir das associações industriais no Porto (meados do século XIX). Análise Social, no. 136-137, 1996.



BAPTISTA, Dina; MARTINS, Carlos; PINHEIRO, Maximiano; REIS, Jaime — New Estimates for Portugal's GDP 1910-1958. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1997.

BAROSA, José — Os Burnay no vidro, ou um monopólio que não chegou a existir. Análise Social, no. 136-137, 1996.

BERNARDO, Hernâni — A Indústria Corticeira em Portugal. Anais do Instituto Superior de Ciências Económicas e Financeiras, XIV, 1946.

BRITO, José M. Brandão — A industrialização Portuguesa no Pós-Guerra (1948-1965) — O Condicionamento Industrial. Lisboa: Dom Quixote, 1989.

BRITO, José M. Brandão — Sobre as ideias económicas de Salazar. In Silva et alii, 1989.

BRITO, José M. Brandão — O Sistema Produtivo, Distributivo e as Contas Externas. In Ferreira, Rato, 1995.

BRITO, José M. Brandão; ROLLO, Maria F. — Ferreira Dias e a constituição da Companhia de Electricidade. Análise Social, no. 136-137, 1996.

CABRAL, Manuel Villaverde — O Desenvolvimento do Capitalismo em Portugal no século XIX. Porto: A Regra do Jogo, 1976.

CASTRO, Armando — A Revolução Industrial em Portugal no Século XIX. Lisboa: Limiar, 1978.

CASTRO, Armando — A Economia Portuguesa do Século XIX. Lisboa: Edições 70, 1979.

CONFRARIA, João — Condicionamento Industrial — Uma Análise Económica. Lisboa: Direcção-Geral da Indústria, 1992.

CONFRARIA, João — Desenvolvimento Económico e Política Industrial. Lisboa: Universidade Católica Editora, 1995.

DIAS Jr, José N. Ferreira — Linha de Rumo I e II e Outros Escritos Económicos. 3 volumes, First volume new edition of 1944 edition. Lisboa, Banco de Portugal, 1998.

DOMINGUES, Álvaro; MARQUES, Teresa — Produção Industrial, Reprodução Social e Território — Materiais para uma tentativa de abordagem no Médio Ave. Revista Crítica de Ciências Sociais, no. 22, 1987.

FERRÃO, João — Indústria e Valorização do Capital - Uma Análise Geográfica. Lisboa: Centro de Estudos Geográficos — Instituto Nacional de Investigação Científica, 1985.

FERREIRA, Eduardo Sousa; RATO, Helena — Portugal Hoje. Lisboa, Instituto Nacional de Administração, 1995

FORTUNA, Carlos — O Fio da Meada — O Algodão de Moçambique, Portugal e a Economia-Mundo (1860-1960). Porto: Afrontamento, 1993.

GAMA, António — Indústria e Produção de um Espaço Peri-Urbano. Revista Crítica de Ciências Sociais, no. 22, Coimbra, 1987.

GODINHO, Vitorino M. — Estrutura da Antiga Sociedade Portuguesa. 4<sup>th</sup> edition. Lisboa: Arcádia, 1980.

JUSTINO, David — A Formação do Espaço Económico Nacional (Portugal 1810-1913). 2 volumes. Lisboa: Vega, 1988-1989.

LAINS, Pedro — A Evolução da Agricultura e da Indústria em Portugal (1850-1913). Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1990.

LAINS, Pedro — Foreign Trade and Economic Growth in the European Periphery: Portugal, 1851-1913. Ph. D. thesis, European University Institute, 1992.

LAINS, Pedro — A Industrialização em Portugal (1950-1985). Lisboa: Instituto de Ciências Sociais, Working Paper, 1993.

LAINS, Pedro — O Estado e a industrialização em Portugal, 1945-1990. Análise Social, no. 128, Lisboa, 1994.

LAINS, Pedro — A Economia Portuguesa no Século XIX. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional - Casa da Moeda, 1995.

LISBOA, Manuel — Atitudes e Condutas dos Dirigentes da Indústria Face às Inovações Tecnológicas e Organizacionais — A Indústria Transformadora privada do distrito de Setúbal na actualidade. 2 volumes. M. A. thesis, Faculdade de Ciências Sociais e Humanas, Universidade Nova de Lisboa, 1989.

LISBOA, Manuel — Trabalho Caseiro e Familiar Autónomo — Uma contribuição para a compreensão da política industrial do Estado Novo. Revista Crítica das Ciências Sociais, no. 34, 1992.

LISBOA, Manuel — Inovação Tecnológica e Organizacional, Actores de um Processo: os Dirigentes da Indústria Transformadora Privada. Organização e Trabalho, 7/8, 1992.

LISBOA, Manuel; PIRES, Iva — Notas sobre a indústria transformadora em Portugal (1986). Finisterra, Vol. XXIX, no. 58, 1994.

LISBOA, Manuel — A Indústria Portuguesa e os seus Dirigentes — crescimento na 2<sup>a</sup> metade do século XX e potencial de inovação das funções capitalista, empresarial e de gestão. 3 volumes. Ph. D. thesis, Faculdade de Ciências Sociais e Humanas, Universidade Nova de Lisboa, 1998.

LOIO, Duarte Sampaio — Companhia Portuguesa de Fornos Eléctricos: subsídios para a sua história — 1917-1967. In Análise Social, no. 136-137, 1996.

LOUREIRO, João Adolfo — Economia e Sociedade — A indústria no Após Guerra, anos 50 e 60. Lisboa: Cosmos, 1991.

MACEDO, Jorge Borges de — Problemas de história da indústria portuguesa no século XVIII. 2<sup>nd</sup> edition. Lisboa: Querco, 1982.

MARTINS, Oliveira — A situação da indústria portuense: embaraços da indústria portuguesa. In Serrão, Martins, 1978.

MARTINS, Maria Belmira — As multinacionais em Portugal. Lisboa: Estampa, 1976.

MATA, Eugénia; VALÉRIO, Nuno — História Económica de Portugal, uma perspectiva global. Lisboa: Presença, 1994.

MATA, José — Small firms in Portuguese manufacturing industries. In Zoltan, Audretsch, 1993.

MATEUS, Augusto; BRITO, José M. Brandão; MARTINS, Victor — Portugal XXI — Cenários de desenvolvimento. Lisboa: Bertrand, 1995.

MATOS, Ana — Sociedades e associações industriais oitocentistas: projectos e acções de divulgação técnica e incentivos à actividade empresarial. Análise Social, no. 136-137, 1996.

MATOS, Ana — Ciência, Tecnologia e Desenvolvimento Industrial no Portugal Oitocentista — O Caso dos Lanifícios do Alentejo. Lisboa: Estampa, 1998.

MOURA, Francisco Pereira de; DUBRAZ, M.; DORES, M.; GONÇALVES, M.; CHAVES, J.; OLIVEIRA, J. — Estudo Sobre a Indústria Portuguesa. Lisboa: Associação Industrial Portuguesa, 1957.

MOURA, Francisco Pereira de — Por Onde Vai a Economia Portuguesa ?. Lisboa: Dom Quixote, 1969.

NEVES, José Acúrcio das — Apologia da Indústria. In Serrão, Martins, 1978.

NEVES, José Acúrcio das — Memória sobre os meios de melhorar a indústria portuguesa, considerada nos seus diferentes ramos. New edition of 1820 edition. Lisboa: 1983.

NEVES, João César — The Portuguese Economy, a picture in figures — XIX and XX centuries. Lisboa: Universidade Católica, 1994.

NEVES, João César — O crescimento económico português no pós-guerra: um quadro global. Análise Social, no. 128, 1994.

OECD — A Indústria em Portugal: Desenvolvimento, Reestruturação e Política Industrial. Parte I, Resumo e propostas. Paris: OECD, 1984.

PEDREIRA, Jorge — Estrutura Industrial e Mercado Colonial — Portugal e Brasil (1780-1830). Lisboa: Difel, 1994.

PEREIRA, João Martins — Indústria, Ideologia e Quotidiano. Porto: Afrontamento, 1974.

PIRES, Artur — Industrialização difusa e modelos de desenvolvimento: um estudo no distrito de Aveiro. Finisterra, vol. XXI, no. 42, 1986.

PIRES, Iva — Génese e evolução de um centro produtor têxtil. A indústria de lanifícios em Castanheira de Pêra. Finisterra, vol. XXI, no. 42, 1986.

PIRES, Iva — A teia e a trama na geografia das indústrias têxtil e do vestuário. Ph. D. thesis, Universidade de Lisboa, 1994.

REIS, Jaime — A produção industrial portuguesa, 1870-1914: primeira estimativa de um índice. Análise Social, no. 94, 1986.

REIS, Jaime — O Atraso Económico Português, 1850-1930. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional - Casa da Moeda, 1993.

REIS, José — Os Espaços da Indústria — A Regulação Económica e o Desenvolvimento Local em Portugal. Porto: Afrontamento, 1992.

RENDEIRO, João Oliveira — Estratégia Industrial na Integração Europeia. Lisboa: Banco de Fomento Nacional, 1984.

RIBEIRO, Félix; FERNANDES, Lino; RAMOS, Maria Manuel — Grande indústria, banca e grupos financeiro (1953-1973). Análise Social, no. 99, 1987.

RODRIGUES, Manuel F. — Os industriais de cerâmica: Aveiro, 1892-1923. Análise Social, no. 136-137, 1996.

RODRIGUES, Manuel Ferreira; MENDES, José M. Amado — História da Indústria Portuguesa da Idade Média aos Nossos Dias. Lisboa: Europa América, 1999.

ROLO, J. M. — A importância da tecnologia estrangeira nas empresas industriais portuguesas de maior dimensão. Análise Social, no. 81-82, 1984.

ROLO, Maria F. — Indústria / Industrialização. In ROSAS, Fernando; BRITO, José M. Brandão (organizadores) — Dicionário de História de Portugal. Vol. I. Lisboa: Círculo de Leitores, 1996.

SERRA, João B. — Arte e indústria na transição para o século XX: a fábrica dos Bordalos. Análise Social, no. 100, 1988.

SERRA, João B. — Arte e indústria na cerâmica caldense: 1853-1977. Caldas da Rainha: Gráfica da Ponte, 1991.

SERRÃO, Joel; MARTINS, Gabriela (organizadores) — Da indústria portuguesa — do antigo regime ao capitalismo. Lisboa: Horizonte, 1978.

SILVA, A.; PINTO, A.C.; OLIVEIRA, C.; ROLO, F.; ROSAS, F.; Ó, J. do; BRITO, J.M.B.; CRUZ, M. — Salazar e o Salazarismo. Lisboa: Dom Quixote, 1989.

ZOLTAN, Acs; AUDRETSCH, David (organizadores) — Small firms and entrepreneurship: an East-West perspective. Cambridge, Cambridge University Press, 1993.

## Tables <sup>30</sup>

5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value, 1945-1989

5D.2 — Industrial production indexes

---

<sup>30</sup> Additional data on the physical indicators of the production of the various manufacturing industries may be found in the working paper No. 18 of the Gabinete de História Económica e Social, Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão, Universidade Técnica de Lisboa.

**Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989**

Source — Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics).

year	food			beverages		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945	2 932	25 158	234 093	4	1 089	
1946	3 053	25 670	209 460	6	949	
1947	2 918	25 195	542 084	6	905	
1948	3 069	28 046	598 312	6	976	
1949	2 422	24 339	434 454	6	915	
1950	3 297	25 418	577 110	6	906	
1951	3 532	24 826	650 366	6	813	
1952	3 052	25 414	1 649 704	197	902	161 748
1953	3 514	33 586	3 518 074	303	4 119	260 928
1954	3 739	40 736	4 594 537	252	3 798	251 780
1955	2 773	41 553	4 422 286	238	3 840	251 139
1956	2 794	42 092	5 254 357	251	2 994	252 955
1957	2 782	41 216	5 650 400	244	3 079	286 342
1958	1 990	43 945	6 093 192	246	3 030	318 981
1959	2 258	44 509	6 054 047	231	3 144	365 010
1960	2 255	45 187	6 922 164	213	3 404	425 224
1961	2 744	45 251	7 420 216	202	3 545	460 553
1962	1 530	33 053	6 396 368	196	3 521	439 895
1963	2 975	43 206	8 000 996	200	3 904	524 983
1964	3 040	44 539	8 574 077	197	4 021	616 748
1965	2 966	43 505	9 427 458	139	2 669	673 842
1966	3 366	50 162	11 329 381	122	2 607	738 238
1967	3 336	50 678	12 602 706	115	2 919	777 061
1968	1 436	50 700	13 767 337	222	5 147	1 217 218
1969	2 734	48 875	15 437 067	226	5 538	1 331 949
1970	2 672	47 833	16 343 420	239	6 225	1 775 549
1971	3 641	69 806	20 974 511	237	7 014	2 001 650

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	food			beverages		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1972	3 667	71 049	25 046 423	249	7 600	2 122 908
1973	3 558	72 833	28 507 576	251	8 332	3 273 953
1974	3 556	73 643	37 114 370	244	8 780	3 939 676
1975	3 602	77 430	48 309 396	246	8 806	4 299 169
1976	3 527	79 040	54 878 723	251	9 688	5 138 758
1977	3 568	79 121	72 099 068	264	9 981	6 095 544
1978	3 556	80 989	90 096 816	260	9 569	8 717 877
1979	3 416	78 127	112 267 334	263	9 707	10 869 261
1980	3 319	78 769	137 989 546	237	9 430	13 045 255
1981	3 290	79 872	177 410 213	244	9 382	18 077 445
1982	3 202	78 684	217 631 290	238	9 162	20 453 698
1983	3 196	76 714	295 384 124	243	8 901	26 339 139
1984	3 185	73 286	384 592 881	231	8 659	32 577 542
1985	2 993	70 978	459 661 488	219	8 492	40 079 554
1986	3 011	70 104	527 853 755	202	8 384	49 398 449
1987	2 843	68 608	586 165 438	187	8 388	57 744 402
1988	2 774	70 958	705 140 537	173	8 561	69 827 433
1989	2 487	65 417	732 794 182	170	8 781	88 603 417

year	tobacco			textiles		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945	6	3 124		1 104	17 735	
1946	9	3 491		1 177	19 999	
1947	9	3 308		1 357	19 837	
1948	9	3 331		1 604	20 576	
1949	9	3 286		1 665	83 118	
1950	9	3 333		1 588	81 826	
1951	9	3 010		1 746	66 348	
1952	9	3 369	792 727	1 787	65 275	6 227
1953	9	3 425	724 903	1 916	105 619	3 854 879

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	tobacco			textiles		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1954	9	3 738	712 803	1 868	99 619	4 811 216
1955	9	3 697	742 351	1 746	100 765	5 729 135
1956	9	3 528	795 070	1 484	96 354	5 892 845
1957	9	3 581	764 042	1 523	100 296	6 305 873
1958	9	3 214	837 492	1 518	99 838	6 411 784
1959	9	3 096	930 724	1 501	100 130	6 369 048
1960	9	2 947	1 017 026	1 534	109 114	7 279 111
1961	9	2 740	1 034 203	1 492	107 848	4 728 126
1962	9	2 584	1 044 058	1 437	106 494	8 408 933
1963	9	2 371	1 098 599	1 386	113 699	9 573 094
1964	8	2 210	1 126 261	1 390	120 547	10 727 963
1965	8	2 187	1 224 273	962	109 728	10 502 612
1966	8	2 034	1 330 954	1 443	134 012	12 456 932
1967	8	2 099	1 375 957	1 459	135 463	12 415 553
1968	8	2 105	1 480 256	1 371	134 121	13 654 382
1969	8	2 019	1 467 819	1 377	154 860	15 035 984
1970	8	1 871	1 533 043	1 425	136 489	16 385 150
1971	8	1 896	1 571 258	1 322	121 158	16 039 429
1972	8	1 793	1 633 447	1 410	129 970	19 444 459
1973	8	2 008	1 885 508	1 470	140 290	26 204 854
1974	8	1 836	2 145 797	1 415	138 033	34 215 595
1975	8	2 072	2 447 013	1 323	134 445	29 637 897
1976	8	2 141	3 309 970	1 254	132 277	37 135 803
1977	8	2 242	4 238 555	1 252	132 298	49 143 446
1978	8	2 363	4 182 067	1 273	137 563	62 245 662
1979	8	2 389	4 809 763	1 306	110 323	73 694 589
1980	7	2 517	5 963 030	1 267	144 528	121 916 482
1981	8	1 936	7 367 782	1 240	145 716	132 785 542
1982	8	1 915	10 951 118	1 201	141 313	154 207 587
1983	8	1 896	14 967 552	1 167	139 703	202 349 581
1984	8	2 166	18 517 549	1 148	137 487	274 836 199



Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	tobacco			textiles		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1985	9	1 984	24 441 355	1 079	134 263	336 494 654
1986	8	1 908	25 983 956	1 088	138 082	384 851 752
1987	8	1 915	31 114 348	1 058	139 768	440 249 928
1988	7	1 780	31 005 997	1 044	135 727	463 599 890
1989	6	1 779	35 373 539	1 029	132 366	485 882 348

year	clothing			leather		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945	27	1 794		270	4 173	
1946	22	1 775		249	3 045	
1947	22	1 710		249		302 325
1948	22	1 661		218		405 613
1949	23	1 616		307	3 281	313 001
1950	21	1 511		335	3 454	305 400
1951	20	1 463		357	3 316	382 848
1952	20	1 412	23 986	379	3 487	402 113
1953	21	1 312	49 496	375	3 710	381 911
1954	21	1 290	49 669	425	2 891	406 988
1955	21	1 279	45 797	411	4 775	411 652
1956	22	1 046	45 886	385	3 236	414 694
1957	19	953	44 175	378	3 463	424 888
1958	18	980	30 635	378	3 478	462 957
1959	18	999	30 286	398	3 793	494 899
1960	18	971	33 159	382	3 700	531 552
1961	18	984	35 231	361	3 704	511 446
1962	13	893	34 578	352	3 590	504 984
1963	14	951	32 009	351	3 439	527 638
1964	17	1 027	38 596	328	3 273	597 239
1965	17	642	55 713	331	3 673	568 230
1966	16	842	50 032	328	2 893	515 463

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	clothing			leather		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1967	16	840	47 828	301	2 659	432 295
1968	16	781	48 725	272	2 753	556 878
1969	10	541	38 333	256	3 358	629 920
1970	13	662	42 586	239	4 420	722 880
1971	177	16 890	2 144 874	228	4 672	908 826
1972	228	21 909	2 881 351	225	4 793	1096 569
1973	291	27 314	3 936 798	215	4 722	1361 725
1974	320	28 108	5 391 189	193	4 425	1322 602
1975	322	29 747	5 903 029	185	4 264	1395 681
1976	347	30 576	7 604 150	176	4 710	2025 063
1977	415	32 872	10 386 972	179	4 685	3039 494
1978	455	37 634	13 620 688	183	4 862	4103 439
1979	476	41 367	21 559 548	200	5 374	6637 303
1980	458	41 551	26 899 750	193	5 284	7016 025
1981	464	40 946	30 822 883	182	5 206	8050 809
1982	475	41 368	38 554 244	178	5 094	10263 939
1983	500	43 773	50 170 739	186	4 999	15094 137
1984	516	45 545	67 712 821	174	5 069	21818 121
1985	498	46 596	87 936 408	176	5 356	28606 077
1986	474	47 127	109 640 210	172	5 550	35453 140
1987	518	51 206	131 287 388	161	5 833	42830 979
1988	533	53 935	149 246 924	163	5 828	45239 069
1989	525	55 909	168 890 299	160	5 643	49829 620

year	footwear			wood and furniture		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945						
1946						
1947						
1948						

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	footwear			wood and furniture		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1949				6	258	
1950				6	354	
1951				6	499	
1952				6	504	39 648
1953				6	236	22 802
1954				8	273	18 309
1955				8	313	46 666
1956				8	347	73 049
1957				8	360	42 831
1958				7	556	54 315
1959				7	697	58 638
1960				11	1 138	107 520
1961				13	1 055	115 502
1962				9	1 144	122 319
1963				9	1 211	152 768
1964				9	1 298	193 629
1965				9	1 411	235 895
1966				9	1 514	267 166
1967				10	1 664	308 884
1968				10	1 702	354 016
1969	3		2 765	10	1 740	377 302
1970	3		2 324	10	1 761	408 057
1971	400	11 745	1 103 031	2 683	35 358	3 383 554
1972	438	14 050	1 444 464	2 875	42 297	4 630 654
1973	426	14 068	1 861 605	2 938	42 733	6 098 182
1974	417	14 586	2 309 203	2 893	44 039	8 375 336
1975	413	15 242	2 919 419	2 747	44 569	8 566 819
1976	389	15 515	3 482 309	2 825	45 090	11 169 086
1977	399	15 065	4 249 554	2 938	48 766	14 326 422
1978	377	14 601	5 102 996	2 920	45 292	16 581 419
1979	383	16 157	8 772 979	3 099	45 589	21 902 786

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	footwear			wood and furniture		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1980	417	17 920	11 958 438	2 935	44 078	31 156 803
1981	420	18 564	14 188 804	2 713	42 384	33 540 275
1982	410	18 623	16 961 387	2 695	40 460	35 229 570
1983	417	20 044	23 275 439	2 624	39 287	42 706 955
1984	421	21 463	35 988 085	2 577	38 169	51 049 907
1985	410	22 250	47 416 018	2 355	36 610	62 516 220
1986	413	24 216	66 271 036	2 118	36 232	76 938 639
1987	399	25 081	74 281 222	2 082	36 316	97 183 121
1988	388	25 680	82 292 853	2 097	35 676	114 234 512
1989	382	28 059	101 477 992	2 033	34 641	128 713 683

year	cork			paper		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945	699	18 953		75	3 508	
1946	619			77	3 756	
1947	601			80	3 844	
1948	529			80	3 986	
1949	493			81	3 988	
1950	513	19 704		92	4 047	
1951	624	21 674		94	4 015	
1952	634	18 256		199	4 066	323 563
1953	611	20 331		257	4 542	302 917
1954	739	21 682	1 892 303	265	7 701	356 824
1955	695	21 100	1 991 003	209	8 417	452 069
1956	698	21 127	1 789 816	220	8 144	543 139
1957	678	20 081	1 645 420	243	7 841	589 531
1958	675	18 835	1 417 105	233	8 598	906 390
1959	669	18 319	1 721 091	218	8 325	968 795
1960	701	19 259	1 972 444	226	10 371	1 243 856
1961	693	18 189	1 921 439	233	10 888	1 326 726

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	cork			paper		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1962	658	18 081	2 015 519	212	10 462	1 375 764
1963	717	19 142	2 152 505	211	10 460	1 451 188
1964	735	20 131	2 332 259	222	12 377	1 848 785
1965	706	20 318	2 689 053	169	12 662	1 315 010
1966	646	18 421	2 373 672	213	12 601	2 392 223
1967	643	17 547	2 370 660	213	12 345	2 561 186
1968	654	19 374	2 426 352	218	13 474	2 909 701
1969	619	19 982	2 670 448	227	13 696	3 437 943
1970	566	18 358	2 460 554	215	14 830	4 479 790
1971	503	13 670	1 949 536	195	12 785	4 496 453
1972	504	15 935	2 835 156	225	14 007	4 951 355
1973	519	16 715	3 874 791	231	13 968	5 872 490
1974	484	16 888	4 815 227	227	13 943	8 644 115
1975	444	15 843	3 377 843	228	15 801	8 907 596
1976	424	16 159	4 290 952	226	16 663	10 888 747
1977	431	15 913	6 210 746	232	17 243	16 271 681
1978	411	15 223	8 790 576	231	16 990	17 436 689
1979	430	15 946	12 793 090	238	17 680	24 168 566
1980	416	15 193	20 288 180	230	18 014	35 651 302
1981	395	14 324	18 256 783	230	18 695	45 356 930
1982	367	13 250	18 181 278	238	18 529	51 005 677
1983	358	13 888	22 614 498	237	18 112	67 965 885
1984	355	14 361	30 457 933	230	18 413	107 881 991
1985	341	12 590	34 789 256	235	17 680	133 426 936
1986	326	12 192	37 460 511	223	17 364	153 905 062
1987	309	12 227	43 392 958	215	16 777	192 337 698
1988	308	11 280	53 282 549	209	16 701	230 108 614
1989	285	10 544	74 853 633	202	16 701	264 451 451

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	printing and publishing			chemical industries		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945				111	2 354	
1946				122	2 199	
1947				114	2 157	
1948				108	2 197	261 555
1949				98	2 085	148 898
1950				90	1 999	156 704
1951				88	2 001	238 244
1952				199	2 032	1 087 583
1953				512	9 505	1 449 572
1954				782	10 543	1 584 283
1955				585	11 972	1 915 836
1956				590	11 950	2 242 355
1957				591	9 874	2 202 154
1958				578	10 097	2 177 935
1959				551	9 266	2 267 466
1960				499	9 793	2 471 159
1961				494	10 522	2 793 809
1962				558	11 329	2 948 973
1963				542	13 119	3 435 049
1964				531	13 630	3 787 229
1965				553	15 031	4 916 732
1966				552	15 499	5 354 418
1967				563	15 850	5 786 593
1968				553	16 665	6 421 937
1969				657	24 031	8 217 002
1970				737	25 326	10 026 673
1971	842	15 913	1 723 813	688	26 359	10 344 954
1972	1 068	25 613	3 528 217	698	28 979	11 723 622
1973	1 076	26 005	4 286 116	733	31 865	14 678 110
1974	1 060	25 803	5 394 327	705	31 894	20 440 113
1975	1 062	25 229	5 322 750	693	31 543	21 241 231

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	printing and publishing			chemical industries		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1976	1 033	23 395	5 922 663	688	32 727	23 922 296
1977	1 041	23 198	8 095 562	714	34 667	33 620 393
1978	1 033	23 397	10 409 505	688	35 696	43 650 374
1979	1 029	24 914	13 845 388	674	36 516	61 073 513
1980	1 022	24 934	18 519 646	680	36 482	80 146 847
1981	1 000	25 143	24 653 477	703	37 027	99 449 442
1982	968	25 970	30 201 359	669	36 396	153 005 540
1983	980	25 483	35 480 416	668	35 248	209 875 797
1984	966	24 345	42 780 801	662	33 728	301 845 997
1985	944	23 362	51 294 312	622	33 087	359 328 059
1986	907	22 839	61 244 853	601	32 842	350 674 446
1987	874	22 557	76 896 744	582	33 768	414 440 685
1988	885	23 624	95 563 313	546	32 185	516 516 879
1989	862	23 947	114 232 280	530	30 454	492 721 151

year	petroleum and coal			rubber		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945				28	2 095	
1946				29	2 596	
1947				30	2 594	
1948				32	2 469	
1949				28	2 392	
1950				29	2 402	
1951				31	2 547	
1952				34	2 829	193 246
1953				30	2 729	218 644
1954				30	2 839	250 780
1955				29	3 000	237 364
1956				28	3 154	285 893
1957				27	3 226	354 671

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	petroleum and coal			rubber		
	establish- ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish- ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1958				34	3 418	308 730
1959	1	1 334	788 661	33	3 863	403 110
1960	1	1 245	760 414	33	4 527	778 652
1961	9	1 282	1 227 122	35	4 889	1 063 854
1962	9	1 441	1 178 829	203	5 932	985 594
1963	9	1 497	1 330 508	213	6 504	1 090 944
1964	9	1 087	1 395 008	213	7 136	1 327 853
1965	7	1 127	1 401 630	217	7 440	1 492 965
1966	7	1 211	1 423 649	196	7 801	1 615 872
1967	7	1 270	1 622 160	189	7 536	1 559 206
1968	6	1 316	1 730 552	196	7 827	1 528 863
1969	8	1 642	1 890 124	196	8 052	2 014 900
1970	8	1 796	3 190 394	197	8 170	2 088 148
1971	5	1 636	2 534 978	207	7 508	1 803 908
1972	4	1 563	3 057 151	211	7 265	1 854 464
1973	4	2 088	2 618 684	199	7 517	2 035 578
1974	3	2 082	9 199 341	186	7 404	2 308 715
1975	3	2 237	10 570 998	186	7 842	2 497 145
1976	3	2 498	12 890 667	193	7 510	2 820 635
1977	3	1 979	21 216 255	179	8 046	4 332 957
1978	4	2 198	31 418 352	169	8 110	5 414 401
1979	4	2 278	65 767 503	177	7 677	6 351 889
1980	4	2 268	105 139 430	167	7 486	7 794 553
1981	5	2 181	158 380 189	165	7 561	9 780 695
1982	4	2 236	198 711 110	164	7 463	10 644 630
1983	4	2 255	260 559 701	156	7 255	12 948 063
1984	5	2 255	289 532 671	149	7 012	18 375 028
1985	5	2 219	336 294 970	142	6 817	23 151 415
1986	5	2 211	269 997 663	140	6 753	24 898 710
1987	4	2 205	230 094 719	125	6 777	28 240 133
1988	4	2 259	263 131 703	102	6 295	31 757 390



Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	petroleum and coal			rubber		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1989	3	2 157	323 392 550	95	6 151	32 228 758

year	plastic products			non-metallic minerals		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945				163	21 565	
1946				180	22 546	
1947				176	23 246	
1948				192	22 641	
1949				236	24 026	
1950				242	22 477	
1951				264	21 581	265 749
1952				289	22 723	1 307 470
1953				290	31 108	923 091
1954	44		53 411	396	27 924	940 041
1955	45	1 506	67 217	356	29 674	1 025 131
1956	45	1 776	75 821	372	29 829	1 202 319
1957	57	1 702	95 524	383	30 808	1 198 823
1958	86	2 496	163 504	380	29 863	1 336 463
1959	79	2 666	193 189	395	29 599	1 408 692
1960	128	4 588	261 335	416	31 444	1 551 308
1961	127	4 789	285 242	523	33 738	1 779 972
1962	134	4 704	310 559	554	35 163	2 009 463
1963	155	5 316	362 394	553	34 554	2 050 477
1964	183	6 412	469 409	548	34 703	2 651 412
1965	180	7 148	588 637	577	36 724	2 748 156
1966	169	7 677	742 745	564	34 801	2 932 398
1967	169	8 485	848 083	562	37 924	3 215 886
1968	173	8 944	1 512 469	514	38 882	3 504 125
1969	163	9 316	1 134 013	675	40 050	3 811 400
1970	168	11 736	1 438 428	850	43 200	4 567 015

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	plastic products			non-metallic minerals		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1971	162	9 210	1 562 317	1 067	48 163	6 045 552
1972	180	10 527	2 043 686	1 119	50 575	7 144 034
1973	201	12 537	3 078 334	1 270	52 872	8 935 376
1974	198	12 605	4 309 798	1 211	51 581	10 753 042
1975	200	12 175	3 887 221	1 205	53 459	11 514 456
1976	207	13 624	5 869 338	1 213	53 775	15 224 850
1977	222	14 480	8 698 435	1 298	56 755	23 404 542
1978	256	14 529	9 650 272	1 281	57 627	31 831 316
1979	285	15 724	14 589 858	1 280	58 023	38 334 953
1980	276	15 440	19 074 539	1 268	58 946	52 716 914
1981	285	15 713	22 207 722	1 285	59 169	67 400 064
1982	286	15 191	23 024 314	1 274	58 580	81 870 144
1983	299	15 648	30 684 794	1 253	56 223	100 607 490
1984	297	14 537	37 855 837	1 202	53 368	117 469 708
1985	289	13 778	42 779 026	1 107	50 639	129 736 946
1986	278	13 790	49 747 398	1 049	49 499	150 287 287
1987	268	13 624	62 056 518	994	49 471	181 205 394
1988	258	13 230	71 574 281	949	48 927	219 549 359
1989	252	12 903	85 106 023	947	47 853	252 769 948

year	basic metals			metal products		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945						
1946						
1947						
1948						
1949						
1950						
1951						
1952	336		258 419	46		75 175

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	basic metals			metal products		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1953	313	7 087	236 739	145	6 055	183 010
1954	294	7 189	234 397	136	5 734	203 724
1955	310	7 382	309 132	133	6 001	210 990
1956	303	7 438	348 653	129	6 018	236 830
1957	338	7 321	319 743	130	5 767	256 086
1958				134	6 236	464 309
1959				129	6 457	613 609
1960				124	6 800	591 685
1961				140	8 508	731 391
1962	8	4 299	988 735	150	8 626	740 592
1963	8	4 313	1 255 405	145	9 211	812 087
1964	12	3 876	1 412 422	140	9 829	1 102 382
1965	16	4 823	2 095 284	139	9 612	897 121
1966	16	4 743	2 068 884	133	9 043	908 489
1967	16	4 894	2 145 210	126	9 269	904 138
1968	15	4 723	2 966 321	144	10 365	1 027 000
1969	13	4 038	3 256 864	139	9 893	1 091 450
1970	13	4 499	3 370 768	147	10 287	1 290 332
1971	32	5 297	3 106 381	575	24 243	3 591 074
1972	220	15 130	4 631 537	621	27 891	4 720 003
1973	216	16 261	5 924 219	620	31 294	6 230 253
1974	203	16 471	7 086 102	614	31 936	8 051 707
1975	199	16 943	6 604 975	627	34 843	9 238 345
1976	194	17 606	8 110 557	610	33 652	11 440 568
1977	193	18 081	13 342 224	630	35 225	16 145 717
1978	191	19 574	23 130 938	637	36 162	20 240 104
1979	204	20 952	32 097 324	635	38 260	27 487 651
1980	208	21 739	41 841 904	674	40 712	37 526 964
1981	218	21 673	42 767 454	694	41 508	43 738 865
1982	215	21 293	58 194 062	716	41 061	51 854 277
1983	200	20 336	67 103 231	693	39 941	60 580 797

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	basic metals			metal products		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1984	206	19 182	78 196 251	695	37 371	68 401 949
1985	192	19 159	87 516 165	654	35 613	86 263 421
1986	179	17 830	83 638 282	628	34 444	92 444 846
1987	172	16 202	86 801 608	600	32 944	109 986 964
1988	167	15 866	102 747 000	584	32 134	123 564 417
1989	161	14 104	115 597 070	570	31 212	140 765 120

year	non-electrical machinery			electrical machinery and apparatus		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945						
1946						
1947						
1948						
1949						
1950						
1951						
1952						
1953				73	736	91 152
1954				65	1 288	120 216
1955				51	1 271	152 505
1956				52	1 384	175 634
1957				48	1 514	223 667
1958				42	1 700	217 213
1959				41	1 667	242 840
1960				40	1 708	256 779
1961	29	609	27 594	39	1 824	375 393
1962	28	649	25 832	41	2 458	519 633
1963	28	637	25 514	39	2 510	592 275
1964	43	1 341	58 993	41	2 535	549 797
1965	46	2 092	116 819	39	2 769	738 324

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	non-electrical machinery			electrical machinery and apparatus		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1966	44	2 201	113 990	35	2 808	709 995
1967	40	2 154	123 191	33	2 860	707 417
1968	41	2 122	115 474	31	2 979	869 583
1969	46	1 869	233 061	51	3 266	2 334 892
1970	44	2 026	147 717	56	3 442	2 676 815
1971	120	7 692	1 069 689	62	18 378	3 497 094
1972	148	9 500	1 806 444	89	23 436	4 373 286
1973	172	12 188	2 585 065	93	26 852	5 856 347
1974	173	14 521	3 915 182	90	25 640	8 692 662
1975	165	13 313	4 065 504	93	25 373	8 203 563
1976	191	16 214	5 119 206	101	26 188	9 953 480
1977	225	17 877	7 626 764	119	27 684	15 081 376
1978	245	18 084	9 458 934	134	28 668	20 519 561
1979	256	19 248	12 382 114	159	30 897	27 883 015
1980	286	21 749	18 244 670	172	30 979	40 554 982
1981	332	22 963	23 631 888	175	31 462	48 851 379
1982	352	25 148	33 729 378	196	33 020	62 558 838
1983	341	23 623	40 750 733	203	32 935	87 187 638
1984	326	19 990	39 512 217	200	32 369	113 114 101
1985	301	19 608	57 941 034	177	28 849	121 573 654
1986	288	20 093	58 859 659	171	28 532	130 234 885
1987	276	19 021	68 205 027	168	28 004	158 248 938
1988	272	17 331	71 341 556	162	28 784	191 140 478
1989	268	16 989	79 649 198	164	29 770	229 560 584

year	transport equipment			other manufacturing industries		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945						
1946						
1947						

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	transport equipment			other manufacturing industries		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1948						
1949						
1950						
1951						
1952						
1953				51	1 688	18 499
1954				64	1 316	24 070
1955				52	1 380	24 789
1956				52	1 112	23 905
1957				52	1 087	28 689
1958	17	13 316	1 001 760	50	1 133	30 819
1959	18	12 451	595 072	45	1 014	27 989
1960	18	11 481	711 191	42	1 087	35 204
1961	46	13 412	845 585	42	1 092	37 682
1962	45	13 843	928 117	40	965	37 881
1963	49	13 603	873 177	51	1 480	69 709
1964	108	19 127	2 150 063	51	1 770	79 532
1965	112	21 796	2 839 220	69	1 933	94 525
1966	113	23 490	3 302 345	61	1 952	111 210
1967	127	23 477	3 607 880	66	2 039	117 626
1968	120	24 174	4 145 074	67	2 397	152 534
1969	138	24 621	5 431 352	69	2 450	176 042
1970	133	26 354	6 058 928	78	2 777	249 965
1971	129	28 423	7 624 434	129	4 516	477 037
1972	215	32 448	10 257 266	142	4 684	537 378
1973	216	34 338	11 356 774	88	3 585	611 501
1974	201	38 259	13 614 194	141	6 057	1 159 797
1975	203	40 671	13 685 101	135	5 510	1 043 244
1976	214	22 058	17 883 508	122	5 212	1 279 019
1977	226	45 246	26 242 770	125	5 383	1 811 293
1978	246	46 697	31 217 118	125	5 242	2 135 844

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	transport equipment			other manufacturing industries		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1979	263	49 135	41 220 520	123	5 463	2 905 948
1980	265	46 814	54 707 740	114	4 933	2 620 128
1981	254	45 444	68 983 510	110	4 867	3 410 486
1982	275	45 081	74 496 035	108	5 397	4 449 672
1983	272	41 186	83 355 191	107	5 221	6 061 165
1984	254	37 744	87 597 441	96	5 115	8 048 601
1985	243	33 619	112 013 866	86	4 354	8 414 285
1986	233	33 408	138 455 425	79	4 182	9 840 831
1987	246	32 118	169 904 539	80	4 053	11 394 632
1988	214	32 106	213 084 381	81	4 051	12 625 582
1989	211	33 285	258 324 750	77	4 294	15 430 295

year	total manufacturing industry		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1945	5 419	101 548	234 093
1946	5 543	86 026	209 460
1947	5 562	82 796	844 409
1948	5 869	85 883	1 265 480
1949	5 374	149 304	896 353
1950	6 228	167 431	1 039 214
1951	6 777	152 093	1 537 207
1952	7 187	150 269	6 321 609
1953	8 426	235 788	12 236 617
1954	9 137	238 561	16 505 351
1955	7 671	247 925	18 035 062
1956	7 442	241 529	19 653 221
1957	7 510	242 169	20 432 859
1958	6 395	250 733	22 233 584
1959	6 601	251 329	23 533 166
1960	6 650	268 764	26 949 783

Table 5D.1 — Establishments, employees and gross production value 1945-1989 (continued)

year	total manufacturing industry		
	establish-ments	employees	gross production value (contos)
1961	7 249	274 869	26 721 086
1962	6 186	269 231	31 016 626
1963	7 664	291 127	35 411 319
1964	7 825	310 869	41 039 657
1965	7 262	307 290	44 621 499
1966	8 041	336 312	50 738 056
1967	7 999	341 972	53 529 520
1968	6 067	350 551	60 388 797
1969	7 625	379 837	70 020 630
1970	7 821	372 062	79 258 536
1971	13 412	492 332	97 954 353
1972	14 544	561 014	121 763 874
1973	14 795	600 385	151 073 839
1974	14 542	608 534	203 198 090
1975	14 289	617 357	213 638 395
1976	14 196	606 318	260 360 348
1977	14 661	646 807	365 679 770
1978	14 683	661 070	469 954 948
1979	14 908	651 746	641 414 895
1980	14 615	689 766	890 773 128
1981	14 412	691 736	1 099 112 637
1982	14 239	685 234	1 356 179 147
1983	14 112	672 671	1 756 063 065
1984	13 903	651 634	2 228 163 631
1985	13 077	627 903	2 671 675 119
1986	12 593	627 582	2 888 080 795
1987	12 169	626 863	3 294 063 383
1988	11 920	622 918	3 856 574 717
1989	11 419	612 959	4 270 647 891



## Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes

### A — 1851-1914

Source — Lains, 1990 and Lains, 1992.

Unit — Base 1900 = 100.

year	fish canning	tobacco	wool textiles	cotton textiles	linen textiles	cork	paper	metals
1851		19	8	21	75	4	51	18
...								
1854		23	10	28	69	10	51	22
1855		23	11	27	75	8	51	23
1856		13	11	27	71	10	51	22
...								
1861	0	56	13	29	75	12	51	33
...								
1865	0	84	14	25	80	14	51	21
1866	0	78	19	26	74	15	51	21
1867	1	71	14	32	90	18	51	25
1868	0	90	13	32	73	17	51	19
1869	0	71	15	31	80	18	51	21
1870	1	87	14	35	86	18	51	21
1871	1	73	14	26	82	21	51	24
1872	1	72	15	38	74	28	51	38
1873	2	142	16	43	83	35	51	38
1874	1	72	15	49	80	33	51	40
1875	1	76	17	55	84	30	51	41
1876	1	90	14	45	78	28	51	30
1877	1	125	16	51	81	34	51	29
1878	1	109	18	50	81	34	51	32
1879	3	132	18	44	79	34	51	23
1880	8	37	21	40	79	78	52	34

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1900 = 100

year	fish canning	tobacco	wool textiles	cotton textiles	linen textiles	cork	paper	metals
1881	11	60	20	56	79	60	53	35
1882	26	69	20	47	78	75	51	35
1883	25	74	23	47	75	71	52	34
1884	29	90	21	52	77	78	52	35
1885	31	79	23	55	80	80	56	37
1886	57	88	26	80	83	79	54	36
1887	71	113	26	61	85	80	60	44
1888	71	124	29	61	87	77	60	46
1889	54	105	29	62	92	94	64	56
1890	77	70	44	78	88	92	65	54
1891	90	50	39	61	82	84	62	50
1892	82	52	37	60	82	86	60	49
1893	74	60	59	85	89	88	70	54
1894	61	70	55	72	92	89	66	46
1895	86	115	60	72	89	106	76	49
1896	92	90	50	70	96	107	61	50
1897	106	69	66	71	90	109	76	53
1898	118	82	81	78	93	96	85	71
1899	88	103	80	99	97	92	86	77
1900	100	100	100	100	100	100	100	100
1901	107	84	88	90	103	104	104	96
1902	119	83	90	97	102	102	104	93
1903	134	105	89	99	103	111	97	98
1904	122	134	106	84	100	121	105	102
1905	131	102	82	70	94	112	122	92
1906	161	79	71	66	94	129	112	96
1907	145	109	100	79	92	133	118	99
1908	140	123	99	73	93	120	128	106
1909	142	158	91	73	102	126	136	97
1910	149	127	122	89	108	144	144	112

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1900 = 100

year	fish canning	tobacco	wool textiles	cotton textiles	linen textiles	cork	paper	metals
1911	185	139	131	92	110	141	142	117
1912	200	140	113	99	117	150	152	149
1913	197	149	122	104	114	162	165	150
1914	149	163	105	74	100	134	149	103

**B — 1910-1958**Source — Baptista et alii, 1997.

Unit — Base 1958 = 100.

year	food	beverages	textiles	clothing and footwear	leather	wood cork furniture
1910	42	33	36	65	44	69
1911	41	35	38	73	48	70
1912	42	36	40	76	48	76
1913	42	37	38	70	45	81
1914	43	35	36	60	44	79
1915	44	32	37	57	46	78
1916	44	29	35	64	46	73
1917	44	26	32	60	34	60
1918	43	25	28	55	39	52
1919	48	26	23	55	36	56
1920	53	26	25	62	42	61
1921	57	30	30	63	49	69
1922	65	35	32	70	62	87
1923	66	36	32	69	52	90
1924	68	35	31	62	42	79
1925	60	35	31	72	56	76

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1958 = 100

year	food	beverages	textiles	clothing and footwear	leather	wood cork furniture
1926	64	39	34	82	62	80
1927	65	46	35	77	55	81
1928	68	42	36	72	57	83
1929	67	40	37	75	62	83
1930	65	41	37	73	58	75
1931	73	39	38	68	57	67
1932	70	39	43	72	67	69
1933	78	44	45	71	68	76
1934	75	45	46	71	67	78
1935	70	37	48	74	67	74
1936	62	35	52	72	63	72
1937	59	43	59	75	64	71
1938	68	47	58	78	72	70
1939	66	41	51	66	71	71
1940	69	41	48	50	68	69
1941	69	48	48	48	70	69
1942	70	63	45	47	50	68
1943	72	73	47	57	48	64
1944	67	82	56	76	66	66
1945	66	85	63	76	53	76
1946	63	85	70	102	59	87
1947	66	78	68	130	84	88
1948	70	83	70	115	85	88
1949	73	80	73	87	74	89
1950	78	75	72	70	66	94
1951	75	75	76	76	73	104
1952	81	79	84	87	71	96
1953	84	83	86	86	73	92
1954	91	88	89	86	82	95

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1958 = 100

year	food	beverages	textiles	clothing and footwear	leather	wood cork furniture
1955	88	95	92	91	87	100
1956	99	93	89	90	92	100
1957	97	98	94	93	94	104
1958	100	100	100	100	100	100

year	paper	printing	basic chemicals	non-metallic minerals	electrical machinery and apparatus	transport equipment
1910	14	17	19	4	0	3
1911	15	18	21	4	1	4
1912	17	19	30	4	1	4
1913	16	18	31	5	1	5
1914	15	17	30	5	1	6
1915	16	17	31	5	2	6
1916	14	16	29	5	2	7
1917	9	12	24	5	2	9
1918	5	8	14	4	2	10
1919	7	10	13	4	3	12
1920	9	14	16	4	3	14
1921	7	15	25	6	3	16
1922	7	17	20	9	3	18
1923	10	20	21	13	4	20
1924	9	24	23	13	4	22
1925	8	28	28	13	4	25
1926	10	32	31	14	4	27
1927	10	35	26	16	5	29
1928	9	38	28	16	5	27
1929	9	41	35	18	5	26
1930	10	42	30	20	5	31

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1958 = 100

year	paper	printing	basic chemicals	non-metallic minerals	electrical machinery and apparatus	transport equipment
1931	10	39	31	18	6	34
1932	12	37	33	18	6	34
1933	15	40	33	22	6	34
1934	16	45	44	20	6	35
1935	18	48	37	22	7	36
1936	21	52	31	24	7	37
1937	23	51	51	28	7	37
1938	22	50	53	27	7	37
1939	26	50	43	31	8	38
1940	29	44	50	31	8	38
1941	28	41	47	34	8	38
1942	29	43	49	41	8	38
1943	33	46	42	44	7	38
1944	35	55	55	45	12	37
1945	34	58	47	50	16	36
1946	39	57	50	60	19	40
1947	39	60	62	60	25	47
1948	40	60	76	63	27	55
1949	38	58	67	59	28	59
1950	40	58	68	61	25	60
1951	39	62	87	58	31	67
1952	40	68	92	70	32	74
1953	40	68	76	73	46	74
1954	64	74	77	71	52	74
1955	84	89	83	81	61	78
1956	96	102	89	93	72	82
1957	103	104	89	92	94	90
1958	100	100	100	100	100	100

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

**C — 1970-1985**Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas Industriais.

Unit — Base 1970 = 100.

year	manufacturing industry	food	beverages	tobacco	textiles	clothing
1970	100	100	100	100	100	100
1971	104	102	104	102	101	127
1972	117	108	111	106	115	148
1973	134	118	160	121	131	187
1974	140	120	188	132	138	202
1975	128	141	198	141	114	175
1976	138	145	198	141	122	170
1977	157	157	203	149	126	177
1978	164	162	235	153	132	197
1979	178	165	240	152	151	228
1980	193	175	254	150	162	238
1981	196	184	273	157	165	232
1982	196	176	251	169	166	255
1983	197	187	264	179	169	272
1984	198	177	248	170	188	278
1985	200	171	240	170	185	315

year	manufacturing industry	leather	footwear	wood	furniture	paper	publishing
1970	100	100	100	100	100	100	100
1971	104	96	93	102	118	101	94
1972	117	103	107	108	156	112	92
1973	134	97	109	114	194	123	96
1974	140	94	121	121	203	144	114
1975	128	96	102	87	218	127	80
1976	138	106	108	89	260	138	81

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1970 = 100

year	manufacturing industry	leather	footwear	wood	furniture	paper	publishing
1977	157	110	127	101	277	161	111
1978	164	118	133	110	233	160	109
1979	178	127	171	121	213	174	126
1980	193	129	183	134	224	198	140
1981	196	134	186	125	209	206	139
1982	196	147	200	112	187	216	145
1983	197	166	240	127	194	225	131
1984	198	175	325	144	170	241	143
1985	200	163	374	144	173	263	139

year	manufacturing industry	petroleum and coal	chemical industries	rubber	plastics	non-metallic minerals
1970	100	100	100	100	100	100
1971	104	104	105	108	99	102
1972	117	117	119	110	132	118
1973	134	114	140	115	175	142
1974	140	147	142	116	167	156
1975	128	148	136	108	145	150
1976	138	152	151	111	173	175
1977	157	155	167	123	243	226
1978	164	158	169	126	243	234
1979	178	222	186	126	296	230
1980	193	203	191	132	321	259
1981	196	225	189	136	322	281
1982	196	233	204	133	270	283
1983	197	239	194	150	310	245
1984	198	221	204	172	244	230
1985	200	226	209	166	244	227



Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1970 = 100

year	manufacturing industry	basic metals	metal products	non-electrical machinery	electrical machinery and apparatus	transport equipment	sundry manufacturing industries
1970	100	100	100	100	100	100	100
1971	104	116	106	119	106	97	113
1972	117	145	122	153	109	115	144
1973	134	163	144	187	154	118	160
1974	140	151	148	193	183	105	200
1975	128	120	144	179	154	84	121
1976	138	134	153	195	167	85	105
1977	157	164	176	219	190	100	120
1978	164	197	190	234	202	103	120
1979	178	200	210	285	218	112	152
1980	193	234	243	317	238	118	144
1981	196	239	216	346	245	110	139
1982	196	254	231	317	263	87	113
1983	197	245	238	294	284	87	125
1984	198	240	215	217	287	82	115
1985	200	226	235	230	288	81	115

**D — 1985-1989**Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas Industriais.

Unit — Base 1980 = 100.

year	manufacturing industry	food	beverages	tobacco	textiles	clothing
1980	100	100	100	100	100	100
1985	107	107	105	129	114	109

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1980 = 100

year	manufacturing industry	food	beverages	tobacco	textiles	clothing
1986	125	112	110	129	121	132
1987	128	116	129	137	120	121
1988	136	126	142	131	121	120
1989	139	130	165	140	119	112

year	manufacturing industry	leather	footwear	wood	paper	petroleum and coal	chemical industries
1980	100	100	100	100	100	100	100
1985	107	125	194	71	153	106	190
1986	125	142	214	69	161	133	212
1987	128	172	203	73	163	122	216
1988	136	169	209	80	169	135	230
1989	139	188	244	74	175	156	237

year	manufacturing industries	rubber	plastic products	non-metallic minerals	iron and steel	other basic metals
1980	100	100	100	100	100	100
1985	107	109	109	120	101	103
1986	125	118	123	128	103	104
1987	128	124	137	145	107	118
1988	136	143	140	158	117	127
1989	139	142	148	165	118	111

year	manufacturing industry	metal products	non-electrical machinery	electrical machinery and apparatus	transport equipment
1980	100	100	100	100	100
1985	107	99	93	155	71
1986	125	118	95	131	75

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1980 = 100

year	manufacturing industry	metal products	non- electrical machinery	electrical machinery and apparatus	transport equipment
1987	128	113	101	132	82
1988	136	116	108	146	88
1989	139	118	110	146	?

**E — 1989-1993**Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas Industriais.

Unit — Base 1985 = 100.

year	manufacturing industry	food	beverages	tobacco	textiles	clothing
1985	100	100	100	100	100	100
1989	120	125	153	107	108	103
1990	127	134	164	108	115	113
1991	125	135	168	113	112	114
1992	120	124	160	107	103	111
1993	113	127	161	104	90	99

year	manufacturing industry	leather	footwear	wood	paper	petroleum and coal	chemical industries
1985	100	100	100	100	100	100	100
1989	120	114	130	101	122	142	115
1990	127	118	138	97	123	154	122
1991	125	103	137	105	136	138	102
1992	120	95	137	110	130	156	92
1993	113	86	133	120	126	150	84

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1985 = 100

year	manufacturing industries	rubber	plastic products	non-metallic minerals	iron and steel	other basic metals
1985	100	100	100	100	100	100
1989	120	124	144	139	125	114
1990	127	118	157	149	122	123
1991	125	102	154	148	108	110
1992	120	72	158	152	121	114
1993	113	65	145	158	113	106

year	manufacturing industry	metal products	non-electrical machinery	electrical machinery and apparatus	transport equipment
1985	100	100	100	100	100
1989	120	131	115	127	116
1990	127	143	123	141	110
1991	125	142	109	146	107
1992	120	134	98	149	102
1993	113	125	88	138	85

## F — 1990-1998

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas Industriais.

Unit — Base 1990 = 100.

year	manufacturing industry	food	beverages	tobacco	textiles	clothing
1990	100	100	100	100	100	100
1991	100	102	106	102	104	101
1992	98	96	100	98	98	99
1993	92	99	100	95	86	89

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1990 = 100

year	manufacturing industry	food	beverages	tobacco	textiles	clothing
1994	93	98	94	87	90	79
1995	96	101	91	82	89	86
1996	97	102	101	78	83	85
1997	102	105	105	82	85	77
1998	104	107	111	103	84	75

year	manufacturing industry	leather	footwear	wood	paper	petroleum and coal	chemical industries
1990	100	100	100	100	100	100	100
1991	100	91	100	109	110	92	88
1992	98	88	99	111	108	98	82
1993	92	82	97	115	100	93	73
1994	93	90	102	97	106	113	74
1995	96	87	92	104	111	120	72
1996	97	78	94	110	109	108	73
1997	102	74	95	119	117	120	75
1998	104	62	85	120	120	128	74

year	manufacturing industries	rubber	plastic products	non-metallic minerals	iron and steel	other basic metals
1990	100	100	100	100	100	100
1991	100	91	102	98	92	91
1992	98	64	105	102	102	96
1993	92	66	97	106	98	90
1994	93	89	98	107	99	108
1995	96	109	102	111	104	111
1996	97	138	109	114	97	125
1997	102	162	116	126	110	146
1998	104	169	124	132	112	149

Table 5D.2 — Industrial production indexes (continued)

Base 1990 = 100

year	manufacturing industry	metal products	non- electrical machinery	electrical machinery and apparatus	transport equipment
1990	100	100	100	100	100
1991	100	102	93	104	99
1992	98	96	85	109	90
1993	92	93	76	103	77
1994	93	99	76	105	70
1995	96	101	78	124	74
1996	97	112	87	129	88
1997	102	122	93	136	92
1998	104	132	87	150	103

# SECTION E — ELECTRICITY, GAS, WATER SUPPLY AND SANITATION

ISABEL LOUÇÃO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

## 1 — Energy

The statistical data about the sub-sector of energy production, transport and distribution originate from the publications O Sector Energético Metropolitano (The Metropolitan Energy Sector), Balanços Energéticos Nacionais (National Energy Balance Sheets) and Informação Energia (Energy Information) of the Directorate-General for Energy, and from the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute.

The energy balance sheet is the ideal instrument for diagnosing and analysing the energy system, usefully serving as the starting point for planning studies. It describes and records exhaustively the flows of the various forms of energy, as well as the processing to which each of these is subject and the use made of the final forms of energy by the consumers, who are themselves identified in as much detail as possible.

In 1971, the first energy balance sheet was drawn up for 1970. The criteria that presided over the compilation of these data are described in O Sector Energético Metropolitano - Combustíveis (The Metropolitan Energy Sector — Fuel), a publication of the Directorate-General for Fuel in 1971. The energy forms considered here are coal, petroleum, electricity and other products (mains gas, coke-oven and blast-furnace gas, fuelwoods and plant residues, liquors resulting from the reheating of wood and products such as rice husk and olive husk).

The data recorded in the energy balance sheet are grouped together in three main blocks: supplies, processing and use. Supplies include the data whose final result is the quantity of primary energy made available for the country's overall needs. Processing includes the processing of the various forms of primary energy, with a record being kept of the quantities subjected to processing, on the one hand, and the outflows that are associated with this, on the other hand. Use includes all the uses of energy that are necessary for the various economic processes, including, on the one hand, the consumptions of the energy sector itself and, on the other hand, all the final uses made thereof by the various sectors of economic activity.

In the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook), published by the National Statistical Institute, general indicators are presented for the production, transport and distribution of energy, showing the total number of companies and employees, the total amount of income and

expenditure, and the increase in tangible fixed assets and value added. This same source also provides data about the production and sale of fuels and electricity (supplies made by the national electricity company, EDP — Electricidade de Portugal) by borough (*concelho*) and by type of consumer.

## 2 — Water

For statistical purposes, it is customary to join the supply of water to the sub-sector of energy production, transport and distribution. The main reason for this is the fact that they both traditionally represent community services operating within a situation of a natural monopoly.

The Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) and Estatísticas Industriais (Industrial Statistics) contain data about the consumption of water by volume — divided into household consumption, industrial consumption and others — and about the number of domestic water meters.

## 3 — Sanitation

For statistical purposes, all sanitation activities have traditionally been grouped together with those relating to electricity and water supply, since they represented a public service that was very closely related to the distribution of water in technological terms.

As far as basic sanitation is concerned, all that is available is recent information about: (i) the expenditure of local authorities on the environment, classified according to the aims thereof (protection of water resources, waste management, management of the biodiversity and the landscape) and also divided into current and capital expenditure; (ii) volume of sales and other data on companies connected with this sector.

## Tables

5E.1 — Electricity and gas production

5E.2 — Energy balance sheets

5E.3 — Water supply

5E.4 — Sanitation



## Table 5E.1 — Electricity and gas production

Source — From 1927 to 1940, Anuário Estatístico; from 1941 onwards, Estatísticas Industriais.

Geographical scope — Mainland Portugal.

year	electricity 10 <sup>6</sup> kWh	gas 10 <sup>6</sup> m3
1927	188	?
1928	217	?
1929	240	?
1930	260	?
1931	268	?
1932	286	?
1933	303	?
1934	325	12
1935	355	12
1936	370	13
1937	406	13
1938	426	13
1939	448	14
1940	460	16
1941	479	16
1942	465	18
1943	477	21
1944	505	25
1945	545	28
1946	638	29
1947	722	33
1948	811	35
1949	836	38
1950	941	39
1951	1 043	44
1952	1 339	48

year	electricity 10 <sup>6</sup> kWh	gas 10 <sup>6</sup> m3
1953	1 380	50
1954	1 659	56
1955	1 890	58
1956	2 176	64
1957	2 169	65
1958	2 667	68
1959	2 994	71
1960	3 263	77
1961	3 611	78
1962	3 833	80
1963	4 302	84
1964	4 760	89
1965	4 635	91
1966	5 792	94
1967	5 938	103
1968	6 215	108
1969	6 838	114
1970	7 488	118
1971	7 933	125
1972	8 905	129
1973	9 821	133
1974	10 745	129
1975	10 728	128
1976	10 145	137
1977	13 818	136
1978	14 653	137

Table 5E.1 — Electricity and gas production (continued)

year	electricity 10 <sup>6</sup> kWh	gas 10 <sup>6</sup> m3
1979	16 153	137
1980	15 263	141
1981	13 900	135
1982	15 418	139
1983	18 158	145
1984	19 470	146
1985	19 103	147
1986	20 355	145
1987	20 185	147

year	electricity 10 <sup>6</sup> kWh	gas 10 <sup>6</sup> m3
1988	22 490	156
1989	25 820	165
1990	28 510	163
1991	29 885	165
1992	29 545	?
1993	29 452	?
1994	29 070	?
1995	32 068	?
1996	32 307	?

## Table 5E.2 — Energy balance sheets

Source — Balances Energéticos Nacionais.

Unit — Equivalent petroleum tons.

year	imports	national production	changes in inventories	consumption of primary energy	final consumption of energy
1971	6 110 274	1 378 538	+ 15 394	6 274 092	5 449 312
1972	6 407 492	1 418 543	- 81 294	6 725 926	5 841 937
1973	6 799 652	1 388 877	- 156 606	7 238 304	6 259 191
1974	7 398 795	1 419 506	+ 82 917	7 471 671	6 379 770
1975	7 179 984	1 316 386	- 236 843	7 956 816	6 575 885
1976	7 985 515	1 163 853	+ 272 264	8 241723	6 817 977
1977	7 916 237	1 623 337	+ 271 744	8 530 588	7 309 224
1978	8 035 686	1 715 401	- 80 470	8 859 952	7 551 602
1979	10 347 089	1 733 427	+ 1 004 806	9 475 761	7 950 079
1980	10 287 792	1 505 167	+ 766 612	10 020 284	8 271 181
1981	9 719 487	1 293 148	- 563 491	10 378 846	8 313 112
1982	10 436 060	1 489 791	- 89 904	11 247 512	8 999 670
1983	10 741 816	1 627 830	- 108 378	11 249 781	8 883 535
1984	10 986 358	1 775 475	+ 342 961	11 391 756	9 203 831
1985	10 457 435	1 945 915	- 26 431	11 275 287	9 362 847
1986	12 448 505	1 898 173	- 51 635	12 653 315	10 084812
1987	12 671 137	1 998 874	+ 394 611	13 054 588	10 587 161
1988	13 125 472	2 270 341	- 272 293	13 987 390	11 539 267
1989	16 974 875	1 741 473	- 76 366	16 032 219	12 084 658
1990	18 152 081	2 038 825	+ 450 513	16 417 749	12 608 720
1991	17 826 509	2 044 076	+ 182 139	16 613 967	12 747 583
1992	20 205 783	1 658 644	- 111 800	17 781 023	13 203 846
1993	19 630 222	1 973 054	+ 71 656	17 528 808	13 307 589
1994	21 153 147	2 101 796	- 228 409	18 082 743	12 607 221
1995	22 290 072	1 834 173	+ 297 724	19 165 037	14 307 469
1996	19 801 641	2 413 867	- 257 754	19 068 637	15 033 761

## Table 5E.3 — Water supply

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas Industriais.

year	places	consumption 10 <sup>6</sup> m <sup>3</sup>
1939	116	32
1940	127	33
1941	137	34
1942	146	35
1943	149	38
1944	156	41
1945	164	44
1946	173	47
1947	184	54
1948	203	57
1949	224	58
1950	245	57
1951	238	60
1952	253	63

year	places	consumption 10 <sup>6</sup> m <sup>3</sup>
1953	280	68
1954	305	72
1955	328	77
1956	363	79
1957	414	84
1958	435	84
1959	465	92
1960	513	97
1961	545	106
1962	629	110
1963	638	115
1964	658	125
1965	687	127

Remark — From 1951 on, only places with more than 50 households. The value with the same scope in 1950 would be 210.

year	consumption 10 <sup>6</sup> m <sup>3</sup>
1966	141
1967	156
1968	166
1969	180
1970	186
1971	199
1972	210
1973	231

year	consumption 10 <sup>6</sup> m <sup>3</sup>
1974	239
1975	250
1976	251
1977	256
1978	275
1979	290
1980	303
1981	312

year	consumption 10 <sup>6</sup> m <sup>3</sup>
1982	322
1983	328
1984	326
1985	344
1986	358
1987	387
1988	396
1989	422

Table 5E.3 — Water supply (continued)

year	consumption index base 1990 = 100
1990	100.0
1991	103.5
1992	107.1
1993	105.8
1994	101.1
1995	100.5
1996	99.7

## Table 5E.4 — Sanitation

### A — Local authority expenditure on the environment

Source — Anuário Estatístico.

Unit — Million escudos.

year	water treatment systems	waste management	total expenditure on environment
1994	8 643	30 813	74 973
1995	12 568	33 330	79 293
1996	13 688	40 377	92 973
1997	20 439	42 156	101 208

### B — Indicadores de actividade das empresas de saneamento

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas das Empresas — Comércio e Outros Serviços.

Remark — The index was calculated by deflating the volume of sales with the price index from Table 8.1.

year	volume of sales million escudos	index base 1995 = 100
1993	29	71
1994	38	88
1995	45	100
1996	10	22
1997	12	25

## SECTION F — CONSTRUCTION

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

The construction sector undertakes two main types of activity — the construction of buildings and public works — and various types of complementary activities of somewhat less importance (the chief amongst these being demolitions).

The oldest statistical data about the sector are the registers of households. In principle, each household corresponds to a building or part of a building inhabited by one family. This is the notion that is made explicit in the general population censuses until 1930, giving rise to the data reproduced in the first table in this section.

From roughly 1940 onwards, data began to be published about the licensing and completion of building works. For almost a decade, the geographical scope of these data was presented as ‘municipal centres and tourist areas’ (with it never being clearly established what was meant by these areas — probably most notably in the case of the so-called *linha do Estoril*). From the end of the 1940s onwards, the geographical scope became, in principle, the country as a whole. The second table in this section reproduces the basic information drawn from these data about the completion of building works.

In 1940, and then from 1960 onwards, the general population censuses began to involve a formal survey of housing taken at the same time. The main data gathered in these surveys about existing buildings are also included in the first table in this section.

In the 1980s, surveys began to be carried out into the overall situation of construction firms. These surveys provide qualitative data about the variations in the sector’s activity and are published in special information sheets, with a summary of their results being provided in the *Anuário Estatístico* (Statistical Yearbook). At the end of the same decade, quantitative data finally began to be compiled about the overall activity of the sector’s firms. The data relating to the total value of the building works carried out are summarised in the third table in this section.

### Tables

5F.1 — Existing buildings

5F.2 — Construction of buildings

5F.3 — Overall indicators of construction activity

## Table 5F.1 — Existing buildings

Source — General Population Censuses.

Unit — Thousands.

year	buildings	residential buildings	others	households
1864	?	?	?	1 041
1878	?	?	?	1 133
1890	?	?	?	1 246
1900	?	?	?	1 300
1911	?	?	?	1 411
1920	?	?	?	1 426
1930	?	?	?	1 664
1940	2 118	1 703	415	1 980
1950	2 563	?	?	2 274
1960	2 990	?	?	2 592
...				
1981	2 508	2 344	163	3 436
1991	2 862	2 621	241	4 183



## Table 5F.2 — Construction of buildings

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas da Construção de Edifícios.

Unit — Thousands.

Remark — Until 1948, the geographical scope refers only to municipal centres and tourism areas. The figures using the same scope in 1949 would be 8 for completed works and 9 for households.

year	completed works	new constructions	households
1939	2	?	3
1940	2	?	2
1941	2	?	2
1942	2	?	3
1943	2	?	3
1944	2	?	3
1945	3	?	3
1946	3	?	4
1947	3	?	4
1948	4	?	4
1949	11	?	14
1950	11	?	13
1951	12	?	13
1952	14	?	14
1953	14	?	17
1954	14	?	17
1955	15	?	18
1956	16	?	21
1957	19	?	23
1958	21	?	26
1959	21	?	26
1960	21	?	27
1961	22	?	30
1962	21	?	30

Table 5F.2 — Construction of buildings (continued)

year	completed works	new constructions	households
1963	20	?	30
1964	28	?	35
1965	27	?	34
1966	29	?	36
1967	33	?	41
...			
1970	28	20	28
1971	33	24	36
1972	34	25	41
1973	37	27	42
1974	36	27	43
1975	31	22	32
1976	30	22	30
1977	33	26	35
1978	37	27	34
1979	36	27	36
1980	39	28	38
1981	34	25	39
1982	36	27	40
1983	33	25	38
1984	33	25	41
1985	31	23	36
1986	34	24	37
1987	34	25	39
1988	38	28	46
1989	41	30	58
1990	41	30	62
1991	42	30	63
1992	34	25	52
1993	35	27	63
1994	40	30	62
1995	45	35	68
1996	42	33	68

Table 5F.2 — Construction of buildings (continued)

year	completed works	new constructions	households
1997	42	36	72
1998	54	43	89

## Table 5F.3 — Overall indicators of construction activity

Source — Anuário Estatístico.

Remark — The index was calculated by deflating the value of building works undertaken with the price index from Table 8.1.

year	building works undertaken million escudos	index base 1995 = 100
1987	364 338	52
1988	551 297	71
1989	753 995	88
1990	788 753	76
1991	998 128	87
1992	1 178 194	94
1993	1 253 389	94
1994	1 340 534	95
1995	1 463 888	100
1996	1 439 646	95

## SECTION G — WHOLESALE AND RETAIL TRADE, REPAIR OF MOTOR VEHICLES AND HOUSEHOLD GOODS

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

The sector of internal wholesale and retail trade began to be the subject of statistical attention as such around the time of the First World War. This was the consequence of the great rise in inflation that took place at that time, and the data gathered and published were essentially concerned with the evolution of prices, which is dealt with in Chapter 8 of this book.

From 1979 onwards, a quarterly survey began to be carried out into the overall situation of the wholesale and retail trade, the results of which have been regularly published in a special publication and have been included in summarised form in the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) since 1983. This survey is, however, restricted to obtaining qualitative information about the variations of sales within the sector.

Only from 1990 onwards did statistical data begin to be published in the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) and the Estatísticas das Empresas — Comércio e Outros Serviços (Firm Statistics — Wholesale and Retail Trade and Other Services) about the actual activity of the sector of internal wholesale and retail trade. The first table in this section provides a selection of these data.

In the case of the sector of internal wholesale and retail trade, it is customary to group together some services which it is not possible to classify as community, social, personal or domestic services, namely repair services. The systematic statistical treatment of this sub-sector is also an extremely recent phenomenon, and is in fact even more recent than that of the sub-sector of wholesale and retail trade itself. A selection of the data available in this area is nonetheless presented in the second table of this section.

### Tables

5G.1 — Indicators of wholesale and retail trade activity

5G.2 — Indicators of activity in the sub-sector of repairs and similar services

## Table 5G.1 — Indicators of wholesale and retail trade activity

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas das Empresas — Comércio e Outros Serviços.

### A — Volume of sales

Unit — Million escudos.

year	wholesale trade	retail trade	motor vehicle trade
1990	4 789	3 732	-
1991	5 182	4 442	-
1992	6 027	4 787	-
1993	6 326	4 986	-
1994	6 981	5 465	-
1995	7 231	5 425	-
1996	9 368	5 383	3 963
1997	9 784	5 512	4 363

### B — Indicator of activity

Unit — Index base 1995 = 100.

Remark — The index was calculated by deflating the volume of sales with the price index from Table 8.1. For this purpose, motor vehicle trade was added to the figures for retail trade.

year	wholesale trade	retail trade
1990	94	97
1991	91	104
1992	97	103
1993	96	101

year	wholesale trade	retail trade
1994	100	105
1995	100	100
1996	126	167
1997	128	173

## Table 5G.2 — Indicators of activity in the sub-sector of repairs and similar services

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas das Empresas — Comércio e Outros Serviços.

Remark — The index of activity was calculated by deflating the volume of sales with the price index from Table 8.1.

year	repairs		laundries, dyeing shops and dry cleaners	
	volume of sales million escudos	index base 1995 = 100	volume of sales million escudos	index base 1995 = 100
1993	226	106	8	88
1994	226	101	10	104
1995	233	100	10	100

## SECTION H — HOTELS AND RESTAURANTS — TOURISM

ANA MARIA SIMÃO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

The supply of accommodation outside the context of the familiar domestic environment (hotels in the broad sense), as well as the supply of food and drink ready for consumption under similar conditions (restaurants in the broad sense) are clearly traditional activities. However, only the development of people's need to stay somewhere for leisure purposes, again outside the domestic environment, i.e. tourism, and above all the tourism of non-residents, has led to the production of specific statistical information about this type of activity.

The sources of official statistical data for this sector are:

a) The Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute). Statistical data on tourism have been published in this source since 1936.

b) The Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute). This source of data has been in existence since 1969.

c) The Estatísticas das Empresas: comércio e outros serviços (Company Statistics: commerce and other services) of the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute). The information published in this source has existed in various publications since 1990, but has only been grouped together since 1996.

d) The Estatísticas das Empresas: hotéis, restaurantes e agências de viagens e turismo (Company Statistics: hotels, restaurants, travel agencies and tourism) of the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute). This source existed from 1990 to 1995, after which it was included in the source mentioned immediately above.

e) Rapid information sheets published by the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) about Viagens Turísticas dos Residentes (Residents' Tourism), published since 1998 on a quarterly basis, and Actividade Turística (Tourist Activity), published since 1998 on a quarterly basis.

f) The Gastos dos Estrangeiros Não Residentes (Spending of Non-Resident Foreigners) published by the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) on an irregular basis since 1992.

g) The Inquérito às Férias dos Portugueses (Survey of the Holidays of Portuguese Citizens) first published by the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) in 1988, and thereafter on an irregular basis, ending in 1994/1995.



h) The Índices de preços turísticos (Tourist price indexes) published by the Instituto Nacional de Estatística (National Statistical Institute) since 1996 on a quarterly basis.

i) The publication entitled O turismo em ... (Tourism in ...) published by the Direcção-Geral do Turismo (Directorate-General for Tourism) since 1970 on an annual basis.

j) The Análise de Conjuntura (Conjunctural Analysis) published by the Direcção-Geral do Turismo (Directorate-General for Tourism) since 1993 on a two-monthly basis.

k) The publication entitled As Férias dos Portugueses em... (Holidays of Portuguese Citizens in...) published by the Direcção-Geral do Turismo (Directorate-General for Tourism) since 1977 on an annual basis.

l) The Turismo Internacional e as Férias dos Portugueses (International Tourism and the Holidays of Portuguese Citizens) published by the Direcção-Geral do Turismo (Directorate-General for Tourism) since 1996 on an annual basis.

m) The following books published by the Direcção-Geral do Turismo (Directorate-General for Tourism): 10 Anos de Inquérito de Fronteira 1979/1988 (Ten Years of Border Surveys 1979/1988) and Inquérito ao Turismo Estrangeiro ... (Survey of Foreign Tourism ...).

n) The Boletim Informativo (Newsletter) published by AHETA (*Associação dos Hotéis e Estabelecimentos de Turismo do Algarve* — Association of Hotels and Tourism Establishments of Algarve) on a monthly basis since 1995.

More specifically, grouped according to the main themes, we have:

i) On tourist movements: the Análise de Conjuntura (Conjunctural Analysis) published by the Directorate-General for Tourism and the Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute.

ii) On tourist spending: the Análise de Conjuntura (Conjunctural Analysis) published by the Directorate-General for Tourism and the Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute.

iii) On revenue from tourism: the Análise de Conjuntura (Conjunctural Analysis) published by the Directorate-General for Tourism and the Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute and O turismo em ... (Tourism in ...) of the Directorate-General for Tourism.

iv) On the characterisation of internal tourism: As Férias dos Portugueses (Holidays of Portuguese Citizens) published by the Directorate-General for Tourism, Viagens Turísticas dos Residentes (Residents' Tourism), published by the National Statistical Institute, Inquérito às Férias dos Portugueses (Survey of the Holidays of Portuguese Citizens) published by the National Statistical Institute and Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) published by the National Statistical Institute.

v) On international tourism: Turismo Internacional e as Férias dos Portugueses (International Tourism and the Holidays of Portuguese Citizens) published by the Directorate-General for Tourism and Gastos dos Estrangeiros Não Residentes (Spending of Non-Resident Foreigners) published by the National Statistical Institute.

vi) On the inflows of foreigners: Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1936), Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute and O turismo em ... (Tourism in ...) of the Directorate-General for Tourism.

vii) On accommodation capacity: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute, O turismo em ... (Tourism in ...) of the Directorate-General for Tourism and Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1962).

viii) On the movement of guests: Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1939), Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute and O turismo em ... (Tourism in ...) of the Directorate-General for Tourism.

ix) On nights spent in accommodation: Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1939), Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute, O turismo em ... (Tourism in ...) of the Directorate-General for Tourism and Boletim Informativo (Newsletter) published by AHETA.

x) On employees: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute and Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1966).

xi) On camping sites: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute, Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1965) and O turismo em ... (Tourism in ...) of the Directorate-General for Tourism.

xii) On holiday camps: O turismo em ... (Tourism in ...) of the Directorate-General for Tourism, Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute and Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1966).

xiii) On rural tourism: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1987).

xiv) On youth hostels: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1987).

xv) On guest houses: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute (between 1969 and 1988).

xvi) On the occupancy rate: Boletim Informativo (Newsletter) published by AHETA, Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute and O turismo em... (Tourism in ...) of the Directorate-General for Tourism.

xvii) On average periods of stay: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute.

xviii) On investment: Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1966) and Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute.

xix) On spas: O turismo em ... (Tourism in ...) of the Directorate-General for Tourism.

xx) On tourist prices: Índices de preços turísticos (Tourist price indexes) of the National Statistical Institute and Actividade Turística (Tourist Activity) of the National Statistical Institute.

xxi) On tourism supply and tourism demand: Actividade Turística (Tourist Activity) of the National Statistical Institute.

xxii) On catering: Estatísticas das Empresas: hotéis, restaurantes e agências de viagens e turismo (Company Statistics: hotels, restaurants, travel agencies and tourism) of the National Statistical Institute, published between 1990 and 1995, Estatísticas das Empresas: comércio e outros serviços (Company Statistics: commerce and other services) of the National Statistical Institute, published since 1996, Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1993 — annual survey of companies) and the GIRASIC Study, made available by ARESP (*Associação de Restauração e Similares Portugueses* — Association of Portuguese Restaurant Owners and Similar Traders).

xxiii) On the evolution of tourist activity: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1988).

xxiv) On the analysis of the main results of tourism: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute (only since 1994).

xxv) On exchange rate income and expenditure attributed to tourism: Estatísticas do Turismo (Tourism Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute (since 1990).

## Tables

5H1 — Hotels

5H2 — Restaurants and cafes

5H3 — Tourism

## Quadro 5H.1 — Hotels

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas do Turismo.

Unit — Thousands.

### A — Nights spent by foreigners in accomodation

year	nights spent	year	nights spent	year	nights spent
1939	(a) 206	1948	321	1956	946
1940	531	1949	351	1957	1 023
1941	608	1950	429	1958	1 071
1942	501	1951	509	1959	1 110
1943	434	1952	578	1960	1 246
1944	214	1953	612	1961	1 334
1945	242	1954	748	1962	1 358
1946	250	1955	833	1963	1 850
1947	357				

(a) Hotels only. In 1940, the figure with the same scope would be 354.

### B — Total nights spent

year	nights spent	year	nights spent	year	nights spent
1964	(a) 5 833	1973	12 946	1982	25 462
1965	(b) 7 027	1974	10 585	1983	22 550
1966	8 315	1975	13 267	1984	22 322
1967	8 818	1976	20 745	1985	23 968
1968	8 709	1977	22 441	1986	24 191
1969	9 436	1978	19 553	1987	24 603
1970	10 490	1979	22 763	1988	25 317
1971	11 369	1980	24 874	1989	26 081
1972	11 962	1981	24 427	1990	27 469

Table 5H.1 — Hotels (continued)

year	nights spent
1991	29 019
1992	27 619
1993	26 727

year	nights spent
1994	28 843
1995	30 288
1996	30 606

year	nights spent
1997	30 268
1998	33 160

(a) Does not include camping sites. In 1965, the figure with the same scope would be 6 271.

(b) Does not include holiday camps. In 1966, the figure with the same scope would be 7 567.

## Table 5H.2 — Restaurants and cafes

### A — Average number of meals served daily in the month of January

Source — Estatísticas das Empresas. Hotéis, Restaurantes, Agências de Viagens e Turismo.

Unit — Thousands.

Remark — When this source began to be included in the Estatísticas das Empresas: comércio e outros serviços in 1996, the publication of this information ceased.

year	total	restaurants (a)	cafes (b)	others (c)
1993	721	553	150	17
1994	673	554	93	26
1995	761	628	105	28

### B — Volume of sales

Source — Until 1995, Anuário Estatístico; from 1996 onwards, Estatísticas das Empresas: comércio e outros serviços.

Unit — Thousand contos.

year	total	restaurants (a)	cafes (b)	others (c)
1990	348 280	174 837	152 110	21 333
1991	401 783	214 502	165 501	21 779
1992	430 310	236 360	169 935	24 015
1993	453 258	249 567	184 408	19 283
1994	496 448	283 099	190 983	22 366
1995	495 782	280 357	191 922	23 482

Table 5H.2 — Restaurants and cafes (continued)

year	total	restaurants	bars	canteens (d)
1996	943 256	454 114	445 043	44 098
1997	915 269	487 919	378 263	49 087

(a) Includes restaurants, snack-bars, self-service cafes and similar establishments.

(b) Includes cafes, bars, *cervejarias* (beerhouses), tea rooms, *pastelarias* (pastry shops) and *confeitarias* (cake shops).

(c) Includes other food and drink establishments.

(d) Includes canteens and home meal delivery services.

## Table 5H.3 — Tourism

Sources — From 1936 to 1968, Anuário Estatístico; from 1967 onwards, Estatísticas do Turismo.

Unit — Thousands.

year	tourists	year	tourists	year	tourists
1936	51	1957	251	1978	1 681
1937	33	1958	264	1979	2 255
1938	27	1959	296	1980	2 708
1939	28	1960	353	1981	3 021
1940	39	1961	380	1982	3 164
1941	42	1962	463	1983	3 714
1942	32	1963	516	1984	4 119
1943	34	1964	1 032	1985	4 989
1944	26	1965	1 505	1986	5 409
1945	28	1966	1 720	1987	6 102
1946	44	1967	* 1 025	1988	6 624
1947	61	1968	1 102	1989	7 116
1948	54	1969	1 185	1990	8 020
1949	55	1970	1 586	1991	8 657
1950	76	1971	1 963	1992	8 921
1951	87	1972	2 173	1993	8 434
1952	110	1973	2 323	1994	9 169
1953	153	1974	1 384	1995	9 512
1954	165	1975	920	1996	9 730
1955	202	1976	958	1997	10 172
1956	232	1977	1 410	1998	11 200

\* Until 1966, inflows of foreigners, including tourists, day trippers and those in transit. After 1967, only tourists (i.e. those people staying at least one night in accommodation at the place visited). In 1967, the value with the same scope as in 1966 would be 2 517.



# SECTION I — TRANSPORT AND COMMUNICATIONS

In view of the heterogeneous nature of the information considered in this section, it has been divided into two sub-sections, one on transport, the other on communications.

## SUBSECTION IA — TRANSPORT

MAGDA PINHEIRO (Centro de Estudos de História Contemporânea Portuguesa — Instituto Superior de Ciências do Trabalho e da Empresa)

If we accept François Caron's view that in the period from the end of the eighteenth century to the mid-twentieth century, there were three technical transport systems, the first of these lasted to 1840 and was marked by the twin enthusiasm for the building of roads and canals. The second period was that of the railway, which made use of the new steam power and the third period was marked by the spread of electrical traction on the railway, the rebirth of river and road transport, the last of which was related to the spread of the internal combustion engine. Of course, the progress in maritime shipping, and more recently in air transport, has also been very important, both in so far as the movement of people is concerned and for the internal and external trade of different countries.

The effects upstream and downstream of the waves of investment related to these changes in the technical systems of transport would seem to be the result of scientific developments and economic policy decisions, which were themselves determined by the pressures or constraints of the economy and the belief in their utility and profitability.

Simultaneously being both a reflection and a determining factor of Portuguese economic backwardness, the volume of goods and people transported within the country was mediocre when compared with that of other European countries throughout the three periods in question. In the period before 1850, the low levels of movement of goods and people were considered to be a reflection of the lack of investment in the sector.

European continental states did not wait for the age of the railway to embark on a policy of road and canal building. The geography of transport in pre-railway Europe was highly conditioned by natural conditions and centuries-old inheritances, but the greater or lesser importance of the investment made during the period of the Enlightenment and in the first half of the nineteenth century in order to develop a coherent system of trade was a decisive factor <sup>1</sup>.

Whilst the importance of the maritime coast, the position of the two largest cities at the mouths of the country's most navigable rivers and the mountainous nature of the inland region were significant natural and historical factors affecting the development of transport in Portugal, the state's long period of financial transition impeded investment for many years and also played a

---

<sup>1</sup> Caron, François — L'évolution des transports terrestres en Europe. 10th International Economic History Congress — Debates and controversies in economic history. Leuven: 1990, p. 85.

decisive role in determining the country's backwardness in the building of overland communication routes <sup>2</sup>.

Portugal lagged far behind other countries in the building of its railways and consequently, when it did engage in this investment, it largely did so to overcome its own backwardness rather than to respond to the bottle-necks occurring in the means of transport already being developed, as was the case with the main European countries. The fact that the new means of transport had to create its own traffic made it difficult for railways to become profitable and meant that new investment was problematical. The low level of demand was permanently one of the most notable features of the backwardness of this sector in Portugal.

As the sector was subject to a strong state influence from the nineteenth century onwards, it should naturally be one that is well covered by reliable statistical data. However, a certain backwardness is also visible here, despite the reports of engineers and ministers. In fact, statistics are not innocent documents. Having been published and compiled by the state until very late on, they reflect its vicissitudes. The existing political and social instability resulted in interruptions in the compilation and publication of data. Their production was determined by a series of economic, political or social concerns, leading to alterations in their compilation and presentation that made it difficult to build up series with comparable data.

Changes in the respective institutions have also had an affect on statistics. Although intra-urban road transport routes are considered separately, the raising of the status of a town to that of a city in legal terms caused the figures to change without their being any really notable change in actual terms. The growth of urban transport has therefore proved difficult to express in statistical terms. It is, however, important not to forget that, in 1970, 47% of the total number of passengers travelling on the Portuguese railways (Caminhos de Ferro Portugueses — CP) were suburban passengers, whilst in 1990, this share had increased to 62% <sup>3</sup>.

Rapidly changing realities necessarily complicated the work of the technicians engaged in translating these transformations into numbers. The difficulties have proved even greater for the historian, since choices have to be made to abandon certain information in order to introduce other information. By causing inevitable changes in economic policy and the classification of information, Portugal's accession to the EEC has had significant effects upon our series.

Statistics have frequently been suspected by people because of their association with taxation and this relationship does in fact exist in many cases. A certain element will appear when

---

<sup>2</sup> For more information on this subject, see the article by Maria Fernanda Alegria, "Análise geográfica do transporte de mercadorias nos caminhos-de-ferro portugueses no século XIX", *Análise Social*, 101-102, 1988, and, by the same author, *A organização dos transportes em Portugal (1850-1910) — as vias e o tráfego*, 1987.

<sup>3</sup> Oliveira Martins, João Maria — *A questão ferroviária*. Lisboa: 1996.

the government greedily begins to think about extracting some income from it. It will disappear when it ceases to represent an attractive source of taxation. Subsidies, corresponding to a certain amount of interest guaranteed to investments, were frequently calculated according to the kilometres of railway that had been built. There are therefore discrepancies between the numbers corresponding to the railways that had been opened for circulation by 31 December and the average number of kilometres built during the year.

All these factors have complicated our task of compilation. We have sought to compile data that would make it possible to make long-term comparisons. In certain cases, we had to choose data referring to mainland Portugal and in other cases, in order to overcome absurd alterations in the presentation, we were forced to make some simple mathematical calculations. As far as the railways built until 1877 were concerned, we used the authorisations given for their opening up to circulation as the basis for constructing our series.

We frequently found small differences between the various sources. Whenever we found discrepancies either between authors or sources, we chose the data that made it possible for us to obtain long and homogeneous series. This option generally meant choosing the data of the Portuguese Statistical Yearbooks and one departmental report or another. The actual yearbook itself contains corrections of past data. I believe that we have successfully included these in our statistics.

## Bibliography

— Anuários Estatísticos de Portugal [Portuguese Statistical Yearbooks], 1875, 1884, 1885, 1886, 1892 to 1991.

— Elementos estatísticos dos caminhos de ferro, 1887-1902 [Railway statistics]. Lisboa: 1904.

— Elementos estatísticos dos caminhos de ferro, 1887-1903 [Railway statistics]. Lisboa: 1905.

— Estatísticas dos Transportes do Continente e Ilhas [Transport Statistics for Mainland Portugal and the Islands], 1970 to 1991, Instituto Nacional de Estatística, Lisboa.

— Estatísticas dos Transportes e do Trânsito [Transport and Traffic Statistics], Direcção-Geral dos Transportes Terrestres, 1951-55 to 1968.

— Gazeta dos caminhos de ferro de Portugal e Espanha [Portuguese and Spanish Railway Gazette], 1904 to 1916.

— Pimentel, Frederico de Serpa — A influência da Viação na Riqueza Pública. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional, 1891.

— Relatórios da Direcção Fiscal dos Caminhos de Ferro, 1901 [Reports of the Audit Board of the Portuguese Railways], Lisboa, Imprensa Nacional, 1904.

— Relatórios da Direcção-Geral dos Serviços de Viação [Reports of the Directorate-General of Road Transport Services]. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional, 1937 to 1938.

— Resumos Estatísticos dos Caminhos de Ferro [Statistical Summaries of Portuguese Railways]. Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional, 1995.

## Tables

51A.1 — Roads

51A.2 — Means of road transport

51A.3 — Public road transport

51A.4 — Railways

51A.5 — Movement at ports

51A.6 — Merchant navy and its activity

51A.7 — Movements at airports

51A.8 — Activity of airline companies

51A.9 — Urban transport

## Table 5IA.1 — Roads

Source — From 1852 to 1883, Pimentel, 1891; from 1884 to 1969, Anuário Estatístico; from 1970 to 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes; after 1976, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações.

Unit — km.

Geographical area of reference — From 1884 to 1903, Portugal, except for the data relating to municipal roads between 1897 and 1900, which refer to mainland Portugal only. From 1915 to 1952, mainland Portugal only. From 1953 to 1980, Portugal. As from 1981, mainland Portugal only, except for the data relating to municipal roads between 1988 and 1993, which refer to Portugal. The data relating to mainland Portugal only are preceded by an asterisk.

Remarks:

Total — This column is only filled in when the total is available for all the categories of roads for Portugal as a whole.

Motorways — These represent a part of national roads, defined in keeping with official classifications.

Dual carriage-ways — These represent a part of national roads, defined in keeping with official classifications.

European roads — These represent a part of national roads, defined in keeping with official classifications.

National roads — These include roads classified as royal, district and national roads.

Municipal roads — These include roads classified as municipal roads.

year	total	motorways	dual carriage- ways	European roads	national roads	municipal roads
1852	218	-	-	-	?	?
1853	437	-	-	-	?	?
1854	562	-	-	-	?	?
1855	713	-	-	-	?	?
1856	838	-	-	-	?	?

Table 5IA.1 — Roads (continued)

year	total	motorways	dual carriage- ways	European roads	national roads	municipal roads
1857	983	-	-	-	?	?
1858	1 107	-	-	-	?	?
1859	1 240	-	-	-	?	?
1860	1 350	-	-	-	?	?
1861	1 464	-	-	-	?	?
1862	1 636	-	-	-	?	?
1863	1 859	-	-	-	?	?
1864	2 092	-	-	-	?	?
1865	2 195	-	-	-	?	?
1866	2 431	-	-	-	?	?
1867	2 681	-	-	-	?	?
1868	2 863	-	-	-	?	?
1869	3 084	-	-	-	?	?
1870	3 223	-	-	-	?	?
1871	3 395	-	-	-	?	?
1872	3 505	-	-	-	?	?
1873	3 679	-	-	-	?	?
1874	3 884	-	-	-	?	?
1875	4 083	-	-	-	?	?
1876	4 258	-	-	-	?	?
1877	4 449	-	-	-	?	?
1878	4 558	-	-	-	?	?
1879	4 745	-	-	-	?	?
...						
1881	7 684	-	-	-	?	?
1882	8 280	-	-	-	?	?
1883	8 797	-	-	-	?	?
1884	9 708	-	-	-	7 177	2 531
1885	10 301	-	-	-	7 586	2 715
1886	10 897	-	-	-	7 985	2 913
1887	10 968	-	-	-	8 161	2 787

Table 5IA.1 — Roads (continued)

year	total	motorways	dual carriage- ways	European roads	national roads	municipal roads
1888	11 214	-	-	-	8 380	2 834
1889	11 578	-	-	-	8 942	2 636
1890	11 870	-	-	-	9 138	2 732
1891	12 116	-	-	-	9 270	2 846
1892	12 494	-	-	-	9 567	2 927
1893	12 932	-	-	-	9 930	3 002
1894	13 287	-	-	-	10 223	3 064
1895	13 497	-	-	-	10 381	3 116
1896	13 797	-	-	-	10 571	3 226
1897	?	-	-	-	10 782	* 3 171
1898	?	-	-	-	10 911	* 3 275
1899	?	-	-	-	10 987	* 3 461
1900	?	-	-	-	11 104	* 3 646
1901	15 615	-	-	-	11 234	4 381
1902	15 767	-	-	-	11 337	4 429
1903	16 039	-	-	-	11 541	4 498
...						
1915	?	-	-	-	* 12 332	?
1916	?	-	-	-	* 12 695	?
1917	?	-	-	-	* 12 807	?
1918	?	-	-	-	* 12 993	?
1919	?	-	-	-	* 13 053	?
1920	?	-	-	-	* 13 178	?
1921	?	-	-	-	* 13 229	?
1922	?	-	-	-	* 13 292	?
1923	?	-	-	-	* 13 314	?
1924	?	-	-	-	* 13 328	?
1925	?	-	-	-	* 13 388	?
1926	?	-	-	-	* 13 391	?
1927	?	-	-	-	* 13 401	?
1928	?	-	-	-	* 13 436	?



Table 5IA.1 — Roads (continued)

year	total	motorways	dual carriage- ways	European roads	national roads	municipal roads
1929	?	-	-	-	* 13 500	?
1930	?	-	-	-	* 14 045	?
1931	?	-	-	-	* 14 304	?
1932	?	-	-	-	* 14 392	?
1933	?	-	-	-	* 13 969	?
1934	?	-	-	-	* 14 154	?
1935	?	-	-	-	* 14 182	* 9 231
1936	?	-	-	-	* 14 214	* 8 748
1937	?	-	-	-	* 14 263	* 7 864
1938	?	-	-	-	* 14 360	* 7 923
1939	?	-	-	-	* 14 579	* 9 415
1940	?	-	-	-	* 14 611	* 9 543
1941	?	-	-	-	* 14 745	* 8 347
1942	?	-	-	-	* 14 787	* 8 447
1943	?	-	-	-	* 14 915	* 8 811
1944	?	-	-	-	* 15 018	* 8 958
1945	?	-	-	-	* 15 149	* 9 010
1946	?	-	-	-	* 16 200	* 9 047
1947	?	?	-	-	* 16 500	* 9 121
1948	?	?	-	-	* 16 630	* 9 261
1949	?	?	-	-	* 16 661	* 9 411
1950	?	?	-	-	* 16 746	* 9 446
1951	?	?	-	-	* 16 884	* 9 504
1952	?	?	-	-	* 16 929	* 9 555
1953	?	?	-	-	18 335	?
1954	29 779	?	-	-	18 428	11 351
1955	30 047	?	-	-	18 621	11 426
1956	30 199	?	-	-	18 670	11 529
1957	30 437	?	-	-	18 797	11 641
1958	30 628	?	-	-	18 906	11 722
1959	28 912	?	-	-	19 016	9 869

Table 5IA.1 — Roads (continued)

year	total	motorways	dual carriage- ways	European roads	national roads	municipal roads
1960	29 684	?	-	-	19 170	10 514
1961	29 967	?	-	-	19 145	10 822
1962	30 409	?	-	-	19 196	11 213
1963	30 776	?	-	-	19 237	11 539
1964	31 106	?	-	-	19 232	11 874
1965	31 523	?	-	-	19 428	12 095
1966	31 382	?	-	-	19 520	11 862
1967	31 582	?	-	-	19 557	12 028
1968	32 046	?	-	-	19 795	12 251
1969	32 109	?	-	-	19 651	12 458
1970	32 337	?	-	-	19 661	12 676
1971	32 674	?	-	-	19 690	12 984
1972	33 003	?	-	-	19 746	13 257
1973	33 915	?	-	-	19 838	14 077
1974	34 085	?	-	-	19 831	14 254
1975	34 064	?	-	-	20 215	13 849
1976	34 288	?	-	-	20 128	14 160
1977	34 682	74	25	1245	20 246	14 436
1978	35 812	74	25	1235	20 306	15 506
1979	36 085	74	25	1430	20 361	15 724
1980	36 162	132	54	1430	20 437	15 724
1981	?	* 132	* 66	*1407	* 18 793	?
1982	?	* 169	* 44	*1411	* 18 849	?
1983	?	* 169	* 44	*1411	* 18 882	?
1984	?	* 195	* 41	*1382	* 18 864	?
1985	?	* 196	* 37	*2451	* 18 815	?
1986	?	* 196	* 45	?	* 18 879	?
1987	?	* 215	* 598	* 2 109	* 9 961	?
1988	?	* 223	* 598	* 2 109	* 9 342	19 325
1989	?	* 258	* 560	* 2 044	* 9 330	26 375
1990	?	* 318	* 547	* 2 047	* 9 514	28 233

Table 5IA.1 — Roads (continued)

year	total	motorways	dual carriage- ways	European roads	national roads	municipal roads
1991	?	* 454	* 590	* 2 044	* 9 643	29 565
1992	?	* 519	* 590	* 2 045	* 9 628	33 303
1993	?	* 579	* 680	* 2 037	* 9 648	35 880
1994	?	* 587	* 685	* 2 045	* 9 678	?
1995	?	* 687	* 844	* 2 378	* 9 742	?
1996	?	* 710	* 709	* 2 382	* 9 742	?

## Table 5IA.2 — Means of road transport

Source:

a) For animals and non-motorised vehicles: from 1920 to 1966, Anuário Estatístico; from 1967 to 1974, Estatísticas dos Transportes; after 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações.

b) For motorised vehicles: from 1920 to 1968, Anuário Estatístico; from 1969 to 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes; after 1976, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações.

Geographical area of reference :

a) For animals and non-motorised vehicles: from 1920 to 1940, Portugal; after 1941, mainland Portugal only.

b) For motorised vehicles: Portugal.

The data relating to mainland Portugal only are preceded by an asterisk.

Remarks — The values in the automobile column include motorcycles until 1929.

Unit — Thousands.

year	animals	animal traction	bicycles	motorcycles	automobiles	including passenger vehicles	trailers	tractors
...								
1920	?	107	7	?	5	?	?	?
1921	?	119	9	?	6	?	?	?
1922	?	119	10	?	6	5	?	?
1923	?	134	12	?	7	6	?	?
1924	?	148	11	?	8	7	?	?
1925	?	147	15	?	11	9	?	?
1926	?	152	18	?	14	12	?	?
1927	?	150	23	?	16	13	?	?
1928	?	129	17	?	20	16	?	?
1929	?	164	29	?	24	20	?	?
1930	?	155	32	?	?	?	?	?
1931	?	148	36	4	34	25	?	?
1932	?	142	36	4	33	24	?	?

Table 5IA.2 — Means of road transport (continued)

year	animals	animal traction	bicycles	motorcycles	automobiles	including passenger vehicles	trailers	tractors
1933	?	134	38	4	34	25	?	?
1934	?	147	47	4	38	28	?	?
1935	?	145	50	4	41	31	?	?
1936	41	146	54	4	44	33	?	?
1937	40	144	65	5	47	36	?	?
1938	?	129	80	5	50	38	?	?
1939	?	133	93	5	50	39	?	?
1940	?	133	108	5	61	?	?	?
1941	?	* 136	* 118	5	62	?	?	?
1942	?	* 156	* 130	5	52	?	?	?
1943	* 56	* 146	* 141	4	48	?	?	?
1944	* 49	* 139	* 142	4	47	?	?	?
1945	* 50	* 164	* 153	5	47	36	?	?
1946	* 50	* 148	* 161	5	45	34	?	?
1947	* 49	* 145	* 177	6	62	47	?	0
1948	* 55	* 144	* 215	5	76	59	?	0
1949	* 58	* 213	* 238	6	86	68	?	0
1950	* 57	* 167	* 258	7	92	73	?	0
1951	* 54	* 153	* 276	7	100	81	?	2
1952	* 53	* 147	* 289	9	107	87	?	2
1953	* 52	* 149	* 317	10	119	96	?	3
1954	* 47	* 143	* 341	13	131	107	?	4
1955	* 52	* 146	* 369	18	144	121	?	4
1956	* 50	* 150	* 369	22	158	134	?	5
1957	* 51	* 149	* 402	24	171	146	?	6
1958	* 52	* 146	* 424	25	189	163	?	7
1959	* 48	* 141	* 446	26	206	180	4	9
1960	* 45	* 141	* 459	27	221	194	5	10
1961	* 44	* 130	* 462	27	236	208	7	12
1962	* 38	* 129	* 484	27	254	226	8	13
1963	* 37	* 127	* 489	38	327	?	9	14

Table 5IA.2 — Means of road transport (continued)

year	animals	animal traction	bicycles	motorcycles	automobiles	including passenger vehicles	trailers	tractors
1964	* 38	* 119	* 508	40	350	?	11	16
1965	* 35	* 120	* 499	42	391	?	12	18
1966	* 31	* 113	* 487	45	435	?	15	22
1967	* 30	* 116	* 497	49	481	?	18	25
1968	* 29	* 106	* 522	53	534	?	22	28
1969	* 27	*104	* 520	57	602	?	27	33
1970	* 25	* 96	?	60	674	?	31	38
1971	?	?	?	64	757	?	36	42
1972	?	?	?	68	852	?	40	46
1973	?	?	?	72	948	?	45	50
1974	?	?	?	76	1 052	?	52	55
1975	?	?	?	81	1 151	?	58	60
1976	?	?	?	88	1 270	?	66	69
1977	?	?	?	90	1 377	?	77	82
1978	?	?	?	92	1 457	?	88	90
1979	?	?	?	94	1 540	?	99	98
1980	?	?	?	96	1 643	?	111	110
1981	?	?	?	97	1 773	?	122	121
1982	?	?	?	100	1 909	?	134	129
1983	?	?	?	102	2 025	?	145	136
1984	?	?	?	103	2 128	?	154	141
1985	?	?	?	105	2 252	?	163	147
1986	?	?	?	109	2 394	?	172	154
1987	?	?	?	115	2 571	?	184	166
1988	?	?	?	121	2 839	?	197	177
1989	?	?	?	127	3 099	?	209	187
1990	?	?	?	135	3 381	?	223	197
1991	?	?	?	145	3 671	?	234	206
1992	?	?	?	162	4 029	?	246	213
1993	?	?	?	180	4 360	?	258	220
1994	?	?	?	195	4 706	?	268	226

Table 5IA.2 — Means of road transport (continued)

year	animals	animal traction	bicycles	motorcycles	automobiles	including passenger vehicles	trailers	tractors
1995	?	?	?	219	4 984	?	280	233
1996	?	?	?	244	5 309	?	291	243

## Table 5IA.3 — Public road transport

Source — From 1930 to 1969, Anuário Estatístico; from 1970 to 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes; from 1976 to 1991, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações; after 1992, Anuário Estatístico.

Geographical area of reference — Mainland Portugal only.

Remarks — The values marked with an asterisk do not include *Rodoviária Nacional* traffic.

year	kilometres served	vehicles used	passengers millions	passengers x km millions
...				
1930	7 963	?	?	?
1931	9 198	?	?	?
1932	8 262	?	?	?
1933	8 234	?	?	?
1934	8 770	1 177	?	?
1935	9 817	1 300	11	175
1936	10 206	1 387	13	205
1937	10 666	1 412	14	228
1938	10 663	1 485	20	366
1939	11 043	1 477	22	391
1940	11 749	1 451	22	410
1941	11 992	1 485	23	435
1942	12 051	1 439	18	369
1943	12 044	1 382	17	326
1944	12 311	1 372	18	363
1945	12 333	1 398	19	363
1946	12 327	1 413	22	400
1947	12 308	1 469	24	448
1948	12 245	1 668	27	497
1949	12 199	1 809	30	529
1950	12 783	1 876	31	526



Table 5IA.3 — Public road transport (continued)

year	kilometres served	vehicles used	passengers millions	passengers x km millions
1951	13 682	1 829	35	570
1952	14 587	1 950	39	606
1953	16 284	2 070	43	650
1954	17 070	2 205	51	717
1955	17 837	2 318	57	775
1956	18 659	2 450	64	784
1957	19 086	2 555	70	849
1958	19 560	2 628	82	946
1959	19 843	2 669	89	954
1960	20 063	2 717	89	975
1961	20 251	2 786	95	1 009
1962	20 462	2 807	97	1 036
1963	20 639	2 862	101	1 054
1964	21 092	2 960	107	1 077
1965	21 509	3 131	104	1 125
1966	21 759	3 341	112	1 192
1967	22 294	3 549	134	1 334
1968	22 780	3 741	148	1 442
1969	23 726	3 739	216	2 022
1970	25 035	3 966	253	2 267
1971	25 567	4 179	284	2 416
1972	26 036	4 318	303	2 577
1973	26 253	4 466	319	2 759
1974	26 634	4 698	326	2 936
1975	27 237	4 690	354	3 025
1976	27 637	4 676	354	3 088
1977	28 454	4 122	279	2 616
1978	29 109	* 2 607	449	* 1 599
1979	29 646	* 2 554	500	* 1 680
1980	30 072	* 2 587	518	* 1 732
1981	30 313	* 2 580	517	* 1 741
1982	30 763	* 2 920	* 195	* 2 012

Table 5IA.3 — Public road transport (continued)

year	kilometres served	vehicles used	passengers millions	passengers x km millions
1983	31 003	* 2 762	* 179	* 1 837
1984	31 980	* 2 860	* 176	* 1 814
1985	32 702	5 454	503	4 414
1986	?	?	?	?
1987	35 043	?	?	?
1988	36 196	?	?	?
1989	36 823	?	?	?
1990	37 585	?	?	?
1991	41 256	?	?	?
1992	44 353	?	614	11 967
1993	50 206	?	632	10 080
1994	58 707	?	600	9 683
1995	?	?	562	9 086
1996	?	?	568	8 982

## Table 5IA.4 — Railways

Source — From 1856 to 1876, authorisations for opening up to circulation; from 1877 to 1904, Elementos estatísticos dos caminhos de ferro; for 1910, Gazeta dos caminhos de ferro; from 1914 to 1969, Anuário Estatístico; from 1970 to 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes; after 1976, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações.

Remarks — The geographical area of reference is mainland Portugal, because there were never any railways in Madeira and the Azores.

year	lines km	passengers millions	passengers x km millions	goods 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tons x km millions
1856	36	0.3	?	?	?
1857	50	0.4	?	?	?
1858	60	?	?	?	?
1859	68	?	?	?	?
1860	68	?	?	?	?
1861	132	?	?	?	?
1862	144	?	?	?	?
1863	399	?	?	?	?
1864	691	?	?	?	?
1865	694	?	?	?	?
1866	701	?	?	?	?
1867	711	?	?	?	?
1868	714	?	?	181	?
1869	714	?	?	227	?
1870	719	1	?	278	?
1871	766	1	?	297	?
1872	791	1	?	338	?
1873	819	1	?	?	?
1874	819	?	?	?	?
1875	911	?	?	?	?
1876	933	?	?	?	?
1877	952	2	?	467	?
1878	1 014	2	?	458	?

Table 5IA.4 — Railways (continued)

year	lines km	passengers millions	passengers x km millions	goods 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tons x km millions
1879	1 099	2	?	544	?
1880	1 177	2	?	649	?
1881	1 234	2	?	732	?
1882	1 356	2	?	839	?
1883	1 486	2	?	844	?
1884	1 525	3	?	889	?
1885	1 529	3	?	962	?
1886	1 530	3	?	1 050	?
1887	1 689	4	?	1 102	?
1888	1 875	4	?	1 316	?
1889	1 996	5	?	1 561	?
1890	2 071	6	?	2 316	?
1891	2 175	6	?	1 977	?
1892	2 288	6	?	1 568	?
1893	2 323	6	?	1 482	?
1894	2 342	7	?	1 564	?
1895	2 343	7	?	1 725	?
1896	2 344	8	?	1 899	?
1897	2 347	10	?	1 954	?
1898	2 346	11	?	2 035	?
1899	2 346	11	?	2 431	?
1900	2 356	12	?	2 706	?
1901	2 359	13	?	2 831	?
1902	2 381	13	?	3 445	?
1903	2 389	14	?	3 752	?
1904	2 483	14	?	3 773	?
...					
1910	2 898	17	?	5 148	?
...					
1914	3 115	19	?	5 809	?
1915	3 149	20	?	5 881	?
1916	3 161	22	?	6 551	?

Table 5IA.4 — Railways (continued)

year	lines km	passengers millions	passengers x km millions	goods 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tons x km millions
1917	3 185	18	?	5 996	?
1918	3 207	17	?	5 547	?
1919	3 220	19	?	4 597	?
1920	3 268	23	?	4 952	?
1921	3 269	24	?	5 749	?
1922	2 461	27	?	6 966	?
1923	2 412	27	?	6 483	?
1924	2 412	25	?	6 714	?
1925	2 412	27	?	5 648	?
1926	?	?	?	?	?
1927	3 367	30	?	5 959	?
1928	3 370	33	?	7 022	?
1929	3 380	33	?	7 347	?
1930	3 424	33	?	8 084	?
1931	3 424	30	?	6 649	?
1932	3 459	28	?	7 038	?
1933	3 459	28	?	7 182	?
1934	3 474	30	?	7 757	?
1935	3 475	25	?	4 076	?
1936	3 491	26	848	4 258	588
1937	3 521	26	742	4 197	586
1938	3 581	31	714	6 178	522
1939	3 582	31	705	6 869	591
1940	3 586	32	768	7 507	611
1941	3 586	25	738	4 464	657
1942	3 586	29	891	5 040	710
1943	3 586	34	1 274	5 132	711
1944	3 586	39	1 418	5 300	729
1945	3 584	42	1 233	5 199	688
1946	3 584	45	1 318	5 712	784
1947	3 561	68	1 677	4 599	733
1948	3 561	69	1 699	4 076	644

Table 5IA.4 — Railways (continued)

year	lines km	passengers millions	passengers x km millions	goods 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tons x km millions
1949	3 589	62	1 476	3 609	569
1950	3 589	44	1 062	3 344	571
1951	3 589	57	1 443	3 512	585
1952	3 597	62	1 551	3 795	678
1953	3 597	64	1 574	3 536	642
1954	3 597	67	1 628	3 708	685
1955	3 597	70	1 673	3 889	723
1956	3 597	72	1 715	4 011	761
1957	3 597	78	1 840	3 987	773
1958	3 597	85	1 933	3 771	738
1959	3 597	92	2 037	3 768	751
1960	3 597	99	2 156	3 730	762
1961	3 597	104	2 307	3 673	736
1962	3 597	108	2 439	3 664	730
1963	3 597	114	2 606	3 825	766
1964	3 597	120	2 780	3 803	763
1965	3 597	127	2 970	3 721	755
1966	3 592	132	3 125	3 302	677
1967	3 592	138	3 266	3 434	727
1968	3 592	142	3 309	3 609	771
1969	3 592	145	3 441	3 519	737
1970	3 563	145	3 546	3 953	777
1971	3 563	146	3 569	4 021	813
1972	3 563	154	3 761	4 119	797
1973	3 563	166	4 106	4 344	819
1974	3 563	179	4 552	4 198	867
1975	3 563	183	4 856	3 331	754
1976	3 591	192	5 235	3 432	855
1977	3 592	196	5 235	3 663	885
1978	3 588	205	5 514	3 861	933
1979	3 588	211	5 635	3 378	872
1980	3 588	224	6 077	3 736	1 001

Table 5IA.4 — Railways (continued)

year	lines km	passengers millions	passengers x km millions	goods 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tons x km millions
1981	3 611	213	5 856	3 672	1 003
1982	3 616	211	5 414	3 944	1 060
1983	3 614	208	5 195	4 474	1 044
1984	3 614	215	5 456	5 480	1 239
1985	3 607	222	5 725	5 262	1 306
1986	3 607	224	5 803	5 939	1 448
1987	3 607	228	5 907	6 425	1 615
1988	3 126	231	6 036	6 598	1 708
1989	3 216	229	5 908	6 980	1 719
1990	3 601	226	5 664	6 683	1 588
1991	3 117	224	5 692	7 724	1 784
1992	3 054	225	5 694	7 981	1 867
1993	3 063	209	5 397	7 852	1 786
1994	3 070	201	5 149	7 961	1 826
1995	3 065	188	4 840	9 610	2 342
1996	3 071	177	4 503	9 064	2 178

## Table 5IA.5 — Movement at ports

Source — For 1861 and from 1865 to 1920, external trade and shipping statistics; from 1921 to 1969, Anuário Estatístico; from 1970 to 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes; after 1976, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações.

### Remarks:

1 — The data relating to the movement of ships refers to all ports, except between 1921 and 1924 (figures preceded by an asterisk), when they refer only to Lisbon. In 1925, 4 373 ships with 9 611 thousand gross register tons entered the port of Lisbon. After 1989, the data relating to the movement of ships refer only to engine-powered ships. In 1988, 13 528 engine-powered ships with 73 750 thousand gross register tons entered Portuguese ports.

2 — The data relating to the movement of goods refer:

a) From 1921 to 1961, only to the port of Lisbon. In 1920, goods amounting to  $267 \times 10^3$  t were loaded at this port, whilst goods amounting to  $704 \times 10^3$  t were unloaded. In 1962, goods amounting to  $3\,142 \times 10^3$  t were loaded at this port, whilst goods amounting to  $4\,747 \times 10^3$  t were unloaded.

b) From 1962 to 1964, only to the ports of Lisbon, Douro and Leixões. In 1966 (there are no data for 1965), goods amounting to  $4\,887 \times 10^3$  t were loaded at this port, whilst goods amounting to  $9\,301 \times 10^3$  t were unloaded.

c) From 1966 to 1970, only to the ports of Lisbon, Douro, Leixões and Setúbal. In 1971, goods amounting to  $5\,181 \times 10^3$  t were loaded at this port, whilst goods amounting to  $11\,672 \times 10^3$  t were unloaded.

d) From 1971 to 1977, only to the ports of mainland Portugal, namely, Lisbon, Douro, Leixões, Setúbal, Viana do Castelo, Aveiro, Figueira da Foz, Portimão, Faro/Olhão and Vila Real de Santo António, to the port of Funchal in Madeira, to the port of Angra do Heroísmo in Terceira and to the port of Ponta Delgada in São Miguel.

e) From 1978 onwards, to all ports, i.e., in addition to the ports mentioned in the previous paragraph, the port of Sines in mainland Portugal and to the ports of Horta in Faial, Praia de Santa Cruz in Graciosa and Calheta and Velas in São Jorge, with the following omissions:

- in 1979, there are no data for the port of Ponta Delgada;
- in 1982 and 1984, there are no data for the port of Calheta;
- in 1983, there are no data for the ports of Calheta and Funchal;
- in 1985, there are no data for the ports of Calheta and Ponta Delgada;
- in 1986, there are no data for the ports of mainland Portugal;
- in 1987, there are no data for the ports of Horta, Praia, Santa Cruz, Calheta and Velas.



Table 5IA.5 — Movement at ports (continued)

3 — The data relating to the movement of passengers refer to all ports.

4 — grt = gross register tons. 1 gross register ton = 2.832 m<sup>3</sup>.

year	ships entering ports number	ships entering ports 10 <sup>3</sup> tab	goods loaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goods unloaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	passengers embarking thousands	passengers dis- embarking thousands	passengers in transit thousands
...							
1861	10 214	1 009	?	?	?	?	?
...							
1865	9 404	1 033	?	?	?	?	?
1866	10 205	1 357	?	?	?	?	?
1867	10 000	1 121	?	?	?	?	?
1868	9 299	1 222	?	?	?	?	?
1869	10 127	1 380	?	?	?	?	?
1870	10 009	1 625	?	?	?	?	?
1871	10 077	1 961	?	?	?	?	?
1872	10 867	2 358	?	?	?	?	?
1873	11 117	2 744	?	?	?	?	?
1874	11 452	2 764	?	?	?	?	?
1875	11 638	3 005	?	?	?	?	?
1876	10 665	2 869	?	?	?	?	?
1877	10 637	3 034	?	?	?	?	?
1878	10 434	3 138	?	?	?	?	?
1879	10 397	3 403	?	?	?	?	?
1880	10 480	3 546	?	?	?	?	?
1881	10 533	3 526	?	?	?	?	?
1882	11 325	3 802	?	?	?	?	?
1883	11 200	4 207	?	?	?	?	?
1884	11 803	4 502	?	?	?	?	?
1885	10 920	4 353	?	?	?	?	?
1886	11 323	4 398	?	?	?	?	?
1887	11 833	4 701	?	?	?	?	?

Table 5IA.5 — Movement at ports (continued)

year	ships entering ports number	ships entering ports 10 <sup>3</sup> tab	goods loaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goods unloaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	passengers embarking thousands	passengers dis- embarking thousands	passengers in transit thousands
1888	11 725	4 838	?	?	?	?	?
1889	12 043	5 989	?	?	?	?	?
1890	11 449	6 294	?	?	?	?	?
1891	11 134	6 558	?	?	?	?	?
1892	10 479	6 628	?	?	?	?	?
1893	10 324	7 028	?	?	?	?	?
1894	10 623	7 204	?	?	?	?	?
1895	10 330	7 414	?	?	?	?	?
1896	10 323	8 511	?	?	?	?	?
1897	10 413	9 249	?	?	?	?	?
1898	10 834	10 286	?	?	?	?	?
1899	9 812	9 779	?	?	?	?	?
1900	10 437	11 284	?	?	?	?	?
1901	10 657	11 737	?	?	?	?	?
1902	11 264	13 074	?	?	?	?	?
1903	10 932	14 043	?	?	?	?	?
1904	10 693	13 956	?	?	?	?	?
1905	10 746	14 798	1 172	1 954	?	?	?
1906	11 244	16 480	1 287	2 062	?	?	?
1907	11 145	18 006	1 284	2 109	?	?	?
1908	11 045	19 355	1 269	2 234	?	?	?
1909	10 794	20 092	1 310	2 279	?	?	?
1910	11 559	20 596	1 384	2 300	?	?	?
1911	10 370	19 154	1 335	2 239	?	?	?
1912	11 134	23 197	1 418	2 614	?	?	?
1913	10 638	24 568	1 547	2 810	?	?	?
1914	9 107	20 505	1 329	2 345	?	?	?
1915	7 555	13 046	1 305	1 968	?	?	?
1916	7 284	9 778	1 367	1 952	?	?	?
1917	5 860	4 907	757	931	?	?	?

Table 5IA.5 — Movement at ports (continued)

year	ships entering ports number	ships entering ports 10 <sup>3</sup> tab	goods loaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goods unloaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	passengers embarking thousands	passengers dis- embarking thousands	passengers in transit thousands
1918	5 566	3 286	584	604	?	?	?
1919	8 472	10 641	843	1 664	?	?	?
1920	9 909	16 102	1 098	1 738	?	?	?
1921	* 3 368	* 7 244	* 296	* 668	?	?	?
1922	* 3 614	* 8 004	* 366	* 707	?	?	?
1923	* 3 706	* 8 606	* 321	* 668	?	?	?
1924	* 4 109	* 9 077	* 328	* 631	?	?	?
1925	7 891	21 265	* 284	* 639	?	?	?
1926	8 229	22 643	* 290	* 701	?	?	?
1927	8 929	24 703	* 284	* 817	?	?	?
1928	9 549	26 132	* 295	* 763	73	64	586
1929	9 014	27 643	* 468	* 909	80	63	418
1930	9 163	27 624	* 436	* 917	63	69	405
1931	8 332	25 497	* 429	* 805	40	62	268
1932	10 609	25 686	* 578	* 813	74	91	285
1933	10 768	27 815	* 591	* 1 051	81	87	328
1934	9 437	29 009	* 630	* 1 077	52	58	342
1935	9 687	28 292	* 572	* 1 120	53	56	324
1936	9 515	29 412	* 1 059	* 2 036	59	62	366
1937	10 142	31 054	* 666	* 1 325	73	63	345
1938	10 178	30 568	* 1 463	* 2 517	70	66	325
1939	9 186	25 193	* 1 542	* 2 541	69	57	239
1940	7 235	11 545	* 1 585	* 2 307	57	41	74
1941	5 976	7 674	* 1 712	* 2 535	49	38	57
1942	5 677	6 500	* 1 620	* 2 245	23	38	54
1943	5 732	6 555	* 1 502	* 2 380	?	48	68
1944	6 011	7 564	* 1 224	* 2 420	33	63	68
1945	6 748	9 023	* 1 465	* 2 224	34	52	62
1946	8 157	11 529	?	?	57	55	66
1947	9 935	17 466	?	?	44	57	80

Table 5IA.5 — Movement at ports (continued)

year	ships entering ports number	ships entering ports 10 <sup>3</sup> tab	goods loaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goods unloaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	passengers embarking thousands	passengers dis- embarking thousands	passengers in transit thousands
1948	10 067	18 937	?	?	52	60	93
1949	10 183	20 059	?	?	65	61	89
1950	10 792	22 586	?	?	102	81	317
1951	10 515	24 224	?	?	119	85	324
1952	11 103	26 769	?	* 3 166	151	95	364
1953	12 119	27 800	* 2 420	* 3 163	150	107	391
1954	12 274	29 419	* 2 582	* 3 479	151	108	404
1955	12 938	31 083	* 2 575	* 3 620	154	124	390
1956	14 654	32 042	* 2 852	* 3 839	158	133	364
1957	14 724	33 165	* 2 624	* 3 968	166	137	389
1958	15 117	34 816	* 2 920	* 3 909	170	135	410
1959	14 810	35 147	* 2 818	* 3 912	176	146	401
1960	14 766	35 802	* 3 088	* 4 476	179	156	381
1961	15 410	38 889	* 3 176	* 5 068	173	166	428
1962	15 459	40 972	* 4 030	* 6 113	195	165	446
1963	16 228	43 379	* 4 357	* 6 702	216	201	493
1964	16 150	44 536	* 4 849	* 7 295	204	190	486
1965	16 124	45 159	?	?	189	170	498
1966	16 185	47 038	* 5 691	* 9 701	186	191	564
1967	16 319	50 039	* 3 993	* 7 805	174	185	560
1968	16 295	52 868	* 3 975	* 8 255	189	176	624
1969	16 283	55 517	* 4 218	* 9 280	187	177	632
1970	16 314	56 078	* 5 188	* 11 302	188	173	657
1971	17 482	60 743	5 496	12 245	180	176	519
1972	17 573	65 043	5 410	13 344	158	153	457
1973	16 974	63 217	5 769	14 444	152	158	407
1974	15 293	60 305	6 533	17 096	140	147	373
1975	14 247	53 696	5 503	15 096	117	132	320
1976	13 527	61 454	5 655	17 351	99	97	253
1977	13 728	59 850	5 602	18 580	90	95	224

Table 5IA.5 — Movement at ports (continued)

year	ships entering ports number	ships entering ports 10 <sup>3</sup> tab	goods loaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goods unloaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	passengers embarking thousands	passengers dis- embarking thousands	passengers in transit thousands
1978	12 471	61 916	5 605	18 237	86	89	206
1979	13 659	69 474	10 744	24 789	77	78	197
1980	14 437	63 692	11 233	27 210	96	98	202
1981	14 309	63 751	12 392	27 425	89	83	196
1982	13 609	54 910	11 718	26 787	94	93	148
1983	11 709	51 501	13 947	25 243	103	100	148
1984	11 953	56 158	12 132	25 281	127	124	135
1985	12 539	57 624	12 763	24 979	117	111	128
1986	12 669	68 338	14 073	26 857	115	115	116
1987	12 909	75 153	14 151	29 688	114	109	117
1988	13 601	73 580	15 193	32 627	129	129	113
1989	14 206	75 995	16 740	36 443	117	116	149
1990	14 190	83 231	18 343	39 267	127	127	156
1991	13 899	81 629	14 848	35 936	136	137	174
1992	14 763	87 378	16 611	40 225	138	141	173
1993	13 946	79 552	14 724	37 267	137	139	174
1994	14 190	85 443	16 941	40 922	152	150	179
1995	14 313	91 516	16 802	44 095	175	175	206
1996	14 873	96 453	15 301	40 571	182	181	228

## Table 5IA.6 — Merchant navy and its activity

Source — For 1861 and from 1865 to 1920, external trade and shipping statistics; from 1921 to 1969, Anuário Estatístico; from 1970 to 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes; after 1976, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações.

Remarks:

1 — Until 1961, except for 1939, 1941 and 1943, and from 1973 to 1976, the data relating to registered ships do not include boats used for local traffic (figures preceded by an asterisk).

2 — The data relating to the movement of ships refer to all ports, except between 1921 and 1924, when they refer only to the port of Lisbon. In 1925, 2 287 Portuguese ships entered this port, corresponding to 984 thousand gross register tons. After 1989, the data relating to the movement of ships refer only to engine-powered ships. In 1988, the entries into Portuguese ports of engine-powered ships had numbered 4 699, corresponding to 16 822 thousand gross register tons.

3 — grt = gross register tons. 1 gross register ton = 2.832 m<sup>3</sup>.

year	registered ships		entries to Portuguese ports	
	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt
...				
1861	?	?	6 734	480
...				
1865	?	?	6 133	437
1866	?	?	6 209	458
1867	?	?	6 424	458
1868	?	?	5 899	399
1869	?	?	5 907	435
1870	?	?	5 937	424
1871	?	?	5 838	484
1872	?	?	6 226	627
1873	?	?	6 177	595
1874	?	?	6 095	627
1875	?	?	6 906	827
1876	?	?	6 333	759
1877	?	?	6 186	767

Table 5IA.6 — Merchant navy and its activity (continued)

year	registered ships		entries to Portuguese ports	
	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt
1878	?	?	6 007	808
1879	?	?	5 813	806
1880	?	?	5 944	842
1881	?	?	6 240	789
1882	?	?	6 799	825
1883	?	?	6 227	840
1884	* 402	?	6 773	963
1885	* 414	?	6 177	1 010
1886	* 413	?	6 271	1 063
1887	* 400	?	6 560	1 431
1888	* 376	?	6 108	1 087
1889	* 375	?	6 049	1 156
1890	* 382	?	5 954	1 373
1891	* 383	?	5 567	1 417
1892	* 387	?	5 191	1 573
1893	* 385	?	5 121	1 883
1894	* 400	?	5 194	1 743
1895	* 370	?	4 886	1 591
1896	* 398	?	4 754	1 714
1897	* 358	?	4 904	1 885
1898	* 359	?	4 923	2 015
1899	* 370	?	4 685	1 831
1900	* 370	?	4 623	1 819
1901	* 327	* 106	4 598	1 735
1902	* 332	* 105	4 721	1 743
1903	* 322	* 100	4 383	1 860
1904	?	?	4 446	1 678
1905	?	?	4 280	1 858
1906	?	?	4 316	2 040
1907	?	?	4 267	2 208
1908	?	?	4 027	2 060
1909	?	?	3 570	1 873

Table 5IA.6 — Merchant navy and its activity (continued)

year	registered ships		entries to Portuguese ports	
	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt
1910	?	?	3 892	1 904
1911	?	?	3 748	1 773
1912	?	?	3 868	1 854
1913	?	?	3 569	1 833
1914	?	?	3 359	1 735
1915	?	?	3 387	1 647
1916	?	?	3 515	1 795
1917	?	?	4 074	1 538
1918	?	?	3 961	1 288
1919	?	?	4 363	1 818
1920	?	?	4 901	2 252
...				
1923	?	?	* 1 498	* 784
1924	?	?	* 2 039	* 878
1925	?	?	2 945	2 148
1926	?	?	3 418	2 883
1927	* 193	* 210	3 672	2 904
1928	* 197	* 214	4 296	3 118
1929	* 186	* 229	4 000	3 311
1930	* 188	* 233	4 189	4 620
1931	* 173	* 238	4 114	4 924
1932	* 181	* 241	6 355	4 228
1933	?	?	6 083	4 257
1934	* 174	* 230	4 549	4 275
1935	?	?	4 876	4 389
1936	?	?	4 518	4 340
1937	?	?	4 852	4 375
1938	* 280	* 219	5 166	4 269
1939	786	234	5 097	4 303
1940	?	?	5 150	4 284
1941	790	233	4 826	4 238
1942	?	?	4 683	4 025



Table 5IA.6 — Merchant navy and its activity (continued)

year	registered ships		entries to Portuguese ports	
	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt
1943	857	283	4 920	4 561
1944	?	?	5 029	4 475
1945	?	?	5 487	4 317
1946	* 232	* 290	5 569	4 637
1947	* 251	* 262	6 416	5 889
1948	* 270	* 432	6 564	6 183
1949	* 249	* 439	6 724	7 069
1950	* 216	* 386	7 060	7 346
1951	* 221	* 415	6 482	7 624
1952	* 216	* 438	6 954	8 596
1953	* 206	* 445	7 544	9 402
1954	* 205	* 458	7 633	9 856
1955	* 199	* 428	7 851	10 471
1956	* 189	* 435	9 323	11 207
1957	* 190	* 447	8 691	10 611
1958	* 185	* 464	8 886	11 352
1959	* 180	* 459	8 767	11 774
1960	* 178	* 480	8 518	11 563
1961	* 175	* 527	8 801	12 431
1962	1 205	576	9 012	13 911
1963	2 256	604	9 532	14 724
1964	2 190	609	9 054	14 659
1965	1 166	602	8 740	15 142
1966	1 149	656	8 137	14 604
1967	1 014	680	7 603	15 008
1968	1 022	720	7 655	15 536
1969	1 000	776	7 518	15 888
1970	934	782	7 108	15 303
1971	1 008	934	7 447	16 308
1972	1 000	974	7 797	16 224
1973	* 163	* 863	7 466	16 209
1974	* 153	* 978	6 465	14 697

Table 5IA.6 — Merchant navy and its activity (continued)

year	registered ships		entries to Portuguese ports	
	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt	number	10 <sup>3</sup> grt
1975	* 153	* 1 040	6 455	14 835
1976	* 139	* 1 005	6 050	14 660
1977	1 037	1 325	5 806	12 890
1978	1 041	1 330	4 693	11 058
1979	992	1 304	5 522	14 598
1980	918	1 306	6 228	13 825
1981	944	1 437	5 793	13 687
1982	995	1 475	5 722	14 326
1983	1 078	1 550	4 060	16 789
1984	1 087	1 549	4 445	16 432
1985	1 098	1 553	3 971	14 215
1986	1 095	1 771	4 035	15 541
1987	?	?	4 667	20 999
1988	897	1 090	4 772	16 831
1989	967	818	4 842	14 243
1990	989	943	5 018	16 257
1991	787	811	4 909	15 752
1992	816	1 143	5 340	17 145
1993	832	965	5 449	15 092
1994	?	?	5 597	14 930
1995	850	1 013	5 236	15 209
1996	?	?	5 152	14 540

## Table 5IA.7 — Movement at airports

Source — From 1941 to 1969, Anuário Estatístico; from 1970 to 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes; after 1976, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações.

year	aircraft total no.	passengers embarking thousands	passengers disembarking thousands	passengers in transit thousands	goods loaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goods unloaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t
...						
1941	?	12	?	?	98	?
1942	1 345	10	8	?	82	324
1943	1 604	8	5	?	98	365
1944	1 607	7	6	?	130	433
1945	1 462	8	10	?	58	210
1946	5 053	39	36	?	92	151
1947	4 467	35	34	?	72	219
1948	7 078	41	37	?	128	331
1949	7 883	38	36	?	179	317
1950	7 946	49	48	114	224	385
1951	7 338	48	47	38	230	407
1952	6 649	54	51	101	317	500
1953	6 868	56	54	105	351	498
1954	8 614	68	68	141	350	505
1955	8 999	78	77	161	340	583
1956	10 424	99	96	188	418	715
1957	10 654	125	120	191	494	766
1958	11 387	150	148	200	554	907
1959	13 218	156	153	235	635	983
1960	13 087	192	186	236	766	1 173
1961	12 872	226	224	250	926	1 516
1962	11 513	262	255	?	1 151	1 519
1963	12 299	333	321	?	1 322	1 913
1964	14 090	437	426	?	1 947	2 697
1965	14 957	537	524	?	2 560	3 059
1966	17 508	685	656	?	3 238	4 305

Table 5IA.7 — Movement at airports (continued)

year	aircraft total no.	passengers embarking thousands	passengers disembarking thousands	passengers in transit thousands	goods loaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t	goods unloaded 10 <sup>3</sup> t
1967	19 865	802	778	343	4 976	5 180
1968	21 691	905	879	386	6 820	7 099
1969	24 186	1 118	1 084	431	8 954	9 085
1970	27 924	1 386	1 356	616	11 402	10 780
1971	31 143	1 609	1 582	643	14 272	13 204
1972	34 675	1 897	1 873	729	17 557	15 683
1973	37 653	2 135	2 103	770	23 762	23 455
1974	36 210	1 946	2 033	652	26 485	27 803
1975	32 723	1 746	2 031	612	27 783	21 974
1976	34 203	1 964	2 014	674	29 366	25 167
1977	39 124	2 358	2 359	848	32 307	29 681
1978	40 118	2 551	2 523	821	40 347	32 924
1979	40 034	2 779	2 759	853	44 971	34 309
1980	42 156	2 704	2 693	777	39 312	31 708
1981	41 890	2 814	2 821	732	36 235	29 975
1982	42 727	2 939	2 952	679	38 197	31 403
1983	43 152	2 968	2 983	638	42 948	29 641
1984	39 334	3 090	3 103	543	50 169	30 884
1985	45 073	3 474	3 474	594	58 502	34 603
1986	48 957	3 829	3 822	631	51 493	35 779
1987	51 526	4 216	4 208	698	50 394	38 064
1988	61 172	4 585	4 581	721	51 741	42 407
1989	66 032	4 906	4 917	789	62 069	46 837
1990	70 295	5 110	5 127	718	58 360	48 865
1991	65 761	5 215	5 237	603	55 112	50 607
1992	80 556	6 205	6 210	705	57 390	58 266
1993	79 217	6 070	6 072	788	55 556	56 084
1994	81 683	6 594	6 585	783	63 030	57 637
1995	85 872	7 042	7 025	822	65 693	63 546
1996	87 530	7 197	7 175	739	67 391	67 036

## Table 5IA.8 — Activity of airline companies

Source — From 1927 to 1930, Anuário Estatístico; from 1970 to 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes; after 1976, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações.

Remarks — The values from 1927 to 1930 refer to the Portuguese Air Services, which began its activity on 10 June 1927. After 1946, the values refer to all Portuguese airline companies.

year	passengers thousands	passengers x km millions	goods 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tons x km thousands
1927	0.875	?	0.011	?
1928	0.443	?	0.016	?
1929	0.079	?	0.003	?
1930	0.2	?	0	?
...				
1946	13	4	0	15
1947	14	10	0	42
1948	17	10	0.1	54
1949	20	9	0.1	99
1950	24	15	0.2	119
1951	29	22	0.2	192
1952	25	20	0.2	165
1953	26	22	0.2	160
1954	34	35	0.2	282
1955	39	52	0.3	380
1956	51	79	0.3	646
1957	56	89	0.4	713
1958	78	124	0.4	780
1959	93	166	0.5	1 080
1960	114	196	0.7	1 354
1961	148	303	0.9	2 215
1962	183	344	0.9	1 716
1963	219	414	1.1	2 267
1964	287	495	1.5	2 692

Table 51A.8 — Activity of airline companies (continued)

year	passengers thousands	passengers x km millions	goods 10 <sup>3</sup> t	tons x km thousands
1965	364	633	1.9	4 098
1966	472	837	2.7	6 174
1967	577	1 055	4.2	9 617
1968	708	1 365	6.7	16 952
1969	890	1 772	9.5	25 547
1970	1 105	2 274	11.9	32 452
1971	1 278	2 782	15.1	43 462
1972	1 536	3 168	18.4	50 006
1973	1 751	3 639	28.8	84 707
1974	1 718	3 899	32.7	98 189
1975	1 485	3 012	26.2	60 506
1976	1 650	2 846	29.9	68 043
1977	1 833	3 036	34.8	85 643
1978	2 014	3 410	41.9	105 718
1979	2 265	3 959	42.2	116 823
1980	1 978	3 459	37.3	105 776
1981	2 169	4 040	35.1	100 788
1982	2 272	4 169	36.8	97 976
1983	2 218	3 993	35.8	96 692
1984	2 312	4 310	40.7	116 839
1985	2 315	4 278	45.5	133 834
1986	2 423	4 512	44.2	123 137
1987	2 786	5 016	46.9	124 969
1988	3 025	5 680	52.0	141 053
1989	3 168	6 272	57.5	160 301
1990	4 302	7 673	?	?
1991	5 077	8 983	55.8	163 215
1992	4 093	7 725	56.9	166 879
1993	4 456	8 485	55.7	171 091
1994	4 346	8 126	60.8	182 658
1995	4 705	8 767	66.6	206 132
1996	5 022	9 225	69.2	220 888

## Table 5IA.9 — Urban transport

Source — From 1941 to 1969, Anuário Estatístico; from 1970 to 1975, Estatísticas dos Transportes; after 1976, Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações; after 1994, for buses, Anuário Estatístico.

### Remarks:

Trams — The series may be considered homogeneous and complete as from 1941, except for 1967. For this latter year, there are only data for Lisbon, although there continued to be transport by tram in three places. The places where there was transport by tram were:

5 — Braga, Coimbra, Lisbon, Porto and Sintra.

4 — Braga, Coimbra, Lisbon and Porto.

3 — Coimbra, Lisbon and Porto.

2 — Lisbon and Porto.

Buses — The series cannot be considered either homogeneous or complete, because of a lack of basic statistical information. However, in view of the limited importance of the places for which there was no information, it is possible to consider the series to be relatively homogeneous and complete from 1948 to 1993. In this latter year, the values for the number of passengers and passengers x kilometre for the cities of Lisbon and Porto, which were the only places for which there were data available in subsequent years, were respectively 574 and 2 070. The places where there was urban transport by bus mentioned in the statistics in some year were: Abrantes, Algés, Almada, Amadora-Alfragide, Angra do Heroísmo, Aveiro, Barreiro, Beja, Braga, Cacém-Queluz, Caldas da Rainha, Cascais, Castelo Branco, Coimbra, Costa da Caparica, Elvas, Espinho, Évora, Faro, Figueira da Foz, Funchal, Gaia, Gondomar, Guarda, Guimarães, Horta, Ílhavo, Lagos, Leiria, Lisboa, Maia, Montijo, Palmela, Peniche, Ponta Delgada, Portalegre, Porto, Póvoa de Varzim, Santarém, Sesimbra, Setúbal, Sintra, Torreira, Viana do Castelo, Vila do Conde, Vila do Porto and Viseu.

Trolley-buses — The series may be considered homogeneous and complete as from 1959, except for 1967 (there are no data available for this year, although there continued to be transport by trolley-bus in three places) and 1968 (there are only data for this year in the case of Coimbra and Porto, although there continued to be transport by trolley-bus in three places). The places where there was transport by trolley-bus were:

3 — Braga, Coimbra and Porto.

2 — Coimbra and Porto.

1 — Coimbra.

Table 5IA.9 — Urban transport (continued)

Underground — The series may be considered homogeneous and complete as from 1960. The only underground railway was in Lisbon.

River transport — The series refer only to river transport on the River Tagus, in the Lisbon region. With this limitation, they may be considered homogeneous and complete.

year	trams			buses		
	places	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.	10 <sup>6</sup> pass. x km	places	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.	10 <sup>6</sup> pass. x km
...						
1941	5	188	655	-	-	-
1942	5	228	862	-	-	-
1943	5	261	1 042	-	-	-
1944	5	287	1 143	?	?	?
1945	5	318	1 215	?	?	?
1946	5	341	1 398	?	?	?
1947	5	359	1 450	?	?	?
1948	5	362	1 484	2	15	67
1949	5	366	1 493	2	28	125
1950	5	372	1 523	3	37	158
1951	5	366	1 516	6	46	195
1952	5	373	1 541	6	55	232
1953	5	375	1 543	6	62	264
1954	5	377	1 550	6	70	297
1955	5	384	1 585	6	82	358
1956	5	382	1 594	9	90	398
1957	5	381	1 600	11	100	450
1958	5	385	1 604	11	110	487
1959	5	377	1 528	11	119	522
1960	5	352	1 390	11	135	587
1961	5	341	1 353	10	152	677
1962	5	331	1 469	11	170	749
1963	5	319	1 470	13	186	814
1964	5	321	1 480	13	208	956
1965	4	316	1 449	10	229	1 081
1966	3	313	1 433	10	241	1 141



Table 5IA.9 — Urban transport (continued)

year	trams			buses		
	places	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.	10 <sup>6</sup> pass. x km	places	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.	10 <sup>6</sup> pass. x km
1967	1	194	878	12	288	1 396
1968	3	232	991	12	317	1 525
1969	3	214	760	29	326	1 446
1970	3	205	727	33	325	1 458
1971	3	187	663	33	330	1 515
1972	3	176	626	35	338	1 565
1973	3	152	541	36	347	1 603
1974	3	128	465	36	357	1 662
1975	3	122	460	36	362	1 722
1976	3	125	494	37	393	1 889
1977	3	128	424	33	476	2 132
1978	3	120	385	21	493	2 250
1979	3	127	398	22	568	2 602
1980	2	118	353	21	614	2 817
1981	2	120	210	23	632	3 018
1982	2	112	258	29	698	2 957
1983	2	102	242	36	729	2 903
1984	2	103	235	36	753	3 084
1985	2	93	203	36	756	2 999
1986	2	88	191	36	740	2 936
1987	2	93	204	44	826	3 222
1988	2	91	197	44	833	3 276
1989	2	87	188	44	825	3 162
1990	2	84	181	37	826	3 139
1991	2	71	153	37	818	3 048
1992	2	59	126	37	792	3 002
1993	2	48	104	36	747	2 805
1994	2	38	81	2	561	2 028
1995	2	30	58	2	595	2 160
1996	2	27	57	2	595	2 160

Table 5IA.9 — Urban transport (continued)

year	trolley-buses			underground			river transp.
	places	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.	10 <sup>6</sup> pass. x km	km	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.	10 <sup>6</sup> pass. x km	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.
...							
1948	?	?	?	-	-	-	10
1949	?	?	?	-	-	-	?
1950	?	?	?	-	-	-	?
1951	?	?	?	-	-	-	11
1952	?	?	?	-	-	-	12
1953	?	?	?	-	-	-	14
1954	1	4	12	-	-	-	14
1955	1	5	13	-	-	-	15
1956	1	5	14	-	-	-	16
1957	1	5	14	-	-	-	18
1958	1	5	14	-	-	-	19
1959	2	13	37	?	?	?	20
1960	2	16	46	6.6	16	60	21
1961	2	16	48	6.6	17	66	24
1962	2	16	55	6.6	17	64	25
1963	2	17	62	7.0	20	84	25
1964	2	19	61	7.0	21	89	27
1965	2	20	64	7.0	22	95	28
1966	3	23	77	8.5	26	118	32
1967	?	?	?	8.5	34	195	32
1968	2	32	127	8.5	37	213	35
1969	3	38	171	8.5	50	180	36
1970	3	40	175	8.5	56	201	38
1971	3	37	168	8.5	59	212	39
1972	3	38	171	11.9	70	266	39
1973	3	40	181	11.9	78	265	38
1974	3	41	193	11.9	85	288	40
1975	3	41	191	11.9	86	293	37
1976	3	40	173	11.9	75	256	37
1977	3	48	204	11.9	92	305	38
1978	3	46	208	11.9	98	325	39

Table 5IA.9 — Urban transport (continued)

year	trolley-buses			underground			river transp.
	places	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.	10 <sup>6</sup> pass. x km	km	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.	10 <sup>6</sup> pass. x km	10 <sup>6</sup> passeng.
1979	3	51	229	11.9	112	357	43
1980	2	53	226	11.9	120	386	48
1981	2	62	270	11.9	128	416	51
1982	2	52	205	11.9	132	430	53
1983	2	55	222	11.9	129	420	47
1984	2	60	207	11.9	134	436	27
1985	2	59	184	11.9	134	434	28
1986	2	61	184	11.9	133	431	29
1987	2	61	183	11.9	140	451	30
1988	2	52	157	15.7	136	441	29
1989	2	52	157	15.7	137	464	30
1990	2	51	155	15.7	142	485	46
1991	2	52	154	15.7	144	497	45
1992	2	52	154	15.7	136	482	46
1993	2	44	134	18.9	147	525	45
1994	2	34	106	18.9	136	501	44
1995	2	8	22	18.9	124	475	42
1996	2	6	14	18.9	128	472	47

## SUB-SECTION IB — COMMUNICATIONS

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

The sub-sector of communications includes two activities:

a) The postal services, i.e. the consignment of written messages and objects. This activity has been a public service in Portugal since the sixteenth century, but its modern organisation can be dated back to the 1840s, which was marked by the introduction of the postage stamp. This traditional service has naturally been made more perfect since then, thanks to the progress of transport and international organisational links, and later on the rendering of financial services, i.e. the issue and payment of postal money orders and the collection of payments for bills, was added to this service.

b) Telecommunications, i.e. the transmission of written or spoken messages by electrical means or radio waves. This activity first appeared in Portugal, just as it did in most of the rest of the world, in the second half of the nineteenth century, firstly with the appearance of the electrical telegraph in the 1850s, and later with the appearance of the telephone in the 1880s. From the organisational point of view, both telegraph and telephone were originally dependent on the same public service as the postal service, although private companies had been formed to operate the concession for the telephone services in certain regions in the country. The most important of these was undoubtedly the Anglo-Portuguese Telephones company, which gained the concessions for the regions of Lisbon and Porto. In the 1960s, this company was transformed into Telefones de Lisboa e Porto (Lisbon and Porto Telephone Company).

The last quarter of the twentieth century witnessed some profound changes in the activity of telecommunications, both from the technological point of view and from the organisational point of view.

From the technological point of view, the first thing to be noted was the obsolescence of the telegraph, because of the cheaper costs of using a telephone and the appearance of alternative means of telecommunications. Amongst these alternative means of telecommunications, the first one was the telex, which enjoyed a fairly rapid cycle of ascension and obsolescence. After this came the fax and other systems for the transmission of data, particularly between computers, of which the so-called Internet is undoubtedly the most important. One should also mention the networks of cellular or mobile phones, in operation beside the traditional network of fixed telephones.

From the organisational point of view, the major novelty was the separation of the services of telecommunications from the postal services and their gradual concentration into what was to become Portugal Telecom, on the eve of a process for the liberalisation of the market, which had

begun with the existence of several cellular telephone companies and had deepened further with the start-up of the activity of various telecommunications companies, in particular those operating in the fixed telephones market, in 2000.

It is important, however, to stress that the main indicator of the expansion in the use of the new means of telecommunications, such as the fax or the Internet, is the growth in the number of telephone messages sent, since this is the way in which such means of telecommunications are generally used.

## **Tables**

5IB.1 — Postal services

5IB.2 — Telecommunications

## Table 5IB.1 — Postal services

Source — Anuário Estatístico. After 1976, the Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações were also used.

year	post offices no. see note *	posted articles millions	postal money orders millions	postal money orders 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos see note **
...				
1872	?	?	0.1	0.9
1873	?	?	0.1	0.9
1874	?	?	0.1	1.0
1875	?	?	0.1	0.9
1876	?	?	0.1	0.9
1877	?	?	?	?
1878	738	24	?	?
1879	747	26	0.1	1
1880	755	28	0.1	2
1881	905	33	0.1	2
1882	974	32	0.2	2
1883	1 028	35	0.2	2
1884	1 035	36	0.2	3
1885	1 043	38	0.2	3
1886	1 038	41	0.2	3
1887	1 024	44	0.2	3
1888	1 084	45	0.3	4
1889	1 134	52	0.3	4
1890	1 172	57	0.3	4
1891	1 210	59	0.3	3
1892	1 242	59	0.2	3
1893	1 269	57	0.2	3
1894	1 264	55	0.2	3
1895	1 158	64	0.2	3

Table 5B.1 — Postal services (continued)

year	post offices no. see note *	posted articles millions	postal money orders millions	postal money orders 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos see note **
1896	1 280	62	0.2	3
1897	1 283	61	0.2	3
1898	1 317	65	0.3	3
1899	1 327	64	0.2	4
1900	1 362	67	0.2	4
1901	1 400	72	0.3	4
1902	1 422	75	0.3	5
1903	1 427	84	0.3	7
...				
1912	?	?	?	?
1913	?	96	?	?
1914	?	102	?	?
1915	?	110	1	17
1916	?	?	1	19
1917	?	?	1	23
1918	?	?	1	30
1919	?	119	1	29
1920	?	?	1	36
1921	?	126	1	52
1922	?	151	1	74
1923	?	135	1	106
1924	?	?	1	136
1925	?	?	1	178
1926	?	?	1	205
1927	?	?	1	233
1928	?	148	1	259
1929	?	165	1	258
1930	?	178	1	264
1931	?	166	1	300
1932	?	181	2	342

Table 5B.1 — Postal services (continued)

year	post offices no. see note *	posted articles millions	postal money orders millions	postal money orders 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos see note **
1933	?	156	2	375
1934	?	176	2	404
1935	?	177	2	433
1936	?	183	2	532
1937	?	182	2	584
1938	?	213	3	610
1939	?	?	3	662
1940	?	149	3	728
1941	?	167	3	850
1942	?	158	3	1 079
1943	?	172	3	1 249
1944	?	?	3	1 489
1945	?	?	4	1 710
1946	?	?	4	1 967
1947	?	236	4	2 072
1948	?	238	4	2 169
1949	?	243	4	2 151
1950	8 719	265	4	2 188
1951	8 902	264	4	2 367
1952	9 052	289	5	2 563
1953	9 161	312	5	2 683
1954	9 360	329	5	2 810
1955	9 594	365	5	3 003
1956	9 821	403	5	3 184
1957	9 997	426	6	3 392
1958	10 131	446	6	3 524
1959	10 200	463	6	3 745
1960	10 303	483	7	4 016
1961	10 433	488	7	4 219
1962	10 749	499	7	4 443



Table 5B.1 — Postal services (continued)

year	post offices no. see note *	posted articles millions	postal money orders millions	postal money orders 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos see note **
1963	10 846	509	7	4 657
1964	11 030	524	8	5 100
1965	11 277	537	8	5 983
1966	11 450	549	8	6 731
1967	11 583	554	8	7 354
1968	11 813	562	8	5 600
1969	11 867	572	8	5 534
1970	11 971	641	8	5 813
1971	12 056	592	9	9 987
1972	12 100	660	9	10 592
1973	12 164	707	9	10 921
1974	12 122	713	10	12 534
1975	12 028	553	11	15 852
1976	12 096	533	12	19 446
1977	12 075	557	12	23 510
1978	12 308	521	16	31 939
1979	11 975	511	23	51 552
1980	11 517	525	26	77 694
1981	11 298	454	27	98 725
1982	10 572	464	29	109 524
1983	9 454	480	27	147 563
1984	8 418	470	25	172 334
1985	7 876	472	25	195 913
1986	7 775	496	26	272 874
1987	7 405	530	27	?
1988	7 218	575	28	523 000
1989	7 008	631	29	702 000
1990	7 125	689	31	1 022 000
1991	7 609	785	31	1 299 000
1992	7 359	849	30	1 580 000

Table 5IB.1 — Postal services (continued)

year	post offices no. see note *	posted articles millions	postal money orders millions	postal money orders 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos see note **
1993	7 094	891	?	1 645 000
1994	7 030	921	?	1 695 000
1995	6 622	974	?	1 742 000
1996	3 632	1 030	?	1 763 000

Notes:

\* Post offices — The series is interrupted by a change in criterion in 1996. The new series presented in that year goes back to 1993 and has the following values: 1993 — 3704; 1994 — 3665; 1995 — 3279.

\*\* Value of postal money orders — After 1988, the series includes the value of all financial postal services, with billions of escudos being the unit used in the source.

## Table 5IB.2 — Telecommunications

Source — Anuário Estatístico. After 1976, the Estatísticas dos Transportes e Comunicações were also used.

year	telegraph stations no.	telegrams thousands	telephones thousands see note *	telephone calls millions see note **	mobile telephones thousands	faxes thousands	fax messages millions
...							
1872	?	?	-	-	-	-	-
1873	?	?	-	-	-	-	-
1874	136	355	-	-	-	-	-
1875	147	410	-	-	-	-	-
1876	?	?	-	-	-	-	-
1877	?	?	-	-	-	-	-
1878	185	?	-	-	-	-	-
1879	196	533	-	-	-	-	-
1880	196	526	-	-	-	-	-
1881	202	529	-	-	-	-	-
1882	218	540	?	?	-	-	-
1883	237	561	?	?	-	-	-
1884	244	548	?	?	-	-	-
1885	275	571	?	?	-	-	-
1886	298	679	?	?	-	-	-
1887	326	745	?	?	-	-	-
1888	343	833	?	?	-	-	-
1889	366	894	?	?	-	-	-
1890	395	1005	?	?	-	-	-
1891	401	986	?	?	-	-	-
1892	409	997	?	?	-	-	-
1893	402	885	?	?	-	-	-
1894	413	920	?	?	-	-	-
1895	415	984	?	?	-	-	-
1896	421	945	?	?	-	-	-

Table 5B.2 — Telecommunications (continued)

year	telegraph stations no.	telegrams thousands	telephones thousands see note *	telephone calls millions see note **	mobile telephones thousands	faxes thousands	fax messages millions
1897	425	986	?	?	-	-	-
1898	429	1 057	?	?	-	-	-
1899	430	1 142	?	?	-	-	-
1900	443	1 172	?	?	-	-	-
1901	456	1 190	3	2	-	-	-
1902	461	1 244	3	2	-	-	-
1903	472	1 287	3	2	-	-	-
...							
1912	?	1 682	?	?	-	-	-
1913	599	1 717	?	?	-	-	-
1914	616	1 747	8	27	-	-	-
1915	628	1 824	10	30	-	-	-
1916	635	2 103	11	34	-	-	-
1917	633	2 323	11	35	-	-	-
1918	638	2 732	12	35	-	-	-
1919	642	2 906	13	39	-	-	-
1920	643	3 319	14	28	-	-	-
1921	648	3 086	15	30	-	-	-
1922	660	3 288	12	40	-	-	-
1923	673	2 164	13	39	-	-	-
1924	641	1 901	13	44	-	-	-
1925	684	2 331	18	44	-	-	-
1926	686	2 468	20	45	-	-	-
1927	689	2 567	21	46	-	-	-
1928	732	2 638	30	53	-	-	-
1929	708	2 479	34	59	-	-	-
1930	730	2 395	29	70	-	-	-
1931	?	2 217	30	80	-	-	-
1932	739	2 013	35	91	-	-	-
1933	741	1 973	36	94	-	-	-

Table 5B.2 — Telecommunications (continued)

year	telegraph stations no.	telegrams thousands	telephones thousands see note *	telephone calls millions see note **	mobile telephones thousands	faxes thousands	fax messages millions
1934	794	1 998	39	129	-	-	-
1935	787	2 060	41	114	-	-	-
1936	787	2 152	43	120	-	-	-
1937	790	2 217	50	110	-	-	-
1938	792	2 201	54	108	-	-	-
1939	793	2 281	58	111	-	-	-
1940	828	2 433	59	118	-	-	-
1941	?	?	64	129	-	-	-
1942	887	3 182	68	142	-	-	-
1943	899	3 700	62	134	-	-	-
1944	888	4 191	65	118	-	-	-
1945	901	4 830	67	127	-	-	-
1946	926	5 492	75	139	-	-	-
1947	902	5 336	83	154	-	-	-
1948	916	4 710	113	164	-	-	-
1949	932	3 117	96	186	-	-	-
1950	952	2 776	114	173	-	-	-
1951	1 022	3 643	126	190	-	-	-
1952	1 080	3 501	141	216	-	-	-
1953	1 113	3 459	159	234	-	-	-
1954	1 149	3 419	178	256	-	-	-
1955	1 208	3 536	198	285	-	-	-
1956	1 269	3 651	215	316	-	-	-
1957	1 313	3 677	234	340	-	-	-
1958	1 454	3 739	255	365	-	-	-
1959	1 521	3 795	279	447	-	-	-
1960	1 526	3 887	301	492	-	-	-
1961	1 584	4 009	324	541	-	-	-
1962	1 594	4 048	345	608	-	-	-
1963	1 618	4 197	367	697	-	-	-

Table 5B.2 — Telecommunications (continued)

year	telegraph stations no.	telegrams thousands	telephones thousands see note *	telephone calls millions see note **	mobile telephones thousands	faxes thousands	fax messages millions
1964	1 637	4 337	393	819	-	-	-
1965	1 671	4 591	410	838	-	-	-
1966	1 703	4 737	428	933	-	?	2
1967	1 712	4 893	450	1 018	-	?	2
1968	1 721	4 977	476	1 145	-	?	2
1969	1 719	5 113	507	1 348	-	?	2
1970	1 715	5 090	542	1 578	-	?	4
1971	1 702	5 078	583	1 838	-	?	4
1972	1 703	4 925	626	2 103	-	?	5
1973	1 695	4 891	675	2 597	-	?	8
1974	1 693	4 542	716	2 604	-	?	9
1975	1 718	3 582	756	2 657	-	?	9
1976	1 719	3 053	798	2 776	-	?	9
1977	1 716	2 615	840	3 093	-	?	10
1978	1 735	2 224	904	3 296	-	?	13
1979	1 649	2 205	940	3 518	-	?	18
1980	1 626	2 134	989	4 037	-	?	23
1981	1 590	1 869	1 057	4 467	-	?	34
1982	1 558	1 849	1 149	5 248	-	?	43
1983	1 574	1 701	1 249	5 450	-	?	57
1984	1 556	1 475	1 325	5 780	-	17	64
1985	1 564	1 427	1 400	6 370	-	18	71
1986	1 553	1 246	1 512	7 062	-	21	77
1987	1 547	1 087	1 655	8 069	-	24	85
1988	1 537	1 114	1 849	9 226	-	28	92
1989	1 550	?	2 077	10 843	-	28	90
1990	?	1 166	2 379	12 724	7	26	76
1991	?	1 122	2 694	14 710	13	21	52
1992	?	890	3 014	17 151	37	15	32
1993	?	837	3 271	19 489	101	9	18

Table 5B.2 — Telecommunications (continued)

year	telegraph stations no.	telegrams thousands	telephones thousands see note *	telephone calls millions see note **	mobile telephones thousands	faxes thousands	fax messages millions
1994	?	769	3 474	20 757	174	6	9
1995	?	771	3 643	21 306	341	4	6
1996	?	852	3 822	21 910	664	3	4

## Notes:

\* Telephones — Until 1927, the series includes only the telephones installed by the Anglo-Portuguese Telephones company. In 1928, the number of such telephones was 23 thousand. After 1950, the series includes only the main telephones.

\*\* Telephone calls — Until 1927, the series includes only conversations made with the Anglo-Portuguese Telephones company. In 1928, these conversations amounted to 52 thousand. Until 1951, the series corresponds to the number of telephone calls made. From 1952 to 1984, the series corresponds to an estimate of the number of impulses obtained through the formula: total number of impulses = impulses in national automatic conversations + number of national manual conversations + number of international conversations x 24. After 1985, the series corresponds to the number of impulses.

## **SECTION J — FINANCIAL ACTIVITIES**

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

In the sector of financial operations or activities, it is possible to distinguish three sub-sectors: financial intermediation, insurance and other financial activities.

### **1 — Financial Intermediation**

Financial intermediation traditionally corresponded to the activity of banks in the broad sense, i.e. companies whose business basically consists of receiving deposits and granting loans.

#### **— New types of financial intermediaries**

Decree-Law No. 46302 of 27 April 1965 regulated the creation of parabanking institutions, namely:

- a) Property or securities investment fund management companies.
- b) Securities portfolio management companies.
- c) Credit sales finance companies.
- d) Third party debt collection companies.

Property or securities investment fund management companies were later regulated by Decree-Law No. 134/85 of 2 May, Decree-Law No. 246/85 of 12 July and Decree-Law 229-C/88 of 4 July.

Securities portfolio management companies were later regulated by Decree-Law No. 271/72 of 2 August and Decree-Law No. 495/88 of 30 December.

Credit sales finance companies were later regulated, with the name of finance companies for credit purchases, by Decree-Law No. 49/89 of 22 February.

Third party debt collection companies were later regulated, with the name of factoring companies, by Decree-Law No. 56/86 of 18 March.

Later, authorisation was given for the creation of yet other new types of financial intermediaries, namely:

- a) Leasing companies, which were authorised by Decree-Law No. 135/79 of 18 May and later regulated by Decree-Law No. 103/86 of 19 May.



b) Regional development companies, which were authorised by Decree-Law No. 499/80 of 20 October.

c) Risk capital companies, which were authorised by Decree-Law No. 17/86 of 5 February.

d) Investment companies, which were authorised by Decree-Law No. 77/86 of 2 May.

e) Group purchase management companies, which were authorised by Decree-Law No. 393/87 of 31 December.

f) Business development companies, which were authorised by Decree-Law No. 248/88 of 15 July.

### — Summary of the types of financial intermediaries currently in existence

Current Portuguese legislation distinguishes between the following range of financial intermediaries:

a) Monetary intermediaries, amongst which are:

— the central bank, i.e. the Bank of Portugal, a public company whose basic law was approved by Decree-Law No. 337/90 of 30 October and which today forms an integral part of the European system of central banks;

— banks in the narrow sense, i.e. joint-stock companies whose activity is regulated by Decree-Law No. 298/92 of 31 December;

— the *Caixa Geral de Depósitos*, a joint-stock company with exclusively public capital under the terms of Decree-Law No. 287/93 of 20 August;

— *caixas económicas* (savings banks), whose activity is regulated by Decree-Laws No. 136/79 of 18 May, No. 231/79 of 24 July, No. 281/80 of 14 August, No. 79/81 of 20 April and No. 319/97 of 25 November;

— and agricultural credit cooperatives, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Laws No. 24/91 of 11 January and No. 320/97 of 25 November.

b) Other financial intermediaries, amongst which are:

— leasing companies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Law No. 72/95 of 15 April;

— investment companies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Law No. 260/94 of 22 October;

— factoring companies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Law No. 171/95 of 18 July;

— regional development companies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Laws No. 25/91 of 11 January and 247/94 of 7 October;

— finance companies for credit purchases, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Law No. 206/95 of 14 August;

- investment funds, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Laws No. 276/94 of 2 November and No. 294/95 of 17 November;
- risk capital companies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Laws No. 433/91 of 7 November and No. 175/94 of 27 June;
- business development companies, whose legal regime was standardised with that of risk capital companies by Decree-Law No. 433/91 of 7 November;
- holding companies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Laws No. 495/88 of 30 December and No. 318/94 of 24 December;
- group purchase management companies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Laws No. 237/91 of 2 July and No. 22/94 of 27 January.

\*

No data is presented here about the activity of monetary intermediaries, because they are covered by tables of Chapter 7. Table 5J.1 presents the basic data available about the activities of other financial intermediaries. Table 5J.3 presents the basic data available about one of the most important financial activities: the discounting (and protesting) of commercial bills.

## 2 — Insurance

The insurance sector traditionally corresponded to insurance companies, joint-stock companies whose business is to receive certain amounts (normally referred to as premiums) in exchange for an undertaking to pay other amounts (normally referred to as indemnities) in the event of certain occurrences (normally referred to as losses).

The history of insurance activity in Portugal, to which little attention was traditionally paid, has benefited in recent years from a certain development, of which an example is the first Conference on Insurance History in Portugal (reviewed in [Valério, 1998](#)), as well as publications such as [Magalhães, 1997](#) and [Caetano, 2000](#).

Today, insurance companies are regulated by Decree-Law No. 94-B/98 of 17 April.

The activities of pension fund management and other complementary social security activities have recently been added to the traditional activities in this sub-sector.

Table 5J.3 presents the basic data available about insurance and pension fund management activities.

### 3 — Services auxiliary to financial intermediation

Services auxiliary to financial intermediation traditionally corresponded to the activities of the so-called foreign exchange dealers, i.e. firms whose business is the buying and selling of precious metals and currencies depending on the supply and demand of economic agents in general.

Law No. 1894 of 11 April 1935 attributed subsidiary credit functions to stock markets, stockbrokers and foreign exchange brokers and exchange offices.

Portuguese legislation currently distinguishes between the following types of services auxiliary to financial intermediation:

— companies of stockbrokers and broker-dealers, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Laws No. 229-I/88 of 4 July and No. 417/91 of 26 October;

— money market and foreign exchange market mediation companies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Law No. 110/94 of 26 April;

— asset management companies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Law No. 163/94 of 4 June;

— foreign exchange agencies, whose activity is regulated by Decree-Laws No. 3/94 of 11 January and No. 298/95 of 18 November;

Justino, 1994 marks the beginning of a history of the Portuguese stock market.

Tables 5J.4 and 5J.5 respectively present the basic data available about the formation and dissolution of companies and about the activity of share and bond issues and the volume of the value of their transactions, particularly on the stock market.

### References

CAETANO, António Alves — A Companhia Fidelidade e os seguros na Lisboa oitocentista. Lisboa: author's edition, 2000.

JUSTINO, David — História da Bolsa de Lisboa. Lisboa: Bolsa de Valores de Lisboa, 1994.

MAGALHÃES, Joaquim Romero — Tranquilidade — história de uma companhia de seguros. Lisboa: Companhia de Seguros Tranquilidade, 1997.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — 1º Encontro de história dos seguros em Portugal. Estudos de Economia, vol. XVIII, no. 1, 1998.

## Tables

- 5J.1 — Other financial intermediaries
- 5J.2 — Discounting and protesting of bills
- 5J.3 — Insurance and pension funds
- 5J.4 — Formation and dissolution of companies
- 5J.5 — Issue and transaction of securities

## Table 5J.1 — Other financial intermediaries

Source — Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras

### A — Leasing companies

Remark — Although leasing companies have been authorised since 1979, the statistical series relating to them only began to be published in 1983.

year	leasing companies number	establishments number	assets 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	credit 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
...				
1983	?	?	6 485	153
1984	?	?	12 605	504
1985	?	12	21 587	918
1986	7	13	33 014	1 234
1987	8	16	69 271	1 877
1988	8	19	155 432	3 566
1989	16	34	249 522	7 822
1990	21	49	368 880	13 363
1991	27	71	481 404	15 025
1992	33	98	603 945	15 540
1993	35	108	666 752	13 764
1994	35	120	604 400	546 548
1995	35	112	590 910	542 895
1996	33	106	710 696	657 022
1997	29	106	725 524	671 148
1998	24	98	896 951	840 898

### B — Investment companies

Remark — The existence of investment companies was only authorised in 1986.

Table 5J.1 — Other financial intermediaries (continued)

year	investment companies number	establishments number	assets 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	credit 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1986	5	6	14 777	8 634
1987	6	8	50 087	20 418
1988	10	11	89 430	51 250
1989	16	18	130 244	79 023
1990	16	21	153 326	97 660
1991	14	22	192 426	90 408
1992	14	21	225 695	120 009
1993	7	9	39 770	10 152
1994	6	7	35 936	5 510
1995	5	5	19 726	50
1996	3	3	8 307	427
1997	3	3	9 065	1 515
1998	3	3	13 508	1 877

### C — Factoring companies

Remark —The existence of factoring companies was only authorised in 1986.

year	factoring companies number	establishments number	assets 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	credit 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1986	2	3	2 917	2 594
1987	3	4	4 625	3 853
1988	4	5	12 094	10 792
1989	4	6	22 993	22 041
1990	5	10	39 521	38 372
1991	7	12	62 954	60 257
1992	10	15	93 377	88 304
1993	12	19	118 332	110 892
1994	11	19	131 272	119 297
1995	11	17	166 907	160 600
1996	11	20	191 855	183 698

Table 5J.1 — Other financial intermediaries (continued)

year	factoring companies number	establishments number	assets 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	credit 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1997	10	18	229 881	225 523
1998	9	16	240 462	209 289

### D — Finance companies for credit purchases

Remark — Although finance companies for credit purchases were authorised in 1965, the statistical series relating to them only began to be published in 1991.

year	finance companies for credit purchases number	establishments number	assets 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	credit 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
...				
1991	16	29	66 329	57 883
1992	19	35	85 827	72 401
1993	24	44	75 385	60 009
1994	26	54	113 307	99 765
1995	25	54	171 473	154 533
1996	27	60	233 086	217 729
1997	26	54	267 917	247 685
1998	26	55	340 201	316 289

### E — Other financial companies

Remark — The statistical series relating to other finance companies only began to be published in 1982 and ceased to be published from 1991 onwards.

year	other financial companies number	establishments number	assets 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	credit 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
...				
1982	1	?	39 343	23 840
1983	1	?	49 065	21 511

Table 5J.1 — Other financial intermediaries (continued)

year	other financial companies number	establishments number	assets 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	credit 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1984	1	?	52 046	27 412
1985	1	?	48 317	25 295
1986	6	8	74 413	37 388
1987	6	4	73 039	36 532
1988	6	8	70 422	35 996
1989	5	7	66 442	30 777
1990	5	7	43 792	19 306
...				



## Table 5J.2 — Discounting and protesting of bills

Source — Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras

year	discounts		protests	
	10 <sup>3</sup> bills	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	10 <sup>3</sup> bills	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1930	1 750	6 801	71	255
1931	1 524	5 401	78	296
1932	?	?	47	145
1933	?	?	35	103
1934	?	?	32	94
1935	1 932	6 284	30	82
1936	2 118	6 521	32	80
1937	2 288	6 958	35	125
1938	2 434	7 531	38	91
1939	2 566	7 671	40	84
1940	2 662	8 632	33	79
1941	2 666	8 338	29	68
1942	2 363	8 414	15	50
1943	2 271	8 973	14	44
1944	2 444	11 131	17	74
1945	2 646	13 290	24	91
1946	3 207	17 108	26	95
1947	3 696	20 914	40	181
1948	4 149	22 537	47	208
1949	4 407	22 774	67	309
1950	4 485	23 640	65	276
1951	4 494	25 639	52	232
1952	4 944	28 523	47	219
1953	5 200	29 341	54	238
1954	5 558	32 255	49	205
1955	6 148	37 506	52	196
1956	6 599	41 654	62	291
1957	6 982	47 043	65	319
1958	7 297	51 748	69	344

Table 5J.2 — Discounting and protesting of bills (continued)

year	discounts		protests	
	10 <sup>3</sup> bills	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	10 <sup>3</sup> bills	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1959	7 935	56 193	70	278
1960	8 680	62 778	75	337
1961	9 024	71 082	87	420
1962	8 847	76 458	92	464
1963	8 731	82 135	74	387
1964	9 187	93 065	62	380
1965	10 186	112 842	57	349
1966	11 158	127 117	67	469
1967	11 984	135 201	80	806
1968	12 993	146 784	86	841
1969	14 156	169 333	83	643
1970	14 708	201 881	91	848
1971	13 930	242 319	110	1 142
1972	14 476	280 594	98	988
1973	14 982	377 821	72	727
1974	14 600	494 982	91	2 364
1975	12 123	534 501	182	12 600
1976	11 216	602 282	127	6 151
1977	11 471	786 864	78	4 276
1978	9 261	890 715	91	5 698
1979	9 554	1 169 577	112	8 951
1980	8 875	1 324 318	91	8 320
1981	9 989	1 825 188	86	9 464
1982	9 711	2 175 939	124	19 281
1983	8 679	2 461 592	136	30 639
1984	7 888	2 614 955	121	30 328
1985	7 404	2 640 190	96	28 277
1986	6 948	2 463 781	61	21 792
1987	6 716	2 406 827	46	20 016
1988	6 614	2 554 679	40	19 785
1989	6 052	2 816 800	40	21 803
1990	5 912	3 450 356	40	24 824

Table 5J.2 — Discounting and protesting of bills (continued)

year	discounts		protests	
	10 <sup>3</sup> bills	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	10 <sup>3</sup> bills	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1991	6 326	4 392 319	48	49 796
1992	6 883	5 128 528	66	74 864
1993	6 678	5 233 470	86	97 756
1994	6 190	4 662 992	74	72 446
1995	?	?	54	58 963
1996	?	?	21	39 832
1997	4 264	3 679 659	32	30 383
1998	3 926	3 427 153	26	60 374

## Table 5J.3 — Insurance and pension funds

Source — From 1918 to 1959 and from 1969 to 1974, Anuário Estatístico; from 1960 to 1968, Anuário do Grémio dos Seguradores and Boletim de Seguros; from 1975 to 1982, Actividade seguradora em Portugal — elementos estatísticos, a periodical publication of the *Instituto dos Seguros de Portugal* (Portuguese Insurance Institute); from 1983 onwards, Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras.

### A — Insurance

year	insurance companies number	establishments number	insured capital 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	premiums covered 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	indemnities paid 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1918	?	?	?	36	10
1919	?	?	?	29	30
1920	?	?	?	24	7
1921	?	?	6 599	28	6
1922	?	?	8 795	38	10
1923	?	?	12 580	54	14
1924	?	?	16 875	60	11
1925	?	?	17 849	64	14
1926	?	?	17 864	66	19
1927	?	?	20 235	71	20
1928	?	?	22 724	(a) 50	(a) 16
1929	?	?	25 867	(a) 67	(a) 16
1930	?	?	22 190	70	28
1931	?	?	23 098	65	37
1932	?	?	17 700	97	27
1933	?	?	26 321	121	43
1934	?	?	29 551	132	51
1935	?	?	32 061	144	60
1936	?	?	33 044	151	56
1937	75	?	36 293	174	66
1938	75	?	38 396	188	73

Table 5J.3 — Insurance and pension funds (continued)

year	insurance companies number	establishments number	insured capital 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	premiums covered 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	indemnities paid 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1939	75	?	40 996	217	67
1940	74	?	45 138	267	79
1941	75	?	49 398	323	129
1942	80	?	57 935	424	101
1943	85	?	66 338	483	169
1944	85	?	75 742	529	185
1945	86	?	84 293	510	225
1946	87	?	99 675	613	289
1947	86	?	117 667	710	373
1948	88	?	137 190	767	364
1949	86	?	127 541	803	357
1950	86	?	139 154	818	354
1951	85	?	149 051	876	329
1952	87	?	160 343	954	467
1953	86	?	167 261	983	410
1954	86	?	177 311	1 040	438
1955	86	?	195 190	1 112	457
1956	86	?	215 000	1 232	528
1957	86	?	225 032	1 313	588
1958	86	?	249 810	1 397	672
1959	86	?	270 079	1 475	668
1960	86	?	279 479	1 585	755
1961	86	?	314 162	1 634	821
1962	86	?	322 505	1 742	833
1963	86	?	355 493	1 870	963
1964	86	?	394 492	1 992	1 156
1965	86	?	438 684	2 231	1 333
1966	86	?	488 573	2 523	1 463
1967	86	?	531 973	2 899	1 456
1968	86	?	586 900	3 246	1 617
1969	87	?	690 554	3 929	1 643

Table 5J.3 — Insurance and pension funds (continued)

year	insurance companies number	establishments number	insured capital 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	premiums covered 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	indemnities paid 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1970	87	?	771 896	4 619	1 949
1971	85	?	900 288	5 403	2 395
1972	82	?	1 215 643	6 573	3 008
1973	77	?	1 860 869	7 918	3 403
1974	75	?	2 131 315	9 493	4 301

(a) Does not include life insurance.

year	insurance companies number	establishments number	total assets 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	premiums covered 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	indemnities paid 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1974	75	?	28 207	9 493	4 301
1975	81	?	31 673	11 898	6 757
1976	72	?	33 323	14 099	7 197
1977	70	?	38 714	17 125	9 780
1978	70	?	54 464	21 211	11 817
1979	68	?	63 798	26 749	16 169
1980	51	?	84 745	35 709	19 832
1981	50	?	98 038	43 511	25 346
1982	50	?	117 587	53 791	33 773
1983	50	632	139 359	66 221	39 693
1984	49	672	166 492	80 120	43 384
1985	50	669	191 137	95 947	52 186
1986	49	656	236 430	118 717	63 766
1987	55	666	308 563	140 737	83 847
1988	62	699	383 469	177 386	107 890
1989	66	738	519 538	224 945	133 758
1990	70	787	686 144	295 897	180 331
1991	81	819	907 801	356 099	223 038
1992	88	923	1 090 089	434 654	267 536
1993	89	923	1 361 460	533 737	297 746
1994	92	985	1 671 276	637 127	353 848

Table 5J.3 — Insurance and pension funds (continued)

year	insurance companies number	establishments number	total assets 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	premiums covered 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	indemnities paid 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1995	93	993	2 115 075	793 947	345 341
1996	94	1007	2 673 127	942 123	406 390
1997	93	1031	3 289 664	985 379	460 582
1998	96	1071	3 941 400	1 168 525	551 131

### B — Pension fund management companies

year	management companies	pension funds	capital 10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1990	23	190	169 424
1991	27	200	291 136
1992	28	216	452 614
1993	26	219	789 291
1994	27	209	986 870
1995	28	226	1 384 610
1996	31	237	1 650 347
1997	29	237	2 016 929
1998	29	233	2 321 446

## Table 5J.4 — Formation and dissolution of companies

Source — Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras

year	formation of companies		dissolution of companies		capital increases
	number	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	number	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1930	1 135	86	555	47	?
1931	1 052	76	513	49	?
1932	1 226	79	511	45	?
1933	1 243	94	478	57	?
1934	1 258	77	410	36	?
1935	1 244	98	390	30	?
1936	1 275	91	369	29	?
1937	1 284	60	408	27	?
1938	1 258	98	337	52	?
1939	1 169	67	294	41	?
1940	1 176	102	310	37	?
1941	1 740	188	326	43	?
1942	1 831	305	385	44	?
1943	2 073	287	397	28	?
1944	2 563	395	372	36	?
1945	2 599	610	444	44	?
1946	3 266	367	491	38	?
1947	3 000	628	480	53	?
1948	2 611	312	537	71	?
1949	2 167	192	610	130	?
1950	1 850	182	602	52	?
1951	1 849	194	519	51	?
1952	1 832	200	482	103	?
1953	1 796	506	487	77	?
1954	1 864	397	472	56	?
1955	1 754	215	425	77	?
1956	1 994	256	390	57	?
1957	1 987	298	426	44	?
1958	2 112	462	383	116	?



Table 5J.4 — Formation and dissolution of companies (continued)

year	formation of companies		dissolution of companies		capital increases
	number	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	number	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1959	2 256	1 327	374	94	?
1960	2 320	366	445	56	?
1961	2 056	512	409	167	?
1962	1 836	456	447	85	?
1963	1 795	1 071	666	268	?
1964	2 073	1 559	695	216	?
1965	2 293	2 001	567	182	?
1966	2 404	1 947	568	601	?
1967	3 381	2 266	577	318	?
1968	6 374	1 791	590	261	?
1969	3 123	9 083	597	6 400	?
1970	3 055	2 036	652	305	?
1971	3 558	3 183	596	513	?
1972	3 793	5 595	626	883	?
1973	4 650	7 952	637	821	?
1974	4 526	6 656	636	1 968	?
1975	4 847	3 215	677	1 348	?
1976	6 712	3 458	610	1 051	?
1977	8 862	5 761	692	819	?
1978	8 007	5 991	1 252	903	?
1979	6 963	7 474	1 931	901	?
1980	7 968	11 202	1 103	560	?
1981	10 145	17 568	1 003	770	?
1982	9 929	14 931	1 121	691	?
1983	6 667	15 586	1 099	1 150	?
1984	7 209	19 432	998	1 265	?
1985	8 732	23 445	1 266	3 317	?
1986	12 003	36 595	1 242	5 005	?
1987	12 360	45 538	970	1 680	?
1988	15 549	98 042	1 111	2 009	381 708
1989	17 478	112 116	1 169	2 352	371 815
1990	19 320	129 911	1 076	3 541	548 353

Table 5J.4 — Formation and dissolution of companies (continued)

year	formation of companies		dissolution of companies		capital increases
	number	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	number	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1991	18 195	156 176	1 031	4 763	?
1992	22 339	94 530	1 128	8 438	864 520
1993	21 493	183 685	1 314	21 193	761 999
1994	21 484	140 190	1 551	22 039	714 647
1995	23 094	174 953	1 869	65 168	842 584
1996	24 170	193 918	1 970	31 496	946 039
1997	25 377	151 023	2 626	86 532	1 400 530
1998	28 462	243 625	6 745	65 317	1 230 878

## Table 5J.5 — Issue and transaction of securities

Source — Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras

Unit — Million escudos

year	share issues	private bond issues	public bonds issues	securities transactions
1936	?	11	?	?
1937	?	191	?	?
1938	59	2	?	?
1939	54	6	?	?
1940	155	38	?	?
1941	126	77	?	?
1942	269	102	?	?
1943	367	28	?	?
1944	522	128	?	?
1945	806	84	?	?
1946	570	351	?	?
1947	696	58	?	?
1948	318	303	?	?
1949	332	158	?	?
1950	610	52	?	?
1951	385	520	?	?
1952	801	61	?	?
1953	1 591	166	?	?
1954	665	912	?	?
1955	479	510	?	?
1956	709	471	?	?
1957	1 478	715	?	1 377
1958	1 344	528	?	1 241
1959	2 052	1 070	?	1 362
1960	956	993	?	1 443
1961	1 191	579	?	1 171
1962	931	313	?	847
1963	2 701	930	?	931

Table 5J.5 — Issue and transaction of securities (continued)

year	share issues	private bond issues	public bonds issues	securities transactions
1964	3 158	318	?	1 220
1965	5 782	315	?	1 502
1966	4 365	959	?	2 116
1967	3 407	1 611	?	1 580
1968	1 791	796	?	1 879
1969	8 553	490	1 957	4 114
1970	858	528	2 089	3 340
1971	1 220	340	2 118	4 258
1972	3 752	650	4 076	8 517
1973	4 606	700	5 299	17 446
1974	3 402	475	8 033	3 868
1975	515	0	38 329	0
1976	346	0	46 894	199
1977	4 317	0	55 522	255
1978	3 496	864	53 176	368
1979	8 081	317	109 530	327
1980	24 685	0	206 855	619
1981	22 457	5 700	203 417	689
1982	16 031	20 511	172 417	605
1983	29 547	9 922	202 587	?
1984	52 898	21 518	299 000	2 168
1985	60 505	70 478	395 059	10 256
1986	112 470	27 960	173 055	35 474
1987	261 282	158 654	320 670	267 509
1988	261 876	106 390	589 323	223 970
1989	299 356	177 245	742 127	434 821
1990	505 220	310 085	1 016 948	732 450
1991	526 211	285 270	1 707 342	1 707 308
1992	654 411	364 344	1 569 156	1 172 972
1993	693 345	367 245	1 286 981	3 449 925
1994	582 072	452 952	966 509	3 780 879
1995	778 931	973 986	1 730 591	2 788 464
1996	517 283	1 462 548	1 720 591	3 602 851

Table 5J.5 — Issue and transaction of securities (continued)

year	share issues	private bond issues	public bonds issues	securities transactions
1997	370 700	1 482 600	1 477 300	6 450 409
1998	851 600	1 451 000	1 420 100	10 629 046

## **SECTION K — REAL ESTATE, RENTING AND BUSINESS ACTIVITIES**

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

This sector of economic life brings together three types of activities whose relative importance has varied significantly over time.

Real estate operations — property transactions and mortgages — are obviously very ancient activities, which must have expanded in the nineteenth century with the disentailment of a significant part of property. However, the publication of systematic statistical data on these operations only began in the 1930s. The corresponding series are presented in the first table of this section.

The renting of property, particularly for housing purposes, is also a very ancient activity, which must similarly have expanded from the nineteenth century onwards with the absolute and relative growth of the urban population. However, systematic statistical data were never published about this, except from the viewpoint of prices (in this case, more precisely, rents). It is perfectly credible that in the last quarter of the twentieth century there has been a regression in this activity, for two reasons: the disincentive to engage in rental activity as a result of the freezing of house rents for a long period of time; the incentive to buy one's own housing as a result of the particularly favourable credit conditions introduced for this purpose (a policy carried out partly as a means of stimulating the building industry, and partly as a means of easing certain social tensions, some of them resulting from the above-mentioned freezing of rents and its effects on the housing market and the state of conservation of houses).

The rendering of services to businesses, on the other hand, is traditionally a relatively insignificant activity. It only gained any real importance at the end of the twentieth century, with the development of certain activities normally referred to as the liberal professions. Such services developed not only in those areas where they already had some importance, although above all in the form of personal services — as is the case with the professions of law, engineering and medicine — but also in multiple areas where they almost never existed before (or did not in fact exist at all) — as is the case with architecture, management consultancy, computer services, research and development, etc. The very fact that the publication of systematic statistical information on these activities only began in the 1990s and has not yet acquired a stabilised form is extremely significant. Nonetheless, the second table in this section represents an attempt to synthesise the information available about these activities.

**Tables**

5K.1 — Property transactions and mortgages

5K.2 — Indicators of the activity of services rendered to businesses

## Table 5K.1 — Property transaction and mortgages

Source — Estatísticas Financeiras

year	transactions		mortgages		mortgage credit
	thousands	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	thousands	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1936	?	?	23	?	272
1937	?	?	23	?	326
1938	?	?	23	?	356
1939	?	?	23	?	341
1940	?	?	20	?	301
1941	?	?	19	?	274
1942	?	?	15	?	361
1943	?	?	14	?	437
1944	?	?	14	?	538
1945	?	?	17	?	638
1946	?	?	19	?	896
1947	?	?	18	?	1 281
1948	?	?	23	?	1 530
1949	?	?	19	?	1 259
1950	?	?	20	?	814
1951	?	?	19	?	817
1952	?	?	18	?	865
1953	?	?	19	?	1 022
1954	?	?	20	?	1 124
1955	?	?	20	?	1 292
1956	?	?	21	?	1 651
1957	?	?	21	?	1 740
1958	?	?	20	?	2 158
1959	?	?	20	?	2 170
1960	?	?	19	?	2 421
1961	?	?	19	7 125	2 664
1962	?	?	16	6 750	2 644
1963	?	?	16	8 339	2 917
1964	?	?	15	8 315	3 179



Table 5K.1 — Property transactions and mortgages (continued)

year	transactions		mortgages		mortgage credit
	thousands	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	thousands	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1965	?	?	15	8 860	3 449
1966	?	?	15	11 804	4 601
1967	?	?	19	14 351	5 213
1968	141	9 612	21	15 034	5 751
1969	148	11 024	21	19 239	7 206
1970	161	12 895	21	19 240	7 960
1971	165	15 612	22	32 044	13 697
1972	175	20 412	23	31 331	14 169
1973	180	28 842	20	30 376	14 772
1974	175	28 886	22	35 732	17 167
1975	174	21 868	18	36 131	18 365
1976	185	25 187	20	28 343	14 797
1977	202	37 247	?	?	?
1978	205	50 295	43	68 187	38 949
1979	213	63 366	45	92 200	56 109
1980	217	92 301	53	125 912	79 239
1981	241	140 338	70	222 041	140 446
1982	242	168 241	62	237 156	153 701
1983	235	201 823	55	260 702	156 885
1984	210	222 103	61	321 366	196 612
1985	191	284 264	64	321 908	190 382
1986	207	365 516	63	336 493	233 467
1987	236	545 037	77	505 050	360 547
1988	250	744 504	66	536 753	371 380
1989	225	762 353	58	598 285	399 925
1990	170	918 116	51	628 400	418 165
1991	235	1 200 637	57	810 256	511 139
1992	248	1 314 653	65	1 032 829	725 302
1993	258	1 455 686	75	1 193 998	704 863
1994	263	1 556 816	97	1 307 662	924 954
1995	266	1 733 607	101	1 451 877	1 088 476
1996	275	1 837 548	120	1 712 368	1 408 083

Table 5K.1 — Property transactions and mortgages (continued)

year	transactions		mortgages		mortgage credit
	thousands	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	thousands	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos
1997	305	2 315 455	151	2 265 556	1 794 148
1998	345	3 072 817	216	3 371 336	2 733 223

## Table 5K.2 — Indicators of the activity of services rendered to business

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas das Empresas — Comércio e Outros Serviços.

### A — Volume of sales

Unit — Million escudos

year	real estate activities	renting of machinery and equipment	computer services	research and development	other services rendered to business
1991	136	13	-	-	463
1992	134	17	-	-	502
1993	243	19	-	-	712
1994	282	31	-	-	761
1995	266	31	-	-	994
1996	1 291	193	117	0.5	2 204
1997	2 808	192	167	1.3	1 602

Table 5K.2 — Indicators of the activity of services rendered to business (continued)

## B — Indices of activity

Unit — Base 1995 = 100

Remark — The index was calculated by deflating the volume of sales with the price index from Table 8.1 Computer services and research and development were not considered here, as no figure was available for their volume of sales in 1995.

year	real estate activities	renting of machinery and equipment	other services rendered to business
1991	65	53	59
1992	59	64	59
1993	100	67	78
1994	110	104	80
1995	100	100	100
1996	471	604	215
1997	1 002	588	153

# SECTION L — PUBLIC ADMINISTRATION

EUGÉNIA MATA (Faculdade de Economia — Universidade Nova de Lisboa)

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

## 1 — General aspects

In institutional terms, public administration includes three sub-sectors: central administration, local administration and social security.

In the sub-sector of central administration, a distinction must be drawn, from the functional viewpoint, between a wide variety of activities: the administration itself in the narrow sense, security, justice, defence, support for economic activity, education, health, etc.

In the sub-sector of local administration, and again from the functional viewpoint, there is similarly a variety of different activities, although the range is not as vast as it is in the case of central administration (in particular, there is no defence activity).

Strictly speaking, the sub-sector of social security can be considered an autonomous service of the central administration, specifically dedicated to this particular function.

Either because of the actual classification that is recommended by the various state bodies or for reasons of simple convenience, many of the data referring to the activities of the public administration are to be found in different chapters and sections of this collection. Thus:

a) Chapter 4 contains the fundamental data on the number of employees in the public administration sector;

b) Chapter 9 contains the fundamental data regarding the financial life of the central administration;

c) Section M of this chapter contains the fundamental data about the pursuit of the functions of education and scientific research;

d) Section N of this chapter contains the fundamental data about the pursuit of the functions of health and social security;

The present section therefore concentrates on part of the data relating to the civil functions of the public administration and the military function of defence.

## 2 — Justice

Amongst these functions, only justice has been subject to any kind of systematic treatment since the first Portuguese statistical publications. Between 1878 and 1880, volumes were published under the title of Estatística da Justiça Criminal (Statistics of Criminal Justice), but, unfortunately, they were not given any continuity. Meanwhile, the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) began to include increasingly detailed information about this subject. In 1936, a specialist publication was recommenced on the subject of justice with the title Estatística Judiciária (Legal Statistics). This publication has continued until the present day, although its frequency of publication is not strictly annual, and it has been known since 1969 as Estatísticas da Justiça (Justice Statistics). Meanwhile, a synthesis of the information that it provided continued to be included in the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook).

The series that are set out in these publications have been subject to frequent breaks in their continuity. Nonetheless, it has proved possible to present a summary of their contents in Table 5L.1.

## 3 — Local administration finance

It has only been possible to find regularly published data about local administration finance since the end of the 1920s. A summary of the most relevant data is presented in Table 5L.2. These data do, however, reveal two gaps:

- a) Absence of any data for parishes, which may be considered relatively unimportant, due to their limited financial significance.
- b) Absence of data for the autonomous regions since 1978, which may be considered relatively important, due to their obvious financial significance, since everything points to the fact that they were more important than the data for the autonomous districts of the adjacent islands.

## 4 — Indicators of activity

As a summary to this section, an attempt was made to construct overall indicators of the sector's activity, distinguishing between public administration in the narrow sense and defence.

The nominal index of the activity of the sub-sector of public administration in the narrow sense was obtained by adding together public expenditure from the items headed 'administration',

'overseas' and 'economy', in Table 9.5, and the expenditure of local administration from Table 5L.2. There is, obviously, an underestimation of the effective values of this index until 1927-1928, due to the absence of data relating to local administration, and, from 1978 onwards, due to the absence of data relating to regional administration.

The nominal index of the activity of the sub-sector of defence coincides with the public expenditure for the item headed 'defence' in Table 9.5.

For the construction of these indices, public expenditure was not considered in relation to the following areas:

a) The item entitled 'public debt', as these were not expenses relating to the everyday operation of the services.

b) The item entitled 'education', as these were expenses relating to the 'education' sector and not to the 'public administration' sector.

c) The item entitled 'social expenditure' as these were expenses relating to the 'health and social security sector' and not to the 'public administration sector'.

The real indices of the activity of the sub-sectors of public administration in the narrow sense and defence were obtained by dividing the respective nominal indices by the price index of Table 8.1.

## Tables

5L.1 — Justice

5L.2 — Local administration finance

5L.3 — Indicators of the activity of public administration and defence

## Table 5L.1 — Justice

Source — Estadística Judiciária, Estadísticas da Justiça and Anuário Estatístico.

Unit — Thousands.

year	finished cases	accused persons tried	defendants sentenced	prisoners
1878		13	8	
1879		12	8	
1880		12	8	
1881		12	8	
...				
1886		16	11	
1887		24	17	
1888		27	20	
1889		29	21	
1890		20	14	
1891		23	16	
...				
1897			18	
...				
1900			18	
...				
1903			16	
1904			17	
1905			18	
1906			18	
1907			18	
1908			18	
1909			19	
1910			15	
1911			13	
1912			13	
1913			13	



Table 5L.1 — Justice (continued)

year	finished cases	accused persons tried	defendants sentenced	prisoners
1914			13	
1915			13	
1916			14	
1917			13	
1918			12	
1919			12	
1920			11	
1921			12	
1922			11	
1923			11	
1924			10	
1925			12	
1926			11	
1927			11	
1928			10	
1929			11	
1930			11	
1931			10	
1932			11	
1933			12	
1934			13	
1935			14	
1936		17	10	
1937		19	11	
1938		22	12	
1939		24	13	
1940		24	12	
1941		25	13	
1942		24	14	9
1943				9
1944	179	25	15	10
1945	127			11

Table 5L.1 — Justice (continued)

year	finished cases	accused persons tried	defendants sentenced	prisoners
1946	178			11
1947	177			10
1948	193	34	20	10
1949	200			11
1950	211	41	25	12
1951	221	39	24	12
1952	222	42	26	13
1953	240	43	26	13
1954	223	45	28	13
1955	224	50	31	12
1956	270	52	33	12
1957	269	49	28	11
1958	272	41	24	11
1959	321	37	22	11
1960	287	38	22	10
1961	272	37	22	11
1962	285	38	22	11
1963	360	38	24	11
1964	359	36	22	11
1965	336	38	23	10
1966	286	34	21	10
1967	262	33	19	9
1968	265	30	18	9
1969	269	31	18	8
1970	316	30	15	7
1971	305	27	15	7
1972	291	26	14	6
1973	285	27	13	6
1974	273	18	10	5
1975	292	17	10	6
1976	427	30	13	5
1977	472	29	15	6

Table 5L.1 — Justice (continued)

year	finished cases	accused persons tried	defendants sentenced	prisoners
1978	530	31	16	6
1979	529	32	16	6
1980	585	30	14	5
1981	640	39	12	5
1982	767	37	13	5
1983	777	35	14	6
1984	771	39	16	8
1985	815	50	19	9
1986	834	61	18	8
1987	570	54	19	8
1988	579	54	20	8
1989	607	53	22	8
1990	594	56	22	9
1991	710	72	23	8
1992	739	83	30	9
1993	793	74	37	11
1994	961	95	34	10
1995	523	90	36	12
1996	545	90	37	14
1997	584	91	38	15
1998	620	120	41	14

## Table 5L.2 — Local administration finance

Source — Orçamento Geral do Estado and Anuário Estatístico.

Unit — Million escudos.

### A — Budget and debt of municipalities

year	revenue	expenditure	debt
1927-1928			126
1928-1929	222	253	136
1929-1930	231	244	171
1930-1931	258	290	195
1931-1932	276	284	215
1932-1933	267	273	239
1933-1934	365	378	240
1934-1935	618	642	258
1936	428	442	259
1937	453	474	264
1938	465	480	276
1939	527	640	328
1940	481	582	368
1941	485	569	384
1942	492	566	384
1943	525	590	388
1944	579	644	381
1945	631	721	319
1946	795	887	409
1947	1 069	1 305	447
1948	1 176	1 443	593
1949	1 321	1 535	820
1950	1 306	1 442	916
1951	1 266	1 353	898
1952	1 308	1 367	928

Table 5L.2 — Local administration finance (continued)

## A — Budget and debt of municipalities (continued)

year	revenue	expenditure	debt
1953	1 365	1 413	937
1954	1 415	1 455	930
1955	1 476	1 513	926
1956	1 582	1 640	964
1957	1 726	1 807	993
1958	1 879	2 001	1 043
1959	2 082	2 160	1 080
1960	2 326	2 441	1 130
1961	2 446	2 628	1 158
1962	2 730	2 897	1 181
1963	3 043	3 168	1 230
1964	3 226	3 321	2 121
1965	3 613	3 781	1 241
1966	5 200	5 440	1 302
1967	5 997	6 232	1 379
1968	6 771	6 568	1 473
1969	7 738	7 431	1 705
1970	7 922	8 435	1 896
1971	9 136	9 587	2 068
1972	10 402	10 402	2 318
1973	11 142	12 131	2 474
1974	13 768	14 491	3 160
1975	14 797	15 263	3 298
1976	23 615	24 450	3 350
1977	32 560	32 997	3 372
1978	56 118	56 856	3 159
1979	65 524	66 298	3 525
1980	62 992	65 126	4 513
1981	86 907	94 458	10 262
1982	96 445	107 454	15 147
1983	100 997	109 966	21 217

Table 5L.2 — Local administration finance (continued)

## A — Budget and debt of municipalities (continued)

year	revenue	expenditure	debt
1984	123 903	128 625	22 471
1985	133 958	137 597	23 687
1986	147 395	151 830	36 936
1987	234 002	241 188	36 133
1988	272 265	283 199	47 745
1989	362 476	378 436	59 377
1990	394 918	411 765	161 429
1991	610 052	636 279	76 502
1992	745 249	771 848	297 308
1993	900 665	934 450	141 475
1994	878 451	914 472	160 667
1995	928 895	965 565	185 292
1996	1 050 080	1 097 877	184 171
1997	1 232 877	1 295 976	188 338
1998	1 062 203	1 117 023	

**B — Budget and debt of the districts and provinces of mainland Portugal**

year	revenue	expenditure	debt
1927-1928			2
1928-1929	8	8	1
1929-1930	12	11	1
1930-1931	12	12	1
1931-1932	11	11	1
1932-1933	10	10	1
1933-1934	11	11	1
1934-1935	15	15	1
1936	12	12	1
1937	11	11	+ 0
1938	13	13	+ 0

Table 5L.2 — Local administration finance (continued)

## B — Budget and debt of the districts and provinces of mainland Portugal (continued)

year	revenue	expenditure	debt
1939	11	11	+ 0
1940	12	12	1
1941	11	12	1
1942	12	12	1
1943	12	12	2
1944	13	14	2
1945	13	14	3
1946	14	15	2
1947	16	17	3
1948	20	20	3
1949	24	24	3
1950	26	26	2
1951	27	27	2
1952	31	31	2
1953	29	29	2
1954	31	31	1
1955	33	33	1
1956	34	34	1
1957	36	36	2
1958	38	38	2
1959	41	41	2
1960	36	36	1
1961	42	42	1
1962	43	43	1
1963	48	48	1
1964	48	48	1
1965	56	56	1
1966	67	67	1
1967	73	73	2
1968	135	80	3
1969	154	91	3

Table 5L.2 — Local administration finance (continued)

## B — Budget and debt of the districts and provinces of mainland Portugal (continued)

year	revenue	expenditure	debt
1970	103	103	3
1971	121	122	3
1972	132	132	3
1973	138	138	3
1974	164	164	3
1975	173	173	2
1976	209	209	2
1977	260	260	4
1978	462	462	3
1979	649	649	3
1980	583	583	3
1981	750	750	3
1982	757	757	2
1983	766	766	2
1984	688	688	2
1985	876	876	1
1986	825	825	1
1987	389	389	1
1988	247	247	+ 0
1989	1 591	1 591	+ 0
1990	1 460	1 460	+ 0
1991	2 317	2 317	+ 0
1992	2 763	2 763	+ 0
1993	298	298	



Table 5L.2 — Local administration finance (continued)

**C — Budget and debt of the autonomous districts of the adjacent islands**

Remark — The autonomous districts of the adjacent islands were abolished in 1977 and replaced by the autonomous regions of Madeira and the Azores, whose public accounts have never been published, not even in the form of summaries in national or regional statistics.

year	revenue	expenditure	debt
1928-1929			2
1929-1930	27	28	2
1930-1931	26	27	2
1931-1932	26	26	2
1932-1933	24	37	6
1933-1934	26	38	18
1934-1935	36	45	16
1936	22	25	18
1937	26	26	17
1938	26	26	17
1939	34	35	17
1940	37	40	18
1941	40	46	21
1942	41	44	24
1943	48	48	24
1944	58	58	24
1945	64	64	28
1946	76	76	30
1947	94	95	33
1948	92	98	37
1949	87	95	41
1950	91	98	50
1951	98	98	52
1952	105	109	57
1953	122	126	70
1954	98	107	78

Table 5L.2 — Local administration finance (continued)

## C — Budget and debt of the autonomous districts of the adjacent islands (continued)

year	revenue	expenditure	debt
1955	116	116	75
1956	112	112	71
1957	126	129	72
1958	132	135	70
1959	137	141	78
1965	193	193	66
1966	208	208	60
1967	216	216	52
1968	224	224	45
1969	262	262	38
1970	293	293	102
1971	323	326	38
1972	348	365	49
1973	472	492	52
1974	610	620	59
1975	784	786	53
1976	1 198	1 201	

**Table 5L.3 — Indicators of the activity of public administration and defence**

Source — Calculations were made as explained in the introduction to this section.

year	public administration		defence	
	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)
1852-1853	5	36	5	65
...				
1855-1856	6	30	3	30
1856-1857	?	?	4	32
...				
1859-1860	?	?	4	37
1860-1861	6	31	4	37
1861-1862	11	52	4	34
1862-1863	11	54	4	37
1863-1864	9	47	4	37
1864-1865	9	44	5	43
1865-1866	9	43	4	39
1866-1867	8	37	5	47
1867-1868	15	69	5	48
1868-1869	7	36	5	43
1869-1870	16	81	5	44
1870-1871	7	37	6	56
1871-1872	7	40	5	51
1872-1873	8	36	5	45
1873-1874	9	40	6	51
1874-1875	10	52	7	66
1875-1876	12	59	8	69
1876-1877	16	74	6	52
1877-1878	14	59	6	50
1878-1879	13	60	7	59
1879-1880	11	50	6	55
1880-1881	12	58	7	59

Table 5L.3 — Indicators of the activity of public administration and defence (continued)

year	public administration		defence	
	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)
1881-1882	12	59	6	57
1882-1883	12	59	6	55
1883-1884	12	61	7	67
1884-1885	13	71	8	79
1885-1886	14	76	9	94
1886-1887	15	83	8	79
1887-1888	16	91	8	81
1888-1889	22	121	7	74
1889-1890	24	114	8	75
1890-1891	21	96	8	72
1891-1892	23	107	9	75
1892-1893	19	86	9	73
1893-1894	15	68	8	68
1894-1895	17	77	8	69
1895-1896	19	86	11	98
1896-1897	20	89	12	96
1897-1898	20	83	12	90
1898-1899	17	71	11	81
1899-1900	22	95	11	85
1900-1901	17	72	10	83
1901-1902	17	75	11	92
1902-1903	18	79	11	93
1903-1904	19	79	12	92
1904-1905	17	70	13	99
1905-1906	20	83	12	93
1906-1907	19	77	13	99
1907-1908	27	112	15	115
1908-1909	26	105	13	97
1909-1910	28	114	13	96
1910-1911	22	91	13	97
1911-1912	19	76	15	113

Table 5L.3 — Indicators of the activity of public administration and defence (continued)

year	public administration		defence	
	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)
1912-1913	30	120	15	109
1913-1914	25	100	14	100
1914-1915	37	137	31	216
1915-1916	50	157	50	294
1916-1917	48	127	64	313
1917-1918	57	97	88	282
1918-1919	69	86	168	389
1919-1920	119	102	178	283
1920-1921	195	103	123	120
1921-1922	204	80	128	93
1922-1923	696	193	184	95
1923-1924	417	79	289	102
1924-1925	581	97	367	113
1925-1926	571	99	385	124
1926-1927	788	135	498	158
1927-1928	644	109	450	141
1928-1929	1 063	180	443	139
1929-1930	1 085	185	493	156
1930-1931	1 106	205	467	161
1931-1932	1 206	240	458	169
1932-1933	1 192	240	567	212
1933-1934	1 271	255	601	223
1934-1935	1 996	398	779	288
1936	1 406	273	528	190
1937	1 407	263	607	210
1938	1 579	304	661	236
1939	1 835	375	645	245
1940	1 726	337	738	267
1941	1 688	293	1 154	372
1942	1 718	244	1 201	317
1943	1 838	231	1 738	406

Table 5L.3 — Indicators of the activity of public administration and defence (continued)

year	public administration		defence	
	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)
1944	2 086	255	1 338	303
1945	2 531	284	1 304	271
1946	3 092	305	1 348	246
1947	4 580	438	1 373	244
1948	4 739	550	1 287	277
1949	4 831	483	1 230	228
1950	4 165	428	1 240	236
1951	4 498	456	1 285	242
1952	4 534	459	1 354	254
1953	4 630	464	1 687	314
1954	4 746	472	1 891	349
1955	5 136	494	1 994	356
1956	5 361	494	2 025	346
1957	6 038	556	2 033	348
1958	6 390	581	2 135	360
1959	7 108	637	2 449	407
1960	8 397	737	2 812	458
1961	8 630	759	4 776	779
1962	9 267	815	5 673	926
1963	10 044	861	5 813	925
1964	10 826	885	6 508	987
1965	10 718	849	7 227	1 061
1966	12 766	986	7 957	1 140
1967	14 702	1 090	9 751	1 341
1968	15 614	1 135	10 673	1 439
1969	17 774	1 258	11 332	1 488
1970	19 946	1 344	12 963	1 620
1971	23 327	1 463	14 555	1 694
1972	26 968	1 561	14 373	1 543
1973	31 964	1 718	16 518	1 647
1974	40 121	1 564	21 244	1 536

Table 5L.3 — Indicators of the activity of public administration and defence (continued)

year	public administration		defence	
	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)	10 <sup>6</sup> escudos	index (base 1913-1914 = 100)
1975	55 274	1 818	17 465	1 065
1976	88 086	2 401	15 461	782
1977	116 421	2 387	17 339	659
1978	159 708	2 583	20 742	622
1979	191 649	2 497	26 576	642
1980	243 477	2 680	34 383	702
1981	317 965	3 015	40995	721
1982	365 746	2 833	49 068	705
1983	418 844	2 585	59 037	676
1984	488 473	2 341	67 932	604
1985	635 460	2 546	81 552	606
1986	698 027	2 502	104 566	695
1987	845 429	2 770	124 484	757
1988	953 586	2 848	148 375	822
1989	1 216 189	3 226	170 728	840
1990	1 471 958	3 443	189 666	823
1991	1 834 369	3 851	211 865	825
1992	2 284 410	4 404	227 798	815
1993	2 375 091	4 299	238 121	800
1994	2 463 273	4 239	259 893	830
1995	2 484 158	4 106	290 069	890
1996	2 643 586	4 238	295 688	879
1997	2 883 495	4 524	274 370	799
1998	2 365 579	3 610	278 108	787

## SECTION M — EDUCATION AND RESEARCH

ALDA DOMINGOS (Escola Superior de Tecnologia e Gestão — Instituto Politécnico da Guarda) \*

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa) \*\*

\* Responsible for the part relating to education

\*\* Responsible for the part relating to research

### 1 — Education

Education was one of the activities that has always occupied the attentions of the Portuguese statistical service since its early beginnings in the nineteenth century. In addition to the data regularly presented since 1875 in the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook), the following data have also been published:

a) A volume of the Anais de Estatística (Statistical Annals), with data about commercial and industrial education from 1854 to 1893.

b) A volume on secondary education from 1895 to 1903.

c) Volumes on primary education from 1902 to 1919.

d) General volumes on public education for the school years of 1919-1920 and 1920-1921.

This attempt to organise autonomous statistics for the sector was, however, only continued from 1940 onwards, with the beginning of the publication of the Estatísticas da Educação (Education Statistics), a publication which has been maintained until the present day, even though there are some gaps in terms of school years.

The table presented in this section on education is organised with reference to the following levels and types of education:

a) Primary education — Primary education has represented the first level of school education since the nineteenth century. Its total duration varied in accordance with the different historical periods, and it was only in the twentieth century that it was firmly established at four years. The first three years of school education were declared to be compulsory and free of charge in the nineteenth century. The first four years of school education were declared to be compulsory and free of charge in 1959. Completion of the 1st grade corresponds to three years of compulsory schooling, whilst completion of the 2nd grade corresponds to either four or five years of schooling, depending on the particular period. Primary education was transformed into the first cycle of basic education in 1987.



b) High-school education — High-school education represented an alternative second level of school education from the nineteenth century onwards. At the end of the nineteenth century, its total duration was fixed at seven years, divided into three cycles. The first cycle of three (later two) years merged in the 1960s with the preparatory cycle of technical education to become preparatory education, which was later transformed into the second cycle of basic education. The second cycle of two (later three) years merged in the 1970s with the second cycle of technical education to become unified secondary education, which was later transformed into the third cycle of basic education. The third cycle of two years was increased to three years in the school year of 1979-1980 and merged in the 1980s with the third cycle of technical education to become secondary education. Before these transformations, none of the cycles of high-school education was either compulsory or free.

c) Technical education — Technical education represented an alternative second level of school education from the nineteenth century onwards. Its total duration varied with the different periods and specialisations, although it may be said that, generally speaking, there were three cycles. The first cycle (also known as the preparatory cycle), which lasted for two years, merged in the 1960s with the preparatory cycle of high-school education to become preparatory education, which was later transformed into the second cycle of basic education. The second cycle, whose duration was variable, merged in the 1970s with the second cycle of high-school education to become unified secondary education, which was later transformed into the third cycle of basic education. The third cycle, whose duration was variable, merged in the 1980s with the third cycle of high-school education to become secondary education. Before these transformations, none of the cycles of technical education was either compulsory or free.

d) Preparatory education — In the school year 1968-1969, the first cycles of high-school and technical education were merged to form preparatory education, corresponding to the fifth and sixth years of school education. Preparatory education was transformed into the second cycle of basic education in 1987.

e) Basic education — In the school year 1975-1976, the second cycles of high-school and technical education were merged to form unified secondary education, corresponding to the seventh, eighth and ninth years of school education. From the school year of 1986-1987 onwards, there began to exist basic education, consisting of three cycles, the first corresponding to the first four years of school education, which previously had constituted primary education, the second corresponding to the fifth and sixth years of school education, which previously had constituted preparatory education, and the third corresponding to the seventh, eighth and ninth years of school education, which previously had constituted unified secondary education. Basic education is free and compulsory.

f) Secondary education — The expression 'secondary education' traditionally included high-school education and technical education. In the 1960s, it ceased to include the respective first

cycles, which were transformed into preparatory education. This, in turn, was later transformed into the second cycle of basic education. In the 1970s, the respective second cycles were transformed into unified secondary education, which was later transformed into the third cycle of basic education. Finally, in the school year 1986-1987, the respective third cycles were transformed into a second level of school education, simply denominated secondary education and which followed on from basic education. Secondary education has two channels, one which is academic and another which is career-oriented. It is neither compulsory nor free.

g) Middle education — Middle education had represented an alternative third level of academic education since the nineteenth century. It corresponded to specialised technical training. In the last quarter of the twentieth century, this form of education evolved and was transformed into polytechnic education.

h) Higher education — Higher education has represented an alternative third level of academic education since the nineteenth century. It includes university education and polytechnic education.

It is important, however, to draw attention to the following points:

a) The data on the evolution of the spread of literacy amongst the Portuguese population, contained in Nunes, 1993.

b) The data on the acquisition of academic qualifications and on the academic qualifications of the Portuguese population contained in Domingos, 1997 and which are partially transcribed in Table 11.3.

It must also be pointed out that the quality of the statistics available on education tended to decrease during the 1990s, particularly because there frequently existed data only for mainland Portugal.

## 2 — Research

The existence of statistical data relating to research is somewhat limited and relatively recent. This is perhaps a reflection of the traditional weakness of the sector in Portugal, a weakness which may be illustrated through a significant fact: throughout the twentieth century Nobel Prizes were awarded in scientific areas (Physiology and Medicine, Physics, Chemistry and Economics) on three hundred and thirty-two occasions; only on one occasion was the prize

awarded to a Portuguese scientist (Egas Moniz, who shared the Nobel Prize for Physiology and Medicine in 1949) <sup>1</sup>.

There are data published in the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) about scholarships awarded by the *Instituto de Alta Cultura* (Institute of High Culture), founded in 1941 and transformed in 1975 into the *Instituto Nacional de Investigação Científica* (National Institute of Scientific Research), which was extinguished in 1979. Since 1982, there have been surveys undertaken of the national scientific and technological potential, which were initially carried out by the *Junta Nacional de Investigação Científica e Tecnológica* (National Board for Scientific and Technological Research), created in 1967, and today are carried out by the *Observatório da Ciência e Tecnologia* (Science and Technology Observatory), one of the bodies into which the *Junta Nacional de Investigação Científica e Tecnológica* split in 1997 — the others are the *Fundação para a Ciência e a Tecnologia* (Foundation for Science and Technology) and the *Instituto de Cooperação Científica e Tecnológica Externa* (Institute of External Scientific and Technological Cooperation). A summary of the results of these surveys is presented in Table 5M.2.

## Bibliography

— Domingos, Alda — Educação e crescimento económico moderno — o caso português (período pós II guerra mundial). Master's degree dissertation presented at the Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão of the Universidade Técnica de Lisboa, 1997.

— Nunes, Ana Bela — Education and economic growth in Portugal: a simple regression approach. Estudos de Economia, vol. XIII, nº 2, 1993.

---

<sup>1</sup> In relation to this matter, it should be mentioned that, of the one hundred Nobel Prizes awarded for artistic endeavour (literature), one was attributed to a Portuguese writer (José Saramago in 1998), and that, of the one hundred Nobel Prizes of a political nature (peace), one was shared by two Timorese for whom, at that time, Portugal recognised the right to Portuguese citizenship in the context that is explained in Tables 1.1 and 12.8 (Carlos Ximenes Belo and José Ramos Horta in 1997).

**Tables**

5M.1 — Education — number of students completing the various levels of education

5M.2 — Research

**Table 5M.1 — Education — number of students completing the various levels of education**

Source — Domingos. 1997 and Anuário Estatístico.

Unit — Thousands.

Remark — On the meaning of the various levels of education, see the introduction to the section.

school year	primary 1st grade	primary 2nd grade basic 1st cycle	high school / technical 1st cycle preparatory basic 2nd cycle	high school / technical 2nd cycle unified sec. basic 3rd cycle	high school / technical 3rd cycle secondary	middle	higher
1870-1871							0.1
1871-1872							0.1
1872-1873	2	1					0.1
...							
1878-1879							0.1
1879-1880							0.1
1880-1881							0.1
1881-1882							0.1
1882-1883							0.1
1883-1884		2					0.1
1884-1885		3					0.1
1885-1886		3					0.1
1886-1887		4					0.1
1887-1888		5					0.1
1888-1889		5					0.1
1889-1890							0.1
1890-1891							0.1
1891-1892							0.1
1892-1893							0.1
1893-1894							0.1

Table 5M.1 — Education — number of students completing the various levels of education  
(continued)

school year	primary 1st grade	primary 2nd grade basic 1st cycle	high school / technical 1st cycle preparatory basic 2nd cycle	high school / technical 2nd cycle unified sec. basic 3rd cycle	high school / technical 3rd cycle secondary	middle	higher
1894-1895							0.1
1895-1896							0.1
1896-1897							0.1
1897-1898							0.1
1898-1899		7					0.1
1899-1900							0.1
1900-1901							0.1
1901-1902							0.1
1902-1903	23	7					0.1
1903-1904	24	7					0.2
1904-1905	24	11					0.1
1905-1906	24	11	0.7	0.5	0.3		0.1
1906-1907	25	11	0.7	0.5	0.4		0.2
1907-1908	27	13	0.7	0.6	0.4		0.2
1908-1909	27	14	0.8	0.6	0.4		0.2
1909-1910	28	14	0.9	0.7	0.4		0.2
1910-1911			1.0	0.8	0.5		
1911-1912	30	13	1.0	0.7	0.5		
1912-1913	36	15	0.9	0.8	0.5		
1913-1914	38	18	1.2	0.8	0.5		
1914-1915	43	18	1.2	0.8	0.5		0.1
1915-1916	37	21	1.0	0.8	0.5		0.2
1916-1917	38	18	0.1	0.8	0.5		0.1
1917-1918	35	18					0.2
1918-1919	25	15					0.3
1919-1920			1.1	0.5	0.4	+ 0	0.4
1920-1921			1.1	0.9	0.6	0.1	0.4
1921-1922						+ 0	0.4

Table 5M.1 — Education — number of students completing the various levels of education  
(continued)

school year	primary 1st grade	primary 2nd grade basic 1st cycle	high school / technical 1st cycle preparatory basic 2nd cycle	high school / technical 2nd cycle unified sec. basic 3rd cycle	high school / technical 3rd cycle secondary	middle	higher
1922-1923						+ 0	0.4
1923-1924		12				+ 0	0.4
1924-1925		18				+ 0	0.4
1925-1926		21				0.1	0.4
1926-1927		22				0.1	0.5
1927-1928	31	15				0.1	0.7
1928-1929	34	21				+ 0	0.8
1929-1930	36	28				0.1	0.8
1930-1931	51	27				0.2	0.8
1931-1932	57	36				+ 0	0.8
1932-1933	58	40				+ 0	0.8
1933-1934	56	42				0.1	0.8
1934-1935	57	39				0.1	0.8
1935-1936	61	41				0.2	0.9
1936-1937	56	42	2	2	1	0.2	0.8
1937-1938	65	29	2	2	1	0.3	0.8
1938-1939	76	30	2	2	1	0.2	0.9
1939-1940	74	38	3	2	4	0.4	1.0
1940-1941	75	39	4	2	4	0.5	1.0
1941-1942	78	41	4	3	5	0.3	0.9
1942-1943	76	41	4	2	4	0.5	1.1
1943-1944	78	42	4	3	5	0.7	1.0
1944-1945	77	44	5	3	5	0.7	1.0
1945-1946	81	47	4	3	5	1.1	1.1
1946-1947	84	48	3	3	4	1.2	1.2
1947-1948	88	52	6	6	5	1.0	1.2
1948-1949	92	56	8	5	6	1.0	1.2
1949-1950	96	60	9	5	7	1.5	1.3

Table 5M.1 — Education — number of students completing the various levels of education  
(continued)

school year	primary 1st grade	primary 2nd grade basic 1st cycle	high school / technical 1st cycle preparatory basic 2nd cycle	high school / technical 2nd cycle unified sec. basic 3rd cycle	high school / technical 3rd cycle secondary	middle	higher
1950-1951	99	62	10	4	6	1.6	1.4
1951-1952	108	67	10	5	5	1.4	1.5
1952-1953	144	75	12	5	6	1.4	1.5
1953-1954	207	85	14	5	5	1.3	1.3
1954-1955	154	82	14	6	6	1.5	2.0
1955-1956	164	88	16	7	6	1.6	2.0
1956-1957	154	94	17	7	7	1.9	2.1
1957-1958	163	109	19	7	7	1.8	2.3
1958-1959	158	140	22	8	8	1.9	2.1
1959-1960		172	26	8	7	2.1	2.1
1960-1961		162	30	12	7	2.5	2.1
1961-1962		168	32	13	7	2.6	2.1
1962-1963		166	35	14	8	2.6	2.4
1963-1964		168	35	15	7	2.3	2.3
1964-1965		167	37	16	10	1.9	2.8
1965-1966		170	37	16	9	2.2	2.6
1966-1967		165	38	16	10	2.0	3.0
1967-1968		161	40	18	11	2.0	2.8
1968-1969		174	62	20	12	2.0	2.5
1969-1970		165	63	23	13	2.2	3.6
1970-1971		172	76	20	15	3.2	3.4
1971-1972		178	85	24	16	3.4	4.6
1972-1973		182	89	27	19	3.6	4.8
1973-1974		178	118	60	27	4.3	7.4
1974-1975		207	98	49	23	5.9	5.7
1975-1976		195	104	49	27	6.0	8.1
1976-1977		194	110	46	35	2.1	8.2
1977-1978		176	98	68	51	5.9	10.3



Table 5M.1 — Education — number of students completing the various levels of education  
(continued)

school year	primary 1st grade	primary 2nd grade basic 1st cycle	high school / technical 1st cycle preparatory basic 2nd cycle	high school / technical 2nd cycle unified sec. basic 3rd cycle	high school / technical 3rd cycle secondary	middle	higher
1978-1979		161	104	65	32	3.8	9.3
1979-1980		165	102	64	36	2.9	8.9
1980-1981		174	108	57	23	2.2	10.0
1981-1982		172	124	54	23	2.9	6.7
1982-1983		175	140	58	34	2.7	7.0
1983-1984		181	143	57	45	2.5	8.5
1984-1985		181	145	66	38	3.4	9.3
1985-1986		175	153	71	39	3.6	9.2
1986-1987		183	154	75	44	4.3	11.0
1987-1988		177	159	67	51	1.9	11.5
1988-1989		168	155	90	59	2.5	10.4
1989-1990		160	155	96	65	3.6	14.4
1990-1991		150	152	102	74	3.4	14.0
1991-1992		145	136	111	89	4.3	21.4
1992-1993		146	135	120	91	5.2	24.0

## Table 5M.2 — Research

Source — Anuário Estatístico.

year	expenditure on R&D		researchers thousands full-time equivalent
	nominal value million escudos	real value index base 1995 = 100	
1982	6 541	33	3.0
1984	11 308	36	3.5
1986	19 868	47	4.5
1988	29 911	59	5.0
1990	52 032	80	5.9
1992	80 398	102	9.5
1995	92 229	100	11.6
1997	115 655	119	13.6

# SECTION N — HEALTH, VETERINARY SERVICES AND SOCIAL WORK

PATRÍCIA LAVOS (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa) \*

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa) \*\*

\* Responsible for the part relating to health

\*\* Responsible for the part relating to veterinary services and social work

## 1 — Health

Official statistical data have been published about health in the following sources:

(i) Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) of the Directorate-General for Statistics. This source makes it possible to collect data for the years from 1880 to 1959 and from 1969 to 1997.

(ii) Estatísticas da Saúde (Health Statistics) of the National Statistical Institute. This source makes it possible to collect data for the years from 1960 to 1997.

The data contained in these sources and transcribed here refer to certain indicators that describe the state of the health services in Portugal: personnel (doctors and pharmacists enrolled with their respective professional associations); the number of existing health establishments and the number of beds at health establishments with hospitalisation; the movement of hospitalised patients; the number of operations carried out; and the infant mortality rate, generally used as the main indicator of the state of health.

## 2 — Veterinary services

It was during the nineteenth century that the veterinary services ceased to function fundamentally as an auxiliary service of the army and became at least an equally important service for the support of livestock farming. In turn, in the twentieth century, there was a gradual decline in the relative importance of military veterinary services and a gradual increase in the assistance given to pets.

In view of this situation, it is easy to understand that the (few) statistical data relating to veterinary services included in the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) and Estatísticas

Agrícolas (Farming Statistics) are grouped together under the items relating to the armed forces and livestock farming. Specific data have never been published about the value or volume of veterinary services as such.

Thus, the only values that are of interest here are those relating to the number of veterinary surgeons enrolled with their respective professional association, which, for the purposes of convenience, are added to the data relating to the doctors' and pharmacists' professional associations.

### 3 — Social work

Traditionally social work was basically to be found in the support given by charitable institutions, in particular the *Misericórdias*, which first appeared at the end of the fifteenth century under the initial stimulus of Queen Leonor, the widow of D. João II, and by mutual aid associations. These were later joined (in Portugal as late as the twentieth century) by state-organised welfare or social security.

It can safely be said that the state has always sought to ensure sustenance for its servants during their invalidity or old age, particularly the most meritorious amongst them, through royal pensions and the so-called payments to the inactive classes. By the second half of the nineteenth century, a fund had already been set up for civil servants, subsidised by the treasury. The plan for a scheme to cover most of the population was, however, only made law with the creation of the Institute of Compulsory Social Insurance and General Welfare in 1919. In the 1930s, the Institute was replaced by the corporative organisation of the *Estado Novo* (New State) and, in the 1970s, this was in turn replaced by the social security system such as it now exists at the end of the twentieth century.

Although the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) had already included data about social work since the end of the nineteenth century, it was only with the publication of the Estatísticas da Organização Corporativa (Corporative Organisation Statistics) for 1938-1939 that the treatment of this area became autonomous. Since then, these statistics have been followed successively by the Estatísticas da Organização Corporativa e Previdência Social (Corporative Organisation and Social Welfare Statistics) in 1950, the Estatísticas das Associações Sindicais, Patronais e Previdência (Statistics of the Trade Union, Employers' and Welfare Associations) in 1974, the Estatísticas da Segurança Social, Associações Sindicais e Patronais (Statistics of Social Security, Trade Union and Employers' Associations) in 1982, the Estatísticas de Protecção Social, Associações Sindicais e Patronais (Statistics of Social Protection, Trade Union and Employers' Associations) in 1985, the Estatísticas de Protecção Social (Statistics of Social

Protection) in 1996, although naturally the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) continued to include a summary of the data on this subject.

The last two tables in this section present a summary of the main data on the evolution of mutual aid and social security associations in Portugal. The first table presents data of a financial nature. The second table presents data of a physical nature: number of beneficiaries, number of pensioners and the volume of the unemployment subsidy. It should be stressed that, in addition to these benefits, the social security system guaranteed access to the health services, as well as providing various benefits in the childbirth and family areas and, since the second half of the 1990s, ensuring the existence of the minimum guaranteed income.

## Tables

5N.1 — Doctors, pharmacists and veterinary surgeons enrolled with their respective professional associations

5N.2 — Health equipment

5N.3 — Health services and general indicators about health

5N.4 — Revenue and expenditure of social protection

5N.5 — Pensioners and beneficiaries of social protection and the unemployment subsidy

## Table 5N.1 — Doctors, pharmacists and veterinary surgeons enrolled with their respective professional associations

Sources — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas da Saúde.

Remark — Until 1985, dentists are included with doctors.

year	doctors	dentists	pharmacists	veterinary surgeons
1945	5 187			
1946	5 334			
1947	5 590			
1948	5 675			236
1949	5 684		1 818	241
1950	5 845		1 828	267
1951	6 017		1 836	281
1952	6 249		1 852	294
1953	6 216		1 900	313
1954	6 275		1 931	315
1955	6 470		1 951	348
1956	6 410		2 002	349
1957	6 456		2 022	348
1958	6 627		2 074	361
1959	6 844		2 152	374
1960	7 075		2 178	391
1961	7 368		2 266	384
1962	7 673		2 273	375
1963	7 541		2 308	360
1964	7 561		2 334	373
1965	7 820		2 338	379
1966	7 619		2 403	346
1967	7 838		2 458	346
1968	?		2 512	354
1969	8 019		2 571	372

Table 5N.1 — Doctors, pharmacists and veterinary surgeons enrolled with their respective professional associations (continued)

year	doctors	dentists	pharmacists	veterinary surgeons
1970	8 156		2 641	378
1971	8 410		2 663	392
1972	8 972		2 787	407
1973	9 111		3 221	?
1974	10 312		2 905	436
1975	11 101		3 043	873
1976	11 863		3 650	839
1977	13 816		3 781	872
1978	15 968		4 068	875
1979	18 088		4 327	956
1980	19 332		4 768	1047
1981	20 997		5 006	1115
1982	22 009		5 061	1082
1983	22 917		4 853	1122
1984	24 095		5 053	1152
1985	24 629		4 807	1215
1986	24 696	312	4 285	1185
1987	26 381	392	5 728	1269
1988	26 869	431	5 010	1313
1989	27 608	591	5 311	1386
1990	28 016	667	5 438	1395
1991	28 326	675	5 912	1334
1992	28 604	811	5 950	1499
1993	28 769	973	6 030	1491
1994	29 031	1 197	6 319	1566
1995	29 353	1 411	6 432	1488
1996	29 902	1 653	6 781	1813
1997	30 431	1 904	7 334	1997

## Table 5N.2 — Health equipment

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas da Saúde.

Remarks:

1 — Until 1984, the values in the 'hospitals' column refer to health establishments with hospitalisation of patients.

2 — Until 1984, the values in the 'health centres' column refer to health establishments without hospitalisation of patients, of which medical posts are considered to be a part.

3 — Until 1985, the values of the 'pharmacies' column include medication posts.

year	hospitals		health centres	medical posts	pharmacies	medication posts
	number	beds thousands				
1893	200					
1894	201					
1895	203					
1896	204					
1897	206					
1898	211					
1899	215					
1900	220					
1901	222					
1902	223					
1903	223					
1904	222					
1905	231					
1906	236					
1907	240					
1908	237					
1909	241					
1910	243					
...						
1912	245					
1913	244					
1914	235					



Table 5N.2 — Health equipment (continued)

year	hospitals		health centres	medical posts	pharmacies	medication posts
	number	beds thousands				
1915	238					
1916	238					
1917	231					
1918	231					
1919	237					
...						
1926	190					
1927	209					
1928	224					
1929	339					
1930	330					
1931	329					
1932	339					
1933	338					
1934	338					
1935	344					
1936	352					
1937	361					
1938	421		230	122		
1939	462	22	317	192		
1940	486	20	443	290		
1941	496	21	443	288		
1942	504	23	461	304		
1943	507	24	436	279		
1944	533	26	488	376		
1945	557	28	791	674		
1946	569	27	806	691		
1947	579	29	908	790		
1948	581	30	853	737		
1949	587	31	856	730		
1950	625	31	867	739		

Table 5N.2 — Health equipment (continued)

year	hospitals		health centres	medical posts	pharmacies	medication posts
	number	beds thousands				
1951	624	38	1 505	823		
1952	632	39	1 022	895		
1953	642	39	1 023	891		
1954	663	41	1 103	951		
1955	690	43	1 166	986		
1956	723	44	1 223	1 028		
1957	578	46	1 413	1 202		
1958	537	45	1 605	1 450		
1959	563	47	1 766	1 608		
1960	564	48	1 776	1 613		
1961	559	49	1 812	1 658		
1962	560	49	1 846	1 403		
1963	605	52	2 419	1 918		
1964	638	54	2 417	1 929		
1965	630	54	2 427	1 936		
1966	623	55	2 397	1 918		
1967	663	56	2 398	1 924		
1968	656	55	2 392	1 927		
1969	643	54	2 369	1 899		
1970	634	55	2 405	1 935	2 119	
1971	619	54	2 850	2 378	2 108	
1972	587	54	2 503	2 028	2 116	
1973	593	54	3 084	2 620	2 130	
1974	581	53	2 854	2 280	2 141	
1975	548	52	2 874	2 297	2 150	
1976	522	52	2 865	2 276	2 076	
1977	495	51	2 615	2 018	2 206	
1978	502	52	2 632	2 069	2 235	
1979	494	52	2 717	2 163	2 252	
1980	493	51	2 759	2 195	2 308	
1981	496	51	2 730	2 213	2 318	

Table 5N.2 — Health equipment (continued)

year	hospitals		health centres	medical posts	pharmacies	medication posts
	number	beds thousands				
1982	491	51	2 718	2 259	2 424	
1983	495	51	2 481		2 465	
1984	481	50	2 403	291	2 512	
1985	232	39	335		2 542	
1986	227	39	336	289	2 285	213
1987	213	40	338	298	2 327	221
1988	210	40	343	288	2 377	236
1989	239	40	382	317	2 489	265
1990	240		382	348	2 503	288
1991	237	39	384	421	2 502	299
1992	215	39	384	386	2 510	304
1993	207	39	383	463	2 515	310
1994	202	38	388	432	2 520	326
1995	200	38	383	463	2 528	331
1996	211	39	382	508	2 532	336
1997	215	39	386	525	2 539	343

## Table 5N.3 — Health services and general indicators about health

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas da Saúde. Infant mortality until 1971 was obtained in the Estatísticas Demográficas.

Remark — The values of 'hospitalised patients' for 1880 refer only to the civil hospitals of Lisbon and Porto; those for 1881 refer only to the civil hospitals of Lisbon and Porto and the Coimbra University hospitals; those from 1882 to 1886 refer only to the hospitals of district capitals; and those from 1887 onwards refer, in principle, to all health establishments with hospitalisation of patients of Table 5N.2, although there is sometimes in the source mention of lacunas, which are supposed to be of small importance.

years	hospitalised patients		operations thousands	infant mortality per thousand
	at beginning of year thousands	during the year thousands		
1880	2	25		
1881	3	22		
1882	4	37		
1883	4	36		
1884	4	36		
1885	4	37		
1886	5	41		
1887	5	67		
1888	5	67		
1889	5	69		
1890	5	74		
1891	6	71		
1892	5	67		
1893	5	73		
1894	5	71		
1895	5	75		
1896	5	77		
1897	5	77		
1898	6	75		

Table 5N.3 — Health services and general indicators about health (continued)

years	hospitalised patients		operations thousands	infant mortality per thousand
	at beginning of year thousands	during the year thousands		
1899	6	74		
1900	6	77		
1901	6	72		
1902	6	68		
1903	6	66		
1904	6	69		
1905	5	74		
1906	6	75		
1907	6	70		
1908	6	71		
1909	6	74		
1910	7	73		133.8
...				
1912	7	78		
1913	7	77		159.6
1914	7	80		148.5
1915	8	83		148.2
1916	8	81		153.6
1917	9	99		148.4
1918	8	117		209.1
1919	7	104		181.7
1920	6	78		164.1
1921	5	66		147.7
1922	5	61		144.0
1923	5	62		164.1
1924	5	58		143.8
1925	5	55		132.1
1926	7	70	10	144.2
1927	10	94	15	141.5
1928	13	99	18	
1929	9	113	19	151.2

Table 5N.3 — Health services and general indicators about health (continued)

years	hospitalised patients		operations thousands	infant mortality per thousand
	at beginning of year thousands	during the year thousands		
1930	9	116	31	143.6
1931	9	123	35	140.6
1932	9	121	35	146.5
1933	9	130	41	148.5
1934	11	135	33	144.0
1935	11	146	43	148.7
1936	11	152	38	139.7
1937	12	164	37	151.4
1938	13	159	37	137.2
1939	13	150	41	119.9
1940	12	161	56	126.1
1941	13	175	62	150.8
1942	14	179	58	131.4
1943	19	191	63	132.6
1944	21	208	69	122.2
1945	23	212	99	114.9
1946	24	234	83	119.4
1947	24	245	87	107.3
1948	27	269	87	100.2
1949	28	264	87	114.5
1950	31	263	86	94.1
1951	33	289	87	89.1
1952	34	282	90	94.3
1953	31	305	86	95.5
1954	32	325	99	85.5
1955	31	341	98	90.2
1956	30	343	91	87.8
1957	31	387	73	88.0
1958	30	384	92	84.0
1959	32	375	70	88.6
1960	33	436	94	77.5

Table 5N.3 — Health services and general indicators about health (continued)

years	hospitalised patients		operations thousands	infant mortality per thousand
	at beginning of year thousands	during the year thousands		
1961	34	465	88	88.8
1962	36	478	83	78.6
1963	37	508	90	73.1
1964	39	533	102	69.0
1965	39	524	110	64.9
1966	39	540	116	64.7
1967	38	552	104	59.2
1968	38	578	97	61.1
1969	37	595	113	55.8
1970	37	619	117	58.0
1971	35	657	133	51.3
1972	35	663	140	41.4
1973	35	704	151	44.8
1974	38	732	158	37.9
1975	38	779	205	38.9
1976	34	811	221	33.4
1977	34	842	240	30.3
1978	33	854	273	29.2
1979	32	862	294	26.0
1980	32	878	306	24.3
1981	31	886	328	21.8
1982	30	894	316	19.8
1983	29	939	245	19.2
1984	29	962	253	16.7
1985	27	835	418	17.8
1986	27	863	424	15.8
1987	27	908	445	14.2
1988	26	1 066	461	13.1
1989	27	1 045	509	12.1
1990	28	1 058	?	10.9
1991	27	1 072	547	10.8

Table 5N.3 — Health services and general indicators about health (continued)

years	hospitalised patients		operations thousands	infant mortality per thousand
	at beginning of year thousands	during the year thousands		
1992	26	1 094	570	9.1
1993	24	1 132	567	8.6
1994	26	1 118	569	7.9
1995	26	1 124	587	7.5
1996	25	1 157	603	7.5
1997	25	1 170	636	6.4



## Table 5N.4 — Revenue and expenditure of social protection

Source — Anuário Estatístico.

Unit — Million escudos.

year	revenue	expenditure
1957	2 660	1 674
1958	2 802	1 788
1959	3 035	1 967
1960	3 202	2 379
1961	3 497	2 446
1962	4 115	2 835
1963	4 633	3 260
1964	5 426	3 908
1965	6 113	4 411
1966	7 141	4 784
1967	8 859	5 401
1968	9 023	6 456
1969	10 281	7 447
1970	11 760	8 735
1971	13 644	10 346
1972	16 379	14 068
1973	17 307	18 082
1974	21 250	23 823
1975	32 682	33 196
1976	47 609	46 012
1977	58 398	60 008

year	revenue	expenditure
1978	66 902	66 078
1979	72 627	72 308
1980	186 037	180 435
1981	237 411	235 065
1982	287 566	289 186
1983	356 581	352 819
1984	454 445	429 149
1985	580 885	545 578
1986	784 641	722 076
1987	904 517	839 899
1988	1 095 533	1 029 832
1989	1 279 552	1 184 813
1990	1 577 805	1 443 562
1991	2 188 296	2 099 743
1992	2 651 379	2 618 593
1993	2 910 571	2 970 482
1994	3 159 804	3 217 445
1995	3 535 704	3 529 984
1996	3 873 737	3 750 574
1997	4 064 804	4 168 255

## Table 5N.5 — Pensioners and beneficiaries of social protection and the unemployment subsidy

Source — *Anuário Estatístico*.

Remarks:

1 — The values of the 'members of mutual aid associations', 'beneficiaries of the social security of the private sector' and 'pensioners of the social security of the private sector' columns were included only when the respective data were complete.

2 — Until 1956, the values of the 'beneficiaries of the social security of the public sector' e 'pensioners of the social security of the public sector' columns refer only to the *Montepio dos Servidores do Estado*.

3 — Until 1977, there was no unemployment subsidy.

year	members of mutual aid associations thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the private sector thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the public sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the private sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the public sector thousands	days of unemployment subsidy paid millions
1882			2		1	
1883			2		1	
1884			2		1	
1885			2		2	
1886			2		2	
1887			2		2	
1888			2		2	
1889			2		2	
1890			3		2	
1891			3		2	
1892			3		2	
1893			3		2	
1894			3		2	
1895			3		2	
1896			3		2	
1897			3		2	

Table 5N.5 — Pensioners and beneficiaries of social protection and the unemployment subsidy  
(continued)

year	members of mutual aid associations thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the private sector thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the public sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the private sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the public sector thousands	days of unemployment subsidy paid millions
1898			3		2	
1899			3		3	
1900			3		3	
1901			3		3	
1902			4		3	
1903			4		3	
1904			4		3	
1905			4		3	
1906			4		3	
1907			5		3	
1908			5		3	
1909	363		5		3	
1910			5		3	
1911			5		3	
1912			6		3	
1913			6		3	
1914			6		3	
1915	451		6		3	
1916			6		3	
1917			7		3	
1918			8		4	
1919			8		4	
1920			9		4	
1921			9		4	
1922			9		4	
1923	558		9		4	
1924			10		4	
1925			11		4	

Table 5N.5 — Pensioners and beneficiaries of social protection and the unemployment subsidy  
(continued)

year	members of mutual aid associations thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the private sector thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the public sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the private sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the public sector thousands	days of unemployment subsidy paid millions
1926	473		11		5	
1927	539		12		5	
1928	558		12		5	
1929	576		12		5	
1930	590		13		5	
1931	566		13		5	
1932	561		13		6	
1933	483		14		6	
1934	521		14		6	
1935	518		47		13	
1936	515		47		13	
1937	?		48		14	
1938	468		48	6	15	
1939	484		48	9	15	
1940	472		49	10	16	
1941	464		49	12	16	
1942	436		49	12	17	
1943	458	97	50	12	17	
1944	462	152		13		
1945	462	219		12		
1946	466			13		
1947	469	464	55	16	20	
1948	488	572	58	17	19	
1949	489		60	17	19	
1950	492		61	15	20	
1951	491	648	63	15	20	
1952	494		63	17	20	
1953	488		60		20	

Table 5N.5 — Pensioners and beneficiaries of social protection and the unemployment subsidy  
(continued)

year	members of mutual aid associations thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the private sector thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the public sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the private sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the public sector thousands	days of unemployment subsidy paid millions
1954	483		61		20	
1955	488		62		21	
1956	497		62		21	
1957	502	780	234		61	
1958	506	822	244		62	
1959	511	864	253		62	
1960	518	878	263		63	
1961	522	927	275			
1962	524	995	289			
1963	542	1042	300			
1964	546	1651	362			
1965	554	1792	247			
1966	* 617	1923	270			
1967	618	1986	278			
1968	633	1991	383			
1969	638	2193	299			
1970	674	2382	311			
1971	675	2469	327			
1972	655	2551	346			
1973	701	3066	376			
1974	689	3322	400			
1975	724	3289	430			
1976	785	3386	469			
1977	724	3463	508			
1978	867	3579	533			27
1979	591	3642	562	564	76	24
1980	607	3733	626	617	80	23
1981	587	3749	668	663	86	22

Table 5N.5 — Pensioners and beneficiaries of social protection and the unemployment subsidy  
(continued)

year	members of mutual aid associations thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the private sector thousands	beneficiaries of the social security of the public sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the private sector thousands	pensioners of the social security of the public sector thousands	days of unemployment subsidy paid millions
1982	523	3827	703	716	101	22
1983	597	3727	742	759	107	14
1984	623	3778	762	805	115	23
1985	638	3528	776	843	125	19
1986	645	3633	792	876	132	29
1987	661	3718	802	923	141	28
1988	685	4057	818	973	149	24
1989	677	4068	842	1053	153	23
1990	607	4109	869	1072	159	24
1991	655	3913	884	1099	221	31
1992	664	3964	669	1129	188	43
1993	824	3866	661	1167	203	63
1994	869	4018	638	1196	237	72
1995	855	4192	638	1226	258	72
1996	769	4148	648	1264	273	71
1997	840	4205	654	1301	285	63

\* Change of scope. The value with the same scope of the previous year would be 565.

# SECTION O — COMMUNITY, SOCIAL AND PERSONAL SERVICE ACTIVITIES

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

## 1 — Community services

The sub-sector of community services includes activities that, as the title itself indicates, are services that are provided to the community, but are not considered public goods, namely:

- a) Cultural services, such as libraries, museums, etc.
- b) Entertainment and recreational activities, such as theatre, circus, bullfighting, cinema, professional sport, etc.
- c) Audio-visual media - radio and television.

### — Cultural services

Since the 1880s, the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) has included information about libraries. At first, these data only referred to the National Library in Lisbon, but thereafter to a progressively larger universe, even though the series were subject to some interruptions and significant variations in their scope, at least until the 1920s. It was around this time that the first information was included about museums.

From 1940 onwards, the most complete information about this type of service began to be included in the Estatísticas da Educação (Education Statistics), from which the Estatísticas da Cultura, Recreio e Desporto (Culture, Recreation and Sports Statistics) were to gain autonomy after 1979, being published thereafter in a separate volume.

### — Entertainment

It was not until the 1930s that the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) began to publish information about entertainment in Portugal. At first, coverage was relatively poor in qualitative terms, only including theatre in Lisbon and Porto, circus in Lisbon and cinema in various towns and cities. Soon, however, coverage was to become practically complete. In fact,

the overwhelming share of the cinema and the main towns and cities in the figures as a whole means that the initial deficiencies in coverage do not have the importance that one might suppose.

Statistics relating to entertainment have evolved in an identical fashion to those relating to cultural services.

### — Radio

Radio first appeared as a mass medium in Portugal in the period between the two world wars. Until the 1970s, there coexisted a public broadcasting station — the *Emissora Nacional* — and several private stations, some of which were highly important, such as *Rádio Clube Português* and *Rádio Renascença* (the latter being the property of the Catholic Church). In 1975, the private broadcasting stations, except for *Rádio Renascença*, were nationalised and were later joined together with the *Emissora Nacional* to form a public company with the name of *Rádiodifusão Portuguesa* (RDP). The 1980s saw the appearance of a large number of new private stations, generally local in scope and, in the beginning, illegal in nature. There then followed a process of legalisation and rearrangement, resulting in a situation that was curiously similar to the one that had existed before 1975: together with a public radio station — RDP — there were two highly important private stations — *Rádio Renascença* and TSF — and some private local radio stations.

The publication of statistical information about radio activity was quick to follow its appearance. For a long time, however, it was restricted to the *Emissora Nacional*.

### — Television

Television broadcasting as a mass medium in Portugal first began in 1957. Until 1990, *Rádiatelevisão Portuguesa* (RTP), a private company with a large state shareholding that was nationalised in 1975, was the only broadcasting station. In 1990, broadcasting licences for two more television channels were awarded to private companies: *Sociedade Independente de Comunicação* (SIC) and *Televisão Independente* (TVI), the latter initially being controlled by the Catholic Church, but later sold to a group of companies. The end of the 1990s saw the appearance of *TVCabo*, a company which distributes a large number of channels via cable and not via an unbounded electromagnetic signal, as is indicated by the company's name.

The publication of statistical information about television activity has the same characteristics as that of the statistical information about radio activity.



## 2 — Social services

The sub-sector of social services includes activities that add to their nature of community services that of being public goods. Besides sanitation services, which have already been dealt with in Section E of this chapter, the main case to be considered is that of religious services.

In Chapter 11 (more precisely in Table 11.2) data are presented about the religious convictions of the Portuguese population. It is worth remembering here that a (very small) part of the public expenditure dealt with in Chapter 9 (in particular in Table 9.4 relating to the expenditure of the Ministry of Justice) corresponds to expenditure on the Catholic clergy, by virtue of the different forms that the relationship between the State and the Catholic Church was to successively adopt over the years (see the introduction to Chapter 11 on this matter).

There are no statistical data available about the number of religious acts performed, so that those data that it is possible to present about religious services correspond to the number of people comprising the clergy, or the number of people involved in the Catholic religious life, for the General Population Censuses since 1930.

## 3 — Personal services

The sub-sector of personal services includes activities that, as the title itself suggests, do not have the nature of community services.

As far as this sub-sector is concerned, the official production of statistical information dates from the 1990s and there are no studies worth mentioning in relation to earlier periods. For this reason, the data that it has been possible to compile in the third table of this section are limited to the number of people with professions and occupations connected with personal services, in accordance with the General Population Censuses from 1940 onwards, and to the few figures relating to the volume of sales of firms existing within the sector, although these only exist for very recent years.

In a brief commentary on the first part of this table, it is worth noting that in the mid-20<sup>th</sup> century personal services occupied roughly 20 thousand persons, a number which grew to roughly 30 thousand throughout the second half of the century. The overwhelming majority of these workers were (and still are) dedicated to the only personal service that seems ever to have occupied more than one thousandth of the active population (and which over time has maintained a share of roughly 0.5% of the active population) — that of barbers' shops and hairdressers', to

which for statistical purposes beauty services in general are also added. It is quite likely that this service traditionally consisted largely of barbers' shops (with a typically male clientele), with the share of hairdressers' and beauty services in general (with a predominantly female clientele) increasing over time. In the mid-20<sup>th</sup> century, two other personal services occupied more than one thousand workers: sexual services (with a typically male clientele) and shoe cleaning services (again probably with a predominantly male clientele). In fact, the General Population Census of 1940 recorded 1 139 prostitutes and 1 115 shoe-shiners. The legal ban on the rendering of paid sexual services between 1949 and 1995 does not make it possible to know the data relating to these services for later censuses (although it is clear that the activity did not disappear in spite of the ban). In the case of shoe-shiners, the number fell to almost irrelevant values throughout the second half of the century.

## Tables

5O.1 — Community services

5O.2 — Social services — religious services

5O.3 — Personal services

## Table 50.1 — Community services

### A — Libraries, museums and entertainment

Source — Anuário Estatístico, Estatísticas da Educação and Estatísticas da Cultura, Recreio e Desporto.

year	libraries		museums		entertainment	
	number	readers thousands	number	visitors thousands	thousands	spectators thousands
...						
1888		49				
1889		48				
1890		45				
1891		52				
1892	12	55				
1893		89				
1894		97				
1895		98				
1896		88				
1897		76				
1898		81				
1899		74				
1900	12	72				
...						
1902		49				
1903		53				
1904		65				
1905	12	66				
1906		72				
1907	13	74				
1908		85				
1909		103				
1910	13	102				

Table 50.1 — Community services (continued)

year	libraries		museums		entertainment	
	number	readers thousands	number	visitors thousands	thousands	spectators thousands
...						
1917	29	112				
1918	40	62				
1919	40	76				
1920		69				
1921	31	70				
1922		61				
1923	20	73				
1924	27	76				
1925	50	144				
1926	54	165				
1927	55	143				
1928	54	177				
1929	53	160	42	182		
1930	52	161	41	151		
1931	51	174	45	113	17	5 194
1932	49	186	47	219	17	5 909
1933	49	212	46	190	19	5 675
1934	50	277	49	245	20	6 583
1935	52	345	49	235	20	6 853
1936	53	372	51	263	25	8 569
1937	62	448	52	228	27	8 631
1938		491	52	245	28	9 570
1939		488	52	251	28	9 638
1940		524	50	318	39	12 356
1941		594		184	43	13 334
1942		593		234	47	17 699
1943				248	53	19 684
1944		410		227	60	22 626
1945		565		266	60	22 887
1946		603		295	59	20 567

Table 5O.1 — Community services (continued)

year	libraries		museums		entertainment	
	number	readers thousands	number	visitors thousands	thousands	spectators thousands
1947		627		312	64	23 244
1948		650		468	66	23 232
1949		824	88	446	65	21 556
1950	162	817	88	442	69	22 889
1951	143	875	82	521	68	23 146
1952	137	915	83	546	73	25 062
1953	153	889	87	557	75	24 545
1954	156	923	86	675	76	26 304
1955	530	1 048	73	696	79	28 335
1956	590	925	79	695	80	29 738
1957	507	995	69	702	83	30 167
1958	563	1 157	109	836	83	28 912
1959	252	1 264	90	785	84	28 586
1960	89	957			83	28 419
1961	105	1 098	109	1 313	84	28 042
1962	200	1 260	109	1 450	86	27 395
1963	220	2 032	105	1 919	86	26 702
1964	228	2 219	118	1 880	86	26 436
1965	234	2 287	123	1 984	88	27 902
1966	218	2 415	118	2 302	90	28 341
1967	258	2 567	121	2 366	101	29 749
1968	285	2 596	123	2 438	102	28 859
1969	284	2 574	119	2 489	105	28 398
1970	288	2 762	122	2 750	107	30 312
1971	301	2 791	124	2 686	106	29 171
1972	301	2 857	121	2 772	111	30 203
1973	257	3 201	121	2 790	116	30 869
1974	264	2 974	114	2 546	125	37 730
1975	519	3 103	121	2 077	141	43 586
1976	954	3 958	123	2 150	153	44 577
1977	1 185	3 854	123	2 438	159	41 027

Table 5O.1 — Community services (continued)

year	libraries		museums		entertainment	
	number	readers thousands	number	visitors thousands	thousands	spectators thousands
1978	1 193	4 238	125	2 605	157	35 556
1979	1 169	4 281	121	2 908	168	34 200
1980	1 169	4 175	123	2 989	175	31 911
1981	1 217	4 292	121	2 980	190	31 729
1982	1 244		122	2 790	194	28 607
1983	1 102		125	3 047	202	25 358
1984	1 106		139	3 800	193	19 753
1985	1 279		229	5 178	189	19 792
1986	1 399		228	5 675	193	19 086
1987	1 243		231	5 613	220	17 816
1988	1 290		229	6 859	218	14 516
1989	1 511		255	6 283	193	12 546
1990	1 345		330	6 317	172	10 293
1991	1 391	5 019	320	6 577	146	8 900
1992	1 534	5 998	330	6 596	143	8 687
1993	1 598	6 545	328	7 202	134	8 553
1994	1 600	8 066	287	8 292	130	8 112
1995	1 614	9 561	303	8 667	151	8 352
1996	1 621	10 791	309	8 395	198	11 382
1997	1 647	12 612	323	8 286	280	14 869

Table 50.1 — Community services (continued)

## B — Volume of sales

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas das Empresas — Comércio e Outros Serviços.

Unit — Million escudos

Remark — Until 1995, cinema, radio and television were included in entertainment.

year	cultural services	cinema	entertainment	sport	recreational services	radio television	news
1993	3	-	93	-	47	-	-
1994	2	-	102	-	47	-	-
1995	2	-	111	-	44	-	-
1996	3	43	16	28	64	112	9
1997	0,4	58	17	17	57	76	6

## C — Indices of activity

Unit — Base 1995 = 100

Note — The index was calculated by deflating the volume of sales with the price index from Table 8.1. For this purpose, cinema, radio and television were joined to entertainment.

year	cultural services	entertainment	recreational services
1993	164	92	117
1994	104	96	111
1995	100	100	100
1996	145	149	141
1997	19	129	123

## Table 50.2 — Social services — religious services

Source — General Population Censuses

year	Catholic secular clergy	Catholic monks	Catholic nuns	priests from other religions	total
1930	?	?	?	?	* 4 293
1940	4 354	544	3 166	137	8 201
1950	3 992	536	5 155	419	10 102
1960	?	?	?	?	10 855
1970	?	?	?	?	* 3 490
1981	?	?	?	?	** 4 668
1991	?	?	?	?	** 4 069

\* These values do not include monks and nuns.

\*\* Although no indication to this effect is given in the source, it is quite probable that these values do not include monks and nuns.



## Table 50.3 — Personal services

### A — Persons occupied in personal services

Source — General Population Censuses

Unit — Thousands.

year	barbers and hairdressers	total
1940	16	19
1950	16	18
1960	19	?
1970	17	?
1981	19	?
1991	?	29

### B — Indicators of activity of personal services firms

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas das Empresas — Comércio e Outros Serviços.

Remark — The index was calculated by deflating the volume of sales with the price index from Table 8.1.

year	volume of sales million escudos	index base 1995 = 100
1993	98	106
1994	92	95
1995	101	100

## SECTION P — DOMESTIC SERVICES

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

The rendering of domestic services is probably the economic activity that is least covered by statistical data. To a large extent, this fact is the result of the informal nature that these services frequently assume and even of the extra-economic status that is attributed to them socially. In fact, the very methodology of national accounting excludes the imputation of these services when they are not of a mercantile nature. This clearly has perverse results, in so far as the variation in the degree of mercantilisation of domestic services may lead to a variation in the computed national income, without any variation in the nation's effective welfare.

Only in the 1990s did systematic statistical data begin to be published on the firms operating in this sector of activity, in the Anuário Estatístico (Statistical Yearbook) and the Estatística das Empresas — Sector dos Serviços (Company Statistics — Services Sector). In the second table of this section, some data are reproduced relating to these firms. It is, however, worth stressing that they ignore most of the universe of housewives, male and female servants employed in domestic services, daily helps, etc., who perform the bulk of these services.

The first table in this section seeks to express a little of the actual size of this workforce by counting (from the General Population Censuses) the persons (exclusively) employed in domestic services. It should be noted that, at least in most cases, these data do not duplicate those presented in Chapter 4 — a sign of the already-mentioned informality and extra-economic status of this sector. It is interesting to note that the persons exclusively employed in domestic services were roughly one quarter of the population before the First World War, after which they grew in relative terms until 1960, when they amounted to more than one third of the population. Thereafter, they diminished in numbers significantly throughout the last four decades of the twentieth century, and it is believed that they amounted to no more than one tenth of the population at the end of the century. It is clear that this only means that there has been a greater accumulation of household tasks with actual professional activities by a significant part of the population.

### Tables

5P.1 — Persons occupied in domestic services

5P.2 — Indicators of the activity of domestic service firms

## Table 5P.1 — Persons occupied in domestic services

Source — General Population Censuses

Unit — Thousands.

Remark — In the data relating to the economic activity of the population presented in Chapter 4, housewives are excluded from the active population, whilst male and female servants are included in the active population. The active population (Chapter 4) and the total population (Chapter 2) are recalled here in order to make comparisons easier.

year	housewives	servants	domestic services	active population	total population
1890	913	125	1 038	2 530	5 050
1900	1 321	107	1 428	2 457	5 423
1911	1 426	159	1 585	2 545	5 960
1930	1 662	188	1 850	2 517	6 826
1940	2 277	226	2 503	2 775	7 722
1950	2 525	234	2 759	3 196	8 441
1960	2 894	184	3 078	3 316	8 851
1970	2 245	115	2 360	3 061	8 569
1981	(a) 1 388	104	1 492	3 849	9 852
1991	(b) 888	210	1 098	4 128	9 863

(a) Includes 6 thousand male persons.

(b) Includes 9 thousand male persons.

## Table 5P.2 — Indicators of the activity of domestic services firms

Source — Anuário Estatístico and Estatísticas das Empresas — Comércio e Outros Serviços.

Remark — The index was calculated by deflating the volume of sales with the price index from Table 8.1.

year	volume of sales million escudos	index base 1995 = 100
1993	0.9	99
1994	0.8	83
1995	1.0	100

## CHAPTER 6 — NATIONAL ACCOUNTS

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

### 1 — The series of the National Statistical Institute

There are three series of national accounts published by the National Statistical Institute.

The first refers to the years of 1938 and the period from 1947 to 1975 and to mainland Portugal. It is organised according to the OECD's Standardised System of National Accounts.

The second refers to the years from 1977 to 1985 and to mainland Portugal. It is organised according to the European System of Integrated Economic Accounts.

The third refers to the years from 1986 onwards and to the whole of the Portuguese territory. It is organised according to the European System of Integrated Economic Accounts.

The different criteria used in these three series and the lack of common years that would provide for a basis for any real comparison between them mean that the first two series are today of little more than historical interest. For this reason, only data from the third of these series (collected from a publication of the INE called Contas Nacionais) are reproduced in this volume (part A of the various tables). The previous series may be consulted in the Statistical Year-Books and special publications of the National Statistical Institute (particularly Nos. 34 and 46 of the Estudos series).

### 2 — The series of the Bank of Portugal

The Bank of Portugal published in Pinheiro et alii, 1997 series of the Portuguese national accounts referring to the years from 1953 to 1993 and to the whole of the Portuguese territory, organised according to the European System of Integrated Economic Accounts. Some data from these estimations are reproduced in this volume (part B of the various tables, except for Table 6.3, for which the respective data are not available).

### 3 — The series of the retrospective national accounts

Attempts to construct retrospective national accounts for the Portuguese economy date only from the 1980s, arising from the challenge implicitly issued by [Bairoch, 1976](#), [Valério, 1986](#), [Mata, 1987](#), [Justino, 1987](#), [Nunes, 1989](#) and [Nunes, Mata, Valério, 1989](#) represent the main stages in these attempts.

The values proposed in [Nunes, Mata, Valério, 1989](#) have been the subject of some controversy. [Lains, 1990](#), [Lains, Reis, 1991](#), [Nunes, Mata, Valério, 1991](#), [Nunes, Mata, Valério, 1992](#), [Esteves, 1993](#) and [Marques, Esteves, 1994](#) are the main references in this debate.

As a result of this debate and the publication of the series relating to the years from 1953 to 1993, contained in [Pinheiro et alii, 1993](#), new retrospective estimations were produced of the national accounts for the Portuguese economy, published in [Valério, 1998](#). These estimations are the ones reproduced in this volume (part C of Table 6.6, which is only prolonged to 1953, for after this date it would merely duplicate the data of parts A and B of this same table).

#### Technical notes to the tables

Tables 6.1 to 6.3 show the breakdown of the gross value added at current producer's prices from the production point of view. Below is shown the breakdown of sectors considered in accordance with the nomenclature of products from the national accounting system (NCN) used by the National Statistical Institute and the classification by sectors of economic activity (CAE) used by the Bank of Portugal:

Sectors	NCN	CAE
Agriculture + animal husbandry + hunting + + forestry	01 + 02	11 + 12
Fishing	03	13
Mining and quarrying	04 + 08	2
Manufacturing industry		
Food + beverages + tobacco	17+18+19+20+21+22+23+24	31
Textiles + clothing + footwear	25 + 26	32
Wood + cork	27	33
Paper + printing + publishing	28	34

## Chapter 6 — National accounts

Sectors	NCN	CAE
Chemical industries + petroleum + rubber	05 + 12 + 29	35
Non-metallic minerals	09 + 10 + 11	36
Basic metals	07	37
Metal products + machinery + + electrical and transport equipment	13 + 14 + 15 + 16	38
Other manufacturing industries	30	39
Electricity + gas + water	06	4
Construction	31	5
Wholesale and retail trade + restaurants + hotels	33 + 34	6
Transport + communications	35 + 36 + 37 + 38	7
Banking + insurance + real estate services + + business services	39 + 40 + 41 + 42 - PIBS	8 - PIBS
Services	9	
Public administration + defence	46	
Education + research	43 + 47	
Health + veterinary services	44 + 48	
Other services	32 + 45 + 49	

### PIBS — Product imputed to banking services

The main differences between the two classifications are to be found in the fact that products 04, 05, 07 and 08 of the NCN include a part that comes from the mining industry (CAE 2) and a part that comes from the manufacturing industry (respectively CAE 35, CAE 35, CAE 37 and CAE 36). It was decided to include these products in that sector where most of their activity was to be found (or all of their activity in the case of product 05, as there is no petroleum extraction industry in Portugal).

The differences between the values of the National Statistical Institute and the Bank of Portugal's series of gross value added by sectors do not derive only from these differences between the classifications that were used, but also, and particularly so, from the fact that the values produced by the National Statistical Institute refer to products (in keeping with the strict rules of the European System of Integrated Economic Accounts), whilst those produced by the Bank of Portugal refer to production units (a procedure which is essential for earlier periods, due to the traditional organisation of the basic statistical information).

Table 6.4 shows the relationship between the gross value added at current producer's prices and the gross domestic product at current market prices and provides a breakdown of the latter from the viewpoint of expenditure, based on the following formulas:

$$\text{gross value added} + \text{net indirect taxes} = \text{gross domestic product}$$
$$\text{gross domestic product} = \text{private consumption} + \text{public consumption} + \text{private gross fixed capital formation} + \text{public gross fixed capital formation} + \text{changes in inventories} + \text{exports} + \text{imports}$$

Table 6.5 shows the relationship between gross domestic product and national disposable income, both recorded at current market prices, and provides a breakdown of both these figures from the viewpoint of income, based on the following formulas:

$$\text{gross domestic product} = \text{compensation of employees} + \text{gross operating surplus} + \text{net indirect taxes}$$
$$\text{gross domestic product} + \text{net income and transfers from abroad} = \text{national disposable income}$$
$$\text{national disposable income} = \text{income of households and private administrations} + \text{income of the public administration} + \text{income of finance companies and firms}$$

It should be noted that the net indirect taxes considered in Tables 6.4 and that considered in 6.5 do not coincide, because the first only includes import duties and sales taxes or value added taxes whilst the second also includes production taxes.

Table 6.6 contrasts nominal variations, real variations and variations of the gross domestic product per capita.

## References

BAIROCH, Paul — Europe's gross national product: 1800-1975. The Journal of European economic history, volume 5, no. 2, 1976.



ESTEVES, Paulo — Portuguese prices before 1947: inconsistency between the observed cost of living index and the gdp price estimation of Nunes, Mata, Valério, 1989. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, working paper no. 19/93, 1993.

JUSTINO, David — Àcerca da evolução do PNB em Portugal 1850-1910. Análise Social, no. 97, 1987.

LAÍNS, Pedro — A evolução da agricultura e da indústria em Portugal, 1850-1913 — Interpretação quantitativa. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1990.

LAÍNS, Pedro; REIS, Jaime — Portuguese economic growth 1835-1985: some doubts. The Journal of European Economic History, volume 20, no. 2, 1991.

MARQUES, Carlos; ESTEVES, Paulo — Portuguese gdp and its deflator before 1947: a revision of the data produced by Nunes, Mata, Valério, 1989. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, working paper no. 4/94, 1994.

MATA, Eugénia — Câmbios e política cambial na economia portuguesa 1891-1931. Lisboa: Sá da Costa, 1987.

NUNES, Ana Bela — População activa e actividade económica em Portugal dos finais do século XIX à actualidade — uma contribuição para o estudo do crescimento económico português. Ph. D thesis presented at the Instituto Superior de Economia, Universidade Técnica de Lisboa, 1989.

NUNES, Ana Bela; MATA, Eugénia; VALÉRIO, Nuno — Portuguese economic growth 1835-1985. The Journal of European Economic History, volume 18, no. 2, 1989.

NUNES, Ana Bela; MATA, Eugénia; VALÉRIO, Nuno — Portuguese economic growth 1835-1985: some comments on Jaime Reis' and Pedro Lains' doubts. The Journal of European Economic History, volume 20, no. 2, 1991.

NUNES, Ana Bela; MATA, Eugénia; VALÉRIO, Nuno — O que sabemos sobre o crescimento económico português entre meados do século XIX e meados do século XX ?. Estudos de Economia, volume XII, no. 2, 1992.

PINHEIRO, Maximiano; et alii — Séries longas para a economia portuguesa. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1997.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — O produto nacional de Portugal entre 1913 e 1947 — uma primeira aproximação. Revista de História Económica e Social no. 11, 1983.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — The role of the government in Portuguese economic growth. Estudos de Economia, volume VII, no. 1, 1986.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — Recent developments on Portuguese retrospective national accounts. Working Paper no. 12, Gabinete de História Económica e Social do Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão da Universidade Técnica de Lisboa, 1998.

## Tables

6.1 — Origin of the product by sectors

6.2 — Origin of the product of manufacturing industry by sectors

6.3 — Origin of the product of sundry services by sectors

6.4 — National expenditure

6.5 — National disposable income

6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations

## Table 6.1 — Origin of the product by sector

Unit — Million escudos

### A — According to the National Statistical Institute

year	gross value added	agriculture forestry hunting	fishing	mining and quarrying	manufac- turing industry	electricity gas water
1986	4 735 119	323 533	37 528	28 254	1 427 466	186 583
1987	5 515 054	394 098	39 251	37 654	1 585 654	227 502
1988	6 440 086	344 150	42 410	44 349	1 897 712	280 520
1989	7 579 760	444 445	48 010	50 112	2 211 901	294 037
1990	8 922 408	540 926	53 758	59 691	2 460 224	366 252
1991	10 250 709	500 755	61 652	63 335	2 705 569	449 545
1992	11 442 720	464 157	64 746	66 589	2 911 390	502 362
1993	12 263 092	434 331	55 145	63 053	3 093 635	551 164
1994	13 461 829	525 256	54 416	63 919	3 273 137	574 691
1995	14 506 946	565 008	56 587	62 984	3 493 424	591 448

year	gross value added	construction	trade restaurants hotels	transport communica- tions	banking insurance real estate	sundry services
1986	4 735 119	255 196	990 612	347 447	274 592	863 908
1987	5 515 054	319 529	1 140 749	397 106	349 838	1 023 673
1988	6 440 086	388 331	1 335 491	448 931	396 318	1 261 874
1989	7 579 760	431 497	1 524 416	523 941	478 523	1 572 878
1990	8 922 408	508 171	1 810 898	603 796	573 947	1 944 745
1991	10 250 709	575 176	2 130 773	717 729	613 346	2 432 829
1992	11 442 720	652 833	2 365 238	783 940	687 564	2 943 901
1993	12 263 092	699 267	2 474 801	825 319	802 292	3 264 085
1994	13 461 829	856 129	2 360 231	839 879	1 414 502	3 499 669
1995	14 506 946	972 874	2 520 421	936 170	1 488 378	3 819 652

Table 6.1 — Origin of the product by sector (continued)

**B — According to the Bank of Portugal**

year	gross value added	agriculture forestry hunting	fishing	mining and quarrying	manufac- turing industry	electricity gas water
1953	57 731	15 660	1 032	427	14 620	751
1954	61 142	16 752	1 087	397	15 272	945
1955	63 863	17 649	1 231	404	15 510	1 004
1956	68 266	15 996	1 346	465	18 197	1 104
1957	72 462	18 025	1 366	515	18 405	1 129
1958	77 372	18 609	1 251	437	20 354	1 396
1959	82 105	17 364	1 282	496	21 990	1 525
1960	86 771	17 900	1 531	500	23 281	1 700
1961	90 149	18 219	1 550	400	23 719	1 935
1962	101 727	21 225	1 497	349	27 419	2 022
1963	105 073	19 061	1 684	410	29 544	2 182
1964	114 440	18 817	1 892	450	32 787	2 367
1965	132 844	20 686	1 808	501	41 567	2 521
1966	141 618	20 732	1 946	637	43 994	2 706
1967	157 230	21 226	2 278	669	47 794	3 134
1968	169 970	22 416	2 178	645	49 833	3 336
1969	182 079	22 854	2 158	720	55 201	3 531
1970	205 108	24 322	2 165	919	60 506	4 122
1971	237 622	29 288	2 608	889	66 126	4 671
1972	280 556	36 920	2 670	948	77 053	5 078
1973	331 977	36 689	3 105	1 461	92 147	5 611
1974	392 555	42 906	3 671	2 027	116 904	5 760
1975	454 544	50 627	3 933	1 832	117 485	5 560
1976	539 191	61 664	5 865	2 556	140 815	5 740
1977	687 744	80 330	7 212	3 381	183 146	10 737
1978	852 730	92 365	8 993	4 099	226 355	18 829
1979	1 088 919	114 361	10 604	6 431	300 114	22 504
1980	1 408 454	139 087	13 640	8 180	408 833	28 318
1981	1 689 421	173 183	15 615	9 982	455 238	29 157

Table 6.1 — Origin of the product by sector (continued)

## B — According to the Bank of Portugal (continued)

year	gross value added	agriculture forestry hunting	fishing	mining and quarrying	manufac- turing industry	electricity gas water
1982	2 041 570	218 235	15 712	11 267	515 445	46 706
1983	2 624 531	278 057	19 477	13 695	672 243	89 593
1984	3 234 118	319 440	24 761	16 469	883 762	140 039
1985	3 984 806	387 659	31 648	20 992	1 092 392	187 464
1986	4 720 776	426 603	42 549	24 979	1 313 255	205 972
1987	5 533 978	462 803	46 512	29 798	1 608 841	237 460
1988	6 583 568	475 424	54 408	40 033	1 942 292	298 748
1989	7 781 858	676 048	67 620	84 143	2 175 312	295 603
1990	9 371 629	781 898	68 309	114 035	2 553 350	364 309
1991	10 751 390	732 602	74 859	124 662	2 692 995	463 178
1992	11 966 479	666 761	62 977	127 889	2 838 368	509 646
1993	12 599 386	615 258	57 852	134 018	2 883 111	541 798

year	gross value added	construction	trade restaurants hotels	transport communica- tions	banking insurance real estate	sundry services
1953	57 731	3 367	7 455	2 124	5 803	6 491
1954	61 142	3 339	8 216	2 572	6 072	6 490
1955	63 863	3 726	8 075	2 770	6 439	7 056
1956	68 266	4 488	9 967	2 837	6 751	7 114
1957	72 462	4 934	10 204	2 862	7 173	7 850
1958	77 372	5 377	11 187	2 910	7 605	8 247
1959	82 105	5 942	12 101	3 246	8 057	10 103
1960	86 771	6 041	13 198	3 442	8 593	10 586
1961	90 149	6 813	12 854	3 987	9 080	11 592
1962	101 727	7 130	15 829	4 158	9 680	12 416
1963	105 073	7 286	16 779	4 863	10 479	12 784
1964	114 440	7 799	19 360	5 435	11 406	14 127
1965	132 844	9 616	20 965	6 052	12 295	16 830
1966	141 618	11 544	21 708	6 619	13 377	18 358

Table 6.1 — Origin of the product by sector (continued)

## B — According to the Bank of Portugal (continued)

year	gross value added	construction	trade restaurants hotels	transport communica- tions	banking insurance real estate	sundry services
1967	157 230	13 088	26 372	7 196	14 687	20 789
1968	169 970	14 055	29 862	7 525	17 272	22 848
1969	182 079	15 943	30 003	9 400	18 784	23 486
1970	205 108	18 633	34 822	9 934	21 524	28 162
1971	237 622	25 041	41 193	11 621	24 356	31 829
1972	280 556	32 551	45 938	13 630	27 761	38 006
1973	331 977	37 396	60 192	16 849	33 674	44 853
1974	392 555	45 092	61 444	20 915	37 540	56 297
1975	454 544	55 077	81 748	25 296	39 136	73 850
1976	539 191	58 328	96 039	31 501	46 358	90 324
1977	687 744	74 548	116 337	41 518	52 964	117 571
1978	852 730	93 328	150 265	52 591	62 144	143 763
1979	1 088 919	121 093	196 509	66 498	73 994	176 812
1980	1 408 454	134 440	273 990	79 470	87 035	235 460
1981	1 689 421	182 755	332 468	101 030	101 675	288 318
1982	2 041 570	225 112	396 281	131 399	128 105	353 304
1983	2 624 531	264 547	514 859	180 661	154 087	437 310
1984	3 234 118	254 358	644 987	233 053	191 318	525 933
1985	3 984 806	276 429	798 128	309 575	227 922	652 597
1986	4 720 776	302 385	958 078	352 495	273 872	820 587
1987	5 533 978	375 329	1 053 551	413 144	325 622	980 917
1988	6 583 568	439 226	1 221 738	459 309	424 550	1 227 840
1989	7 781 858	475 942	1 442 757	511 219	523 782	1 529 434
1990	9 371 629	598 625	1 699 785	605 121	689 162	1 897 034
1991	10 751 390	721 068	2 025 254	742 179	833 154	2 341 440
1992	11 966 479	867 552	2 324 434	835 342	925 047	2 808 462
1993	12 599 386	846 558	2 562 607	863 766	1 023 021	3 071 398

**Table 6.2 — Origin of the product of manufacturing industry by sector**

Unit — Million escudos

**A — According to the National Statistical Institute**

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork	paper printing publishing	chemical petroleum rubber
1986	1 427 466	311 299	323 030	48 820	87 307	256 740
1987	1 585 654	360 114	374 288	60 586	110 728	227 570
1988	1 897 712	435 229	437 392	60 130	147 257	284 661
1989	2 211 901	529 233	501 688	78 285	165 049	300 969
1990	2 460 224	626 623	568 410	105 076	160 702	246 779
1991	2 705 569	705 434	654 634	116 168	163 528	262 680
1992	2 911 390	781 763	720 035	124 483	181 086	262 556
1993	3 093 635	857 751	784 260	124 927	164 123	277 036
1994	3 273 137	887 909	814 780	136 525	197 066	282 818
1995	3 493 424	885 670	822 427	142 893	232 763	304 107

year	manufac- turing industry	non- metallic minerals	basic metals	metal products, machinery electrical and transport equipment	other manufacturing industries
1986	1 427 466	77 692	51 593	253 351	17 634
1987	1 585 654	89 991	51 482	290 018	20 877
1988	1 897 712	103 283	46 924	357 260	25 576
1989	2 211 901	115 541	87 834	404 505	28 797
1990	2 460 224	133 499	96 902	488 618	33 615
1991	2 705 569	147 823	63 264	549 393	42 645
1992	2 911 390	171 242	45 993	579 366	44 866
1993	3 093 635	177 565	45 809	606 697	55 467
1994	3 273 137	186 591	58 397	646 593	62 458
1995	3 493 424	195 985	58 312	786 876	64 391

Table 6.2 — Origin of the product of manufacturing industry by sector (continued)

**B — According to the Bank of Portugal**

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork	paper printing publishing	chemical petroleum rubber
1953	14 620	2 773	4 764	1 685	483	2 721
1954	15 272	3 385	4 653	1 707	636	2 729
1955	15 510	3 257	4 564	2 170	633	2 769
1956	18 197	3 593	4 853	2 435	772	3 652
1957	18 405	3 320	4 648	2 739	941	3 393
1958	20 354	3 560	4 761	2 407	944	4 263
1959	21 990	3 929	4 761	2 363	936	5 214
1960	23 281	3 801	5 239	2 504	1 003	6 260
1961	23 719	4 082	4 990	2 711	1 017	5 551
1962	27 419	4 917	5 587	3 458	1 132	5 832
1963	29 544	5 108	5 784	3 563	1 136	6 919
1964	32 787	5 361	6 838	3 880	1 547	7 085
1965	41 567	5 932	9 215	4 485	2 487	8 919
1966	43 994	6 573	8 962	4 810	2 871	8 122
1967	47 794	7 016	9 717	5 273	3 322	8 849
1968	49 833	8 249	9 118	4 585	3 714	10 213
1969	55 201	9 217	10 297	4 818	3 857	10 391
1970	60 506	9 835	11 035	4 719	4 188	11 316
1971	66 126	10 039	13 795	4 961	4 283	10 845
1972	77 053	10 909	16 235	6 359	4 568	11 132
1973	92 147	12 938	20 220	8 204	5 501	12 434
1974	116 904	16 162	26 780	10 070	8 130	15 165
1975	117 485	18 741	24 833	10 586	7 959	14 467
1976	140 815	23 946	32 492	12 403	7 642	15 303
1977	183 146	30 974	41 495	14 529	9 835	19 229
1978	226 355	38 318	46 933	21 044	13 007	20 609
1979	300 114	47 528	67 298	28 761	20 274	32 253
1980	408 833	63 272	86 731	47 483	30 476	46 584
1981	455 238	80 164	98 526	41 724	34 549	40 104



Table 6.2 — Origin of the product of manufacturing industry by sector (continued)

## B — According to the Bank of Portugal (continued)

year	manufac- turing industry	food drinks tobacco	textiles clothing footwear	wood cork	paper printing publishing	chemical petroleum rubber
1982	515 445	93 875	121 354	36 701	36 264	44 088
1983	672 243	130 044	156 276	46 582	45 812	66 841
1984	883 762	171 518	224 906	54 642	70 644	89 878
1985	1 092 392	207 127	286 088	62 371	81 047	135 405
1986	1 313 255	242 969	373 837	74 959	103 308	146 331
1987	1 608 841	299 694	417 847	91 641	144 171	186 194
1988	1 942 292	343 756	491 565	111 621	171 534	244 352
1989	2 175 312	416 012	529 268	124 261	195 756	229 499
1990	2 553 350	478 741	682 611	140 508	177 401	258 873
1991	2 692 995	571 069	679 866	146 561	186 414	293 635
1992	2 838 368	631 324	691 798	178 502	196 407	312 726
1993	2 883 111	651 082	737 218	171 844	179 558	320 904

year	manufac- turing industry	non- metallic minerals	basic metals	metal products, machinery electrical and transport equipment	other manufacturing industries
1953	14 620	587	208	1 298	101
1954	15 272	671	138	1 252	101
1955	15 510	720	113	1 182	102
1956	18 197	874	56	1 844	118
1957	18 405	945	29	2 279	111
1958	20 354	1 209	113	2 969	128
1959	21 990	1 336	100	3 216	135
1960	23 281	1 549	169	2 604	152
1961	23 719	1 681	216	3 286	185
1962	27 419	1 780	274	4 225	214
1963	29 544	1 895	357	4 572	210
1964	32 787	2 059	563	5 270	184
1965	41 567	3 116	814	6 358	241
1966	43 994	3 783	977	7 647	249

Table 6.2 — Origin of the product of manufacturing industry by sector (continued)

B — According to the Bank of Portugal (continued)

year	manufac- turing industry	non- metallic minerals	basic metals	metal products, machinery electrical and transport equipment	other manufacturing industries
1967	47 794	3 851	906	8 583	277
1968	49 833	3 835	1 477	8 354	288
1969	55 201	4 125	1 901	10 248	347
1970	60 506	4 249	1 978	12 750	436
1971	66 126	4 392	2 270	15 087	454
1972	77 053	4 845	2 637	19 883	485
1973	92 147	5 940	2 956	23 255	699
1974	116 904	6 731	2 612	30 318	936
1975	117 485	7 338	2 196	30 325	1 040
1976	140 815	9 857	2 737	35 493	942
1977	183 146	14 837	5 359	45 067	1 821
1978	226 355	20 506	11 124	52 632	2 182
1979	300 114	21 850	12 889	66 595	2 666
1980	408 833	27 745	13 994	89 144	3 404
1981	455 238	34 086	17 045	106 127	2 913
1982	515 445	41 608	24 225	113 378	3 952
1983	672 243	52 461	27 982	141 757	4 488
1984	883 762	67 271	31 325	166 346	7 232
1985	1 092 392	70 847	34 699	206 358	8 450
1986	1 313 255	93 532	41 967	226 404	9 948
1987	1 608 841	122 718	56 172	278 298	12 106
1988	1 942 292	151 456	64 295	350 684	13 029
1989	2 175 312	182 663	70 821	411 255	15 777
1990	2 553 350	226 306	74 942	492 657	21 311
1991	2 692 995	251 008	66 277	474 836	23 329
1992	2 838 368	281 814	58 780	460 147	26 870
1993	2 883 111	294 772	59 513	439 215	29 005

**Table 6.3 — Origin of the product of sundry services by sector**

Unit — Million escudos.

**A — According to the National Statistical Institute**

year	sundry services	public administration and defence	education and research	health and veterinary	other services
1986	863 908	298 146	213 758	134 486	217 518
1987	1 023 673	350 102	260 395	153 757	259 419
1988	1 261 874	417 223	324 497	207 420	312 734
1989	1 572 878	505 376	412 153	241 837	413 512
1990	1 944 745	615 654	490 761	304 396	533 934
1991	2 432 829	744 580	657 823	369 986	660 440
1992	2 943 901	876 776	782 249	450 155	834 721
1993	3 264 085	976 901	845 503	507 999	933 682
1994	3 499 669	998 175	939 986	548 149	1 013 359
1995	3 819 652	1 059 520	1 062 177	601 421	1 096 534

## Table 6.4 — National expenditure

Unit — Million escudos.

### A — According to the National Statistical Institute

year	gross value added	net indirect taxes	gross domestic product
1986	4 735 119	326 516	5 061 635
1987	5 515 054	413 259	5 928 313
1988	6 440 086	515 376	6 955 462
1989	7 579 760	604 938	8 184 698
1990	8 922 408	698 703	9 621 111
1991	10 250 709	781 020	11 031 729
1992	11 442 720	984 522	12 427 242
1993	12 263 092	946 468	13 209 560
1994	13 461 829	1 166 993	14 628 822
1995	14 506 946	1 310 745	15 817 691

year	gross value added	private consumption	public consumption	private gross fixed capital formation	public gross fixed capital formation	changes in inventories	exports	imports
1986	4 735 119	3 415 750	762 360	1 071 491	155 548	- 49 269	1 297 917	1 592 162
1987	5 515 054	4 000 912	879 743	1 397 739	192 869	+ 39 232	1 567 212	2 149 394
1988	6 440 086	4 701 138	1 080 179	1 701 743	247 877	+ 144 926	1 878 548	2 798 949
1989	7 579 760	5 452 345	1 303 059	1 953 762	283 210	+ 104 261	2 364 604	3 276 543
1990	8 922 408	6 479 555	1 588 984	2 283 307	329 062	+ 105 573	2 733 566	3 898 936
1991	10 250 709	7 500 754	2 037 374	2 443 149	388 283	+ 66 126	2 792 696	4 196 653
1992	11 442 720	8 516 800	2 306 665	2 551 918	491 352	+ 59 684	2 929 448	4 428 625
1993	12 263 092	9 079 809	2 517 389	2 438 025	551 213	- 13 256	3 048 864	4 412 484
1994	13 461 829	9 963 452	2 705 082	2 909 394	522 833	+ 56 450	3 582 658	5 111 047
1995	14 506 946	10 560 207	2 938 927	3 150 443	583 968	+ 114 941	4 167 507	5 698 302

Table 6.4 — National expenditure (continued)

**B —According to the Bank of Portugal**

year	gross value added	net indirect taxes	gross domestic product
1953	57 731	1 262	58 993
1954	61 142	1 422	62 564
1955	63 863	1 583	65 447
1956	68 266	1 676	69 943
1957	72 462	1 788	74 250
1958	77 372	1 818	79 191
1959	82 105	1 937	84 042
1960	86 771	2 223	88 994
1961	90 149	2 499	92 648
1962	101 727	2 259	103 987
1963	105 073	2 365	107 438
1964	114 440	2 186	116 626
1965	132 844	2 838	135 681
1966	141 618	3 194	144 812
1967	157 230	4 988	162 217
1968	169 970	5 461	175 432
1969	182 079	6 149	188 229
1970	205 108	7 250	212 358
1971	237 622	8 146	245 768
1972	280 556	9 398	289 955
1973	331 977	10 840	342 817
1974	392 555	13 189	405 744
1975	454 544	15 232	469 776
1976	539 191	22 756	561 947
1977	687 744	34 513	722 257
1978	852 730	40 634	893 364
1979	1 088 919	46 986	1 135 905
1980	1 408 454	67 862	1 476 316
1981	1 689 421	84 305	1 773 726

Table 6.4 — National expenditure (continued)

## B — According to the Bank of Portugal (continued)

year	gross value added	net indirect taxes	gross domestic product
1982	2 041 570	103 251	2 144 820
1983	2 624 531	115 808	2 740 339
1984	3 234 118	130 980	3 365 099
1985	3 984 806	146 208	4 131 014
1986	4 720 776	327 725	5 048 501
1987	5 533 978	414 454	5 948 432
1988	6 583 568	516 789	7 100 357
1989	7 781 858	606 571	8 388 429
1990	9 371 629	700 434	10 072 063
1991	10 751 390	782 800	11 534 190
1992	11 966 479	984 522	12 951 001
1993	12 599 386	946 468	13 545 854

year	gross value added	private consump- tion	public consump- tion	gross fixed capital formation	changes in inventories	exports	imports
1953	57 731	46 432	5 025	10 210	+ 579	8 280	11 532
1954	61 142	48 612	5 693	10 440	+ 769	9 468	12 418
1955	63 863	51 295	5 871	11 626	+ 78	10 477	13 900
1956	68 266	52 878	5 899	13 534	+ 1 098	11 613	15 079
1957	72 462	56 994	6 333	15 184	+ 957	11 691	16 908
1958	77 372	58 287	6 570	17 113	+ 1 232	12 615	16 627
1959	82 105	62 151	7 414	18 350	+ 686	11 825	16 384
1960	86 771	66 820	7 990	18 840	+ 766	13 540	18 962
1961	90 149	68 952	10 092	23 193	+ 1 444	13 776	24 809
1962	101 727	74 187	11 018	24 272	+ 399	16 420	22 308
1963	105 073	77 458	11 430	23 218	+ 2 416	17 383	24 466
1964	114 440	83 173	12 353	26 049	+ 2 726	21 309	28 983
1965	132 844	96 987	13 416	29 922	+ 5 312	23 978	33 934

Table 6.4 — National expenditure (continued)

## B — According to the Bank of Portugal (continued)

year	gross value added	private consumption	public consumption	gross fixed capital formation	changes in inventories	exports	imports
1966	141 618	102 445	14 849	36 939	+ 2 464	25 329	37 213
1967	157 230	114 492	17 918	40 124	+ 1 565	28 500	40 383
1968	169 970	124 458	19 819	42 283	+ 3 728	30 785	45 642
1969	182 079	126 984	21 557	48 433	+ 3 969	35 271	47 986
1970	205 108	144 082	25 687	53 602	+ 7 615	38 824	57 452
1971	237 622	162 470	28 170	68 739	+ 9 136	44 121	66 868
1972	280 556	183 124	32 376	86 467	+ 12 031	51 668	75 710
1973	331 977	222 781	37 370	105 774	+ 7 344	64 213	94 667
1974	392 555	284 165	49 435	139 219	- 5 934	80 956	142 096
1975	454 544	328 618	60 289	133 278	- 611	70 386	122 183
1976	539 191	392 113	71 164	148 356	+ 22 208	75 149	147 043
1977	687 744	480 008	93 408	227 869	+ 27 340	104 519	210 887
1978	852 730	592 443	117 442	263 521	+ 360 92	139 750	255 884
1979	1 088 919	752 287	148 629	376 952	- 94	227 654	369 524
1980	1 408 454	988 077	198 704	441 170	+ 89 533	308 794	549 960
1981	1 689 421	1 222 504	246 827	605 067	+ 64 302	350 585	715 559
1982	2 041 570	1 471 778	300 954	721 313	+ 89 209	430 634	869 068
1983	2 624 531	1 850 363	380 485	872 700	+ 18 033	647 154	1 028 395
1984	3 234 118	2 348 083	463 248	942 575	- 12 063	943 477	1 320 222
1985	3 984 806	2 778 780	586 003	1 085 702	+ 9 931	1 191 752	1 521 155
1986	4 720 776	3 334 801	713 882	1 282 438	+ 22 232	1 338 967	1 643 820
1987	5 533 978	3 921 392	827 074	1 699 486	+ 108 291	1 610 523	2 218 334
1988	6 583 568	4 768 412	1 019 742	2 170 152	+ 109 830	1 919 189	2 886 968
1989	7 781 858	5 540 270	1 252 124	2 494 553	+ 54 862	2 432 662	3 386 041
1990	9 371 629	6 709 069	1 524 696	2 905 781	+ 103 495	2 857 865	4 028 842
1991	10 751 390	7 806 026	1 949 042	3 162 255	+ 66 057	2 903 565	4 352 754
1992	11 966 479	8 736 979	2 209 933	3 495 288	+ 81 442	3 003 456	4 576 097
1993	12 599 386	9 251 220	2 403 211	3 291 674	+ 28 290	3 094 288	4 522 829

## Table 6.5 — National disposable income

Unit — Million escudos.

### A — According to the National Statistical Institute

year	gross domestic product	compensation of employees	gross operating surplus	net indirect taxes	net income and transfers from abroad	national disposable income
1986	5 061 635	2 225 899	2 229 204	606 532	204 232	5 265 867
1987	5 928 313	2 588 732	2 625 177	714 404	330 259	6 258 572
1988	6 955 462	3 014 030	3 024 332	917 100	368 463	7 323 925
1989	8 184 698	3 556 597	3 575 178	1 052 923	426 336	8 611 034
1990	9 621 111	4 313 437	4 081 283	1 226 391	506 013	10 127 124
1991	11 031 729	5 215 352	4 415 391	1 400 986	562 474	11 594 203
1992	12 427 242	5 972 184	4 750 910	1 704 148	663 252	13 090 494
1993	13 209 560	6 272 500	5 274 035	1 663 025	684 519	13 894 079
1994	14 628 822	6 497 578	6 233 940	1 897 304	449 517	15 078 339
1995	15 817 691	6 888 832	6 871 851	2 057 008	364 136	16 181 827

year	national disposable income	households and private administrat.	public administration	finance firms and companies
1986	5 265 867	4 157 268	599 668	508 931
1987	6 258 572	4 811 210	702 488	744 874
1988	7 323 925	5 395 396	1 025 607	902 922
1989	8 611 034	6 139 721	1 332 225	1 139 088
1990	10 127 124	7 427 306	1 338 229	1 361 589
1991	11 594 203	8 659 603	1 597 197	1 337 403
1992	13 090 494	9 719 987	2 227 467	1 143 040
1993	13 894 079	10 165 931	2 040 829	1 687 319
1994	15 078 339	10 817 685	2 154 817	2 105 837
1995	16 181 827	11 527 736	2 419 445	2 234 646



Table 6.5 — National disposable income (continued)

**B — According to the Bank of Portugal**

year	gross domestic product	compensation of employees	gross operating surplus	net indirect taxes	net income and transfers from abroad	national disposable income
1953	58 993	29 443	26 221	3 330	1 466	60 459
1954	62 564	31 620	27 438	3 505	1 549	64 112
1955	65 447	32 927	28 645	3 875	1 741	67 188
1956	69 943	34 679	31 148	4 115	2 093	72 036
1957	74 250	35 916	33 975	4 360	2 769	77 019
1958	79 191	36 402	38 240	4 549	2 870	82 061
1959	84 042	39 240	39 788	5 014	3 062	87 104
1960	88 994	41 949	41 494	5 550	3 191	92 185
1961	92 648	45 756	40 612	6 280	2 473	95 121
1962	103 987	48 679	48 600	6 708	3 470	107 456
1963	107 438	53 296	46 987	7 155	3 841	111 279
1964	116 626	58 515	50 102	8 009	4 526	121 152
1965	135 681	65 643	61 118	8 920	5 404	141 086
1966	144 812	72 983	61 871	9 958	6 398	151 211
1967	162 217	84 081	65 490	12 647	8 910	171 127
1968	175 432	91 329	70 450	13 653	10 088	185 520
1969	188 229	101 754	70 906	15 569	12 943	201 172
1970	212 358	117 965	75 813	18 580	14 504	226 863
1971	245 768	135 695	90 427	19 647	18 169	263 937
1972	289 955	158 991	108 319	22 645	22 715	312 670
1973	342 817	188 153	127 325	27 339	25 704	368 520
1974	405 744	247 302	129 401	29 041	27 903	433 647
1975	469 776	321 150	113 966	34 660	24 482	494 258
1976	561 947	373 076	144 720	44 151	19 806	581 754
1977	722 257	438 386	224 808	59 063	31 635	753 891
1978	893 364	513 285	318 697	61 383	54 549	947 913
1979	1 135 905	606 789	454 052	75 064	97 354	1 233 258
1980	1 476 316	772 260	611 415	92 640	114 672	1 590 988
1981	1 773 726	949 962	737 143	86 621	108 879	1 882 604

Table 6.5 — National disposable income (continued)

## B — According to the Bank of Portugal (continued)

year	gross domestic product	compensation of employees	gross operating surplus	net indirect taxes	net income and transfers from abroad	national disposable income
1982	2 144 820	1 177 843	791 417	175 560	94 664	2 239 484
1983	2 740 339	1 402 427	1 112 860	225 051	93 828	2 834 167
1984	3 365 099	1 573 773	1 627 892	163 464	110 973	3 476 072
1985	4 131 014	1 894 891	1 949 013	287 110	150 601	4 281 615
1986	5 048 501	2 273 020	2 178 085	597 396	219 829	5 268 329
1987	5 948 432	2 674 019	2 574 834	699 579	353 879	6 302 311
1988	7 100 357	3 114 115	3 087 122	899 120	405 968	7 506 325
1989	8 388 429	3 782 646	3 560 456	1 045 327	500 760	8 889 189
1990	10 072 063	4 505 870	4 342 916	1 223 277	573 801	10 645 865
1991	11 534 190	5 380 395	4 747 643	1 406 153	585 500	12 119 690
1992	12 951 001	6 312 394	4 939 703	1 698 903	671 604	13 622 605
1993	13 545 854	6 698 000	5 181 790	1 666 064	677 076	14 222 930

year	national disposable income	households and private administrat.	public administration	finance firms and companies
1953	60 459	47 959	6 819	5 682
1954	64 112	51 997	7 075	5 039
1955	67 188	54 096	7 671	5 421
1956	72 036	58 120	8 272	5 643
1957	77 019	59 892	8 818	8 309
1958	82 061	62 154	9 318	10 588
1959	87 104	66 098	10 016	10 991
1960	92 185	70 427	10 717	11 042
1961	95 121	73 407	11 890	9 824
1962	107 456	80 358	13 449	13 649
1963	111 279	86 030	14 190	11 059
1964	121 152	93 154	15 597	12 401
1965	141 086	104 022	17 849	19 215
1966	151 211	113 934	20 001	17 275

Table 6.5 — National disposable income (continued)

## B — According to the Bank of Portugal (continued)

year	national disposable income	households and private administrat.	public administra- tion	finance firms and companies
1967	171 127	131 413	23 195	16 520
1968	185 520	143 289	25 898	16 332
1969	201 172	157 004	29 845	14 324
1970	226 863	177 871	36 202	12 790
1971	263 937	208 061	38 773	17 104
1972	312 670	248 590	42 385	21 695
1973	368 520	292 005	50 879	25 637
1974	433 647	354 894	55 423	23 329
1975	494 258	444 767	58 072	- 8 581
1976	581 754	520 325	63 215	- 1 786
1977	753 891	583 226	91 938	78 727
1978	947 913	736 443	99 420	112 050
1979	1 233 258	932 624	135 142	165 493
1980	1 590 988	1 204 924	146 425	239 639
1981	1 882 604	1 523 729	125 549	233 326
1982	2 239 484	1 915 810	244 403	79 271
1983	2 834 167	2 356 920	330 704	146 543
1984	3 476 072	2 872 204	255 428	348 440
1985	4 281 615	3 448 087	335 219	498 309
1986	5 268 329	4 048 218	622 726	597 386
1987	6 302 311	4 762 457	702 060	837 794
1988	7 506 325	5 332 682	1 055 560	1 118 084
1989	8 889 189	6 402 907	1 359 432	1 126 850
1990	10 645 865	7 663 184	1 380 401	1 602 280
1991	12 119 690	8 999 431	1 650 399	1 469 860
1992	13 622 605	10 058 532	2 313 308	1 250 764
1993	14 222 930	10 584 800	2 117 849	1 520 280

## Table 6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations

### A — According to the National Statistical Institute

year	gross domestic product current prices million escudos	gross domestic product previous year's prices million escudos	real variation in gross domestic product %	population thousands inhabitants	variation in population %	real variation in product per inhabitant %
1986	5 061 635	?	?	10 007	?	?
1987	5 928 313	5 361 544	+ 5.9	9 981	- 0.3	+ 6.2
1988	6 955 462	6 255 875	+ 5.5	9 955	- 0.3	+ 5.8
1989	8 184 698	7 324 914	+ 5.3	9 920	- 0.4	+ 5.7
1990	9 621 111	8 562 301	+ 4.6	9 877	- 0.4	+ 5.1
1991	11 031 729	9 843 787	+ 2.3	9 865	- 0.1	+ 2.4
1992	12 427 242	11 238 796	+ 1.9	9 869	+ 0.0	+ 1.8
1993	13 209 560	12 361 283	- 0.5	9 892	+ 0.2	- 0.8
1994	14 628 822	13 790 890	+ 4.4	9 902	+ 0.1	+ 4.3
1995	15 817 691	15 059 858	+ 2.9	9 916	+ 0.1	+ 2.8
1996	16 803 489					
1997	17 905 228					

Table 6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations (continued)

**B — According to the Bank of Portugal**

year	gross domestic product current prices million escudos	gross domestic product previous year's prices million escudos	real variation in gross domestic product %	population thousands inhabitants	variation in population %	real variation in product per inhabitant %
1953	58 993	?	?	8 579	?	?
1954	62 564	62 048	+ 5.2	8 632	+ 0.6	+ 4.5
1955	65 447	64 498	+ 3.1	8 693	+ 0.7	+ 2.4
1956	69 943	67 806	+ 3.6	8 756	+ 0.7	+ 2.9
1957	74 250	73 172	+ 4.6	8 818	+ 0.7	+ 3.9
1958	79 191	78 750	+ 6.1	8 889	+ 0.8	+ 5.2
1959	84 042	82 352	+ 4.0	8 962	+ 0.8	+ 3.1
1960	88 994	88 069	+ 4.8	9 037	+ 0.8	+ 3.9
1961	92 648	92 180	+ 3.6	9 031	- 0.1	+ 3.6
1962	103 987	102 407	+ 0.5	9 020	- 0.1	+ 0.7
1963	107 438	108 010	+ 3.9	9 082	+ 0.7	+ 3.2
1964	116 626	113 969	+ 6.1	9 122	+ 0.4	+ 5.6
1965	135 681	127 642	+ 9.4	9 129	+ 0.1	+ 9.4
1966	144 812	141 936	+ 4.6	9 109	- 0.2	+ 4.8
1967	162 217	150 916	+ 4.2	9 103	- 0.1	+ 4.3
1968	175 432	170 545	+ 5.1	9 115	+ 0.1	+ 5.0
1969	188 229	179 838	+ 2.5	9 097	- 0.2	+ 2.7
1970	212 358	204 340	+ 8.6	9 044	- 0.6	+ 9.2
1971	245 768	234 835	+ 0.6	8 990	- 0.6	+ 11.2
1972	289 955	271 528	+ 0.5	8 970	- 0.2	+ 10.7
1973	342 817	304 595	+ 5.0	8 976	+ 0.1	+ 5.0
1974	405 744	353 307	+ 3.1	9 098	+ 1.4	+ 1.7
1975	469 776	385 800	- 4.9	9 426	+ 3.6	- 8.2
1976	561 947	481 949	+ 2.6	9 665	+ 2.5	+ 0.1

Table 6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations (continued)

B — According to the Bank of Portugal (continued)

year	gross domestic product current prices million escudos	gross domestic product previous year's prices million escudos	real variation in gross domestic product %	population thousands inhabitants	variation in population %	real variation in product per inhabitant %
1977	722 257	598 066	+ 6.4	9 736	+ 0.7	+ 5.7
1978	893 364	769 374	+ 6.5	9 801	+ 0.7	+ 5.8
1979	1 135 905	959 957	+ 7.5	9 856	+ 0.6	+ 6.9
1980	1 476 316	1 195 420	+ 5.2	9 909	+ 0.5	+ 4.7
1981	1 773 726	1 518 784	+ 2.9	9 957	+ 0.5	+ 2.4
1982	2 144 820	1 826 000	+ 2.9	10 059	+ 1.0	+ 1.9
1983	2 740 339	2 185 440	+ 1.9	10 123	+ 0.6	+ 1.2
1984	3 365 099	2 732 695	- 0.3	10 197	+ 0.7	- 1.0
1985	4 131 014	3 439 056	+ 2.2	10 173	- 0.2	+ 2.4
1986	5 048 501	4 282 064	+ 3.7	10 199	+ 0.3	+ 3.4
1987	5 948 432	5 445 499	+ 7.9	10 228	+ 0.3	+ 7.6
1988	7 100 357	6 289 696	+ 5.7	10 254	+ 0.3	+ 5.5
1989	8 388 429	7 605 241	+ 7.1	10 281	+ 0.3	+ 6.8
1990	10 072 063	9 083 616	+ 8.3	10 302	+ 0.2	+ 8.1
1991	11 534 190	10 418 786	+ 3.4	10 304	+ 0.0	+ 3.4
1992	12 951 001	11 948 232	+ 3.6	10 280	- 0.2	+ 3.8
1993	13 545 854	12 926 953	- 0.2	10 313	+ 0.3	- 0.5

Table 6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations (continued)

**C — Retrospective data**

year	gross domestic product current prices million escudos	gross domestic product previous year's prices million escudos	real variation in gross domestic product %	population thousands inhabitants	variation in population %	real variation in product per inhabitant %
1837	204	251	?	3 665	+ 0.7	?
1838	198	198	- 2.9	3 689	+ 0.7	- 3.6
1839	198	192	- 3.2	3 713	+ 0.7	- 3.9
1840	200	180	- 9.2	3 737	+ 0.6	- 9.7
1841	223	214	+ 7.0	3 748	+ 0.3	+ 6.6
1842	243	268	+ 20.3	3 759	+ 0.3	+ 20.0
1843	250	266	+ 9.7	3 771	+ 0.3	+ 9.3
1844	257	297	+ 18.8	3 782	+ 0.3	+ 18.5
1845	?	?	?	3 793	+ 0.3	?
1846	?	?	?	3 804	+ 0.3	?
1847	?	?	?	3 816	+ 0.3	?
1848	247	274	?	3 827	+ 0.3	?
1849	?	?	?	3 838	+ 0.3	?
1850	?	?	?	3 850	+ 0.3	?
1851	255	276	?	3 861	+ 0.3	?
1852	300	305	+ 19.6	3 873	+ 0.3	+ 19.3
1853	296	244	- 18.7	3 884	+ 0.3	- 19.0
1854	295	249	- 15.7	3 892	+ 0.2	- 15.9
1855	308	315	+ 6.8	3 901	+ 0.2	+ 6.5
1856	324	269	- 12.9	3 909	+ 0.2	- 13.0
1857	335	391	+ 20.7	3 923	+ 0.4	+ 20.3
1858	341	369	+ 10.1	3 960	+ 0.9	+ 9.1
1859	344	315	- 7.7	3 998	+ 1.0	- 8.6
1860	346	357	+ 3.9	4 035	+ 0.9	+ 2.9

Table 6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations (continued)

## C — Retrospective data (continued)

year	gross domestic product current prices million escudos	gross domestic product previous year's prices million escudos	real variation in gross domestic product %	population thousands inhabitants	variation in population %	real variation in product per inhabitant %
1861	366	347	+ 0.4	4 110	+ 1.9	- 1.4
1862	388	384	+ 4.8	4 149	+ 0.9	+ 3.8
1863	402	419	+ 8.0	4 188	+ 0.9	+ 7.0
1864	428	415	+ 3.2	4 213	+ 0.6	+ 2.6
1865	429	443	+ 3.5	4 238	+ 0.6	+ 2.9
1866	415	402	- 6.3	4 264	+ 0.6	- 6.8
1867	430	405	- 2.4	4 289	+ 0.6	- 3.0
1868	441	468	+ 8.8	4 314	+ 0.6	+ 8.1
1869	455	460	+ 4.2	4 340	+ 0.6	+ 3.6
1870	470	496	+ 9.0	4 366	+ 0.6	+ 8.3
1871	469	480	+ 2.2	4 392	+ 0.6	+ 1.6
1872	497	497	+ 5.8	4 418	+ 0.6	+ 5.2
1873	528	420	- 15.4	4 444	+ 0.6	- 15.9
1874	563	662	+ 25.4	4 471	+ 0.6	+ 24.6
1875	595	589	+ 4.6	4 497	+ 0.6	+ 4.0
1876	599	593	- 0.3	4 524	+ 0.6	- 0.9
1877	613	551	- 8.0	4 551	+ 0.6	- 8.6
1878	612	618	+ 0.8	4 591	+ 0.9	- 0.1
1879	596	619	+ 1.1	4 632	+ 0.9	+ 0.2
1880	608	645	+ 8.2	4 673	+ 0.9	+ 7.3
1881	634	621	+ 2.2	4 715	+ 0.9	+ 1.3
1882	650	644	+ 1.5	4 757	+ 0.9	+ 0.6
1883	649	676	+ 4.0	4 799	+ 0.9	+ 3.1
1884	678	724	+ 11.4	4 842	+ 0.9	+ 10.5
1885	700	725	+ 6.9	4 885	+ 0.9	+ 6.0



Table 6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations (continued)

## C — Retrospective data (continued)

year	gross domestic product current prices million escudos	gross domestic product previous year's prices million escudos	real variation in gross domestic product %	population thousands inhabitants	variation in population %	real variation in product per inhabitant %
1886	737	720	+ 2.9	4 929	+ 0.9	+ 1.9
1887	754	771	+ 4.7	4 973	+ 0.9	+ 3.7
1888	798	798	+ 5.9	5 017	+ 0.9	+ 5.0
1889	813	759	- 4.9	5 062	+ 0.9	- 5.7
1890	810	731	- 10.0	5 105	+ 0.8	- 10.8
1891	811	835	+ 3.2	5 138	+ 0.7	+ 2.5
1892	841	825	+ 1.7	5 182	+ 0.9	+ 0.8
1893	860	844	+ 0.3	5 220	+ 0.7	- 0.4
1894	880	863	+ 0.4	5 251	+ 0.6	- 0.2
1895	931	976	+ 11.0	5 275	+ 0.4	+ 10.5
1896	953	944	+ 1.4	5 297	+ 0.4	+ 0.9
1897	946	886	- 7.0	5 331	+ 0.6	- 7.5
1898	967	933	- 1.3	5 365	+ 0.6	- 2.0
1899	988	1 005	+ 3.9	5 407	+ 0.8	+ 3.1
1900	1 019	1 047	+ 6.0	5 450	+ 0.8	+ 5.2
1901	994	1 003	- 1.6	5 497	+ 0.8	- 2.4
1902	998	1 027	+ 3.3	5 552	+ 1.0	+ 2.2
1903	1 033	1 004	+ 0.6	5 613	+ 1.1	- 0.5
1904	1 053	998	- 3.3	5 670	+ 1.0	- 4.3
1905	1 059	1 068	+ 1.4	5 720	+ 0.9	+0.6
1906	1 068	1 068	+ 0.9	5 758	+ 0.7	+0.2
1907	1 096	1 096	+ 2.6	5 800	+ 0.7	+1.9
1908	1 120	1 110	+ 1.3	5 840	+ 0.7	+0.6
1909	1 137	1 128	+ 0.7	5 883	+ 0.7	+ 0.0
1910	1 150	1 191	+ 4.7	5 937	+ 0.9	+ 3.7

Table 6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations (continued)

## C — Retrospective data (continued)

year	gross domestic product current prices million escudos	gross domestic product previous year's prices million escudos	real variation in gross domestic product %	population thousands inhabitants	variation in population %	real variation in product per inhabitant %
1911	1 133	1 076	- 6.5	6 004	+ 1.1	- 7.5
1912	1 191	1 201	+ 6.1	6 008	+ 0.1	+ 6.0
1913	1 209	1 179	- 1.0	6 004	- 0.1	- 1.0
1914	1 129	1 138	- 5.8	6 053	+ 0.8	- 6.6
1915	1 208	1 100	- 2.5	6 107	+ 0.9	- 3.4
1916	1 383	1 171	- 3.1	6 147	+ 0.6	- 3.7
1917	1 431	1 246	- 9.9	6 186	+ 0.6	- 10.4
1918	1 737	1 065	- 25.6	6 104	- 1.3	- 24.6
1919	2 227	1 994	+ 14.8	6 082	- 0.4	+ 15.2
1920	3 119	1 983	- 11.0	6 084	+ 0.0	- 11.0
1921	3 870	2 671	- 14.4	6 148	+ 1.1	- 15.2
1922	6 131	5 242	+ 35.5	6 216	+ 1.1	+ 34.0
1923	9 299	6 408	+ 4.5	6 271	+ 0.9	+ 3.6
1924	12 133	9 247	- 0.6	6 344	+ 1.2	- 1.7
1925	13 450	13 896	+ 14.5	6 429	+ 1.3	+ 13.0
1926	14 203	14 721	+ 9.4	6 507	+ 1.2	+ 8.1
1927	15 344	14 468	+ 1.9	6 580	+ 1.1	+ 0.7
1928	18 249	18 923	+ 23.3	6 658	+ 1.2	+ 21.9
1929	20 304	19 649	+ 7.7	6 729	+ 1.1	+ 6.5
1930	19 877	20 736	+ 2.1	6 812	+ 1.2	+ 0.9
1931	19 191	21 183	+ 6.6	6 908	+ 1.4	+ 5.1
1932	19 508	19 846	+ 3.4	7 003	+ 1.4	+ 2.0
1933	19 892	19 901	+ 2.0	7 096	+ 1.3	+ 0.7
1934	20 668	20 495	+ 3.0	7 189	+ 1.3	+ 1.7
1935	20 890	20 855	+ 0.9	7 279	+ 1.3	- 0.4

Table 6.6 — Gross domestic product and its variations (continued)

## C — Retrospective data (continued)

year	gross domestic product current prices million escudos	gross domestic product previous year's prices million escudos	real variation in gross domestic product %	population thousands inhabitants	variation in population %	real variation in product per inhabitant %
1936	21 322	20 886	+ 0.0	7 379	+ 1.4	- 1.4
1937	22 288	21 586	+ 1.2	7 476	+ 1.3	- 0.1
1938	23 149	23 757	+ 6.6	7 575	+ 1.3	+ 5.2
1939	23 414	24 606	+ 6.3	7 677	+ 1.3	+ 4.9
1940	24 454	23 536	+ 0.5	7 758	+ 1.1	- 0.5
1941	29 039	26 370	+ 7.8	7 800	+ 0.5	+ 7.2
1942	34 111	28 922	- 0.4	7 859	+ 0.8	- 1.1
1943	36 282	32 790	- 3.9	7 934	+ 1.0	- 4.8
1944	35 228	34 410	- 5.2	8 013	+ 1.0	- 6.1
1945	36 351	34 203	- 2.9	8 101	+ 1.1	- 4.0
1946	42 294	37 625	+ 3.5	8 182	+ 1.0	+ 2.5
1947	46 930	45 767	+ 8.2	8 258	+ 0.9	+ 7.2
1948	47 693	55 950	+ 19.2	8 358	+ 1.2	+ 17.8
1949	48 599	43 016	- 9.8	8 434	+ 0.9	- 10.6
1950	50 664	51 767	+ 6.5	8 512	+ 0.9	+ 5.5
1951	57 360	56 711	+ 11.9	8 547	+ 0.4	+ 11.5
1952	58 678	58 603	+ 2.2	8 563	+ 0.2	+ 2.0
1953	58 993	58 557	- 0.2	8 579	+ 0.2	- 0.4

## CHAPTER 7 — MONEY AND CREDIT \*

JAIME REIS (European University Institute)

\* I wish to express my thanks to Sandra Sequeira for the most valuable help that she provided in the preparation of this chapter.

Money and credit are two important pillars in the development of market economies in the contemporary era. The origin of this role dates back to more remote times and clearly increased in the Western world, despite a series of ups and downs, throughout the Middle Ages and the Modern Era, resulting finally in its enormous expansion over the last two hundred years. In fact, it was really only in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries that the monetarisation of these economies was fully completed, to the extent that it spread into all activities that were open to trading. In the same way, it was only during this period that credit (or financial) activity became one of the most important sectors in all of the then rapidly developing economies, which has consequently led so many historians — amongst whom Gerschenkron and Cameron are perhaps the most famous — to consider this to be one of the prime factors for explaining the structural transformations that have occurred in the meantime and are still taking place today.

From the theoretical viewpoint, this role has various facets which should be recalled here. In the case of money, it results directly from its three defining aspects — that of being a unit of account, that of being a reserve of value and that of being a means of payment. Without these attributes, it would not be possible for there to be any active and more or less efficient markets for goods and services and for factors of production, whilst commercial exchanges would also be both costly and difficult. The division of labour and productive specialisation, which represent the basis of any process for the sustained increase of productivity and technical progress, would be seriously inhibited and there would be no long-term economic growth.

In Portugal, although no great attention has ever been paid to the historical study of money in its strictest sense, its importance has, however, been implicitly recognised by those who are studying one of the central themes in the present-day bibliography of economic history, namely the development of capitalism or the penetration into the Portuguese economy of market forces, especially during the nineteenth century. A quantitative view of the problem, based on reasonably secure statistics, consequently seems to be an indispensable step towards a deeper understanding of such an important question, but, in essence, this step has yet to be taken. Similar considerations could be made about the relatively unexplored theme of the relationship between the performance of the economy and monetary evolution, particularly in the twentieth

century, a period which has acted as the setting for the phenomena of inflation and recession with clearly important links with monetary reality <sup>1</sup>.

As far as credit is concerned, the vast literature on financial markets and the institutions participating therein points towards the main aspects that should be borne in mind when analysing its influence on the economy. Credit is the entity that makes it possible to establish a meeting point between economic agents, whose preferences in terms of consumption and savings tend to diverge, and therefore to establish a certain harmony between the intentions of those who have resources but do not wish to consume them immediately and the intentions of those who have the possibility of making use of resources but do not have them in sufficient quantity for the realisation of their projects. The appearance of a vast movement for the creation of institutions dedicated to the intermediation of these harmonising operations during the nineteenth century (a process which has continued throughout the twentieth century), as well as the institutional innovation linked to this, in the form of the joint-stock company, was to provide a notable impetus in terms of reducing the costs of financial transactions. Important economies were thus made, which increased the role of credit in economic activity in general and acted as a highly significant stimulus for technological and organisational progress in terms of productive activities, with evident effects in the field of productivity. The most recent perspectives formed in relation to this question underline the importance of the asymmetry in the information available to creditors and debtors, with obvious advantages for the latter, and the possibilities that banks and equivalent institutions were able to offer the former, giving them the chance to identify and monitor the latter at a low cost to themselves, which reduced both the risks and costs of credit and created stimuli for their progressive expansion (Levine, 1997).

Generally speaking, Portuguese financial history has also been somewhat understudied from the historical viewpoint, especially as a whole, but, from the little that is known, it is clear that the development of this sector and the impulse that it gave the real economy were relatively weak and belated. An illustrative suggestion of this is provided by the fact that only in the 1950s did there begin to appear bank branches spread across the whole of the national territory in any significant number (Sérgio, 1990), or furthermore by the fact that the total of financial assets per capita was chronically low in comparative international terms. The quantification of properly organised and easily accessible time series that is provided after this introduction may, once again, be a factor leading towards an expansion in this extremely limited knowledge that we have of an area that is indispensable for our understanding of Portuguese economic development in the long-term.

In view of the large number of political and macroeconomic implications that they have had, it is natural that the political power has always been concerned with these two realities — money

---

<sup>1</sup> See, for example, the pioneering study made in this field by Santos, 1994.

and credit — and that this has led to more or less vigorous official efforts to quantify these, in order to know more about them, understand them better and control them more efficiently. Besides having been a perennial symbol of kingly power and the autonomy of the national state, the monetary area in particular has always represented an important means for the latter of obtaining revenue, through the minting of coins and the later manipulation of the value of money. The ever greater 'invention' and spread of paper money, which was much more profitable for those producing it than metal coins, was to expand the possibilities in this area enormously, from the nineteenth century onwards, simultaneously increasing the potential repercussions on both the economy and politics that are now caused by the issue of money at the whim of the state.

During the age of mercantilism, these economic and statistical data were not gathered with a view to their public dissemination. Instead, they were of a reserved nature, state secrets amassed in order to strengthen its economic and military capacity <sup>2</sup>. By way of contrast, in the period with which we are now concerned, statistics had begun to serve another function in society. Mercantilist precepts were no longer in command, but instead all over Europe and the Europeanised world, it was believed that civil society needed to be informed so that the market might better develop its functions. At the same time, it was recognised that there could be no good government without good information and statistics were consequently regarded as the guiding 'compass' of the actions of government, because they made it possible to delineate the best policies, when these were necessary, and apply them in the most efficient manner.

It was this concern, in the first decades of the nineteenth century, that gave rise to the characteristically nineteenth-century impulse for collecting and publishing ever greater quantities of statistics on the nation's political, social and economic life, just as was happening in all the countries that were then considered as civilised. This same concern has, of course, continued until the present day. In the case of money and credit, there was (and still is) a second type of reason for the flourishing of these collections and publication of quantitative data, whose product largely provides the basis in this chapter for the construction of the time series presented. Knowledge of social realities such as these, synthesised through numerical expression, served not only to inform but also to control and *ipso facto* to help prevent the irregularities to which any free society is exposed. For example, the state's obligation to publicise its production of money or its acquisition of credit served as a barrier to the ever-present temptation to mint more money or contract ever greater debts than those that have already been authorised by law and by parliament.

---

<sup>2</sup> This does not, of course, prevent such series, if available, from being used in attempts at quantification according to modern criteria. An example of such an attempt is provided by a recently presented dissertation, Sousa, 1999, which includes an estimate of the Portuguese monetary circulation between the late seventeenth century and the late eighteenth century.

When matters were seen in accordance with this concept, it was public opinion that acted as the main brake, but the brake could only work properly if people were kept informed. The obligation placed upon banking institutions to publish quantitative data about their activity (something which they were reluctant to do since “secrecy is the essence of good business”) served a similar purpose. In this case, the aim was to prevent the banks that enjoyed the legal power to issue money from exceeding the permitted limits. For all other banks, which did in fact represent the majority, this obligation to publicise such information was designed to encourage them (once again through the pressure of public opinion) to proceed with due caution and to show respect for both the formal and informal rules that should govern sound banking activity. Otherwise, there would have been serious risks of their abusing the situation of privilege given to them by the state (especially in the case of issuing money), placing at risk the assets that had been entrusted to them and injecting instability into an economy that increasingly depended upon them. For the quantitative historian, the great advantage of all this effort is that it provided a copious flow of numerical information of the kind that is now presented here in summarised form.

As has been said above, to judge by the current extremely limited bibliography available upon this matter, the two themes with which this chapter is concerned are far from ever having enjoyed a place of importance in the cogitations of modern Portuguese historiography. This fact is naturally reflected in the general lack of modern sources containing series that have been drawn up according to clear and up-to-date criteria and that might effectively help us to prepare the numerical data that we need for this work. It also explains why there have been very few controversies of a scientific nature either as to the quantification or as regards the interpretation of the variables in question, a situation which has also helped to limit the quantity of reliable data prepared for current analytical purposes by specialists who have had suitable preparation for this task. Consequently, we have frequently had to resort to statistics about money and credit that were collected and published a reasonably long time ago, with different aims from ours and based on criteria that were frequently variable and sometimes not very explicit, besides their not having been subjected to a subsequent critical elaboration by historians.

In the course of compiling the series that make up this chapter, and because of this situation, countless problems arose as a result of the inconsistency of the authorities responsible for defining the criteria to be used in the collection and organisation of data, the unclear methods with which these norms were sometimes applied, as well as the presence of incongruities that can only be explained by the existence of simple errors in the preparation or even in the printing of these data. For all these reasons, an attempt has been made to help the reader as much as possible by providing a fairly detailed (and perhaps even rather long-winded) description of the main difficulties and doubts encountered, so that the following tables are accompanied by footnotes that are considered indispensable for their understanding. This introduction also

contains a series of more extensive comments, sometimes of a conceptual nature, which are designed to facilitate understanding of the tables.

In this chapter, money and credit are given separate treatment, being divided into two distinct parts, although, as we shall see, there are several important points of contact between the two areas, which are, after all, no more than two different sides of one and the same macroeconomic reality. In the first part, we begin with a presentation of the different forms of money that circulated in Portugal from the early nineteenth century to 1993, according to their physical nature — metal coins, paper money and deposit money. This is followed by a compilation of these same means of payment, this time drawn up in accordance with the theoretical concepts commonly accepted by contemporary monetary analysts, in other words distributed under the headings M0, M1 and M2. In the second part, we progressed chronologically from the early beginnings of organised banking activity under the form of a joint-stock society (at the beginning of the 1820s) and then sought to show the evolution of the sector until the present day, almost entirely omitting the part relating to unincorporated financial entities, because of the lack of suitable information, and notwithstanding their relative importance, at least until the time of the First World War. The approach to this question took into account both the overall aspects of banking activity and some of its more significant particular aspects, expressed through the respective accounts of the annual balance sheets, such as deposits, the commercial portfolio and reserves. For greater clarity and ease in dealing with the statistics, the group of these institutions was divided into three main categories, according to their nature and functions within the financial system, namely: the central bank, commercial banks and their equivalents and savings institutions without any private profit-making purposes, such as for example *Montepio Geral* or the *Caixas Económicas* (savings banks).

\*

The tables were drawn exclusively from published sources, without any alterations being made to them, and may therefore contain a number of original errors. The values are all expressed in the original units of account, generally the *conto* (one thousand escudos) or its multiples. Not all the monetary or banking aggregates are described here, but in some cases it is possible to estimate them on the basis of the data that are now published, as, for example, in the case of the monetary multiplier (b), which may be obtained by dividing, by the monetary base (B or H) (Table 1.3), any of the measurements of money supply (M) that are to be found in Table 1.4 ( $M = b.B$  or H).



## 1 — Money

The geographical scope to which the monetary statistics correspond is the national one, although there are some restrictions related to the particular status enjoyed by Madeira and the Azores for a relatively long period of time in the past. Effectively, for part of the period under consideration, the money used in those two parts of Portuguese territory was different from that which was in circulation in mainland Portugal. In the case of Madeira, the process of conformity with the national currency standard began in 1879 and was completed in 1887, although there are some signs that a certain amount of the former currency continued to exist beyond this date. In the case of the Azores, this standardisation occurred much later, in 1932. The ‘national’ statistics presented in the following tables that are prior to these dates do not include the special case of the currency used in the islands.

### — Metallic money (Table 7.1)

This table contains the various types of metal money legally authorised to circulate in the country, classified according to its material nature, as well as its respective totals. It should be stressed that, in certain periods, not all of this form of money was considered full legal tender. This was the case, for example, with silver, which it was not compulsory to accept in any transaction in excess of 5\$000 during the period from 1854 to 1891. Attention is also drawn to the fact that most gold coins that were considered legal tender were not minted in Portugal, most of them being English and composed of sovereigns and half-sovereigns. This circumstance has made it difficult for historians to make a rigorous quantification of the total amount of gold coins existing in Portugal at any one moment, in view of the freedom of movement of precious metals in or out of the country, whether or not they were minted during the period in question. The methodology used to overcome this problem is described in [Sousa, 1991](#) and [Reis, 1990](#). As there are some divergences regarding the quantifications of metal money published by these two authors for the period until 1890, these figures are presented separately (sections A and B in Table 7.1). Thereafter, there are no parallel series. It should also be noted that the series produced by [Reis, 1990](#) has been the subject of some criticism (see [Valério, 1991](#)) as it is considered invalid that, after the abandonment of the gold standard in 1891, coins of this kind should be included in this quantification. The argument is centred upon knowing whether, between 1891 and 1914, gold coins had been completely withdrawn from circulation, as a result of the depreciation suffered by

paper money, and had therefore ceased to be used in payments (although with a premium in relation to the dominant paper money), or if, on the contrary, they continued to circulate, in addition to fulfilling their other functions as a reserve of value and a unit of value. According to this latter author, gold coins should have been deducted from the total amount of money in circulation compiled in section B of Table 7.1. As will be seen in relation to Table 7.4, this question has repercussions on the quantification of the various forms of money supply presented there.

### — Paper money (Table 7.2)

First of all, this table shows series of convertible notes issued and placed in circulation by the Portuguese banks authorised to do so between 1821 and 1891. It is important to note that the values presented here refer to notes in circulation and not to the total amount of notes issued, which is higher, since part of these are normally kept in the safe deposits of the issuing body. Initially (1822-1846), these notes belonged solely to the Bank of Lisbon and continued to circulate between 1846 and 1857, after the closure of this institution, although with a depreciated and variable value according to their discounting on the market. It was not possible to reckon the precise values for this form of money during this latter period and so it was not included in the accounts. In 1846, responsibility for the issue of paper money passed to the Bank of Portugal, which had to share this function with a growing number of banks (one of these, the Commercial Bank of Oporto, had in fact been issuing small quantities since 1835) that had also been authorised to act as issuing banks, until in 1891 this function was given exclusively to the Bank of Portugal. Attention is drawn in this series to the absence of the paper money issued by the state from 1797 onwards in order to combat serious financial problems. This money circulated for several decades, although it had a low level of public acceptance, which caused it to undergo a sharp depreciation, but we do not have an annual series available to represent this money. As from 1891, the table includes the inconvertible notes of the Bank of Portugal. Beginning during the First World War, the legal and illegal notes that entered into circulation from 1917 onwards, in a period of sharply increasing inflation, in order to satisfy the monetary needs occasioned by the recent disappearance of some metal money, are temporarily added to this figure.

### — Deposit money (Table 7.3)

This table includes the totals of the money created by financial institutions in the form of deposits, from the time when these values could be considered as a form of payment. A

distinction should be drawn between two types of money in this context — demand deposits and time deposits. This separation has not always been easy to make, because of a lack of information in official statistics or even because of the absence of an appropriate indication in the annual reports and accounts of financial institutions. For the period from 1854 to 1912, no distinction was generally drawn between the two types, and it was therefore assumed that most such deposits would be demand deposits. Nor were deposits at *caixas económicas* (savings banks), the *Caixa Geral de Depósitos* or other savings institutions included in this series, because of their uncertain, but apparent, nature of being time deposits. On the other hand, it was assumed that the deposits received by the Bank of Portugal should not be excluded from the composition of this variable, since they were mostly deposits made by the general public and not from other financial institutions. The sources used from 1913 onwards made it possible to distinguish between the two types of deposit. At the same time, it was decided, justifiably, that all deposits made at the Bank of Portugal should be excluded, in view of the ever clearer role of this bank as a central bank and the predominance, and later the exclusivity, of the deposits made thereat by banks and equivalent institutions.

#### — Money supply (Table 7.4)

The way in which the information contained in Table 7.4 is arranged corresponds to the different notions of money supply developed some decades ago by monetary economists and generally attributed to Cagan and Friedman. The most restricted of these concepts is that of ‘monetary circulation’ or M0 and occupies part A of the table. Its values are obtained by subtracting the total amount of metal money and banknotes held as a cash reserve at the country’s banks from the total amount of metal money and banknotes in circulation. The first column of the table was constructed by following a slightly different criterion since in this case only the cash reserves held at the Bank of Portugal were subtracted and not the cash reserves held at other financial institutions. It should be added that for the period from 1891-1912, the divergence between this and the second column of the table was largely due to what was noted above in the case of Table 7.1 and resulting from the diversity of criteria as to whether or not to include gold coins in the means of payment for that period. The concept of M1 or ‘immediate means of payment’, which occupies part B of the table, is much broader than the previous one because it incorporates demand deposits. These are now understood as being a monetary instrument, since they can be used to make payments by cheque. M1 is consequently defined as the group of all means of payment whether or not they have the power of legal tender and therefore includes the notes and coins in the possession of the general public, as well as demand deposits held within the banking system. As was pointed out earlier, in the comments on Table 7.3, there is some

difficulty in determining whether or not all deposits held in the period from 1854 to 1912 were demand deposits. This particular doubt led [Mata, Valério, 1993](#) to exclude this possibility, preferring the designation M for these years and using the designation M1 only after this date. This view contradicts that of [Reis, 1990](#), who assumed that these deposits could be considered as representing a means of payment before 1912<sup>3</sup>. Section C of the table completes this group of concepts of the money supply with that of M2, 'money in its broad sense' or the 'total means of payment'. This concept expands upon the previous one, adding to it the system's other deposits, essentially time deposits. From 1985 onwards, [Mata, Valério, 1993](#) followed a slightly broader concept than that of the M2 used in the Long Series (1997), or in other words the concept of 'liquid assets in the possession of the non-financial resident sector' (L). Besides M2, this includes treasury bills and CLIPs (*Crédito por Leilão ao Investimento Público* — Auctioned Credit for Public Investment) granted to the non-financial public. In presenting these two sources, we prefer to use the M2 value from the Long Series, not only for a question of consistency, but also to allow for comparisons between the two concepts throughout the period under consideration.

### — Monetary base (Table 7.5)

The monetary base is a central concept in the analysis of the factors that determine money supply in a modern economy. The values presented in Table 7.5 correspond to the definition derived once again from the works of Cagan and Friedman. According to this latter author, the monetary base, or H, is the total amount of the forms of money that can be used either as immediate means of payment (currency) or as bank reserves. In the present case, the monetary base should be obtained by subtracting the cash reserves of the issuing bank from the total amount of notes and coins issued. This was done only in the columns referring to the twentieth century. The application of this criterion to any period prior to 1891, the year when the Bank of Portugal became the sole issuer, is less easy, however. Before that date, as there were various issuers that were also commercial banks (which also happened in the case of the Bank of Portugal), it would be necessary to unravel which part of the reserves covered the issue of notes and which part corresponded to its commercial activity. Clearly, this is impractical and so, in this case, for the period between 1854 and 1912, it was decided to subtract only the cash reserves of the Bank of Portugal and not to do this for the other issuing banks ([Reis, 1990](#)).

---

<sup>3</sup> The various arguments of the two positions can be consulted in [Reis, 1990](#), [Valério, 1991](#) and [Reis, 1994](#).

## 2 — Credit and financial institutions

### — Bank of Portugal (Table 7.6)

In view of its important role in the Portuguese financial system, and in its capacity as the central bank, the Bank of Portugal is considered here separately from the other credit institutions. It should be stressed that its current functions were only confirmed in a clear and formal manner in the twentieth century, and in particular after 1931, since before this there was a long period after its foundation (1846) when it could only be referred to as a proto- or pre- central bank. The accounts which provide the statistics for Table 7.6 are only the most important of its accounts and a mere fraction of its total number. In fact, these accounts have sometimes been quite numerous, both in the assets and in the liabilities of the bank's end-of-year balance sheet, but reasons of space and the need for an easier reading have led us to make this selection. Most of the data compiled here are drawn directly from this institution's Annual Report and Accounts, which still did not prevent the criteria used in their preparation from varying occasionally. In order to avoid confusion about the exact contents, it will therefore be convenient to make some comments as to the meaning of the terms used. First of all in the liabilities section, 'notes in circulation' describes precisely that situation and consequently excludes notes that have been issued but are kept as cash reserves. Secondly, attention is drawn to the fact that 'banks and bankers' is a modern concept corresponding to a time when the deposits received by the Bank of Portugal came only from credit institutions. For reasons of convenience, this title was maintained throughout the period covered by the table, but in reality the deposits of private individuals are also included here, which, at least until the First World War, would have had a considerable importance, although, for legal reasons, they ceased to be accepted by the bank only after 1975. 'Capital' refers to the capital that is effectively paid up, but in the years when the bank held its own shares, which were therefore represented in its assets, these were not deducted from this item. The item 'reserve funds' only begins in 1881 because this was when the bank's general meeting took the decision to begin setting them up. As far as the bank's assets are concerned, the first item to cause difficulties because of the diversity of criteria with which it has been treated is 'reserves', where until 1845 only metal money was included. From 1846 to 1886, paper money was joined to this and, from 1846 to 1857, the notes from the Bank of Lisbon held as cash reserves. From 1887 to 1930, 'reserves' also included the notes issued by the Bank of Portugal and kept as cash reserves. In 1931, this variable was transformed into 'gold bullion and coins and assets in foreign currencies', a norm which was maintained until 1980. In 1981, drawing rights on the International Monetary Fund and other loans made to the state in gold and foreign currency were added to this

item, as well as 'other foreign exchange reserves', a situation which was maintained until 1993. The 'operations with the government' account also includes a wide variety of transactions, beginning in 1888 with a group consisting of 'special contracts with the State and its agencies' and 'current accounts with the Public Treasury' (including the account relating to agricultural credit). In 1945, this composition was altered to 'state debt, public debt securities and National Development promissory notes', a classification which lasted until 1960, when it began to include the payments made by the bank to the International Monetary Fund on behalf of the state, the clearing account of the Overseas Provinces and the bonds of the Monetary Fund of the Escudo Area. From 1984 onwards, the most important addition to these amounts was the loans made to the autonomous regions on behalf of the state.

### — Banks, bankers and banking houses (Table 7.7)

As in the previous table, Table 7.7 contains the aggregate totals from the main accounts on the balance sheets of private credit institutions in mainland Portugal and the Islands. The main difficulty arising from the sources used in this case is that of identifying the entities that are included at each moment, since once again the criterion used by the competent authorities when collecting the statistics was fairly variable. From 1858 to 1892, the values presented refer to the commercial banks of mainland Portugal and the Islands, including the Bank of Portugal (which does in fact happen throughout Table 7.7 until 1990), so that unfortunately bankers and banking houses were omitted from this item, which, in some cases, represented important companies in the sector. Banking houses and bankers only began to be included as from 1930, when the respective statistics began to be identical in quality to those of the banks. The banks that were active in the colonies — as was the case with the *Banco Nacional Ultramarino (BNU)* and the *Banco de Angola* — deserve special attention since their treatment changed successively in the specialised official publications. Until 1892, the BNU was included in the aggregate totals, but from 1919 to 1946, it ceased to be included here, with both its overseas and metropolitan transactions being recorded under the 'Overseas' item of Table 7.7. In its turn, the *Banco de Angola* was included in the group of mainland banks. From 1947 to 1974, the same item contained only the metropolitan balances of the BNU and the *Banco de Angola*, whilst until 1956 the 'Overseas' item represented the BNU's overseas balances, and, from 1957 to 1959, the overseas balances of this same bank together with those of the *Banco de Angola*. Both these values ceased to be represented in Portuguese financial statistics from 1960 onwards. After 1974, these banks were treated in the same way as mainland banks. At the same time, under the category of banks from mainland Portugal and the Islands, 'equivalent institutions' (*Caixa Geral dos Depósitos*, *Crédito Predial Português* and *Banco de Fomento*) began to be included in 1968, a situation which lasted

until 1978. Since then 'equivalent institutions' have ceased to be included in this aggregate total. As far as sources are concerned, Table 7.7 was constructed from three official statistical sources, one of which — *Situações Bancárias* (Banking Situations) — offers two possibilities. One of these relates to the data published annually, whilst the other is a retrospective series published in 1946 covering the period from 1930 to 1946. Of the two sources, we prefer the first one, as the retrospective series was drawn up in accordance with unknown criteria and because using it would not be coherent with the other version, which was used for the period from 1919 to 1930. Finally, attention is drawn to the fact that there was no information available for the years 1928 and 1929 for all the institutions included in the table and that, for the period from 1927 to 1938, no information was available for the BNU, in this latter case because its annual report and accounts were not published during this period.

### — *Caixas económicas* (savings banks) and credit companies (Table 7.8)

Table 7.8 presents data relating to non-profit making institutions that are generally geared towards small savers. As is customary, the total amount of deposits received was used as the only indicator. The geographical scope of the statistics was that of mainland Portugal and the Islands, although in the latter case the term 'Islands' denotes Madeira and the Azores between 1919 and 1965 and only the Azores between 1966 and 1968. Thereafter, the islands ceased to be recorded separately in official statistics. The institutions included in the aggregate totals of the first half of the table varied according to the different periods. For the period from 1919 to 1927, these institutions included the savings banks and credit companies under the form of *caixas de crédito* (credit cooperatives), *caixas económicas* (savings banks), private limited companies and partnerships, so that for this reason the *Caixa Geral de Depósitos* is excluded, but not the *Montepio Geral*. During this period, the expression 'State establishments' refers to the *Caixa Geral de Depósitos* and the *Caixa Económica Postal*. In the period from 1930 to 1968, all these institutions were already included in this aggregate score, although they were excluded for the period from 1969 to 1990. In the second half of the table, it is possible to see the individual evolution of some of these institutions over the long term, partly thanks to certain high-quality scientific studies that have been dedicated to them and which provide this information in a precise and accurate manner. Included in this group are the series of mortgage credit bonds issued by the *Companhia do Crédito Predial Português*, which, since it is an institution that is not geared towards savings, does not fit, as a bank, into the previous table.

### — Number of financial institutions (Table 7.9)

Table 7.9 only seeks to show the total number of institutions of the various types found in tables 7.6 to 7.8. For this purpose, it uses the same sources as those used in Tables 7.7 and 7.8, although it should be explained that the heading ‘state establishments’ refers to the *Caixa Geral de Depósitos* and the *Caixa Económica Postal* (Post Office Savings Bank). As from 1953, it was no longer possible to count the number of commercial banks in the country in this way, because the Estatísticas Financeiras (Financial Statistics) began to record the number of branches and not the number of corporations under this heading.

### — Bank of Portugal discount rates (Table 7.10)

Table 7.10 shows the official discount rate fixed by the Bank of Portugal, which, throughout the period under consideration, became an increasingly important instrument of credit and monetary policy.

### — Bank clearing operations (Table 7.11)

Bank clearing was officially created in 1926, but only came into operation in 1929. Statistical sources only began to present the data relating to this activity from 1933 onwards and in the form which is presented here.

## References

- Anais de Estatística. Volume I. Série I — Finanças. nº 1 — Estatística Bancária (1858 a 1892). Lisboa: Imprensa Nacional, 1894.
- Estatísticas Financeiras [Financial Statistics] (various years).
- LEVINE, Ross — Financial Development and Economic Growth: Views and Agenda. Journal of Economic Literature, XXXV, 1997.
- MARQUES, A.H. de Oliveira — Companhia de Crédito Predial Português. 125 Anos de História. Lisboa: 1989.



- MATA, Eugénia; VALÉRIO, Nuno — História Económica de Portugal. Uma Perspectiva Global. Lisboa: Presença, 1993.
- NUNES, Ana Bela; BASTIEN, Carlos; VALÉRIO, Nuno — Caixa Económica Montepio Geral. 150 Anos de História 1844-1994. Lisboa: Montepio Geral, 1994.
- PERES, Damião — História do Banco de Portugal 1821-1846, vol. 1. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1971.
- PINHEIRO, Maximiano; et alii — Séries Longas para a Economia Portuguesa Pós II Guerra Mundial. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1997.
- REIS, Jaime — A Evolução da Oferta Monetária Portuguesa 1854-1912. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1990.
- REIS, Jaime — Aspectos da História Monetária Portuguesa da Segunda Metade do Século XIX. Análise Social, XXIX, 1994.
- REIS, Jaime — O Banco de Portugal das Origens a 1914. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1996 (vol. 1).
- Relatórios da Caixa Geral de Depósitos [Caixa Geral de Depósitos Reports] (various years).
- Relatórios do Banco de Portugal [Bank of Portugal Reports] (various years).
- SANTOS, Fernando Teixeira dos — Stock Monetário e Desempenho Macroeconómico durante o Estado Novo. Análise Social, XXIX, 1994.
- SÉRGIO, Anabela — O Sistema Bancário e a Expansão da Economia Portuguesa (1947-1959). Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1990.
- Situação Bancária no Ano de ... Bancos, Caixas e Companhias de Crédito [Banking Situation in the Year ... Banks, Savings Banks and Credit Companies] (Lisboa, various years).
- SOUSA, Rita — Money Supply in Portugal 1834-1890. Estudos de Economia, vol. XII, no. 1, 1991.
- SOUSA, Rita — Moeda e metais preciosos no Portugal setecentista. Ph. D. thesis presented at the Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão, Universidade Técnica de Lisboa. Lisboa: 1999.
- VALÉRIO, Nuno — A Moeda em Portugal 1913-1947. Lisboa: Sá da Costa, 1984.
- VALÉRIO, Nuno — Recensão (a Reis, 1990). Estudos de Economia, vol. XII, no. 1, 1991.

## Tables

7.1 — Metallic money

7.2 — Paper money

7.3 — Deposit money

7.4 — Money supply

7.5 — Monetary base

7.6 — Bank of Portugal

7.7 — Banks, bankers and banking houses

7.8 — Savings banks and credit companies

7.9 — Number of financial institutions

7.10 — Bank of Portugal discount rates

7.11 — Bank clearing

## Table 7.1 — Metallic money, 1834-1947

### A — Estimation by Sousa, 1991 (1834-1890)

Unit — Thousand contos.

year	Portuguese gold coins	foreign gold coins (1) (2)	silver coins (3)	copper and bronze coins	total
1834	5	16	8	2	31
1835	5	16	8	2	31
1836	5	16	8	2	31
1837	5	16	8	2	31
1838	5	16	8	2	31
1839	5	16	8	2	31
1840	5	16	8	2	31
1841	5	16	8	2	31
1842	5	16	8	2	31
1843	5	16	8	2	31
1844	5	16	8	2	31
1845	5	16	8	2	31
1846	5	17	8	2	32
1847	5	17	8	2	32
1848	5	17	8	2	32
1849	5	17	8	2	32
1850	5	17	8	2	32
1851	6	18	8	2	34
1852	6	21	8	2	37
1853	6	23	8	2	39
1854	5	22	8	2	37
1855	5	25	8	2	40
1856	5	26	8	2	41
1857	5	27	8	2	42
1858	5	29	8	2	44
1859	5	30	8	2	45
1860	6	33	8	2	49

Table 7.1 — Metallic money, 1834-1947 (continued)

A — Estimation by Sousa, 1991 (1854-1890) (continued)

year	Portuguese gold coins	foreign gold coins (1) (2)	silver coins (3)	copper and bronze coins	total
1861	6	35	8	2	51
1862	6	39	8	2	55
1863	6	41	8	2	57
1864	6	41	8	2	57
1865	6	38	8	2	54
1866	6	38	8	2	54
1867	6	37	8	2	53
1868	6	36	8	2	52
1869	6	36	8	2	52
1870	6	37	8	2	53
1871	6	41	8	2	57
1872	6	43	8	2	59
1873	6	47	8	2	63
1874	6	48	8	2	64
1875	6	50	8	2	66
1876	6	53	8	2	69
1877	6	52	8	2	68
1878	6	54	8	2	70
1879	6	53	9	2	70
1880	6	56	9	2	73
1881	6	59	9	2	76
1882	6	59	9	2	76
1883	6	63	9	2	80
1884	7	65	9	2	83
1885	7	68	9	2	86
1886	7	77	9	2	95
1887	7	82	10	2	101
1888	7	87	12	2	108
1889	7	95	12	2	116
1890	8	99	13	2	122

Table 7.1 — Metallic money, 1834-1947 (continued)

(1) As from 1851, English sovereigns and half-sovereigns were considered legal tender in Portugal, as well as Portuguese coins. The former had an official value of 4\$500 réis each. English sovereigns also circulated during the first half of the century, although they did not always enjoy the status of legal tender, and between 1846 and 1851, a considerable variety of foreign gold coins from different origins (thirty-six in all) were added to these, all of them being considered legal tender.

(2) Until 1854, this figure also includes foreign silver currency. From this date onwards, there is only reference made to gold currency.

(3) As from 1854, it is presumed that foreign silver coins went out of circulation, being either exported or melted down, so that only Portuguese coins minted in this metal remained in circulation. During the previous period, together with these latter coins, there had also been various other types of foreign silver coins in circulation, such as, for example, Spanish patacas. In 1853, their total value was estimated at 4 thousand contos. For the period from 1834 to 1853, however, the source for this table ([Sousa, 1991](#)) does not distinguish in terms of values, in the case of foreign coins, between gold and silver currency, so that before 1854, these are presented together in the column headed 'foreign gold coins'. [Mata, Valério, 1993](#) provide values for the foreign silver currency existing in the country between 1834 and 1853, although they do not describe the methodology used.

## **B — Estimation by Reis, 1990 (1854-1912)**

Unit — Contos.

year	Portuguese gold coins	foreign gold coins (4) (5)	silver coins	copper and bronze coins	total
1854	3 000	25 710	17 099	1 614	47 423
1855	3 006	27 840	14 970	1 614	47 430
1856	3 143	28 720	14 089	1 614	47 566
1857	3 232	29 817	12 993	1 614	47 656
1858	3 257	30 665	12 145	1 614	47 681
1859	3 515	32 360	11 723	1 614	49 212
1860	3 699	34 888	10 865	1 614	51 066
1861	3 993	36 634	10 525	1 614	52 766
1862	4 661	41 085	10 149	1 614	57 509
1863	5 254	43 374	9 802	1 614	60 044

Table 7.1 — Metallic money, 1834-1947 (continued)

B — Estimation by Reis, 1990 (1854-1912) (continued)

year	Portuguese gold coins	foreign gold coins (4) (5)	silver coins	copper and bronze coins	total
1864	5 507	43 197	10 200	1 614	60 518
1865	5 711	40 003	10 020	1 614	57 348
1866	5 893	40 146	9 779	1 614	57 432
1867	6 123	39 112	9 601	1 614	56 450
1868	6 505	37 971	9 482	1 614	55 572
1869	6 928	38 145	9 263	1 614	55 950
1870	7 248	39 218	9 071	1 614	57 151
1871	7 544	42 765	9 109	1 614	61 032
1872	7 724	44 485	9 085	1 614	62 908
1873	7 856	48 359	9 077	1 614	66 906
1874	7 932	49 737	9 132	1 614	68 415
1875	7 986	52 225	9 153	1 614	70 978
1876	8 044	54 896	9 296	1 614	73 850
1877	8 140	54 208	9 239	1 614	73 201
1878	8 344	55 756	9 459	1 614	75 173
1879	8 586	55 026	8 994	1 614	74 220
1880	9 007	57 573	8 996	1 614	77 190
1881	9 265	60 421	9 011	1 614	80 311
1882	9 426	61 219	9 027	1 614	81 286
1883	9 621	64 650	9 047	1 614	84 932
1884	9 778	67 093	9 079	1 614	87 564
1885	10 003	70 337	9 151	1 614	91 105
1886	10 166	79 082	10 024	1 614	100 886
1887	10 450	83 489	11 271	1 614	106 824
1888	10 584	89 136	12 721	1 614	114 055
1889	10 673	97 289	13 556	1 614	123 132
1890	10 906	101 200	14 092	1 614	127 812
1891	11 170	74 947	21 600	3 307	111 024
1892	11 170	65 989	24 086	3 875	105 120
1893	11 170	60 252	25 332	3 861	100 615
1894	11 170	56 653	25 671	4 106	97 600

Table 7.1 — Metallic money, 1834-1947 (continued)

B — Estimation by Reis, 1990 (1854-1912) (continued)

year	Portuguese gold coins	foreign gold coins (4) (5)	silver coins	copper and bronze coins	total
1895	11 170	54 558	25 661	3 897	95 286
1896	11 170	51 388	27 016	3 807	93 381
1897	11 170	49 722	27 324	3 842	92 058
1898	11 170	48 645	28 694	4 037	92 546
1899	11 170	47 715	31 044	3 739	93 668
1900	11 170	46 732	30 586	4 604	93 092
1901	11 170	45 616	30 777	4 318	91 881
1902	11 170	44 928	30 498	4 259	90 855
1903	11 170	43 935	30 641	4 200	89 946
1904	11 170	43 526	30 666	4 141	89 503
1905	11 170	43 511	30 338	4 082	89 101
1906	11 170	43 598	30 216	4 023	89 007
1907	11 170	43 200	28 949	3 961	87 280
1908	11 170	41 859	29 480	3 902	86 411
1909	11 170	41 486	31 238	3 771	87 665
1910	11 170	41 697	31 455	3 766	88 088
1911	11 170	41 775	31 401	3 696	88 042
1912	11 170	41 468	31 924	3 696	88 258

(4) According to this source, gold currency continued to be a means of payment throughout the period covered by this table. For more details about this point, see the introduction to this chapter.

(5) Exclusively English sovereigns and half-sovereigns.

Table 7.1 — Metallic money, 1834-1947 (continued)

**C — Estimation by Valério, 1984 (1913-1947)**

Unit — Thousand contos.

year	value (6)	year	value (6)	year	value (6)
1913	38	1925	13	1937	176
1914	38	1926	25	1938	176
1915	38	1927	32	1939	177
1916	38	1928	42	1940	202
1917	31	1929	43	1941	203
1918	23	1930	42	1942	226
1919	23	1931	42	1943	258
1920	20	1932	80	1944	285
1921	20	1933	138	1945	305
1922	19	1934	158	1946	321
1923	6	1935	159	1947	344
1924	5	1936	160		

(6) Includes silver, copper-nickel, bronze, bronze-aluminium, nickel silver and iron coins. After 1947, it was not possible to prolong the series with other sources.



## Table 7.2 — Paper money, 1822-1947

Sources — From 1822 to 1846, Peres,1974; from 1854 to 1912, Reis, 1990; from 1913 to 1947, Valério, 1984.

Reference date — 31 December of each year.

year	banknotes (contos)	year	banknotes (contos)	year	banknotes (contos)
1822	428	1855	1 367	1882	5 837
1823	829	1856	1 455	1883	6 275
1824	1 671	1857	1 664	1884	6 579
1825	2 353	1858	1 854	1885	7 076
1826	1 750	1859	2 385	1886	7 829
1827	1 841	1860	2 433	1887	9 646
1828	358	1861	2 128	1888	11 681
1829	507	1862	2 640	1889	12 110
1830	640	1863	2 492	1890	10 504
1831	761	1864	2 261	1891	37 903
1832	696	1865	2 483	1892	53 360
1833	827	1866	2 319	1893	52 253
1834	1 184	1867	2 117	1894	53 132
1835	2 124	1868	2 248	1895	55 922
1836	2 063	1869	2 434	1896	58 934
1837	1 745	1870	2 599	1897	65 060
1838	2 416	1871	2 923	1898	69 655
1839	2 559	1872	3 259	1899	68 568
1840	3 213	1873	3 365	1900	68 137
1841	2 742	1874	3 551	1901	68 757
1842	2 739	1875	4 654	1902	69 022
1843	3 077	1876	3 971	1903	69 478
1844	3 438	1877	4 715	1904	67 807
1845	3 669	1878	4 651	1905	67 814
1846	* 3 428	1879	5 573	1906	68 602
...		1880	6 003	1907	70 967
1854	1 071	1881	7 286	1908	70 162

Table 7.2 — Paper money, 1822-1947 (continued)

year	banknotes (contos)
1909	70 032
1910	78 072

year	banknotes (contos)
1911	82 422

year	banknotes (contos)
1912	84 603

\* Exceptionally, this value refers to 20 August 1846.

year	banknotes (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	notes (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1913	87	—
1914	96	—
1915	115	—
1916	140	—
1917	193	11
1918	274	12
1919	371	13
1920	611	14
1921	737	14
1922	1 054	16
1923	1 420	18
1924	1 763	10
1925	1 821	12
1926	1 854	13
1927	1 857	12
1928	1 990	—
1929	2 046	—
1930	1 994	—

year	banknotes (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	notes (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1931	2 062	—
1932	2 001	—
1933	1 989	—
1934	2 137	—
1935	2 205	—
1936	2 257	—
1937	2 224	—
1938	2 279	—
1939	2 550	—
1940	2 903	—
1941	4 488	—
1942	5 481	—
1943	6 910	—
1944	7 642	—
1945	8 166	—
1946	8 793	—
1947	8 752	—

## Table 7.3 — Deposit money, 1822-1993

Sources — From 1822 to 1846, Peres, 1971; from 1856 to 1912, Reis, 1990; from 1913 to 1947, Valério, 1984; from 1947 to 1993, Pinheiro et alii, 1997.

Reference date — 31 December of each year.

year	demand deposits (contos)	year	demand deposits (contos)	year	demand deposits (contos)
1822	333	1854	1 420	1880	14 298
1823	1 018	1855	1 758	1881	16 524
1824	1 119	1856	1 927	1882	16 450
1825	1 078	1857	2 316	1883	16 333
1826	1 304	1858	2 833	1884	17 784
1827	1 115	1859	2 772	1885	17 740
1828	519	1860	3 433	1886	24 140
1829	594	1861	3 371	1887	17 931
1830	646	1862	3 744	1888	33 534
1831	515	1863	4 496	1889	36 691
1832	342	1864	5 333	1890	30 577
1833	524	1865	5 513	1891	20 836
1834	1 223	1866	5 172	1892	18 455
1835	1 851	1867	5 997	1893	12 017
1836	1 587	1868	4 914	1894	13 025
1837	1 287	1869	6 208	1895	13 728
1838	1 503	1870	6 847	1896	16 191
1839	1 249	1871	8 531	1897	12 967
1840	1 661	1872	11 410	1898	16 487
1841	1 449	1873	15 487	1899	17 948
1842	1 538	1874	17 109	1900	18 312
1843	1 547	1875	24 102	1901	19 515
1844	1 626	1876	14 824	1902	20 368
1845	1 283	1877	14 440	1903	19 183
1846	* 660	1878	13 682	1904	20 309
...		1879	13 588	1905	22 156

Table 7.3 — Deposit money, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	demand deposits (contos)
1906	20 411
1907	18 325
1908	21 046

year	demand deposits (contos)
1909	18 470
1910	21 001

year	demand deposits (contos)
1911	22 180
1912	24 787

\* Exceptionally, this value refers to 20 November 1846.

year	demand deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	other deposits (1) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1913	30	14
1914	37	14
1915	34	16
1916	38	18
1917	49	24
1918	66	38
1919	191	90
1920	204	131
1921	312	230
1922	460	345
1923	534	401
1924	643	412
1925	656	421
1926	692	533
1927	811	649
1928	943	768
1929	1 247	1 023
1930	1 638	916

year	demand deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	other deposits (1) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1931	1 743	876
1932	2 181	968
1933	2 307	992
1934	2 839	1 030
1935	3 169	1 023
1936	3 367	980
1937	3 452	1 081
1938	3 640	1 069
1939	3 729	1 110
1940	4 536	1 109
1941	6 300	1 124
1942	10 492	1 305
1943	12 261	1 345
1944	15 332	1 179
1945	17 844	1 066
1946	19 195	1 044
1947	17 592	1 009

year	demand deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	other deposits (1) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1947	13 275	1 590
1948	12 871	1 563
1949	11 945	1 399

year	demand deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	other deposits (1) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1950	12 892	1 459
1951	14 625	1 641
1952	14 885	1 916

Table 7.3 — Deposit money, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	demand deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	other deposits (1) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1953	16 054	2 227
1954	17 868	2 535
1955	18 442	2 982
1956	19 869	3 374
1957	21 692	3 921
1958	23 271	4 626
1959	24 628	5 226
1960	25 725	6 782
1961	23 966	7 167
1962	26 591	9 157
1963	31 241	10 814
1964	37 843	13 609
1965	38 185	19 094
1966	45 625	21 188
1967	52 561	27 608
1968	58 187	37 442
1969	64 577	48 508
1970	66 616	66 455
1971	74 602	88 769
1972	84 263	118 913
1973	126 278	143 331

year	demand deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	other deposits (1) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1974	111 181	168 665
1975	111 419	168 195
1976	136 559	211 254
1977	160 915	256 879
1978	191 094	329 952
1979	254 438	445 258
1980	316 264	607 398
1981	336 142	826 116
1982	391 022	1 067 620
1983	426 146	1 283 031
1984	504 971	1 648 990
1985	661 577	2 011 255
1986	934 898	2 226 883
1987	1 153 928	2 521 554
1988	1 441 654	2 832 105
1989	1 665 210	3 150 995
1990	1 728 346	3 492 345
1991	2 021 603	4 484 535
1992	2 455 543	5 597 224
1993	2 639 668	6 107 390

(1) Includes time deposits and savings deposits.

## Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993

Reference date — 31 December of each year.

### A — Monetary circulation (M0)

year	according to <u>Mata, Valério, 1993</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Reis, 1990</u> (1) (contos)	according to <u>Santos, 1994</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Pinheiro et alii, 1997</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1834	36			
1835	36			
1836	36			
1837	36			
1838	36			
1839	37			
1840	37			
1841	38			
1842	38			
1843	39			
1844	39			
1845	40			
1846	37			
1847	36			
1848	36			
1849	35			
1850	35			
1851	37			
1852	40			
1853	41			
1854	37	47 698		
1855	39	47 273		
1856	41	48 023		
1857	43	48 137		
1858	44	47 948		

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## A — Monetary circulation (M0) (continued)

year	according to <u>Mata, Valério, 1993</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Reis, 1990</u> (1) (contos)	according to <u>Santos, 1994</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Pinheiro et alii, 1997</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1859	44	48 680		
1860	49	51 358		
1861	51	53 317		
1862	55	57 507		
1863	57	60 094		
1864	55	59 259		
1865	53	56 908		
1866	53	56 811		
1867	52	55 742		
1868	51	55 214		
1869	51	54 991		
1870	53	56 470		
1871	56	60 299		
1872	58	62 029		
1873	60	63 921		
1874	61	65 436		
1875	63	67 240		
1876	63	67 474		
1877	66	70 445		
1878	70	74 366		
1879	69	72 999		
1880	72	75 892		
1881	75	79 327		
1882	75	80 356		
1883	80	84 871		
1884	83	86 997		
1885	87	92 361		
1886	92	97 456		
1887	99	104 638		

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## A — Monetary circulation (M0) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Reis, 1990 (1) (contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1888	106	111 335		
1889	114	120 771		
1890	121	125 831		
1891	50	138 663		
1892	68	147 526		
1893	69	142 135		
1894	71	140 631		
1895	74	140 821		
1896	75	139 707		
1897	82	144 744		
1898	89	149 096		
1899	90	149 094		
1900	90	148 058		
1901	92	148 793		
1902	93	149 315		
1903	94	148 114		
1904	93	146 713		
1905	91	144 258		
1906	95	147 248		
1907	98	149 260		
1908	98	147 827		
1909	95	146 385		
1910	105	156 121		
1911	109	159 651		
1912	109	159 114		
1913	104			
1914	114			
1915	132			
1916	158			



Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## A — Monetary circulation (M0) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Reis, 1990 (1) (contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1917	195			
1918	257			
1919	276			
1920	539			
1921	648			
1922	957			
1923	1 292			
1924	1 586			
1925	1 701			
1926	1 757			
1927	1 772			
1928	1 885			
1929	1 892			
1930	1 893			
1931	1 638			
1932	1 490		1 758	
1933	1 205		1 803	
1934	1 221		1 893	
1935	1 228		1 987	
1936	1 339		1 997	
1937	1 311		2 019	
1938	1 339		2 019	
1939	1 546		2 128	
1940	1 573		2 487	
1941	2 950		3 174	
1942	3 874		4 489	
1943	5 255		5 574	
1944	6 616		6 689	
1945	6 302		7 220	

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## A — Monetary circulation (M0) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Reis, 1990 (1) (contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1946	8 026		7 633	
1947	8 031		7 879	8 371
1948	7 966		7 960	8 323
1949	7 765		7 736	8 104
1950	7 764		7 454	8 096
1951	8 753		7 903	8 849
1952	8 899		8 407	8 994
1953	9 145		8 463	9 236
1954	9 703		9 033	9 747
1955	10 244		9 439	10 274
1956	10 649		9 918	10 677
1957	11 240		10 387	11 267
1958	11 816		11 104	11 842
1959	12 481		11 367	12 507
1960	13 114		12 418	13 151
1961	15 213		14 161	15 246
1962	16 045		15 204	16 119
1963	16 992		15 962	17 505
1964	17 901		17 315	17 994
1965	22 095		18 795	22 126
1966	23 519		20 111	23 577
1967	24 296		22 310	24 363
1968	25 337		23 512	25 402
1969	26 669		24 962	26 772
1970	29 711		27 041	29 848
1971	31 903		29 309	32 061
1972	36 103		32 429	36 269
1973	38 265		36 221	38 418
1974	69 703		50 478	69 881

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## A — Monetary circulation (M0) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Reis, 1990 (1) (contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1975	109 781			109 944
1976	110 426			109 107
1977	113 579			113 208
1978	121 995			121 280
1979	142 140			142 119
1980	165 162			165 162
1981	188 372			188 372
1982	219 457			219 457
1983	240 051			240 051
1984	267 349			267 349
1985	318 982			318 982
1986	399 256			399 256
1987	457 686			457 686
1988	509 544			509 544
1989	577 349			577 349
1990	623 876			623 876
1991				683 079
1992				708 190
1993				752 931

(1) Contains gold coins until 1912.

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

**B — Immediate means of payment (M1)**

year	according to <u>Mata, Valério, 1993</u> (2) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Reis, 1990</u> (3) (contos)	according to <u>Santos, 1994</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Pinheiro et alii, 1997</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1854	38	49 118		
1855	41	49 031		
1856	43	49 950		
1857	45	50 453		
1858	47	50 781		
1859	47	51 453		
1860	52	54 790		
1861	54	56 688		
1862	59	61 251		
1863	61	64 590		
1864	60	64 592		
1865	59	62 421		
1866	58	61 983		
1867	58	61 738		
1868	56	60 127		
1869	57	61 199		
1870	60	63 318		
1871	65	68 830		
1872	69	73 439		
1873	75	79 408		
1874	78	82 545		
1875	87	91 342		
1876	78	82 298		
1877	80	84 886		
1878	84	88 047		
1879	83	86 587		
1880	86	90 191		
1881	92	95 850		

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## B — Immediate means of payment (M1) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (2) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Reis, 1990 (3) (contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1882	91	96 806		
1883	96	101 204		
1884	101	104 781		
1885	105	110 101		
1886	116	121 596		
1887	127	132 569		
1888	140	144 870		
1889	151	157 462		
1890	152	156 408		
1891	71	159 500		
1892	86	165 981		
1893	81	154 152		
1894	84	153 656		
1895	88	154 548		
1896	91	155 898		
1897	95	157 711		
1898	105	165 583		
1899	108	167 041		
1900	108	166 371		
1901	112	168 308		
1902	113	169 683		
1903	113	167 297		
1904	113	167 022		
1905	113	166 414		
1906	115	167 660		
1907	116	167 585		
1908	119	168 873		
1909	113	164 855		
1910	126	177 122		

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## B — Immediate means of payment (M1) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (2) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Reis, 1990 (3) (contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1911	131	181 831		
1912	134	183 901		
1913	146			
1914	165			
1915	183			
1916	213			
1917	271			
1918	358			
1919	587			
1920	840			
1921	1 083			
1922	1 555			
1923	1 986			
1924	2 438			
1925	2 438			
1926	2 499			
1927	2 565			
1928	2 808			
1929	3 142			
1930	3 529			
1931	3 503			
1932	3 758		3 336	
1933	3 717		3 655	
1934	4 302		4 080	
1935	4 757		4 451	
1936	4 994		4 619	
1937	4 966		4 924	
1938	5 128		4 843	
1939	5 740		5 104	

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## B — Immediate means of payment (M1) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (2) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Reis, 1990 (3) (contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1940	6 435		5 840	
1941	9 673		7 449	
1942	14 728		10 426	
1943	18 032		13 163	
1944	22 716		16 430	
1945	24 973		18 817	
1946	27 736		20 986	
1947	26 207		21 178	21 646
1948	24 754		21 147	21 194
1949	23 090		20 530	20 049
1950	23 947		20 361	20 988
1951	27 501		21 722	23 474
1952	28 508		22 727	23 879
1953	29 777		23 224	25 290
1954	32 862		25 061	27 615
1955	34 366		26 630	28 716
1956	36 440		28 192	30 546
1957	38 670		29 444	32 958
1958	41 803		31 106	35 113
1959	45 069		33 469	37 135
1960	48 204		36 288	38 877
1961	47 975		38 201	39 212
1962	51 937		39 600	42 710
1963	59 039		43 631	48 746
1964	67 208		50 180	55 837
1965	74 181		55 428	60 311
1966	82 839		58 376	69 202
1967	88 583		65 258	76 924
1968	94 673		66 897	83 589

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## B — Immediate means of payment (M1) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (2) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Reis, 1990 (3) (contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1969	107 014		74 109	91 349
1970	111 164		79 441	96 464
1971	126 630		83 720	106 663
1972	149 346		95 436	120 532
1973	191 506		119 971	164 696
1974	209 467		146 678	181 062
1975	260 456			221 363
1976	246 319			245 666
1977	274 807			274 123
1978	314 878			312 374
1979	395 171			396 557
1980	488 012			481 426
1981	531 576			524 514
1982	618 907			610 479
1983	675 622			666 197
1984	783 872			772 320
1985	991 979			980 559
1986	1 345 219			1 334 154
1987	1 547 943			1 611 614
1988	1 754 394			1 951 198
1989	1 861 439			2 242 559
1990	2 408 791			2 352 222
1991				2 704 682
1992				3 163 733
1993				3 392 599

(2) Between 1854 and 1912, the values in this source (Mata, Valério, 1993) are not, strictly speaking, considered to be 'immediate means of payment' and only after 1913 were they considered as such. The designation used for the first sub-period is that of M, in order to



Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

distinguish it from that of M1 in the second sub-period, although the construction of the two series is the same.

(3) Contains gold coins until 1912.

### C — Money in the broad sense (M2) or total means of payment (L)

year	according to <u>Mata, Valério, 1993</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Santos, 1994</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Pinheiro et alii, 1997</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1913	160		
1914	179		
1915	199		
1916	231		
1917	295		
1918	396		
1919	657		
1920	931		
1921	1 242		
1922	1 787		
1923	2 271		
1924	2 748		
1925	2 747		
1926	2 870		
1927	3 008		
1928	3 400		
1929	4 122		
1930	4 472		
1931	4 349		
1932	4 555	4 133	
1933	4 565	4 536	
1934	5 226	5 055	
1935	5 635	5 444	
1936	5 833	5 611	

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## C — Money in the broad sense (M2) or total means of payment (L) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1937	5 818	5 903	
1938	5 965	5 805	
1939	6 850	6 088	
1940	7 544	6 881	
1941	10 797	8 526	
1942	16 033	11 549	
1943	19 377	14 429	
1944	23 895	17 657	
1945	26 039	19 869	
1946	28 775	22 003	
1947	27 216	22 151	24 654
1948	25 718	22 085	24 029
1949	23 950	21 417	22 954
1950	24 857	21 210	24 029
1951	28 496	22 646	26 775
1952	29 678	23 790	27 278
1953	31 225	24 534	29 183
1954	34 613	26 669	31 767
1955	36 545	28 590	33 558
1956	39 001	30 494	35 820
1957	41 580	32 332	38 787
1958	45 419	34 863	41 764
1959	49 490	37 984	44 628
1960	54 233	41 960	47 378
1961	54 874	44 550	48 418
1962	61 054	47 440	54 480
1963	70 173	54 460	61 888
1964	81 156	63 121	72 287
1965	93 506	72 220	79 681

Table 7.4 — Money supply, 1834-1993 (continued)

## C — Money in the broad sense (M2) or total means of payment (L) (continued)

year	according to Mata, Valério, 1993 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1966	104 053	81 224	90 649
1967	115 588	92 166	104 643
1968	130 980	102 252	121 076
1969	153 670	119 363	139 887
1970	172 262	138 846	163 017
1971	203 102	161 801	195 601
1972	245 106	197 369	239 568
1973	302 648	248 675	308 520
1974	334 668	301 445	350 495
1975	357 229		390 217
1976	460 835		459 163
1977	567 448		534 817
1978	726 573		645 888
1979	1 111 524		851 779
1980	1 347 420		1 093 506
1981	1 736 453		1 356 367
1982	2 198 396		1 683 896
1983	2 649 902		1 969 213
1984	3 385 042		2 458 328
1985	4 201 001		3 056 227
1986	4 922 512		3 656 960
1987	5 518 550		4 280 151
1988	6 226 944		5 059 103
1989	6 847 249		5 717 246
1990	8 051 978		6 229 915
1991			7 801 571
1992			9 106 545
1993			9 758 933

**Table 7.5 — Monetary base, 1854-1912, 1932-1993**

year	according to <u>Reis, 1990</u> (contos)	year	according to <u>Reis, 1990</u> (contos)	year	according to <u>Reis, 1990</u> (contos)
1854	47 236	1874	70 197	1894	139 933
1855	46 918	1875	74 275	1895	139 104
1856	47 565	1876	76 271	1896	139 000
1857	48 106	1877	74 082	1897	143 979
1858	46 826	1878	78 295	1898	148 515
1859	49 744	1879	78 173	1899	148 540
1860	50 761	1880	81 369	1900	147 979
1861	53 135	1881	84 527	1901	148 338
1862	58 887	1882	84 818	1902	148 965
1863	60 967	1883	89 305	1903	147 902
1864	60 539	1884	92 184	1904	146 323
1865	58 066	1885	95 846	1905	144 992
1866	58 400	1886	107 288	1906	146 313
1867	57 488	1887	114 045	1907	148 345
1868	56 660	1888	120 281	1908	147 154
1869	57 522	1889	129 687	1909	145 410
1870	58 255	1890	133 532	1910	155 110
1871	62 901	1891	144 435	1911	157 763
1872	64 455	1892	151 520	1912	157 362
1873	68 823	1893	143 954		

year	according to <u>Santos, 1994</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Pinheiro et alii, 1997</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	year	according to <u>Santos, 1994</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to <u>Pinheiro et alii, 1997</u> (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1932	2 170		1938	2 806	
1933	2 281		1939	2 957	
1934	2 434		1940	3 310	
1935	2 438		1941	5 090	
1936	2 528		1942	8 325	
1937	2 808		1943	10 710	

Table 7.5 — Monetary base, 1854-1912, 1932-1993 (continued)

year	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1944	13 555	
1945	15 309	
1946	16 284	
1947	15 505	15 391
1948	14 006	13 265

year	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1949	11 746	11 949
1950	11 427	12 692
1951	13 399	15 058
1952	14 836	15 699
1953	15 687	17 229

year	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1954	1 719	1 843
1955	1 776	1 890
1956	1 856	1 992
1957	1 892	2 021
1958	1 952	2 103
1959	2 026	2 184
1960	2 065	2 225
1961	2 140	2 266
1962	2 245	2 396
1963	2 428	2 549
1964	2 708	2 837
1965	2 953	3 082
1966	3 191	3 223
1967	3 376	3 518
1968	3 701	3 886
1969	4 005	4 124
1970	4 382	4 569
1971	4 875	5 217
1972	5 571	6 224
1973	6 703	7 020

year	according to Santos, 1994 (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	according to Pinheiro et alii, 1997 (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1974	7 618	9 435
1975		13 019
1976		14 139
1977		14 942
1978		17 440
1979		22 820
1980		27 496
1981		37 637
1982		48 624
1983		55 271
1984		57 754
1985		60 933
1986		68 625
1987		87 549
1988		99 026
1989		189 302
1990		205 260
1991		251 497
1992		278 163
1993		303 109

## Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993

Sources — From 1822 to 1846, Peres, 1971; from 1847 to 1857, Relatórios do Banco de Portugal; from 1857 to 1892, Anais de Estatística; from 1893 to 1953, Relatórios do Banco de Portugal; from 1954 to 1989, Estatísticas Financeiras; from 1990 to 1993, Pinheiro et alii, 1997; the data on capital, operations with the Government and total assets and liabilities until 1846 were taken from Reis, 1996.

Reference date — 31 December of each year, except in 1846 when the reference date is 20 November.

Remarks — The values for the years 1822 to 1846 correspond to the Bank of Lisbon, the institution that preceded the Bank of Portugal. The Bank of Portugal resulted from the merger of the Bank of Lisbon and the *Companhia Confiança Nacional* at the end of 1846, each of them represented by 5,000 contos of capital, which resulted in a new institution with a capital of 10,000 contos. During the first years of its existence, the Bank of Portugal was responsible for the notes in circulation, both its own and those of the Bank of Lisbon, which had not yet been redeemed and withdrawn from circulation. These latter notes were only taken out of circulation in 1856.

### A — Liabilities

year	notes in circulation (contos)	operations with the Government (contos)	banks and bankers (1) (contos)	capital (contos)	reserve funds (contos)	liabilities (contos)
1822	428		333	1 751		
1823	829		1 018	2 400		6 746
1824	1 671		1 119	2 400		7 636
1825	2 353		1 078	2 400		10 491
1826	1 750		1 304	2 400		10 421
1827	1 841		1 115	3 444		11 636
1828	359		519	3 448		9 665
1829	508		594	3 452		9 558
1830	640		646	3 456		9 589

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	notes in circulation  (contos)	operations with the Government  (contos)	banks and bankers (1)  (contos)	capital   (contos)	reserve funds  (contos)	liabilities   (contos)
1831	761		515	3 456		9 415
1832	696		342	3 456		9 120
1833	827		524	5 000		9 518
1834	1 184		1 223	5 000		12 699
1835	2 124		1 851	5 000		12 236
1836	2 063		1 587	5 000		11 907
1837	1 745		1 287	5 000		11 781
1838	2 416		1 503	5 000		13 020
1839	2 559		1 249	5 000		12 882
1840	3 214		1 661	5 000		14 899
1841	2 742		1 449	5 000		14 990
1842	2 739		1 538	5 000		15 732
1843	3 077		1 547	5 000		16 688
1844	3 438		1 626	5 000		17 041
1845	3 670		1 238	5 000		17 734
1846	3 429		660	5 000		
1847	4 596		727	10 000		20 773
1848	4 178		589	10 000		19 080
1849	3 547		663	10 000		21 221
1850	2 102		1 028	8 000		17 189
1851	2 212		1 169	8 000		15 052
1852	2 395		778	8 000		12 675
1853	1 315		1 343	8 000		13 671
1854	904		1 233	8 000		11 619
1855	1 145		1 549	8 000		13 409
1856	1 286		1 693	8 000		15 043
1857	1 474		1 890	8 000		
1858	1 469		1 848	8 000		15 411
1859	1 605		2 147	8 000		18 088
1860	1 860		2 314	8 000		18 862

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	notes in circulation  (contos)	operations with the Government  (contos)	banks and bankers (1)  (contos)	capital   (contos)	reserve funds  (contos)	liabilities   (contos)
1861	1 509		2 363	8 000		22 574
1862	1 819		2 478	8 000		20 786
1863	1 689		2 455	8 000		21 013
1864	1 444		2 051	8 000		19 620
1865	1 486		1 368	8 000		19 530
1866	1 428		1 227	8 000		18 656
1867	1 576		1 828	8 000		18 994
1868	1 513		1 237	8 000		19 422
1869	1 693		1 482	8 000		18 736
1870	1 791		1 400	8 000		19 593
1871	1 992		1 430	8 000		21 541
1872	2 248		1 691	8 000		21 720
1873	2 318		3 876	8 000		20 409
1874	2 531		2 743	8 000		17 597
1875	3 426		2 184	8 000		17 121
1876	3 590		3 074	8 000		20 058
1877	4 080		2 108	8 000		21 253
1878	3 949		1 971	8 000		22 309
1879	4 466		1 900	8 000		23 657
1880	4 564		2 881	8 000		27 566
1881	5 423		1 788	8 000	20	27 112
1882	4 207		1 757	8 000	60	29 012
1883	4 658		1 552	8 000	110	29 927
1884	4 778		1 740	8 000	126	29 357
1885	5 498		1 195	8 000	180	29 000
1886	5 812		3 545	8 000	200	32 373
1887	7 361		3 005	8 000	220	31 307
1888	9 508		1 856	13 500	1 257	43 364
1889	10 083		2 979	13 500	1 279	44 082
1890	8 605		1 904	13 500	1 454	52 169



Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	notes in circulation  (contos)	operations with the Government  (contos)	banks and bankers (1)  (contos)	capital   (contos)	reserve funds  (contos)	liabilities   (contos)
1891	34 761		2 254	13 500	1 473	77 709
1892	50 218		2 062	13 500	1 573	124 243
1893	52 253	643	2 268	13 500	1 368	142 195
1894	53 132	1 103	2 550	13 500	1 455	140 332
1895	55 922	1 000	1 604	13 500	1 633	139 052
1896	58 934	966	2 470	13 500	1 620	151 374
1897	65 060	1 072	2 289	13 500	1 697	149 195
1898	69 655	1 122	2 897	13 500	1 782	158 157
1899	68 568	1 505	3 152	13 500	1 867	191 445
1900	68 137	1 333	3 365	13 500	1 929	191 851
1901	68 757	1 674	2 257	13 500	2 033	198 560
1902	69 022	1 899	2 451	13 500	2 264	188 693
1903	69 478	2 598	1 583	13 500	2 447	210 885
1904	67 807	1 317	1 757	13 500	2 665	197 700
1905	67 814	1 822	2 257	13 500	2 860	186 739
1906	68 602	2 602	2 243	13 500	2 871	195 755
1907	70 967	1 580	1 601	13 500	3 032	212 817
1908	70 162	1 639	2 565	13 500	2 936	179 188
1909	70 032	2 161	1 708	13 500	2 939	176 558
1910	78 072	2 279	2 407	13 500	3 049	196 165
1911	82 422	2 383	3 818	13 500	3 273	200 700
1912	84 603	2 519	5 202	13 500	3 467	210 978
1913	86 559	2 715	4 705	13 500	3 633	208 682

year	notes in circulation  (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	operations with the Government  (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	banks and bankers (1)  (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	capital   (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	reserve funds  (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	liabilities   (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1914	96	2	6	14	4	209
1915	115	2	5	14	4	236

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	notes in circulation  (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	operations with the Government  (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	banks and bankers (1)  (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	capital   (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	reserve funds  (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	liabilities   (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1916	140	7	6	14	4	271
1917	193	9	8	14	4	327
1918	274	10	17	14	3	574
1919	371	8	23	14	4	789
1920	611	7	25	14	4	1 297
1921	737	7	54	14	4	1 547
1922	1 054	6	59	14	4	2 227
1923	1 420	171	52	14	4	3 298
1924	1 763	13	84	14	3	4 001
1925	1 821	31	80	14	3	4 150
1926	1 854	58	86	14	3	4 128
1927	1 857	37	98	14	3	4 408
1928	1 990	41	77	14	3	4 565
1929	2 046	73	94	14	3	4 443
1930	1 994	12	140	14	3	4 594
1931	2 062	3	248	100	73	4 601
1932	2 001	210	311	100	73	3 510
1933	1 989	193	305	100	75	3 424
1934	2 137	329	398	100	76	3 930
1935	2 205	487	268	100	77	4 315
1936	2 257	416	473	100	79	4 750
1937	2 224	317	710	100	80	5 024
1938	2 279	385	645	100	82	5 158
1939	2 550	199	603	100	84	5 295
1940	2 903	311	851	100	83	6 054
1941	4 488	400	2 433	100	86	9 021
1942	5 481	2 019	4 189	100	87	13 492
1943	6 910	2 342	5 258	100	88	17 144
1944	7 642	2 662	6 776	100	90	19 460
1945	8 166	2 798	7 985	100	91	20 783

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	notes in circulation (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	operations with the Government (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	banks and bankers (1) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	capital (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	reserve funds (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	liabilities (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1946	8 793	2 976	7 619	100	93	21 316
1947	8 752	1 612	6 299	100	94	19 716
1948	8 696	526	4 214	100	96	16 234
1949	8 456	356	3 151	100	97	16 222
1950	8 526	752	3 832	100	99	17 674
1951	9 362	1 046	5 354	100	100	20 585
1952	9 528	1 427	5 821	100	102	21 276
1953	9 842	1 402	7 033	100	104	22 951

year	notes in circulation (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	operations with the Government (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	banks and bankers (1) (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	capital (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	reserve funds (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	liabilities (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1954	1 051	168	758	10	11	2 481
1955	1 107	160	747	10	11	2 562
1956	1 164	156	793	10	11	2 725
1957	1 236	173	747	10	11	2 791
1958	1 299	215	764	10	11	2 800
1959	1 388	187	756	10	12	3 049
1960	1 478	239	704	10	12	3 151
1961	1 711	159	511	10	12	3 169
1962	1 788	214	563	13	13	3 643
1963	1 931	298	569	18	13	3 998
1964	2 121	259	660	19	14	4 475
1965	2 364	421	656	19	14	5 017
1966	2 532	520	638	19	15	5 673
1967	2 650	572	809	19	16	6 283
1968	2 845	522	975	19	17	6 829
1969	3 086	537	960	19	18	7 238
1970	3 376	544	1 120	19	20	8 322
1971	3 637	657	1 497	19	21	9 648

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	notes in circulation  (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	operations with the Government  (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	banks and bankers (1)  (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	capital   (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	reserve funds  (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	liabilities   (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1972	4 146	634	1 983	19	23	10 448
1973	4 937	702	1 976	19	25	11 261
1974	7 461	408	1 852	19	27	14 093
1975	11 500	99	1 390	20	28	19 325
1976	11 328	1 218	2 671	20	48	25 980
1977	11 789	2 179	2 978	20	68	34 459
1978	12 749	1 067	4 473	20	100	44 937
1979	15 176	2 331	7 386	20	158	40 931
1980	17 675	3 553	9 496	20	175	63 941
1981	20 147	5 129	17 126	20	177	86 965
1982	23 625	4 290	24 168	20	181	117 185
1983	25 685	7 800	28 738	20	219	173 812
1984	29 501	6 928	27 702	20	380	233 197
1985	35 127	10 126	25 145	20	388	290 780
1986	43 535	2 191	24 278	20	432	437 564
1987	49 667	9 167	33 413	20	512	440 674
1988	54 761	14 585	42 973	20	592	456 242
1989	61 627	25 497	126 461	20	597	579 438
1990	69 371	35 609	135 888	20	1 477	422 601
1991	76 528	84 857	174 968	20		392 465
1992	79 778	57 396	198 385	20		394 401
1993	84 623	53 982	218 486	20		431 633

(1) The deposits accepted by the Bank of Lisbon were only those of private individuals, since there were not then any other banks. For a long time, the Bank of Portugal received deposits from both private individuals and from banks and bankers, only restricting this operation to the later as from 1975.

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

**B — Assets**

year	reserves (contos)	loans (contos)	securities portfolio (contos)	operations with the Government (2) (contos)	commercial portfilio (contos)	assets (contos)
1822	478					
1823	510					6 746
1824	590					7 636
1825	211					10 491
1826	595					10 421
1827	.					11 636
1828	173					9 665
1829	336					9 558
1830	586					9 589
1831	394					9 415
1832	178					9 120
1833	67					9 518
1834	621					12 699
1835	590					12 236
1836	453					11 907
1837	326					11 781
1838	1 119					13 020
1839	1 219					12 882
1840	1 344			4 879		14 899
1841	586			5 493		14 990
1842	624			5 144		15 732
1843	624			4 919		16 688
1844	1 296			4 593		17 041
1845	643			4 854		17 734
1846	198					
1847	1 176	823			652	20 773
1848	1 638	239			451	19 080
1849	2 295	215			515	21 221

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	reserves (contos)	loans (contos)	securities portfolio (contos)	operations with the Government (2) (contos)	commercial portfilio (contos)	assets (contos)
1850	2 233	243			208	17 189
1851	2 018	301			298	15 052
1852	1 751	241			285	12 675
1853	1 976	251			611	13 671
1854	1 731	289			928	11 619
1855	2 279	435			1 044	13 409
1856	2 457	778			1 917	15 043
1857	1 984	1 327			2 581	
1858	2 315	2 100			2 794	15 411
1859	2 753	1 994	536		3 694	18 088
1860	1 843	2 227	552		4 693	18 862
1861	1 894	2 202	527		4 755	22 574
1862	2 319	2 033	972		5 295	20 786
1863	2 206	1 528	547		6 075	21 013
1864	2 327	1 753			5 058	19 620
1865	1 193	2 201	640		5 095	19 530
1866	2 307	2 013	840		4 794	18 656
1867	2 431	2 161	1 722		4 691	18 994
1868	2 938	2 064	2 275		4 069	19 422
1869	3 582	1 874	2 277		3 857	18 736
1870	3 517	2 011	2 279		3 455	19 593
1871	3 671	1 830	2 348		3 856	21 541
1872	2 435	2 040	2 280		4 349	21 720
1873	2 497	1 879	3 269		5 507	20 409
1874	2 334	1 602	1 958		5 279	17 597
1875	1 674	2 054	1 177		5 540	17 121
1876	4 656	2 024	1 137		5 773	20 058
1877	3 238	2 057	1 553		4 674	21 253
1878	4 973	1 682	3 925		4 453	22 309
1879	5 603	1 225	3 680		4 546	23 657

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	reserves (contos)	loans (contos)	securities portfolio (contos)	operations with the Government (2) (contos)	commercial portfilio (contos)	assets (contos)
1880	6 811	1 063	3 400		4 636	27 566
1881	7 383	1 084	4 463		4 752	27 112
1882	5 992	1 126	3 812		5 239	29 012
1883	6 303	1 156	5 780		4 316	29 927
1884	6 991	1 063	5 587		4 215	29 357
1885	4 805	1 420	6 558		4 217	29 000
1886	8 938	947	6 914		3 499	32 373
1887	8 881	1 267	6 760		3 588	31 307
1888	10 362	1 395	5 588	4 403	7 326	43 364
1889	10 080	3 249	3 501	6 008	9 746	44 082
1890	12 637	4 262	3 512	8 016	8 549	52 169
1891	9 962	7 756	5 796	19 577	13 526	77 709
1892	25 907	7 033	5 911	28 681	15 043	124 243
1893	32 957	6 719	4 956	34 923	11 610	142 195
1894	34 212	5 294	2 631	37 611	12 258	140 332
1895	38 903	5 033	3 352	38 026	12 921	139 052
1896	42 645	3 051	3 426	39 964	14 773	151 374
1897	33 811	4 247	3 141	46 504	12 623	149 195
1898	34 828	3 576	3 513	50 460	14 858	158 157
1899	53 704	4 340	4 667	51 045	15 548	191 445
1900	52 948	3 967	4 654	51 312	16 983	191 851
1901	58 654	4 594	4 595	50 866	18 345	198 560
1902	44 940	5 846	4 748	50 560	19 545	188 693
1903	58 774	6 721	4 679	50 034	19 341	210 885
1904	51 369	5 846	4 478	49 405	18 730	197 700
1905	46 112	4 083	4 860	48 774	20 860	186 739
1906	47 125	4 037	4 923	48 890	22 888	195 755
1907	47 781	6 833	5 044	47 392	23 284	212 817
1908	20 753	11 435	4 948	47 739	18 943	179 188
1909	27 204	9 502	5 205	46 676	17 696	176 558

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	reserves (contos)	loans (contos)	securities portfolio (contos)	operations with the Government (2) (contos)	commercial portfilio (contos)	assets (contos)
1910	29 828	18 010	3 669	46 327	22 308	196 165
1911	27 512	21 355	3 832	45 873	23 183	200 700
1912	34 678	22 862	4 007	44 858	22 658	210 978
1913	33 815	21 494	3 656	44 876	23 862	208 682

year	reserves (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	loans (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	securities portfolio (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	operations with the Government (2) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	commercial portfilio (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	assets (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1914	14	37	6	43	22	209
1915	12	43	7	42	36	236
1916	12	44	7	38	67	271
1917	21	43	7	40	110	327
1918	26	2	5	226	52	574
1919	27	2	5	318	72	789
1920	28	6	5	501	145	1 297
1921	27	5	4	644	139	1 547
1922	27	1	4	930	158	2 227
1923	13	4	4	1 332	159	3 298
1924	10	12	4	1 684	165	4 001
1925	10	9	3	1 683	151	4 150
1926	10	5	4	1 650	220	4 128
1927	9	2	4	1 614	274	4 408
1928	9	1	4	1 735	246	4 565
1929	9	1	3	1 761	380	4 443
1930	9	1	5	1 541	435	4 594
1931	954	0	5	1 070	345	4 601
1932	1 172	0	77	1 055	343	3 510
1933	1 097	0	50	1 052	332	3 424
1934	1 359	0	72	1 049	318	3 930
1935	1 369	12	71	1 047	340	4 315



Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	reserves (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	loans (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	securities portfolio (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	operations with the Government (2) (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	commercial portfolio (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	assets (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1936	1 482	8	127	1 044	342	4 750
1937	1 488	15	121	1 042	334	5 024
1938	1 437	7	118	1 038	487	5 158
1939	1 457	32	116	1 036	420	5 295
1940	1 873	56	330	1 033	386	6 054
1941	2 879	24	355	1 031	312	9 021
1942	4 534	9	399	1 028	236	13 492
1943	5 593	0	397	1 025	238	17 144
1944	6 982	0	410	1 023	261	19 460
1945	8 271	1	408	1 020	298	20 783
1946	10 961	4	137	1 319	376	21 316
1947	9 222	2	152	1 286	397	19 716
1948	7 429	8	152	1 276	439	16 234
1949	6 411	9	146	1 247	480	16 222
1950	7 124	9	194	1 247	582	17 674
1951	8 800	60	219	1 253	718	20 585
1952	9 119	69	226	1 430	919	21 276
1953	10 166	60	222	1 421	718	22 951

year	reserves (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	loans (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	securities portfolio (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	operations with the Government (2) (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	commercial portfolio (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	assets (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1954	1 121	6	22	140	96	2 481
1955	1 140	15	21	138	94	2 562
1956	1 198	27	21	138	125	2 725
1957	1 227	27	20	136	195	2 791
1958	1 294	33	19	176	204	2 800
1959	1 385	53	19	173	200	3 049
1960	1 394	94	28	172	248	3 151
1961	1 349	109	52	206	440	3 169

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	reserves (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	loans (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	securities portfolio (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	operations with the Government (2) (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	commercial portfolio (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	assets (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1962	1 529	113	66	114	372	3 643
1963	1 646	117	93	170	400	3 998
1964	1 788	136	107	160	329	4 475
1965	1 975	176	120	164	539	5 017
1966	2 143	165	126	154	531	5 673
1967	2 347	158	129	175	475	6 283
1968	2 541	174	125	161	468	6 829
1969	2 614	611	138	150	601	7 238
1970	2 889	215	161	158	925	8 322
1971	3 360	188	159	171	928	9 648
1972	3 924	199	161	195	965	10 448
1973	4 420	223	198	197	1 156	11 261
1974	5 047	368	827	262	4 417	14 093
1975	3 966	230	8	860	8 753	19 325
1976	4 047	226	8	7 117	10 479	25 980
1977	5 385	155	8	13 369	9 717	34 459
1978	8 148	93	8	16 705	7 615	44 937
1979	8 553	0	8	25 851	2 845	40 931
1980	33 156	0	+ 0	13 078	2 236	63 941
1981	39 428	0	0	22 113	3 363	86 965
1982	53 455	342	0	32 543	3 145	117 185
1983	72 470	1 663	0	48 496	5 096	173 812
1984	94 354	1 538	0	43 293	4 667	233 197
1985	106 187	2 315	8 231	23 669	6 193	290780
1986	98 996	3 847	16 604	102 842	5 984	437 564
1987	113 157	2 023	16 604	100 942	3 816	440 674
1988	155 700	8 313	16 604	92 435	1 414	456 242
1989	233 844	10 028	15 764	92 965	1 352	579 438
1990	262 028	80 544	16 845	99 307	.	422 601
1991	344 744	.	.	30 420	.	392 465

Table 7.6 — Bank of Portugal, 1822-1993 (continued)

year	reserves (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	loans (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	securities portfolio (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	operations with the Government (2) (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	commercial portfilio (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	assets (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1992	356 597	.	.	33 624	.	394 401
1993	370 380	.	.	31 303	.	431 633

(2) Includes 'credit to the state public sector' e 'public debt securities'.

## Table 7.7 — Banks, bankers and banking houses, 1858-1892, 1919-1990

Source — From 1858 to 1892, Anais de Estatística (1894); from 1919 to 1946, Situação Bancária; from 1947 to 1990, Estatísticas Financeiras.

Reference date — 31 December of each year.

Remarks — Includes the Bank of Portugal.

### A — Mainland Portugal and Islands 1858-1892

year	cash reservas (contos)	discounted bills (contos)	loans (contos)	deposits (contos)	notes in circulation (contos)
1858	1 846	4 335	2 520	2 807	1 855
1859	3 217	5 017	2 529	3 051	2 295
1860	2 436	6 316	2 726	3 719	2 433
1861	1 896	6 740	2 755	3 657	2 128
1862	2 961	7 485	2 707	4 055	2 640
1863	2 767	11 486	2 435	4 824	2 493
1864	3 841	14 424	3 269	5 671	2 261
1865	3 239	16 557	4 452	5 864	2 483
1866	3 259	15 297	8 811	5 527	2 319
1867	3 133	15 503	10 030	6 369	2 117
1868	2 916	14 232	11 674	5 283	2 249
1869	3 704	13 153	13 338	6 607	2 434
1870	3 597	12 509	12 482	7 268	2 599
1871	3 968	14 721	12 585	8 989	2 921
1872	4 432	15 922	13 115	11 927	3 259
1873	6 667	17 325	12 203	16 095	3 415
1874	6 869	22 634	12 900	17 768	3 660
1875	8 632	30 661	16 417	25 099	4 772
1876	10 707	24 594	16 938	15 904	3 972

Table 7.7 — Banks, bankers and banking houses, 1858-1892, 1919-1990 (continued)

year	cash reservas (contos)	discounted bills (contos)	loans (contos)	deposits (contos)	notes in circulation (contos)
1877	8 713	22 818	16 062	17 340	4 715
1878	6 621	21 405	16 951	17 627	4 641
1879	8 142	22 217	16 841	18 390	5 573
1880	8 451	22 311	17 354	20 853	6 003
1881	9 888	23 446	19 348	24 403	7 286
1882	7 907	23 453	22 253	24 500	5 837
1883	7 499	22 191	24 996	24 853	6 275
1884	8 665	21 465	26 849	26 852	6 579
1885	7 204	20 744	28 462	26 124	7 066
1886	13 720	22 767	28 673	36 780	7 829
1887	14 952	24 205	30 683	40 467	9 646
1888	17 449	29 053	33 893	49 411	11 681
1889	20 955	36 111	33 081	53 899	12 109
1890	17 841	31 121	35 323	47 006	10 504
1891	13 501	28 519	36 137	33 808	37 903
1892	14 337	26 424	28 911	31 684	53 360

### B — Mainland Portugal, Islands and Overseas Provinces 1919-1990

year	reserves (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			securities portfolio (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			commercial portfolio (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			current accounts and secured loans (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)		
	Main- land	Islands	Over- seas	Main- land	Islands	Over- seas	Main- land	Islands	Over- seas	Main- land	Islands	Over- seas
1919	87	2	52	15	-	8	132	-	156	29	-	163
1920	83	1	29	23	-	6	244	1	152	46	1	93
1921	125	4	34	34	-	9	273	2	155	51	2	57
1922	114	3	51	39	2	49	379	3	203	69	5	62
1923	119	1	40	67	2	141	633	2	7	165	5	8
1924	161	2	61	89	2	182	846	4	1	195	5	-
1925	152	2	49	96	2	180	878	4	-	175	8	-

Table 7.7 — Banks, bankers and banking houses, 1858-1892, 1919-1990 (continued)

year	reserves			securities portfolio			commercial portfolio			current accounts and secured loans		
	(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)		
	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas
1926	137	1	71	113	2	40	789	3	273	119	7	66
1927	162	1	49	117	2	47	1046	3	-	219	9	-
...												
1930	229	4	na	139	3	na	1058	11	na	244	14	na
1931	414	4	na	433	3	na	897	11	na	247	16	na
1932	737	4	na	512	2	na	932	12	na	223	17	na
1933	1 094	15	na	580	6	na	934	20	na	463	34	na
1934	1 230	16	na	673	4	na	1 023	26	na	427	30	na
1935	1 190	12	na	678	3	na	1 123	19	na	446	16	na
1936	1 266	13	na	801	6	na	1 174	19	na	518	28	na
1937	1 257	11	na	772	5	na	1 227	22	na	506	28	na
1938	1 253	11	na	725	4	na	1 419	19	na	503	27	na
1939	1 440	12	115	681	4	39	1 386	20	525	535	25	308
1940	2 093	12	127	643	4	73	1 437	20	504	530	24	333
1941	3 449	22	314	833	3	91	1 403	22	514	541	23	331
1942	4 097	35	716	1 405	4	246	1 389	24	537	896	23	359
1943	4 811	27	717	1 406	4	293	1 717	32	664	826	27	470
1944	5 245	40	953	1 717	4	415	2 222	38	842	914	31	495
1945	5 895	44	1 096	1 880	5	392	2 422	43	1 066	1 012	37	524
1946	4 369	22	972	1 947	1	505	3 244	41	1 413	2 147	32	687
1947	4 932	34	834	1 973	2	232	4 467	42	1 152	1 898	32	441
1948	4 415	32	626	1 902	4	227	4 667	41	1 240	2 102	39	447
1949	4 108	36	532	1 772	3	193	4 849	42	1 221	2 187	41	460
1950	4 683	33	596	1 828	3	155	5 207	49	1 267	2 341	39	484
1951	5 473	39	726	2 125	2	164	6 350	43	1 496	2 038	37	473
1952	5 064	39	636	2 259	2	172	7 230	50	1 475	2 228	40	539
1953	6 436	52	853	2 323	4	197	7 310	57	1 572	2 570	43	567

Table 7.7 — Banks, bankers and banking houses, 1858-1892, 1919-1990 (continued)

year	reserves			securities portfolio			commercial portfolio			current accounts and secured loans		
	(10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>4</sup> contos)		
	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas
1954	694	6	121	254	6	23	879	7	142	267	4	58
1955	667	6	116	264	9	21	1 024	8	211	294	5	65
1956	723	7	122	260	11	20	1 142	10	223	337	5	74
1957	660	8	174	254	13	6	1 339	13	69	350	5	199
1958	676	11	171	252	14	7	1 536	17	82	349	5	227
1959	650	13	151	318	22	7	1 668	20	86	430	4	274
1960	724	18	.	489	21	.	1 868	23	.	860	4	.
1961	595	15	.	507	18	.	1 995	25	.	971	4	.
1962	759	9	.	497	14	.	2 170	31	.	505	5	.
1963	822	10	.	602	19	.	2 542	39	.	585	6	.
1964	1 003	11	.	754	15	.	3 039	40	.	656	8	.
1965	1 104	9	.	788	15	.	3 715	43	.	752	10	.
1966	953	2	.	820	-	.	4 070	59	.	789	3	.
1967	1 772	2	.	897	-	.	4 874	70	.	1 552	3	.
1968	1 471	3	.	777	-	.	5 385	85	.	1 108	29	.
1969	1 792	.	.	742	.	.	6 669	.	.	1 894	.	.
1970	3 028	.	.	723	.	.	7 539	.	.	1 703	.	.
1971	3 616	.	.	670	.	.	8 820	.	.	1 371	.	.
1972	4 647	.	.	1 173	.	.	11 157	.	.	1 586	.	.
1973	4 389	.	.	2 325	.	.	15 423	.	.	1 790	.	.
1974	3 117	.	.	1 775	.	.	14 049	.	.	1 445	.	.
1975	2 101	.	.	1 664	.	.	11 778	.	.	1 134	.	.
1976	2 641	.	.	2 020	.	.	14 739	.	.	1 427	.	.
1977	4 050	.	.	3 430	.	.	23 229	.	.	1 724	.	.
1978	5 740	.	.	3 610	.	.	31 263	.	.	2 599	.	.
1979	5 557	.	.	4 528	.	.	41 870	.	.	5 038	.	.
1980	8 085	.	.	5 448	.	.	.	.	.	66 570	.	.
1981	13 552	.	.	10 572	.	.	.	.	.	82 334	.	.
1982	18 934	.	.	14 774	.	.	.	.	.	134 446	.	.

Table 7.7 — Banks, bankers and banking houses, 1858-1892, 1919-1990 (continued)

year	reserves			securities portfolio			commercial portfolio			current accounts and secured loans		
	(10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>4</sup> contos)		
	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas	Main-land	Islands	Over-seas
1983	21 992	.	.	16 473	.	.	.	.	.	169 984	.	.
1984	22 157	.	.	15 254	.	.	.	.	.	145 949	.	.
1985	21 769	.	.	23 214	.	.	.	.	.	160 655	.	.
1986	18 063	.	.	23 566	.	.	.	.	.	179 822	.	.
1987	28 361	.	.	58 422	.	.	.	.	.	224 991	.	.
1988	35 442	.	.	89 650	.	.	.	.	.	244 213	.	.
1989	89 148	.	.	113 875	.	.	.	.	.	272 861	.	.
1990	95 119	.	.	182 176	.	.	.	.	.	331 452	.	.

year	paid-up capital			deposits			total assets and liabilities		
	(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)		
	Mainland	Islands	Overseas	Mainland	Islands	Overseas	Mainland	Islands	Overseas
1919	57	-	24	121	3	201	na	na	na
1920	77	-	24	173	7	145	1 727	8	879
1921	83	-	24	275	11	209	2 123	14	940
1922	119	2	24	381	14	279	3 231	22	1 382
1923	152	1	24	430	12	292	4 391	23	1 790
1924	166	1	24	567	13	320	5 223	26	2 001
1925	140	1	30	580	15	292	5 370	32	2 107
1926	182	1	30	663	13	282	5 578	31	1 941
1927	182	1	50	740	12	307	6 011	30	2 053
...									
1930	262	10	na	823	33	na	7.651	79	na
1931	368	15	na	983	47	na	7 551	98	na
1932	383	14	na	1 283	50	na	6 756	97	na
1933	477	19	na	1 832	80	na	8 383	209	na
1934	436	19	na	2 249	81	na	9 156	198	na
1935	434	16	na	2 310	59	na	9 412	159	na



Table 7.7 — Banks, bankers and banking houses, 1858-1892, 1919-1990 (continued)

year	paid-up capital (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)			total assets and liabilities (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)		
	Mainland	Islands	Overseas	Mainland	Islands	Overseas	Mainland	Islands	Overseas
1936	414	29	na	2 687	46	na	10 408	192	na
1937	403	29	na	2 857	46	na	10 712	184	na
1938	404	29	na	2 917	43	na	10 943	169	na
1939	396	29	40	2 995	41	600	11 735	169	6 172
1940	405	29	40	3 959	41	978	13 506	167	6 188
1941	425	29	40	6 959	48	1 229	18 413	182	6 693
1942	424	29	40	11 661	66	1 602	25 684	197	7 299
1943	440	29	40	14 158	70	1 907	30 976	218	8 544
1944	540	29	40	17 356	84	2 297	35 832	237	9 415
1945	596	29	40	19 885	116	2 551	40 101	284	10 508
1946	651	24	40	20 770	77	2 812	43 687	252	12 714
1947	757	24	40	18 865	78	1 700	48 684	240	7 624
1948	758	24	40	15 350	89	1 643	45 856	266	9 184
1949	762	24	40	13 112	89	1 563	43 826	266	7 530
1950	897	24	40	15 035	93	1 604	48 795	277	7 777
1951	913	24	40	18 300	104	1 747	54 707	297	8 206
1952	1 120	24	40	19 345	114	1 858	56 453	292	8 540
1953	1 286	24	150	21 868	135	1 995	62 764	317	10 340

year	paid-up capital (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			deposits (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			total assets and liabilities (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)		
	Mainland	Islands	Overseas	Mainland	Islands	Overseas	Mainland	Islands	Overseas
1954	131	2	15	2 472	16	228	7 232	34	1 315
1955	136	2	15	2 528	18	232	7 564	39	1 390
1956	144	2	20	2 727	22	253	8 388	43	1 504
1957	144	2	..	2 788	26	334	8 728	49	1 674
1958	188	2	..	3 067	37	315	6 402	60	1 838
1959	158	3	..	3 259	49	296	7 455	72	1 916
1960	264	3	.	3 605	58	.	12 251	85	.
1961	272	3	.	3 231	54	.	13 281	81	.
1962	277	3	.	3 784	59	.	14 926	86	.

Table 7.7 — Banks, bankers and banking houses, 1858-1892, 1919-1990 (continued)

year	paid-up capital (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			deposits (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)			total assets and liabilities (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)		
	Mainland	Islands	Overseas	Mainland	Islands	Overseas	Mainland	Islands	Overseas
1963	321	3	.	4 446	70	.	16 920	105	.
1964	390	5	.	5 421	82	.	19 716	124	.
1965	395	5	.	6 355	87	.	22 560	140	.
1966	453	1	.	7 241	96	.	25 319	198	.
1967	467	1	.	9 138	101	.	33 558	206	.
1968	531	1	.	10 392	125	.	33 844	232	.
1969	425	.	.	11 463	.	.	37 288	.	.
1970	470	.	.	12 562	.	.	41 471	.	.
1971	565	.	.	14 910	.	.	44 570	.	.
1972	873	.	.	18 814	.	.	54 460	.	.
1973	963	.	.	23 456	.	.	73 958	.	.
1974	864	.	.	20 674	.	.	72 700	.	.
1975	711	.	.	18 234	.	.	71 035	.	.
1976	966	.	.	22 349	.	.	84 889	.	.
1977	983	.	.	36 606	.	.	98 432	.	.
1978	929	.	.	47 735	.	.	65 925	.	.
1979	1 018	.	.	65 388	.	.	83 265	.	.
1980	1 071	.	.	92 098	.	.	111 723	.	.
1981	2 404	.	.	121 821	.	.	144 842	.	.
1982	2 466	.	.	154 780	.	.	236 496	.	.
1983	3 523	.	.	214 004	.	.	291 022	.	.
1984	3 738	.	.	230 870	.	.	360 127	.	.
1985	6 900	.	.	279 680	.	.	433 023	.	.
1986	8 133	.	.	318 358	.	.	494 421	.	.
1987	11 340	.	.	363 296	.	.	545 439	.	.
1988	18 508	.	.	476 519	.	.	660 291	.	.
1989	27 820	.	.	573 965	.	.	799 600	.	.
1990	37 294	.	.	738 027	.	.	903 073	.	.

**Table 7.8 — Savings banks and credit companies, 1919-1993**

**A — Deposits**

Source — Situação Bancária and Estatísticas Financeiras.

year	Mainland (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	Madeira (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	Azores (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	State establishments (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1919	43	1	13	119
1920	46	3	22	160
1921	90	4	35	212
1922	114	4	44	267
1923	118	4	58	353
1924	133	3	64	347
1925	168	4	79	530
1926	221	4	96	746
1927	264	4	113	1 018

year	Mainland (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	Islands (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1930	2 006	177
1931	2 170	159
1932	2 518	216
1933	2 209	109
1934	2 422	95
1935	2 465	86
1936	2 550	61
1937	2 578	59
1938	2 695	55
1939	2 903	50
1940	3 167	48
1941	3 803	47

year	Mainland (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	Islands (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1942	5 318	48
1943	5 773	50
1944	7 018	54
1945	7 863	67
1946	8 101	66
1947	8 079	60
1948	7 981	58
1949	7 334	59
1950	7 360	59
1951	8 269	61
1952	8 989	64
1953	9 520	67

Table 7.8 — Savings banks and credit companies, 1919-1993 (continued)

## A — Deposits (continued)

year	Mainland (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	Islands (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	year	Mainland (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	Islands (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1954	989	7	1973	1 016	.
1955	1 043	8	1974	1 225	.
1956	1 092	9	1975	1 374	.
1957	1 153	9	1976	1 651	.
1958	1 220	10	1977	1 937	.
1959	1 288	12	1978	520	.
1960	1 335	12	1979	778	.
1961	1 323	12	1980	1 250	.
1962	1 423	12	1981	1 762	.
1963	1 515	14	1982	2 409	.
1964	1 704	18	1983	3 086	.
1965	1 831	19	1984	4 373	.
1966	1 908	7	1985	2 222	.
1967	1 978	30	1986	2 883	.
1968	2 273	27	1987	8 068	.
1969	432	.	1988	4 692	.
1970	534	.	1989	4 757	.
1971	719	.	1990	5 783	.
1972	875	.			

Table 7.8 — Savings banks and credit companies, 1919-1993 (continued)

**B — Caixa Económica do Montepio Geral and Companhia Geral do Crédito Predial Português (CGCPP)**

Sources — For the Caixa Económica do Montepio Geral, Nunes et alii, 1994; for the Companhia Geral do Crédito Predial Português, Marques, 1989.

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets (contos)	deposits (contos)	bonds in circulation (contos)
1844	28	2	
1845	.	.	
1846	27	2	
1847	30	3	
1848	33	3	
1849	38	4	
1850	49	10	
1851	60	15	
1852	83	28	
1853	93	31	
1854	111	37	
1855	131	40	
1856	153	47	
1857	164	39	
1858	180	36	
1859	206	40	
1860	243	51	
1861	261	44	
1862	290	47	
1863	329	54	
1864	369	59	
1865	425	73	1 350
1866	486	90	1 128

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets (contos)	deposits (contos)	bonds in circulation (contos)
1867	567	102	3 107
1868	619	114	4 887
1869	658	122	6 055
1870	715	137	6 454
1871	802	180	6 630
1872	918	243	6 669
1873	1 030	301	6 581
1874	1 141	361	6 381
1875	1 597	708	6 205
1876	1 951	843	6 492
1877	2 485	1 445	6 850
1878	2 743	1 619	7 731
1879	3 309	2 086	8 359
1880	3 999	2 674	8 900
1881	5 606	4 177	9 575
1882	5 719	4 143	11 830
1883	6 561	4 807	13 947
1884	6 982	5 077	.
1885	6 339	4 263	16 954
1886	9 990	7 731	14 700
1887	11 239	8 810	14 759
1888	11 795	9 144	15 228
1889	12 512	9 611	15 316

Table 7.8 — Savings banks and credit companies, 1919-1993 (continued)

## B — Caixa Económica do Montepio Geral and Companhia Geral do Crédito Predial Português (CGCPP) (continued)

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets	deposits	bonds in circulation
	(contos)	(contos)	(contos)
1890	11 938	8 720	16 310
1891	9 282	5 735	17 281
1892	9 587	5 796	17 546
1893	10 372	6 345	18 019
1894	11 364	7 193	18 563
1895	12 051	7 745	18 454
1896	12 673	8 307	18 337
1897	13 290	8 845	17 940
1898	14 263	9 712	17 745
1899	15 066	10 395	17 808
1900	16 617	11 568	18 266
1901	17 783	12 291	19 158

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets	deposits	bonds in circulation
	(contos)	(contos)	(contos)
1902	19 385	13 384	18 988
1903	20 079	13 539	19 742
1904	21 310	14 244	19 657
1905	22 301	14 719	20 999
1906	22 604	14 526	21 448
1907	23 312	14 701	21 421
1908	24 290	15 121	22 009
1909	25 485	15 783	21 901
1910	25 330	15 034	19 719
1911	25 968	15 038	18 321
1912	26 745	15 180	17 334
1913	27 898	15 643	16 824

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets	deposits	bonds in circulation
	(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1914	28	15	16
1915	32	18	16
1916	33	19	17
1917	37	22	16
1918	42	26	12
1919	47	30	10
1920	52	33	12
1921	68	45	15
1922	78	50	17
1923	99	62	34
1924	128	86	37

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets	deposits	bonds in circulation
	(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	(10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1925	162	114	56
1926	181	125	66
1927	205	143	92
1928	222	151	127
1929	257	175	134
1930	283	191	165
1931	309	214	181
1932	329	228	178
1933	246	236	139
1934	259	243	128
1935	265	249	154

Table 7.8 — Savings banks and credit companies, 1919-1993 (continued)

## B — Caixa Económica do Montepio Geral and Companhia Geral do Crédito Predial Português (CGCPP) (continued)

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	bonds in circulation (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1936	265	248	152
1937	278	264	156
1938	285	265	136
1939	288	268	109
1940	283	264	103
1941	311	284	90
1942	340	314	73
1943	382	356	55
1944	459	433	23

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)	bonds in circulation (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1945	518	485	48
1946	557	529	45
1947	533	499	44
1948	550	519	44
1949	547	511	44
1951	585	553	61
1952	620	586	61
1953	649	610	61

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	deposits (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	bonds in circulation (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1954	69	65	7
1955	74	70	7
1956	74	69	7
1957	76	71	7
1958	101	95	7
1959	109	102	7
1960	118	110	8
1961	117	108	8
1962	134	124	10
1963	156	145	10
1964	183	170	10
1965	209	193	9

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	deposits (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	bonds in circulation (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1966	247	230	9
1967	284	263	8
1968	324	301	8
1969	396	370	7
1970	482	455	7
1971	638	609	6
1972	763	731	6
1973	872	835	6
1974	1 054	1 006	5
1975	1 164	1 107	5
1976	1 416	1 312	5
1977	1 669	1 523	4

Table 7.8 — Savings banks and credit companies, 1919-1993 (continued)

B — Caixa Económica do Montepio Geral and Companhia Geral do Crédito Predial Português (CGCPP) (continued)

year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP	year	Montepio Geral		CGCPP
	total assets (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	deposits (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	bonds in circulation (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)		total assets (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	deposits (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)	bonds in circulation (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1978	2 111	1 785	4	1986	12 971	11 375	478
1979	2 542	2 218	4	1987	15 416	11 965	425
1980	3 360	2 963	3	1988	16 195	13 774	
1981	4 747	3 911	3	1989	19 649	15 985	
1982	6 417	5 193	3	1991	25 489	19 619	
1983	7 855	6 465	2	1992	27 026	22 835	
1984	9 433	8 231	2	1993	32 680	27 188	
1985	11 331	9 937	479				

**C — Caixa Geral de Depósitos**

Source — Until 1945, Relatório da Caixa Geral de Depósitos; from 1946 onwards, Estáticas Financeiras.

Reference date — Until 1934, 30 June of each year; from 1935 onwards, 31 December of each year.

year	deposits (contos)
1920	158 903
1921	210 072
1922	265 207
1923	350 566
1924	344 734
1925	526 603
1926	740 836
1927	1 013 393

year	deposits (contos)
1928	1 055 675
1929	1 095 587
1930	1 288 314
1931	1 503 018
1932	1 801 488
1933	1 921 275
1934	2 131 101
1935	2 159 472

year	deposits (contos)
1936	2 265 380
1937	2 275 601
1938	2 389 745
1939	2 591 525
1940	2 854 442
1941	3 466 765
1942	4 927 539



Table 7.8 — Savings banks and credit companies, 1919-1993 (continued)

## C — Caixa Geral de Depósitos (continued)

year	deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1943	5 326
1944	6 466
1945	7 249
1946	7 419

year	deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1947	7 445
1948	7 312
1949	6 671
1950	6 680

year	deposits (10 <sup>3</sup> contos)
1951	7 549
1952	8 232
1953	8 732

year	deposits (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1954	904
1955	953
1956	1 002
1957	1 059
1958	1 117
1959	1 177
1960	1 216
1961	1 206
1962	1 289
1963	1 359
1964	1 522

year	deposits (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1965	1 625
1966	1 661
1967	1 696
1968	1 952
1969	2 242
1970	2 765
1971	3 367
1972	4 010
1973	4 744
1974	6 031
1975	7 518

year	deposits (10 <sup>4</sup> contos)
1976	10 213
1977	12 704
1978	15 901
1979	21 125
1980	11 654
1981	32 490
1982	42 859
1983	53 998
1984	72 171

**Table 7.9 — Number of financial institutions, 1919-1927, 1930-1956, 1984-1990**

Sources — Situação Bancária and Estatísticas Financeiras.

year	banks and banking houses		savings banks and credit companies			State establishments
	Mainland	Islands	Mainland	Madeira	Azores	
1919	22	1	16	2	9	2
1920	27	1	15	2	10	2
1921	28	1	16	2	10	2
1922	29	2	16	2	10	2
1923	30	1	18	2	11	2
1924	26	1	17	2	11	2
1925	23	1	18	2	11	2
1926	23	1	18	2	11	2
1927	23	1	18	2	11	2
...						
1930	23	3	14		14	
1931	23	4	13		14	
1932	20	4	13		14	
1933	20	3	12		12	
1934	20	3	12		12	
1935	20	2	12		12	
1936	21	4	11		15	
1937	22	4	11		15	
1938	22	4	11		15	
1939	21	4	11		15	
1940	21	4	11		15	
1941	21	4	11		15	
1942	22	4	11		14	
1943	23	4	11		14	
1944	23	4	11		14	
1945	23	4	11		14	
1946	23	3	11		14	

Table 7.9 — Number of financial institutions, 1919-1927, 1930-1956, 1984-1990 (continued)

year	banks and banking houses		savings banks and credit companies			State establishments
	Mainland	Islands	Mainland	Madeira	Azores	
1947	23	4	11		14	
1948	23	3	11		14	
1949	23	3	11		13	
1950	22	3	11		13	
1951	22	4	11		13	
1952	22	4	11		13	
1953	23	4	11		13	
1954	.	4	11		13	
1955	.	4	12		13	
1956	.	4	12		13	
...						
1984	.	.	43		.	
1985	.	.	20		.	
1986	.	.	23		.	
1987	.	.	41		.	
1988	.	.	25		.	
1989	.	.	26		.	
1990	.	.	28		.	

## Table 7.10 — Bank of Portugal discount rates, 1891-1997

Source — Mata, Valério, 1993 and Reports of the Bank of Portugal.

Unit — Percentage.

Remarks — The rate indicated is the lowest rate charged to other banks by the Bank of Portugal at any moment on rediscount operations at its headquarters in Lisbon and at its Oporto branch. There were possibly higher rates in force for direct discount operations, for operations at other branches and for operations over certain amounts.

date of alteration	discount rate
1891-01-13	6
1896 *	5.5
1908-01-09	6
1913-06-23	5.5
1920-07-03	6
1920-07-15	6.5
1920-09-03	7
1923-05-01	8
1923-09-12	9
1926-07-27	8
1930-06-02	7.5
1931-08-10	7
1932-04-04	6.5
1933-03-13	6
1933-12-11	5.5
1934-12-13	5
1936-05-11	4.5
1937-08-11	4
1941-03-31	3.5
1943-04-08	3
1943-08-16	2.5
1944-01-12	2
1965-09-01	2.5
1969-01-06	2.75

Table 7.10 — Bank of Portugal discount rate, 1891-1997 (continued)

date of alteration	discount rate
1970-04-25	3.5
1971-02-05	3.75
1972-12-18	4
1973-12-21	5
1974-07-10	6.5
1974-12-21	7.5
1975-12-19	6.5
1977-02-28	8
1977-08-26	13
1981-07-16	18
1982-04-20	19
1983-03-23	23
1983-08-08	25
1985-08-03	23
1985-11-26	19
1986-04-09	17.5
1986-06-28	16
1987-01-06	15.5
1987-03-20	15
1987-10-15	14.5
1988-02-05	14
1988-05-05	13.5
1989-03-18	14.5
1993-05-20	13.5
1994-01-20	12
1994-09-30	10.5
1996-02-01	8.75
1996-04-23	8.25
1996-12-12	7
1997-05-06	6

\* The date of alteration is not shown in the Report of the Bank of Portugal.

## Table 7.11 — Bank clearing, 1933-1990

Sources — Situação Bancária and Estatísticas Financeiras.

year	cheques presented				cheques accepted				balances	
	Lisbon		Oporto		Lisbon		Oporto		Lisbon	Oporto
	thou- sands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	thou- sands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	thou- sands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	thou- sands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	10 <sup>3</sup> contos
1933	456	6 197	73	507	454	6 179	72	506	2 624	172
1934	517	6 673	109	743	516	6 664	109	741	2 429	205
1935	565	6 522	158	1 044	563	6 516	158	1 044	2 088	248
1936	604	7 723	159	1 097	603	7 719	159	1 096	2 729	283
1937	649	8 033	169	1 264	648	8 029	169	1 262	2 237	303
1938	669	7 533	174	1 258	668	7 530	174	1 257	2 253	279
1939	713	8 355	173	1 215	713	8 344	173	1 214	2 622	265
1940	753	11 127	175	1 318	753	11 124	175	1 317	3 491	328
1941	851	18 073	212	1 921	850	18 069	212	1 920	6 099	426
1942	880	24 884	250	3 344	879	24 879	250	3 343	8 822	1 022
1943	926	24 785	312	4 283	925	24 778	312	4 281	8 765	1 303
1944	1 040	24 831	380	5 479	1 039	24 823	380	5 478	8 275	1 506
1945	1 129	26 413	435	5 680	1 129	26 405	435	5 679	8 449	1 457
1946	1 301	32 309	554	7 617	1 300	32 296	554	7 616	9 325	1 828
1947	1 359	35 063	568	8 156	1 358	35 054	568	8 153	10 356	1 989
1948	1 418	33 938	597	8 410	1 417	33 924	597	8 410	9 624	1 980
1949	1 376	30 492	565	8 150	1 375	30 482	565	8 150	7 847	2 018
1950	1 405	33 146	570	7 566	1 405	33 129	570	7 565	8 929	2 088
1951	1 522	40 118	622	8 934	1 521	40 110	622	8 934	10 846	2 431
1952	1 614	40 150	676	10 007	1 614	40 144	676	10 007	10 783	2 599
1953	1 705	41 972	700	9 576	1 704	41 961	700	9 576	11 128	2 429
1954	1 871	48 259	758	11 511	1 870	48 247	758	11 511	12 970	2 836
1955	2 009	50 411	821	12 422	2 008	50 389	821	12 421	12 627	3 017
1956	2 209	55 636	886	13 763	2 209	55 624	886	13 756	13 588	3 209
1957	2 419	61 603	942	15 556	2 418	61 591	942	15 556	15 369	3 500
1958	2 624	65 930	1 008	17 058	2 624	65 920	1 008	17 058	16 932	3 947
1959	2 841	72 788	1 107	17 489	2 841	72 781	1 107	17 489	19 119	4 123

Table 7.11 — Bank clearing, 1933-1990 (continued)

year	cheques presented				cheques accepted				balances	
	Lisbon		Oporto		Lisbon		Oporto		Lisbon	Oporto
	thou- sands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	thou- sands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	thou- sands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	thou- sands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	10 <sup>3</sup> contos
1960	3 100	80 794	1 217	19 766	3 100	80 787	1 217	19 766	21 150	4 640
1961	3 432	90 022	1 273	21 900	3 432	90 017	1 273	21 900	24 032	5 282
1962	3 692	95 300	1 330	23 815	3 691	95 295	1 330	23 814	25 286	6 089
1963	3 977	100 400	1 406	28 501	3 977	100 393	1 406	28 501	26 180	8 175
1964	4 406	112 299	1 479	33 277	4 405	112 290	1 479	33 271	28 311	9 657
1965	4 996	136 398	1 601	39 833	4 996	136 378	1 601	39 833	32 531	11 641
1966	5 543	153 678	1 704	42 886	5 542	153 668	1 704	42 886	35 977	11 675
1967	6 066	165 813	1 751	45 441	6 066	165 803	1 751	45 441	39 774	13 772
1968	6 736	196 546	1 926	49 695	6 736	196 522	1 927	49 695	49 410	15 600

year	Lisbon			Oporto		
	securities settled		balances	securities settled		balances
	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	10 <sup>3</sup> contos
1969	7 600	235 431	56 135	2 131	58 854	20 085
1970	8 438	291 273	66 769	2 324	64 603	19 894
1971	9 665	361 773	80 825	3 159	73 408	21 286
1972	11 354	437 110	98 053	4 128	104 074	31 264
1973	13 518	577 066	116 221	4 872	154 715	38 894
1974	16 207	653 379	122 011	6 458	189 752	36 767
1975	17 745	626 609	117 208	7 916	198 750	30 706
1976	20 884	812 723	169 284	9 215	253 801	39 264
1977	24 166	1 109 513	228 274	11 654	373 629	53 776
1978	53 320	1 874 370	307 769	729	22 260	5 650
1979	54 005	2 560 417	433 510	1 823	63 173	16 417
1980	63 320	3 682 288	630 668	2 354	103 685	26 722
1981	75 388	5 183 293	842 282	2 992	150 903	40 840
1982	80 793	6 378 572	995 426	3 331	195 280	47 519
1983	84 608	7 881 195	1 308 255	3 131	220 162	45 038
1984	90 740	9 522 726	1 653 684	3 493	280 911	53 441
1985	99 389	12 207 938	2 183 717	3 996	355 076	73 385

Table 7.11 — Bank clearing, 1933-1990 (continued)

year	Lisbon			Oporto		
	securities settled		balances	securities settled		balances
	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	10 <sup>3</sup> contos
1986	112 091	16 658 189	2 968 197	4 456	430 246	92 963
1987	127 771	23 480 132	4 003 169	5 028	551 223	117 730
1988	143 610	31 642 597	4 710 942	5 484	675 169	148 309
1989	158 796	55 002 507	9 037 663	6 019	804 548	146 412

1990	securities settled		securities returned	
	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos	thousands	10 <sup>3</sup> contos
total	186 102	81 864 229	2 738	645 858
Lisbon	110 115	67 671 355	.	.
Oporto	61 903	12 070 126	.	.
other districts	14 084	2 122 748	.	.



## CHAPTER 8 — PRICES AND WAGES

CARLOS BASTIEN (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

### 1 — Prices

There are multiple price series in Portugal covering a wide range of periods, goods and locations. As far as general price indices are concerned — the type of information that is most relevant in this case — the situation is quite different. Such indices are limited in number, having been drawn up belatedly in comparison with most other European countries and, in a number of cases, it has been difficult to control the way in which they were constructed.

The recording and publication of prices, at least in a minimally centralised, regular and systematic fashion, first began in Portugal in the mid-nineteenth century. However, the indices produced by the official statistical apparatus, namely those relating to wholesale prices, contain a number of omissions for the whole of that century and provide a somewhat incomplete coverage of the twentieth century. A first index of this kind was constructed by the Bank of Portugal for the period 1914 to 1930, with a fixed base established in 1914. This was then followed by another index, once again constructed by the Bank of Portugal, in 1932, with a fixed base in 1927. Both were published in the Boletim do Banco de Portugal and in the Reports of this bank's Board of Directors. A third index was constructed by the National Statistical Institute and was thereafter published regularly in its Boletim Mensal as from April 1953, although with a retrospective series for the period from 1948 to 1952.

The series of cost of living indices began to be published by the Institute of Compulsory Social Insurance, in its Boletim de Previdência Social, and by the Directorate-General of Statistics, on an irregular basis as from 1914 and then on a regular basis after 1929 (at that time it was given the name of the retail price index), when this directorate-general began to publish the above-mentioned index on a monthly basis in its Boletim Mensal. A consumer price index for Lisbon (and afterwards for other cities) began to be published in 1948, in the Boletim Mensal. This finally gave rise to a consumer price index for mainland Portugal in 1977, which has since been periodically updated and renewed. Some international organisations, namely OECD, have also published data on price indices in Portugal.

In addition to the official and para-official data already referred to, one must also refer to the results obtained by studies of price history, particularly under the form of series of aggregate price indices for different periods produced by university research. Amongst these studies, one must

also mention Godinho, 1954 because of its pioneering nature (although this work does not present aggregate indicators and has data that are limited to the period before 1850), as well as Pimenta, 1983, which presents series of consumer price indices for “popular food” and industrial products in Porto between 1844 and 1913, Justino, 1987-1988, which contains a first general wholesale price index for Lisbon for the period between 1810 and 1912, Madureira, 1997, which presents a general price index for Lisbon for the period between 1766 and 1829, Nunes, Mata, Valério, 1989, which presents a cost of living index for the years from 1833 to 1985, Valério, 1997, which contains an indicator of the evolution of prices in Portugal from the thirteenth to the twentieth centuries, and Valério, 1998, which presents a price index for the period from 1776 to 1981.

In the face of such diversity, we chose to include in this chapter a table containing the prices of precious metals from the thirteenth century onwards, an aggregate indicator of the evolution of prices for the period from 1500 to 1997 and the legal factors of monetary correction, established by royal decision in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries and by government decision in the twentieth century. This table incorporates the most essential results obtained by the above-mentioned research, seeking not to juxtapose but rather to integrate such results, making the different series as homogenous as possible.

## 2 — Wages

The literature looking at wages in Portugal from a historical perspective is very limited. Long series relating to wages are rare and generally unreliable, just as there have similarly been very few attempts to construct synthetic indicators of the movement of wages in general. In addition to the absolute lack of sources or, at least, of sources that have already been worked upon by Portuguese researchers, there are still as yet a number of unsurmounted difficulties in the homogenisation of the statistical series that seriously restrict their comparability. The proof of these unsurmounted difficulties is to be found in the fact that, as a general rule, international reference works do not include information about Portuguese wages, particularly for the period before the Second World War. Mitchell, 1998, who is perhaps the major reference in this field, only includes a series of agricultural wages beginning in 1929 and another series of industrial wages, which does not go any further back than 1953.

More than anything, we have access to local or regional series, which are frequently discontinuous or have a limited time scope, and, generally speaking, refer to a limited number of occupations. Worthy of mention in this regard are: Cabral, 1976, for rural wages in some districts in mainland Portugal in the 1860s and 1870s; Justino, 1990, for wages in some agricultural and

industrial occupations in different regions of the country between 1850 and 1912; [Martins, 1997](#), for wages in some agricultural and industrial occupations in different locations between the mid-nineteenth century and the First World War; and [Madureira, 1997](#), for wages in some industrial occupations in the city of Lisbon during the first three decades of the nineteenth century.

Even rarer were the attempts made to construct a general wage index for the country as a whole. Of the studies already mentioned, only David Justino includes a general wage index for the nineteenth century. For the twentieth century, however, it is possible to find some estimations, although these are of a limited scope in terms of the sectors and time periods covered. This is the case, for example, with [Alarcão, 1948](#), although the respective index only relates to workers' wages in two years (1918 and 1946), and [Pimenta, 1985](#), for the inter-war period.

The official and para-official services producing statistical data on the Portuguese economy rarely attempted to construct a general wage index, even though this related only to part of the twentieth century. In its [Boletim de Previdência Social](#), the Institute of Compulsory Social Services pioneered the publication of an average nominal wage index for the working population for the period from 1914 to 1934, and the Bank of Portugal published general wage indices for the period between 1914 and 1947 in the Reports of its Board of Directors and in the [Boletim do Banco de Portugal](#), even though there were some interruptions in this period. In turn, the National Statistical Institute began in 1940 to regularly publish data on the wages that were paid in some of the most important industrial activities in mainland Portugal (as subsidiary data in its [Estatísticas Industriais](#)) and in 1943 it began to regularly publish data on the average wages paid to rural workers, even though similar data have existed since 1912 with some interruptions. In 1955, for the first time, it devoted one of the volumes of the “Estudos” series ([Instituto Nacional de Estatística, 1955](#)) to the statistical analysis of occupational wages - a work that was continued with the regular production of such data in the [Boletim Mensal](#) and the publication of some later volumes in the “Estudos” series — even though neither at that time nor at any later date was an aggregate wage index ever published for Portugal.

In spite of these difficulties, and bearing in mind that the aim of the present statistical series is to gather together information that is as representative as possible of the behaviour of the Portuguese economy taken as a whole, we have chosen not to include in this volume wage series relating only to certain locations and certain occupations, even when such series refer to wages for occupations in some of the most important sectors in Portuguese industry, namely textiles and tobacco.

Thus, in keeping with this criterion, we only reproduce here wage series relating to two major sectors in Portuguese economic life (in general terms, agriculture and industry) and evidently all the relevant information available on general wage indices.

These latter series are of particular interest for historiographical research, namely for studies attempting to examine the workings of the labour markets or the evolution of living standards. However, it must be remembered that these series contain serious imperfections resulting from the limitations of the actual data from which they were constructed. Strictly speaking, these are not genuine “general” series, since, even when they relate either to mainland Portugal or to the mainland and the archipelagos of Madeira and the Azores, they only cover a limited number of economic conditions, occupations and locations. Furthermore, there is another limitation that must not be overlooked with regard to the significance of such series, namely that in the nineteenth century in particular the Portuguese economy was still largely composed of a set of local and regional markets with little integration between them and these rarely moved at the pace suggested by the aggregate indicators. Such disparities generally affected the movements of prices and specifically those of wages, bearing in mind that the mobility and integration of the various labour markets is bound to be inferior to that of the markets of other goods and services.

The exception to the above-mentioned criterion for the exclusion of wage series relating to specific occupations is the inclusion of two series — one in index numbers and the other expressed in *réis* — relating to the wages of building workers for the municipal councils of Porto and Leiria. A high correlation has been established for various national cases between the evolution of the wages of some types of building workers in medium-sized cities and the evolution of the level of economic activity ([Bairoch, 1977](#)), and, given that these series are relatively extensive and homogeneous, we consider that they are of interest. Moreover, they may offer yet another approach, albeit indirect, towards understanding the general movement of wages <sup>1</sup>.

We also include a series relating to the national minimum wage, as this may be of great interest for historiographical studies, particularly as we consider that such an indicator is also important for the characterisation of the evolution in the standard of living of the Portuguese population.

It should be noted that all the series included in this chapter, both those expressed in monetary units and those expressed in index numbers, refer to current wages. In the various studies that have been compiled, namely those from which we extracted the data relating to wages that are reproduced here, the series of current wages are frequently accompanied by series relating to real wages. However, as the cost of living indices and deflators used by the various authors are very different, comparisons between the various series of real wages thus obtained are irrelevant for our purpose of providing as wide and homogeneous a base as possible

---

<sup>1</sup> For the Portuguese case, [Pimenta, 1985: 213](#) estimated a coefficient of determination of 0.853 between the variations in the wages of labourers / building workers and the variations in the general index.

for historical research, particularly for research that is concerned with making international comparisons. This is the reason why real wage series were not included in this chapter.

\*

Whenever available, the most relevant information relating to sources and to the way in which the series shown in this chapter were constructed is indicated in footnotes included with the tables.

## References

ALARCÃO, Jorge — Estimativa do nível de vida da população operária portuguesa. Revista de Economia, vol. 1(1), 1948.

ANTUNES, A. Roque — Alguns indicadores de salários: fontes, conceitos e evolução. Lisboa: Ministério do Emprego e Segurança Social, 1991.

BAIROCH, Paul — Estimations du revenu national dans les sociétés occidentales pré-industrielles et au dix-neuvième siècle. Propositions d'approches indirectes. Revue Economique, no. 2, 1977.

BARRETO, António (organizador) — A situação social em Portugal, 1960-1995. Lisboa: 1996.

BERNARDES, Joaquim de Oliveira da Silva — Leiria no século XIX — aspectos económicos. Leiria: 1981.

BRANCO, Carlos de Barros Soares — Aspectos da questão monetária portuguesa. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1950.

CABRAL, M. Vilaverde — O desenvolvimento do capitalismo em Portugal no século XIX. Porto: 1976.

GODINHO, Vitorino Magalhães — Prix et monnaies au Portugal. Paris: Armand Colin, 1954.

GODINHO, Vitorino Magalhães — Os descobrimentos e a economia mundial. (4 volumes) Lisboa: Presença, 1981-1983.

INSTITUTO NACIONAL DE ESTATÍSTICA — Índices de salários por profissões — para a cidade de Lisboa. Lisboa: 1955.

JUSTINO, David — A evolução do produto nacional bruto em Portugal, 1850–1910 — algumas estimativas provisórias. Análise Social, no. 97, 1987.

JUSTINO, David — A formação do espaço económico nacional — Portugal 1810-1912. Lisboa: Vega, 1987-1988.

JUSTINO, David — Preços e salários em Portugal (1850-1912). Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1990.

MARTINS, Conceição Andrade — Trabalho e condições de vida em Portugal. Análise Social, no. 142, 1997.

MADUREIRA, Nuno L. — Mercado e privilégios. A indústria portuguesa entre 1750 e 1834. Lisboa: 1997.

MITCHELL, R. B. — International historical statistics. Europe 1750 – 1993. Basingstoke: MacMillan, 1998.

NUNES, Ana Bela; MATA, Eugénia; VALÉRIO, Nuno — Portuguese economic growth 1833-1985. The Journal of European Economic History, volume 18, no. 2, 1989.

PIMENTA, Carlos — Salários e preços em Portugal no século XIX – análise económica. Boletim de Ciências Económicas, volume 26, 1983.

PIMENTA, Carlos — Contributos para a caracterização e explicação da inflação em Portugal. (Volume 1) Lisboa: 1985.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — A moeda em Portugal 1913-1947. Lisboa: Sá da Costa, 1984.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — Periodização da história monetária de Portugal. Estudos de Economia, volume XII, no. 1, 1991.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — Os preços em Portugal (séculos 13 a 20). In: REIS, Jaime; DIAS, Fátima Sequeira; FONSECA, Helder — História do crescimento económico em Portugal. Ponta Delgada: Associação Portuguesa de História Económica e Social, 1997.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — Recent developments on Portuguese retrospective national accounts. Gabinete de História Económica e Social do Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão da Universidade Técnica de Lisboa, documento de trabalho no. 12, Lisboa, 1998.

## Tables

8.1 — Prices

8.2 — Wages

## Table 8.1 — Prices

Sources:

Legal price of gold — calculated on the basis of Valério, 1991.

Market price of gold — Banco de Portugal, Relatório do Conselho de Administração, various years.

Legal price of silver — calculated on the basis of Valério, 1991.

Price index — Valério, 1997, prolonged with the consumer price index of the National Statistical Institute.

Legal factor of correction — From 1369 to 1473, Godinho, 1981-1983. From 1900 to 1997, Government Regulation no. 393/99 of the 29 May issued by the Office of the Secretary of State for Fiscal Affairs.

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1253	0.011	?	0.001	?	-
...					
1329	0.011	?	0.001	?	-
1330	0.019	?	0.002	?	-
...					
1359	0.019	?	0.002	?	-
1360	0.026	?	0.003	?	-
...					
1366	0.026	?	0.003	?	-
1367	0.026	?	0.004	?	-
1368	0.026	?	0.004	?	-
1369	0.053	?	0.026	?	1
1370	0.053	?	0.031	?	1
1371	0.038	?	0.022	?	1
1372	0.038	?	0.004	?	1
...					
1382	0.038	?	0.004	?	1
1383	?	?	0.006	?	1

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1384	?	?	0.006	?	1
1385	?	?	0.013	?	1
1386	?	?	0.013	?	1
1387	?	?	0.022	?	1
1388	?	?	0.022	?	1
1389	?	?	0.045	?	5
1390	?	?	0.067	?	5
1391	?	?	0.275	?	5
...					
1397	?	?	0.275	?	5
1398	?	?	0.157	?	5
1399	?	?	0.157	?	15
1400	?	?	0.157	?	15
1401	?	?	0.314	?	15
...					
1403	?	?	0.314	?	15
1404	?	?	0.468	?	15
...					
1407	?	?	0.468	?	15
1408	?	?	0.314	?	15
1409	?	?	0.314	?	50
...					
1414	?	?	0.314	?	50
1415	?	?	1.242	?	50
1416	4.082	?	1.242	?	50
1417	?	?	1.242	?	250
...					
1421	?	?	1.242	?	250
1422	?	?	1.242	?	500
...					
1429	?	?	1.242	?	500



Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1430	?	?	3.765	?	500
...					
1432	?	?	3.765	?	500
1433	40.816	?	3.765	?	500
1434	40.816	?	3.765	?	500
1435	34.864	?	3.803	?	500
1436	34.864	?	3.803	?	700
...					
1440	34.864	?	3.803	?	700
1441	40.675	?	4.564	?	700
...					
1450	40.675	?	4.564	?	700
1451	53.749	?	6.466	?	700
...					
1456	53.749	?	6.466	?	700
1457	63.416	?	6.466	?	700
...					
1459	63.416	?	6.466	?	700
1460	71.870	?	6.466	?	700
...					
1471	71.870	?	6.466	?	700
1472	91.316	?	9.052	?	700
1473	91.316	?	9.052	?	980
...					
1488	91.316	?	9.052	?	-
1489	107.101	?	10.840	?	-
...					
1498	107.101	?	10.840	?	-
1499	107.101	?	10.982	?	-
...					
1503	107.101	?	10.982	?	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1504	109.914	?	10.982	?	-
...					
1516	109.914	?	10.982	?	-
1517	112.740	?	11.410	?	-
...					
1519	112.740	?	11.410	?	-
1520	112.740	?	11.410	6	-
1521	112.740	?	11.410	6	-
...					
1523	112.740	?	11.410	?	-
1524	112.740	?	11.410	8	-
1525	112.740	?	11.410	3	-
...					
1527	112.740	?	11.410	?	-
1528	112.740	?	11.410	6	-
1529	112.740	?	11.410	8	-
1530	112.740	?	11.410	?	-
1531	112.740	?	11.410	9	-
...					
1533	112.740	?	11.410	?	-
1534	112.740	?	11.410	6	-
...					
1536	112.740	?	11.410	?	-
1537	119.574	?	11.410	?	-
1538	121.966	?	11.410	?	-
1539	121.966	?	11.885	?	-
1540	121.966	?	11.885	9	-
...					
1542	121.966	?	11.885	?	-
1543	121.966	?	11.885	10	-
...					

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1548	121.966	?	11.885	?	-
1549	121.966	?	11.885	9	-
1550	121.966	?	11.885	?	-
1551	121.966	?	11.885	12	-
1552	121.966	?	11.885	?	-
1553	121.966	?	11.885	8	-
1554	121.966	?	11.885	?	-
1555	141.824	?	12.361	?	-
1556	141.824	?	12.361	14	-
1557	141.824	?	12.361	?	-
1558	141.824	?	11.410	?	-
1559	141.824	?	11.410	?	-
1560	141.824	?	11.695	8	-
1561	141.824	?	11.695	14	-
...					
1563	141.824	?	11.695	?	-
1564	141.824	?	11.695	12	-
1565	141.824	?	11.695	11	-
1566	141.824	?	11.695	15	-
1567	141.824	?	11.695	14	-
1568	141.824	?	11.695	11	-
1569	141.824	?	11.695	11	-
1570	141.824	?	11.695	14	-
1571	141.824	?	11.695	14	-
1572	141.824	?	11.695	13	-
1573	141.824	?	12.599	13	-
...					
1576	141.824	?	12.599	?	-
1577	141.824	?	12.599	16	-
1578	141.824	?	12.599	20	-
1579	141.824	?	12.599	20	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1580	141.824	?	12.599	13	-
1581	141.824	?	12.599	?	-
1582	141.824	?	12.741	20	-
1583	141.824	?	12.741	23	-
1584	141.824	?	12.741	20	-
1585	141.824	?	12.741	17	-
1586	141.824	?	12.741	17	-
1587	141.824	?	12.741	22	-
1588	141.824	?	13.312	26	-
1589	141.824	?	13.312	25	-
1590	141.824	?	13.312	?	-
1591	141.824	?	13.312	22	-
1592	141.824	?	13.312	22	-
1593	141.824	?	13.312	23	-
1594	141.824	?	13.312	19	-
1595	141.824	?	13.312	27	-
1596	141.824	?	13.312	28	-
1597	141.824	?	13.312	29	-
1598	141.824	?	13.312	32	-
1599	141.824	?	13.312	29	-
1600	141.824	?	13.312	27	-
1601	141.824	?	13.312	?	-
1602	141.824	?	13.312	24	-
1603	141.824	?	13.312	?	-
1604	141.824	?	13.312	35	-
1605	141.824	?	13.312	?	-
1606	141.824	?	13.312	34	-
1607	141.824	?	13.312	30	-
1608	141.824	?	13.312	31	-
...					
1611	141.824	?	13.312	?	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1612	141.824	?	13.312	23	-
1613	141.824	?	13.312	25	-
1614	141.824	?	13.312	22	-
1615	141.824	?	13.312	22	-
1616	141.824	?	13.312	23	-
1617	141.824	?	13.312	28	-
1618	141.824	?	13.312	33	-
1619	141.824	?	13.312	25	-
1620	141.824	?	13.312	26	-
1621	141.824	?	13.312	27	-
1622	141.824	?	13.312	?	-
1623	141.824	?	13.312	18	-
1624	141.824	?	13.312	17	-
1625	141.824	?	13.312	21	-
1626	141.824	?	13.312	32	-
1627	141.824	?	13.312	28	-
...					
1629	141.824	?	13.312	?	-
1630	141.824	?	13.312	34	-
1631	141.824	?	13.312	39	-
1632	141.824	?	13.312	36	-
1633	141.824	?	13.312	22	-
1634	141.824	?	13.312	26	-
1635	141.824	?	13.312	39	-
1636	141.824	?	13.312	43	-
1637	141.824	?	13.312	41	-
1638	141.824	?	13.312	27	-
1639	141.824	?	13.312	20	-
1640	141.824	?	13.312	?	-
1641	141.824	?	16.164	19	-
1642	267.451	?	16.237	23	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1643	267.451	?	19.016	30	-
1644	267.451	?	19.016	?	-
1645	267.451	?	19.016	26	-
1646	312.012	?	19.016	27	-
1647	312.012	?	19.016	25	-
...					
1650	312.012	?	19.016	?	-
1651	312.012	?	19.016	45	-
1652	312.012	?	19.016	33	-
1653	312.012	?	19.016	36	-
1654	312.012	?	19.016	26	-
1655	312.012	?	19.016	26	-
1656	312.012	?	19.016	?	-
1657	312.012	?	19.016	24	-
1658	312.012	?	19.016	36	-
1659	312.012	?	19.016	38	-
1660	312.012	?	19.016	32	-
1661	312.012	?	19.016	?	-
1662	356.506	?	19.016	31	-
1663	356.506	?	23.771	49	-
1664	356.506	?	23.771	40	-
1665	356.506	?	23.771	?	-
1666	356.506	?	23.771	33	-
1667	356.506	?	23.771	?	-
1668	392.157	?	23.771	19	-
1669	392.157	?	23.771	19	-
...					
1671	392.157	?	23.771	?	-
1672	392.157	?	23.771	18	-
1673	392.157	?	23.771	22	-
1674	392.157	?	23.771	24	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1675	392.157	?	23.771	22	-
1676	392.157	?	25.197	21	-
1677	405.680	?	25.197	24	-
1678	405.680	?	25.197	28	-
1679	405.680	?	25.197	22	-
1680	405.680	?	25.197	31	-
1681	405.680	?	25.197	27	-
1682	405.680	?	25.197	24	-
1683	405.680	?	25.197	26	-
1684	405.680	?	25.197	28	-
1685	405.680	?	25.197	32	-
1686	405.680	?	25.197	22	-
1687	405.680	?	25.197	18	-
1688	486.855	?	31.496	19	-
1689	486.855	?	31.496	20	-
1690	486.855	?	31.496	25	-
1691	486.855	?	31.496	27	-
1692	486.855	?	31.496	29	-
1693	486.855	?	31.496	29	-
1694	486.855	?	31.496	39	-
1695	486.855	?	31.496	38	-
1696	486.855	?	31.496	34	-
1697	486.855	?	31.496	33	-
1698	486.855	?	31.496	43	-
1699	486.855	?	31.496	45	-
1700	486.855	?	31.496	37	-
1701	486.855	?	31.496	31	-
1702	486.855	?	31.496	40	-
1703	486.855	?	31.496	57	-
1704	486.855	?	31.496	50	-
1705	486.855	?	31.496	34	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1706	486.855	?	31.496	32	-
1707	486.855	?	31.496	38	-
1708	486.855	?	31.496	38	-
1709	486.855	?	31.496	56	-
1710	486.855	?	31.496	65	-
1711	486.855	?	31.496	69	-
1712	486.855	?	31.496	74	-
1713	486.855	?	31.496	47	-
1714	486.855	?	31.496	49	-
1715	486.855	?	31.496	43	-
1716	486.855	?	31.496	39	-
1717	486.855	?	31.496	30	-
1718	486.855	?	31.496	24	-
1719	486.855	?	31.496	30	-
1720	486.855	?	31.496	37	-
1721	486.855	?	31.496	38	-
1722	486.855	?	31.496	35	-
1723	486.855	?	31.496	30	-
1724	486.855	?	31.496	33	-
1725	486.855	?	31.496	35	-
1726	486.855	?	31.496	38	-
1727	486.855	?	31.496	32	-
1728	486.855	?	31.496	34	-
1729	486.855	?	31.496	32	-
1730	486.855	?	31.496	36	-
1731	486.855	?	31.496	35	-
1732	486.855	?	31.496	39	-
1733	486.855	?	31.496	39	-
1734	486.855	?	33.279	41	-
1735	486.855	?	33.279	41	-
1736	486.855	?	33.279	43	-



Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1737	486.855	?	33.279	70	-
1738	486.855	?	33.279	53	-
1739	486.855	?	33.279	35	-
1740	486.855	?	33.279	43	-
1741	486.855	?	33.279	44	-
1742	486.855	?	33.279	37	-
1743	486.855	?	33.279	41	-
1744	486.855	?	33.279	45	-
1745	486.855	?	33.279	41	-
1746	486.855	?	33.279	42	-
1747	486.855	?	35.656	43	-
1748	486.855	?	35.656	39	-
1749	486.855	?	35.656	39	-
1750	486.855	?	35.656	44	-
1751	486.855	?	35.656	44	-
1752	486.855	?	35.656	43	-
1753	486.855	?	35.656	45	-
1754	486.855	?	35.656	42	-
1755	486.855	?	35.656	44	-
1756	486.855	?	35.656	40	-
1757	486.855	?	35.656	44	-
1758	486.855	?	35.656	46	-
1759	486.855	?	35.656	42	-
1760	486.855	?	35.656	40	-
1761	486.855	?	35.656	41	-
1762	486.855	?	35.656	43	-
1763	486.855	?	35.656	43	-
1764	486.855	?	35.656	49	-
1765	486.855	?	35.656	45	-
1766	486.855	?	35.656	41	-
1767	486.855	?	35.656	41	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1768	486.855	?	35.656	45	-
1769	486.855	?	35.656	49	-
1770	486.855	?	35.656	43	-
1771	486.855	?	35.656	41	-
1772	486.855	?	35.656	43	-
1773	486.855	?	35.656	41	-
1774	486.855	?	35.656	45	-
1775	486.855	?	35.656	45	-
1776	486.855	?	35.656	44	-
1777	486.855	?	35.656	47	-
1778	486.855	?	35.656	49	-
1779	486.855	?	35.656	46	-
1780	486.855	?	35.656	53	-
1781	486.855	?	35.656	49	-
1782	486.855	?	35.656	47	-
1783	486.855	?	35.656	52	-
1784	486.855	?	35.656	54	-
1785	486.855	?	35.656	50	-
1786	486.855	?	35.656	53	-
1787	486.855	?	35.656	52	-
1788	486.855	?	35.656	51	-
1789	486.855	?	35.656	61	-
1790	486.855	?	35.656	66	-
1791	486.855	?	35.656	60	-
1792	486.855	?	35.656	60	-
1793	486.855	?	35.656	67	-
1794	486.855	?	35.656	63	-
1795	486.855	?	35.656	62	-
1796	486.855	?	35.656	64	-
1797	486.855	?	35.656	69	-
1798	486.855	?	35.656	80	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1799	486.855	?	35.656	79	-
1800	486.855	?	35.656	103	-
1801	486.855	?	35.656	97	-
1802	486.855	?	35.656	93	-
1803	486.855	?	35.656	101	-
1804	486.855	?	35.656	115	-
1805	486.855	?	35.656	98	-
1806	486.855	?	35.656	92	-
1807	486.855	?	35.656	91	-
1808	486.855	?	35.656	98	-
1809	486.855	?	35.656	101	-
1810	486.855	?	35.656	130	-
1811	486.855	?	35.656	156	-
1812	486.855	?	35.656	134	-
1813	486.855	?	35.656	112	-
1814	486.855	?	35.656	96	-
1815	486.855	?	35.656	96	-
1816	486.855	?	35.656	91	-
1817	486.855	?	35.656	102	-
1818	486.855	?	35.656	85	-
1819	486.855	?	35.656	65	-
1820	486.855	?	35.656	52	-
1821	486.855	?	35.656	55	-
1822	570.451	?	35.656	64	-
1823	570.451	?	35.656	68	-
1824	570.451	?	35.656	70	-
1825	570.451	?	35.656	63	-
1826	570.451	?	35.656	63	-
1827	570.451	?	35.656	59	-
1828	570.451	?	35.656	54	-
1829	570.451	?	35.656	58	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1830	570.451	?	35.656	52	-
1831	570.451	?	35.656	58	-
1832	570.451	?	35.656	53	-
1833	570.451	?	35.656	46	-
1834	570.451	?	35.656	56	-
1835	570.451	?	36.845	70	-
1836	570.451	?	36.845	63	-
1837	570.451	?	36.845	49	-
1838	570.451	?	36.845	49	-
1839	570.451	?	36.845	51	-
1840	570.451	?	36.845	58	-
1841	570.451	?	36.845	61	-
1842	570.451	?	36.845	54	-
1843	570.451	?	36.845	50	-
1844	570.451	?	36.845	42	-
1845	570.451	?	36.845	42	-
1846	570.451	?	36.845	54	-
1847	608.643	?	36.845	51	-
1848	608.643	?	36.845	45	-
1849	608.643	?	36.845	48	-
1850	608.643	?	36.845	55	-
1851	608.643	?	36.845	50	-
1852	608.643	?	36.845	49	-
1853	608.643	?	36.845	62	-
1854	615.063	?	-	76	-
1855	615.063	?	-	74	-
1856	615.063	?	-	93	-
1857	615.063	?	-	77	-
1858	615.063	?	-	70	-
1859	615.063	?	-	78	-
1860	615.063	?	-	75	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1861	615.063	?	-	80	-
1862	615.063	?	-	81	-
1863	615.063	?	-	77	-
1864	615.063	?	-	80	-
1865	615.063	?	-	77	-
1866	615.063	?	-	80	-
1867	615.063	?	-	86	-
1868	615.063	?	-	80	-
1869	615.063	?	-	79	-
1870	615.063	?	-	74	-
1871	615.063	?	-	72	-
1872	615.063	?	-	72	-
1873	615.063	?	-	95	-
1874	615.063	?	-	78	-
1875	615.063	?	-	79	-
1876	615.063	?	-	80	-
1877	615.063	?	-	91	-
1878	615.063	?	-	90	-
1879	615.063	?	-	86	-
1880	615.063	?	-	80	-
1881	615.063	?	-	82	-
1882	615.063	?	-	83	-
1883	615.063	?	-	79	-
1884	615.063	?	-	73	-
1885	615.063	?	-	70	-
1886	615.063	?	-	72	-
1887	615.063	?	-	70	-
1888	615.063	?	-	70	-
1889	615.063	?	-	76	-
1890	615.063	?	-	86	-
1891	615.063	693	-	83	-

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1892	615.063	784	-	85	-
1893	615.063	766	-	87	-
1894	615.063	792	-	89	-
1895	615.063	779	-	84	-
1896	615.063	801	-	85	-
1897	615.063	899	-	92	-
1898	615.063	980	-	96	-
1899	615.063	878	-	94	-
1900	615.063	864	-	91	91
1901	615.063	873	-	90	89
1902	615.063	782	-	87	89
1903	615.063	763	-	90	89
1904	615.063	740	-	96	96
1905	615.063	656	-	95	96
1906	615.063	626	-	95	96
1907	615.063	635	-	95	96
1908	615.063	712	-	96	96
1909	615.063	710	-	97	96
1910	615.063	669	-	93	96
1911	615.063	668	-	99	100
1912	615.063	680	-	98	100
1913	615.063	718	-	101	100
1914	615.063	768	-	100	100
1915	615.063	924	-	112	112
1916	615.063	963	-	137	137
1917	615.063	1 056	-	162	172
1918	615.063	1 119	-	293	241
1919	615.063	1 287	-	335	315
1920	615.063	3 819	-	580	476
1921	615.063	7 128	-	909	730
1922	615.063	10 559	-	1 099	985

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1923	615.063	15 926	-	1 726	1 610
1924	615.063	20 336	-	2 399	1 913
1925	615.063	13 448	-	2 306	2 219
1926	615.063	12 896	-	2 208	2 219
1927	615.063	12 558	-	2 371	2 219
1928	615.063	14 807	-	2 269	2 219
1929	615.063	14 844	-	2 361	2 219
1930	615.063	14 813	-	2 243	2 219
1931	15 035.333	16 318	-	1 990	2 219
1932	15 035.333	20 466	-	1 949	2 219
1933	15 035.333	21 683	-	1 948	2 219
1934	15 035.333	24 223	-	1 968	2 219
1935	15 035.333	25 022	-	1 972	2 219
1936	15 035.333	24 698	-	2 022	2 219
1937	15 035.333	24 408	-	2 102	2 285
1938	15 035.333	25 175	-	2 037	2 285
1939	15 035.333	27 419	-	1 918	2 285
1940	15 035.333	28 402	-	2 009	2 716
1941	15 035.333	27 701	-	2 258	3 058
1942	15 035.333	27 948	-	2 758	3 542
1943	15 035.333	28 024	-	3 118	4 159
1944	15 035.333	28 024	-	3 208	4 899
1945	15 035.333	28 024	-	3 497	4 899
1946	15 035.333	28 024	-	3 980	4 899
1947	15 035.333	28 024	-	4 103	4 899
1948	15 035.333	28 024	-	3 381	4 899
1949	15 035.333	29 239	-	3 920	4 899
1950	15 035.333	32 378	-	3 819	4 899
1951	15 035.333	32 378	-	3 872	5 342
1952	15 035.333	32 378	-	3 878	5 342
1953	15 035.333	32 378	-	3 913	5 342

Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1954	15 035.333	32 378	-	3 944	5 342
1955	15 035.333	33 865	-	4 077	5 342
1956	15 035.333	33 626	-	4 256	5 342
1957	15 035.333	33 395	-	4 257	5 342
1958	15 035.333	33 472	-	4 318	5 680
1959	15 035.333	33 278	-	4 375	5 680
1960	15 035.333	33 449	-	4 472	5 680
1961	32 351.990	34 749	-	4 461	5 680
1962	32 351.990	33 453	-	4 459	5 680
1963	32 351.990	33 127	-	4 575	5 680
1964	32 351.990	33 204	-	4 799	5 945
1965	32 351.990	33 572	-	4 955	6 168
1966	32 351.990	33 605	-	5 081	6 458
1967	32 351.990	33 978	-	5 293	6 905
1968	32 351.990	37 656	-	5 398	6 905
1969	32 351.990	39 390	-	5 543	6 905
1970	32 351.990	37 691	-	5 822	7 457
1971	33 292.273	39 691	-	6 253	7 834
1972	33 292.273	53 553	-	6 778	8 380
1973	34 614.053	82 850	-	7 299	9 219
1974	-	151 394	-	10 064	12 022
1975	-	181 385	-	11 929	14 071
1976	-	146 660	-	14 391	16 803
1977	-	189 920	-	19 136	21 876
1978	-	287 250	-	24 257	27 951
1979	-	505 710	-	30 103	35 478
1980	-	968 750	-	35 641	39 329
1981	-	925 290	-	41 372	48 149
1982	-	1 038 600	-	50 639	57 855
1983	-	1 594 710	-	63 552	72 645
1984	-	1 856 200	-	81 855	93 201



Table 8.1 — Prices (continued)

year	legal price of gold (escudos/kg)	market price of gold (escudos/kg)	legal price of silver (escudos/kg)	price index (base 1914 = 100)	legal factor of correction (see note)
1985	-	1 810 650	-	97 899	111 913
1986	-	1 836 360	-	109 451	123 343
1987	-	2 108 700	-	119 470	134 816
1988	-	2 172 050	-	131 354	148 644
1989	-	2 070 210	-	147 905	167 546
1990	-	1 878 180	-	167 724	187 003
1991	-	?	-	186 845	210 040
1992	-	?	-	203 474	226 449
1993	-	?	-	216 700	243 576
1994	-	?	-	227 968	256 509
1995	-	?	-	237 315	268 384
1996	-	?	-	244 672	276 052
1997	-	?	-	250 055	281 413

Note — From 1369 to 1473, base 1369 = 1. From 1900 to 1997, base 1914 = 100. The two sections of the series are not linked together.

## Table 8.2 — Wages

### A — Rural and agricultural wage indices

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (a)	base 1913 = 100 (b)	base 1938 = 100 (c)	base 1948 = 100 (d)	base 1958 = 100 (e)	base 1968 = 100 (f)
1850	58.7	32				
1851	58.7	35				
1852	58.7	34				
1853	58.7	33				
1854	63.7	41				
1855	69.9	56				
1856	81.2	59				
1857	78.1	62				
1858	81.4	62				
1859	69.7	66				
1860	80.9	68				
1861	90.0	74				
1862	107.3	82				
1863	95.9	90				
1864	92.5	75				
1865	103.0	76				
1866	101.0	76				
1867	107.9	67				
1868	89.9	60				
1869	90.7	62				
1870	91.9	60				
1871	90.7	61				
1872	98.3	67				
1873	99.0	72				
1874	103.8	71				
1875	97.1	72				
1876	100.2	73				
1877	99.0	73				

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## A — Rural and agricultural wage indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (a)	base 1913 = 100 (b)	base 1938 = 100 (c)	base 1948 = 100 (d)	base 1958 = 100 (e)	base 1968 = 100 (f)
1878	99.6	75				
1879	102.3	76				
1880	105.5	74				
1881	102.4	75				
1882	105.1	73				
1883	102.2	75				
1884	105.7	77				
1885	107.3	78				
1886	107.3	79				
1887	104.8	74				
1888	104.8	73				
1889	104.8	73				
1890	104.8	70				
1891	111.2	73				
1892	117.4	78				
1893	117.4	74				
1894	117.4	73				
1895	117.4	78				
1896	116.0	70				
1897	117.4	72				
1898	164.9	79				
1899	164.9	83				
1900	164.9	91				
1901	169.7	85				
1902	173.1	81				
1903	174.7	88				
1904	171.5	84				
1905	171.5	83				
1906	171.5	86				
1907	180.0	82				

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## A — Rural and agricultural wage indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (a)	base 1913 = 100 (b)	base 1938 = 100 (c)	base 1948 = 100 (d)	base 1958 = 100 (e)	base 1968 = 100 (f)
1908	171.5	87				
1909	180.0	82				
1910	171.5	83				
1911		94				
1912		94				
1913		100				
...						
1938			100.0			
1939			97.4			
1940			100.0			
1941			109.0			
1942			134.6			
1943			164.1			
1944			188.5			
1945			197.4			
1946			233.3			
1947			261.5			
1948			253.8	100		
1949			251.3			
1950			248.7			
1951			251.3			
1952			253.8			
1953			256.4			
1954			257.7	101		
1955			257.7	101		
1956			262.8	103		
1957			267.9	104		
1958			282.1	109	100.0	
1959				115	105.4	
1960				125	114.4	

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## A — Rural and agricultural wage indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (a)	base 1913 = 100 (b)	base 1938 = 100 (c)	base 1948 = 100 (d)	base 1958 = 100 (e)	base 1968 = 100 (f)
1961				130	119.3	
1962					140.4	
1963					148.3	
1964					166.3	
1965					177.1	
1966					206.8	
1967					227.2	
1968					268.6	100.0
1969					288.0	110.8
1970					327.3	123.3
1971					375.9	139.4
1972					418.6	156.5
1973						176.5
1974						234.5
1975						291.4
1976						333.6
1977						382.8
1978						450.0
1979						546.8
1980						652.0
1981						882.2
1982						1 098.0
1983						1 285.6
1984						1 406.8

(a) Source: Justino, 1990: 24. Index is formed from a simple mathematical average of wages relating to eight types of rural and agricultural activities carried out at four different locations in the country.

(b) Source: Martins, 1997: 523. Index is formed from a simple mathematical average of male agricultural wages relating to fifteen types of agricultural tasks carried out in different regions of the country.

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

(c) Source: Relatório do Conselho de Administração do Banco de Portugal. Index is formed from a simple mathematical average of all the male rural wages published in the Monthly Bulletin of the National Statistical Institute.

(d) Source: Relatório do Conselho de Administração do Banco de Portugal. Index is formed from a weighted average of all the male rural wages published in the Boletim Mensal of the National Statistical Institute.

(e) Source: Relatório do Conselho de Administração do Banco de Portugal. Index is formed from a weighted average of all the male rural wages published in the Monthly Bulletin of the National Statistical Institute.

(f) Source: Anuário Estatístico. Index of weighted average daily wages for general agricultural workers.

### B — Urban and industrial wage indices

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (g)	base 1913 = 100 (h)	base 1938 = 100 (i)	base 1948 = 100 (j)	base 1948 = 100 (k)	base 1961 = 100 (l)	base 1968 = 100 (m)
1850	66.8	55					
1851	69.8	57					
1852	69.5	57					
1853	69.1	56					
1854	71.6	57					
1855	76.8	60					
1856	74.3	59					
1857	80.8	62					
1858	83.7	64					
1859	81.9	64					
1860	83.0	64					
1861	85.1	64					
1862	95.1	69					
1963	92.4	69					
1864	90.9	70					
1865	95.7	71					
1866	94.4	71					
1867	92.0	72					

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## B — Urban and industrial wage indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (g)	base 1913 = 100 (h)	base 1938 = 100 (i)	base 1948 = 100 (j)	base 1948 = 100 (k)	base 1961 = 100 (l)	base 1968 = 100 (m)
1868	84.3	70					
1869	83.4	68					
1870	81.5	67					
1871	82.7	69					
1872	91.1	71					
1873	91.8	76					
1874	96.8	77					
1875	97.4	80					
1876	100.4	79					
1877	102.1	82					
1878	103.4	79					
1879	102.7	74					
1880	109.2	75					
1881	105.1	75					
1882	104.8	77					
1883	112.4	86					
1884	115.3	76					
1885	117.5	88					
1886	114.3	88					
1887	111.8	86					
1888	112.6	87					
1889	110.2	84					
1890	110.8	84					
1891	110.2	84					
1892	114.4	90					
1893	107.0	81					
1894	108.6	84					
1895	113.5	90					
1896	110.5	86					
1897	112.1	88					

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## B — Urban and industrial wage indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (g)	base 1913 = 100 (h)	base 1938 = 100 (i)	base 1948 = 100 (j)	base 1948 = 100 (k)	base 1961 = 100 (l)	base 1968 = 100 (m)
1898	112.0	87					
1899	140.3	108					
1900	139.3	107					
1901	125.0	80					
1902	125.0	80					
1903	125.0	80					
1904	125.0	84					
1905	125.0	92					
1906	125.0	94					
1907	125.0	97					
1908	125.0	98					
1909	125.0	90					
1910	125.0	98					
1911	125.0	95					
1912	125.0	100					
1913		100					
...							
1938			100				
1939			100				
1940			101				
1941			104				
1942			108				
1943			121				
1944			135				
1945			152				
1946			176				
1947			195				
1948			201	100	100.0		
1949			212	106			
1950			213	105			



Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## B — Urban and industrial wage indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (g)	base 1913 = 100 (h)	base 1938 = 100 (i)	base 1948 = 100 (j)	base 1948 = 100 (k)	base 1961 = 100 (l)	base 1968 = 100 (m)
1951			214	105			
1952			214	106			
1953			216	106			
1954			219	108	110.3		
1955				110	113.1		
1956				115	117.6		
1957				121	123.5		
1958				123	125.0		
1959				126	130.1		
1960				129	132.2		
1961				135	138.0	100.0	63
1962				146	147.6	106.9	68
1963				154	155.0	112.4	71
1964				162		117.6	74
1965						124.3	79
1966						134.3	85
1967						145.7	92
1968						158.4	100
1969						176.5	111
1970						197.4	125
1971						218.6	138
1972						237.3	150
1973						270.3	170
1974						357.5	226
1975						403.3	268
1976							300
1977							336
1978							373
1979							424
1980							518

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## B — Urban and industrial wage indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (g)	base 1913 = 100 (h)	base 1938 = 100 (i)	base 1948 = 100 (j)	base 1948 = 100 (k)	base 1961 = 100 (l)	base 1968 = 100 (m)
1981							630
1982							767
1983							895

(g) Source: Justino, 1990: 24. Index is formed from a simple mathematical average of wages relating to four types of urban and industrial activities carried out at four different locations in the country.

(h) Source: Martins, 1997: 523. Index is formed from a simple mathematical average of male industrial wages relating to fourteen types of industrial tasks carried out in different regions of the country.

(i) Source: Pimenta, 1985: 215. This series is based on the weighted average of wage indices for twenty-five occupations in Lisbon, published in the Boletim Mensal of the National Statistical Institute. The annual index consists of the simple mathematical average of quarterly indices.

(j) Source: Pimenta, 1985: 216. This series is based on a weighted average of industrial wage indices in Lisbon. The annual index consists of a simple mathematical average of quarterly indices published in the Boletim Mensal of the National Statistical Institute. It expresses a partial break from the series shown in (c), since the wage indices that gave rise to this series are provided by a much broader sample than the one that was used in the construction of (c).

(k) Source: Relatório do Conselho de Administração do Banco de Portugal. Weighted index for occupations in Lisbon.

(l) Source: Relatório do Conselho de Administração do Banco de Portugal. Index for industrial and transport occupations in Lisbon.

(m) Source: Pimenta, 1985: 217-218. This index refers to wages received by industrial and transport workers in Lisbon. The annual index consists of a simple mathematical average of the quarterly indices published in the Boletim Mensal of the National Statistical Institute.

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

**C — Public works wages indices**

year	base 1867 = 100 (n)	réis (o)
1844	74	?
1845	75	?
...		
1849	73	?
1850	73	114
1851	74	132
1852	75	128
1853	76	123
1854	79	144
1855	80	171
1856	77	156
1857	90	163
1858	92	174
1859	94	165
1860	93	164
1861	99	160
1862	99	203
1863	95	190
1864	102	196
1865	104	182
1866	100	185
1867	100	173
1868	96	162
1869	93	150
1870	94	140
1871	95	150
1872	99	?
1873	106	192
1874	118	180
1875	120	192

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## C — Public works wages indices (continued)

year	base 1867 = 100 (n)	réis (o)
1876	127	200
1877	127	224
1878	128	233
1879	120	186
1880	120	204
1881	120	200
1882	120	200
1883	119	265
1884	116	293
1885	112	285
1886	121	276
1887	116	265
1888	115	272
1889	117	250
1890	118	253
1891	119	246
1892	108	300
1893	110	235
1894	111	228
1895	116	252
1896	114	235
1897	114	245
1898	117	240
1899	?	320
1900	?	316

(n) Source: Pimenta, 1983: 233-234. The index is based on the daily wage obtained from a weighted arithmetical average of the wages received by building labourers employed by the Porto Municipal Council and working on certain days throughout the year. It should be noted that in 1864 this occupational category became more restricted; some more specialist workers, such as stonemasons, were no longer included in the category of labourers after that date. For the

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

purposes of comparing these figures with those in column (b), it should be noted that the wage taken as the base corresponds to 310.3 réis.

(o) Source: Bernardes, 1981: 56. Despite their title of “workers with a hoe”, these were in fact building workers, hired by the Council for part of the year in order to carry out public works.

### D — General wages indices

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (p)	base 1914 = 100 (q)	base 1914 = 100 (r)	base 1914 = 100 (s)	base 1918 = 100 (t)	base 1938 = 100 (u)	base 1984 = 100 (v)
1850	62.8						
1851	64.3						
1852	64.1						
1853	63.9						
1854	67.6						
1855	73.4						
1856	77.8						
1857	79.7						
1858	82.6						
1859	75.8						
1860	81.9						
1861	87.6						
1862	101.2						
1863	94.2						
1864	91.7						
1865	99.4						
1866	97.7						
1867	100.0						
1868	87.1						
1869	87.1						
1870	86.7						
1871	86.7						
1872	94.7						
1873	95.4						
1874	100.3						

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## D — General wages indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (p)	base 1914 = 100 (q)	base 1914 = 100 (r)	base 1914 = 100 (s)	base 1918 = 100 (t)	base 1938 = 100 (u)	base 1984 = 100 (v)
1875	97.3						
1876	100.3						
1877	100.6						
1878	101.5						
1879	102.5						
1880	107.4						
1881	103.8						
1882	105.0						
1883	107.3						
1884	110.5						
1885	110.4						
1886	110.8						
1887	108.3						
1888	108.7						
1889	107.5						
1890	107.8						
1891	110.7						
1892	115.9						
1893	112.2						
1894	113.0						
1895	115.5						
1896	113.3						
1897	114.8						
1898	138.5						
1899	152.6						
1900	152.1						
1901	147.4						
1902	149.1						
1903	150.0						
1904	148.3						

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## D — General wages indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (p)	base 1914 = 100 (q)	base 1914 = 100 (r)	base 1914 = 100 (s)	base 1918 = 100 (t)	base 1938 = 100 (u)	base 1984 = 100 (v)
1905	148.3						
1906	148.3						
1907	152.5						
1908	148.3						
1909	152.5						
1910	148.3						
...							
1914		100	100	100			
1915			107				
1916			124				
1917			145				
1918			148		100		
1919		317	292				
1920		400	447	420			
1921		750	615	675			
1922		900	1 001	885			
1923		1 650	1 568	1 575			
1924		2 241	2 369	2 420			
1925		2 330	2 452	2 205			
1926		2 096	2 485	2 140			
1927		2 183	2 501	2 185			
1928		2 111	2 582	2 110			
1929		2 272	2 587	2 210			
1930		2 279	2 452	2 280			
1931		2 116		2 120			
1932		2 002		2 005			
1933		1 995		1 995			
1934		1 954		1 954			
...							
1938						100	

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

## D — General wages indices (continued)

year	base 1863-86 = 100 (p)	base 1914 = 100 (q)	base 1914 = 100 (r)	base 1914 = 100 (s)	base 1918 = 100 (t)	base 1938 = 100 (u)	base 1984 = 100 (v)
1939						96	
1940						99	
1941						108	
1942						135	
1943						165	
1944					896	188	
1945						201	
1946						238	
1947						262	
...							
1984							100.0
1985							119.6
1986							141.0
1987							157.2
1988							171.4
1989							188.0

(p) Source: Justino, 1990: 24. This index is formed from a simple mathematical average of rural and agricultural wage indices — part A of this table — and urban and industrial wage indices — part B of this table.

(q) Source: Pimenta, 1985: 214. There is no precise information as to how this index was constructed. It is, however, suggested that it was constructed on the basis of data from the National Statistical Institute published in the Anuário Estatístico relating to “wages in mainland Portugal for twenty-seven sectors of activity” (see op. cit., p. 10).

(r) Source: Branco, 1950: 68. There is no information available as to how this index was constructed.

(s) Source: Boletim de Previdência Social. This is an index of average wages for mainland Portugal and the archipelagos of Madeira and the Azores. It covers twenty-seven sectors of activity.

(t) Source: Alarcão, 1948: 21. Calculated on the basis of data from the survey of the living conditions of Portuguese workers carried out in 1918 with 396 families from all over mainland



Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

Portugal and the archipelagos of Madeira and the Azores by the Institute of Compulsory Social Services and General Welfare and on the basis of data from the National Statistical Institute relating to the workers of fifteen industrial sectors in 1944.

(u) Source: Valério, 1984: 102. Series bringing together data from the Reports of the Board of Directors of the Bank of Portugal. There is no precise information as to how this index was constructed.

(v) Source: Antunes, 1991: 43. This index refers to conventional wages. The sources used were the published employment contracts and the employment records

### **E — National minimum wage for industry and services**

year	escudos/month (w)
1974 (x)	3 300
1975	4 000
1976	4 000
1977	4 500
1978	5 700
1979	7 500
1980	9 000
1981	10 700
1982	10 700
1983	13 000
1984	15 600
1985	19 200
1986	22 500
1987	25 200
1988	27 200
1989 (y)	30 000
1990	35 000
1991	40 100
1992	44 500
1993	47 400
1994	49 300
1995	52 000

Table 8.2 — Wages (continued)

(w) Source: Barreto, 1996. Unless indicated otherwise, this wage remained in force for the whole calendar year.

(x) The minimum wage was only established in May 1974.

(y) After August 1989, the minimum wage was increased to 31 500\$00.

# CHAPTER 9 — PUBLIC FINANCE AND PUBLIC DEBT

EUGÉNIA MATA (Faculdade de Economia — Universidade Nova de Lisboa)

## 1 — The organisational structure

As is normal for such a period, mediaeval public finances in Portugal were characterised by the absence of any clear distinction between State finances and the sovereign's personal finances, as well as by the absence of a centralised apparatus for controlling cash flows and accounts.

The first measures taken to centralise public finance in Portugal date from the fourteenth century. These consisted of superimposing a controlling body on the various scattered services designed for collecting revenue and effecting expenditure (which at that time, in keeping with the Muslim tradition, were known as *almoxarifados*). This body, the *Casa dos Contos*, was composed of the inspectors of the exchequer. It was at the *Casa dos Contos* that, from the fifteenth century onwards, retrospective summaries began to be made (albeit at irregular intervals) of the public accounts, referred to at that time as *orçamentos* (budgets).

The law of 22 December 1761 marked a further step in the centralisation of Portuguese public finance by creating the *Erário Régio* (Royal Exchequer), a State department made responsible for the collection of all revenue, effecting expenditure and drawing up annual accounts, a process which, of course, was largely carried out by a series of tax offices spread across the national territory. After this, on 15 December 1788, the Office of the Secretary of State for Treasury Affairs was created. The aim of this latter measure was to separate the management and execution of financial flows, tasks which were entrusted to the Office of the Secretary of State, from the duties of keeping and auditing the accounts, which were entrusted to the Royal Exchequer.

With the liberal reforms, the principle of publicly disseminating public finance was to triumph, so that there were then two annual documents published summarising the State's finances: a prospective document — the budget — and a retrospective document — the account. Furthermore, in 1832, the Royal Exchequer received the new title of *Tesouro Público* (Public Treasury). This ended up being transformed into the *Tribunal de Contas* (Audit Court) in the 1840s and its duties were limited to auditing, with the actual keeping of the accounts being made the responsibility of the Office of the Secretary of State for Treasury Affairs.

This organisational structure has continued until the present, with only a few changes in the names of these services. The Office of the Secretary of State for Treasury Affairs was commonly known throughout the second half of the nineteenth century as the Ministry of the Treasury and

after 1910 as the Ministry of Finance. The Audit Court was known as the Higher Council of State Financial Administration between 1911 and 1919 and the Higher Council of Finance between 1919 and 1930, after which it returned to its traditional title.

\*

For more detailed information on the organisational structure for the management of Portuguese public finance, see, in particular, Godinho, 1978, Mata, Valério, 1978, Martins, 1988 and Franco, Paixão, 1995.

## 2 — Available quantitative data

As might be expected, there are no reliable quantitative data available on medieval Portuguese public finance. It is only possible to mention two assessments of revenue for years towards the end of the period.

For the period from the second half of the fifteenth century to the foundation of the Royal Exchequer, the already mentioned retrospective budgets were produced.

Annual accounts were produced for the period when the Royal Exchequer was in existence (1761-1832). Tomás, 1988 (for the years from 1762 to 1776) and Silveira, 1987 (for the period from 1800 to 1827) are the two main studies available in relation to this period.

For the period after the implementation of the liberal State, budgets and annual accounts should have been produced in principle. However, publication was irregular until the mid-nineteenth century. After 1851-1852, there are few gaps, but definitive accounts are missing for the years 1896-1897 to 1906-1907.

Mata, 1993 and Valério, 1994 respectively contain detailed studies on the period from the Regeneration to the First World War and the period between the two world wars. Amongst other studies, mention should also be made of Pinheiro, 1983 on the nineteenth century, Santos, 1984 and Santos, 1986 on the Wagner Law and Carreira, 1986 on the tax system.

## 3 — Public debt

The first known public debt issue in Portugal dates from the last year of the fifteenth century. There were two forms from the outset: floating debt, represented by bills of exchange,

and funded debt, represented by securities known as *padrões de juro* (bonds). The administration of this debt was carried out by the services responsible for supervising public finance.

After 1797, new types of funded public debt securities were introduced and a new service, the Board of Interest on Royal Loans, was set up to administer them. With the liberal reforms, this service came to be known as the Directorate-General of the Public Debt and administered all of the funded debt, under the supervision of a Board of Public Credit, which included representatives of the State's creditors. Meanwhile, a third type of debt was to appear, the special debt, resulting from medium and long-term loan contracts, generally administered, like the floating debt, by the Ministry of the Treasury, later the Ministry of Finance. Furthermore, the floating debt now began to include the debt resulting from short-term loan contracts and securities known as Treasury Bills. This institutional structure continued until 1997. Then, an Institute of Management of Public Credit was created to administer all public debt.

As far as quantitative data are concerned, the situation is much more difficult in the case of public debt than it is for public finance. There are only official summaries of the public debt as from the end of the 1920s. In the studies by [Mata, 1993](#) and [Valério, 1994](#), to which we have already referred, there are reconstructions and retrospective analyses that go back to the mid-nineteenth century. For further details about the foreign public debt, [Mata, 1986](#) can be consulted on the period from the civil war of 1832-1834 to the Regeneration, [Valério, 1988](#) on the period from 1890 to 1950 and [Mata, Valério, 1990](#) for a general synthesis from the 1830s to the 1980s.

## Note on economic years

Under the terms of the law of 22 December 1761, which created the Royal Exchequer, the economic years from 1762 to 1834 began on 10 January of each civil year and ended on 9 January of the following civil year. It should be noted that the accounting system of the Royal Exchequer of the absolutist government of King Miguel I continued to be organised in accordance with the law of 22 December 1761 until the disappearance of this government in May 1834.

Under the terms of the decree with the force of law no. 22, issued on 16 May 1832 by the constitutional regency, which replaced the Royal Exchequer with the Public Treasury, the economic years from 1834-1835 to 1933-1934 began on 1 July of each civil year and ended on 30 June of the following civil year. For the purposes of transition, the economic year of 1832 coincided with the period when the constitutional regency remained in Angra, the economic year of 1832-1833 coincided with the period when the constitutional regency remained in Oporto and the economic year of 1833-1834 began with the establishment of the constitutional regency in Lisbon.

Under the terms of Decree-Law no. 25 299, of 6 May 1935, the economic years from 1936 onwards coincided with the civil years. For the purposes of transition, the economic year of 1934-1935 began on 1 January 1934 and ended on 31 December 1935, under the terms of the same decree-law.

## References

CARREIRA, Henrique Medina — A fiscalidade em Portugal: aspectos sociais, económicos e financeiros. Análise Social, no. 90, 1986.

FRANCO, António Sousa; PAIXÃO, Judite Cavaleiro — Magistrados, dirigentes e contadores do Tribunal de Contas e instituições que o precederam. Lisboa: Tribunal de Contas, 1995.

GODINHO, Vitorino Magalhães Godinho — Finanças públicas e estrutura do Estado. In Serrão, Joel (organizador) — Dicionário de História de Portugal — volume III. (2nd edition) Lisboa: Iniciativas Editoriais, 1979.

MARTINS, Guilherme d'Oliveira — O Ministério das Finanças: subsídios para a sua história no bicentenário da criação da Secretaria de Estado dos Negócios da Fazenda. Lisboa: Ministério das Finanças, 1988.

MATA, Maria Eugénia — A dívida pública externa fundada de Portugal da Guerra Civil à Regeneração. Revista de História Económica e Social, no. 3, 1986.

MATA, Maria Eugénia — As finanças públicas portuguesas da Regeneração à Primeira Guerra Mundial. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1993.

MATA, Eugénia; VALÉRIO, Nuno — Normas de direito financeiro nas constituições portuguesas. Revista de História Económica e Social, no. 3, 1979.

MATA, Eugénia; VALÉRIO, Nuno — Foreign public debt and economic growth in Portugal 1830-1986. Estudos de Economia, volume XI, no. 4, 1991.

PINHEIRO, Magda — Reflexões sobre a história das finanças públicas portuguesas no século XIX. Ler História, no. 1, 1983.

SANTOS, Albano — A evolução das despesas públicas em Portugal — aspectos de longo prazo. Estudos de Economia, volume IV, no. 4, 1984.

SANTOS, Albano — A lei de Wagner e a realidade das despesas públicas. Estudos de Economia, volume VI, no. 2, 1986.

SILVEIRA, Luís Espinha da — Aspectos da evolução das finanças públicas portuguesas (1800-1827). Análise Social, no. 97, 1987.

TOMÁS, Fernando — As finanças do Estado Pombalino 1762-1776. In Estudos e ensaios em homenagem a Vitorino Magalhães Godinho. Lisboa: Sá da Costa Editora, 1988.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — A dívida pública externa de Portugal 1890-1950. Estudos de Economia, volume IX, no. 1, 1988.

VALÉRIO, Nuno — As finanças públicas portuguesas entre as duas guerras mundiais. Lisboa, Cosmos, 1994.

## Tables

9.1 — Public revenue assessments and budgets, fourteenth to eighteenth centuries

9.2 — Public revenue and expenditure, 1762-1833

9.3 — Summary of public accounts, 1833-1998

9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998

9.5 — Functional composition of public expenditure, 1851-1998

9.6 — Tax revenue, 1833-1998

9.7 — Public debt, 1851-1998

## Table 9.1 — Public revenue assessments and budgets, fourteenth to eighteenth centuries.

Source — Godinho, 1978.

### A — Assessments of public revenue

year	million pounds	equivalent amount in thousand escudos
1367	1	0.028 5
1402	7.5	0.212

### B — Public revenue according to retrospective budgets before the creation of the Royal Exchequer

year	thousand escudos
1477	43
1506	200
1518-1519	309
1588	1 111
1607	1 440
1619	1 556
1681	1 665
1716	3 792



## Table 9.2 — Public revenue and expenditure, 1762-1833

Source — Tomás, 1988 and Silveira, 1987.

Unit — Thousand escudos.

year	revenue	expenditure
1762	3 745	3 435
1763	5 881	4 624
1764	5 917	5 003
1765	5 667	5 308
1766	6 783	6 096
1767	5 760	5 214
1768	6 295	5 747
1769	5 884	5 327
1770	5 731	5 408
1771	5 237	4 990
1772	5 278	4 977
1773	5 220	4 928
1774	5 829	5 195
1775	5 883	5 409
1776	6 684	6 047
...		
1800	10 627	11 967
1801	9 859	13 011
1802	9 511	10 082
...		
1812	8 121	8 018
...		
1817	10 436	11 533
...		
1821	6 820	7 038
...		
1827	6 660	8 996

## Table 9.3 — Summary of public accounts, 1833-1998

Source — From 1833-1834 to 1882-1883, Conta da Receita e Despesa do Tesouro Público; from 1883-1884 to 1919-1920, Conta Geral da Administração Financeira do Estado; from 1920-1921 onwards, Conta Geral do Estado. As from 1964, the values are as presented by the source itself. For the years until 1963, the values are constructed from the source using the same criteria.

Unit — Million escudos.

Remarks:

1 — The account for 1833-1834 only refers to the flows relating to the constitutional government of Lisbon, and therefore excludes the flows relating to the absolutist government of Santarém.

2 — This table shows how the effective expenditure of the Portuguese State was financed by:

- a) Tax revenue.
- b) Other effective (non-tax) income — basically income from property and enterprise, duties, refunds not deducted from payments and the sale of national assets.
- c) Recourse to public debt — which is symmetrical with the effective balance shown for each year.

3 — The effective expenditure shown in this table is related to the total expenditure shown in Table 9.4 (and in Table 9.5 as from 1883-1884) through the following equation:

effective expenditure = total expenditure - amortisations of the public debt - interest on fictitious debt

The tax revenue shown in this table corresponds to the total tax revenue shown in Table 9.6.

The recourse to public debt shown in this table does not correspond to the variations in the public debt implicit in Table 9.7, due to profits and losses of a financial nature made on operations relating to the public debt and the alterations of the value of certain segments of the public debt (for example, the segments of the public debt expressed in foreign currency units, due to exchange rate fluctuations).

Table 9.3 — Summary of public accounts, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	effective expenditure	tax revenue	other effective income	balance of public accounts
1833-1834	10	3	3	- 4
1834-1835	14	6	2	- 6
1835-1836	12	7	1	- 5
1836-1837	10	6	3	- 1
1837-1838	8	6	1	- 1
1838-1839	7	7	+ 0	+ 0
1839-1840	8	7	+ 0	- 1
1840-1841	8	6	1	- 2
1841-1842	14	7	2	- 5
1842-1843	14	7	1	- 6
1843-1844	12	8	2	- 2
1844-1845	11	8	1	- 2
...				
1851-1852	10	9	1	+ 0
1852-1853	13	10	1	- 2
1853-1854	11	9	1	- 0
1854-1855	13	10	1	- 3
1855-1856	13	10	1	- 2
1856-1857	14	10	1	- 3
1857-1858	17	10	3	- 5
1858-1859	17	11	2	- 5
1859-1860	15	10	1	- 3
1860-1861	15	11	1	- 3
1861-1862	20	12	1	- 7
1862-1863	21	13	1	- 7
1863-1864	20	13	2	- 5
1864-1865	20	15	2	- 3
1865-1866	20	13	2	- 5
1866-1867	22	13	2	- 7
1867-1868	29	14	2	- 13
1868-1869	20	14	2	- 5
1869-1870	31	15	2	- 15

Table 9.3 — Summary of public accounts, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	effective expenditure	tax revenue	other effective income	balance of public accounts
1870-1871	21	15	2	- 4
1871-1872	24	16	2	- 6
1872-1873	23	17	3	- 3
1873-1874	27	19	4	- 4
1874-1875	29	20	3	- 5
1875-1876	31	21	4	- 6
1876-1877	36	21	5	- 10
1877-1878	34	22	4	- 8
1878-1879	34	24	3	- 7
1879-1880	31	20	3	- 8
1880-1881	33	22	3	- 8
1881-1882	36	25	4	- 7
1882-1883	33	23	4	- 6
1883-1884	34	25	4	- 5
1884-1885	39	26	4	- 8
1885-1886	40	27	4	- 9
1886-1887	40	29	5	- 7
1887-1888	43	32	5	- 7
1888-1889	49	32	6	- 12
1889-1890	52	32	6	- 14
1890-1891	49	33	6	- 11
1891-1892	53	32	5	- 15
1892-1893	46	35	5	- 5
1893-1894	44	39	5	+ 0
1894-1895	45	38	5	- 1
1895-1896	48	43	7	+ 2
1896-1897	54	40	7	- 7
1897-1898	54	40	7	- 7
1898-1899	52	41	7	- 4
1899-1900	57	44	5	- 7
1900-1901	51	45	7	+ 1
1901-1902	52	43	6	- 3

Table 9.3 — Summary of public accounts, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	effective expenditure	tax revenue	other effective income	balance of public accounts
1902-1903	54	45	6	- 3
1903-1904	55	47	6	- 2
1904-1905	55	48	8	+ 0
1905-1906	57	48	8	- 0
1906-1907	57	47	8	- 1
1907-1908	70	50	17	- 4
1908-1909	68	50	15	- 2
1909-1910	69	51	18	- 1
1910-1911	63	50	15	+ 2
1911-1912	64	51	10	- 3
1912-1913	76	56	23	+ 4
1913-1914	62	53	16	+ 7
1914-1915	95	46	22	- 27
1915-1916	134	47	39	- 48
1916-1917	144	50	39	- 56
1917-1918	179	49	43	- 87
1918-1919	271	64	37	- 170
1919-1920	347	88	71	- 188
1920-1921	418	131	88	- 199
1921-1922	550	173	147	- 230
1922-1923	1 187	321	216	- 649
1923-1924	1 171	555	215	- 401
1924-1925	1 428	734	428	- 266
1925-1926	1 508	815	284	- 409
1926-1927	1 821	907	280	- 634
1927-1928	1 667	1 069	442	- 155
1928-1929	1 757	1 444	604	+ 291
1929-1930	1 862	1 549	396	+ 83
1930-1931	1 730	1 439	481	+ 190
1931-1932	1 845	1 482	412	+ 49
1932-1933	1 931	1 497	423	- 11
1933-1934	1 973	1 548	435	+ 10

Table 9.3 — Summary of public accounts, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	effective expenditure	tax revenue	other effective income	balance of public accounts
1934-1935	2 879	2 426	610	+ 157
1936	1 984	1 612	401	+ 29
1937	2 035	1 663	475	+ 104
1938	2 257	1 752	498	- 7
1939	2 357	1 684	485	- 188
1940	2 382	1 727	491	- 164
1941	2 786	1 911	532	- 343
1942	2 928	2 364	603	+ 39
1943	3 619	2 453	806	- 359
1944	3 456	2 526	847	- 83
1945	3 835	2 570	763	- 502
1946	4 394	2 968	932	- 494
1947	5 621	3 386	918	- 1 317
1948	5 631	3 494	939	- 1 198
1949	5 581	3 687	1 003	- 891
1950	5 024	3 842	983	- 198
1951	5 493	4 280	1 280	+ 67
1952	5 701	4 548	1 332	+ 179
1953	6 238	4 539	1 722	+ 23
1954	6 520	4 777	1 594	- 149
1955	7 156	5 134	1 716	- 306
1956	7 389	5 465	1 897	- 27
1957	8 009	5 790	2 238	+ 19
1958	8 453	6 256	2 221	+ 24
1959	9 494	6 637	2 264	- 593
1960	11 057	7 269	2 426	- 1 362
1961	13 158	8 247	2 694	- 2 217
1962	14 542	8 680	3 406	- 2 456
1963	15 355	9 428	3 124	- 2 803
1964	16 789	9 750	3 922	- 3 117
1965	17 241	11 527	4 469	- 1 245
1966	18 647	12 631	5 109	- 907

Table 9.3 — Summary of public accounts, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	effective expenditure	tax revenue	other effective income	balance of public accounts
1967	21 982	14 928	5 848	- 1 206
1968	24 051	16 409	6 259	- 1 383
1969	26 842	18 873	6 897	- 1 072
1970	30 811	23 011	8 097	+ 297
1971	35 651	24 798	9 033	- 1 820
1972	39 756	29 658	8 689	- 1 409
1973	47 609	35 498	9 684	- 2 427
1974	61 865	42 878	9 295	- 9 692
1975	84 850	48 235	10 161	- 26 454
1976	122 387	65 884	11 800	- 44 703
1977	155 582	91 297	18 607	- 45 678
1978	210 548	110 655	23 055	- 76 838
1979	273 312	139 896	30 624	- 102 792
1980	364 740	192 868	46 195	- 125 677
1981	481 708	257 171	73 287	- 151 250
1982	582 141	323 628	78 986	- 179 527
1983	737 019	434 492	120 050	- 182 477
1984	913 647	511 125	144 980	- 257 542
1985	1 202 886	629 366	149 748	- 423 772
1986	1 456 744	760 617	241 775	- 454 352
1987	1 637 359	1 008 140	204 061	- 425 158
1988	1 911 442	1 313 692	176 013	- 421 737
1989	2 296 570	1 621 140	321 367	- 354 063
1990	2 836 654	1 891 002	443 524	- 502 128
1991	3 356 655	2 295 918	479 643	- 581 094
1992	4 124 947	2 845 346	750 794	- 528 807
1993	4 218 861	2 786 209	507 033	- 925 619
1994	4 465 535	3 160 372	496 339	- 808 824
1995	4 865 022	3 396 930	719 547	- 748 545
1996	5 247 879	3 651 423	890 293	- 706 163
1997	5 933 355	3 992 462	1 461 024	- 489 869
1998	5 918 724	4 397 031	1 133 610	- 388 083

## Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998

Source — From 1836-1837 to 1882-1883, Conta da Receita e Despesa do Tesouro Público; from 1883-1884 to 1919-1920, Conta Geral da Administração Financeira do Estado; from 1920-1921 onwards, Conta Geral do Estado. From 1915-1916 to 1936, the values presented by the source were corrected as explained in Valério, 1994.

Unit — Million escudos.

Remarks:

1 — The account for 1833-1834 only refers to the flows relating to the constitutional government of Lisbon, and therefore excludes the flows relating to the absolutist government of Santarém.

2 — In organising the series of the composition of public expenditure by ministries, an attempt was made to maintain the continuity of the organisation of the services, regardless of the changes in the name of the ministries. The names attributed to the items are, generally speaking, the more modern or longer lasting names of the ministry.

The total expenditure shown in this table is related to the effective expenditure shown in Table 9.3, through the following equation:

total expenditure = effective expenditure + amortisations of the public debt + interest on fictitious debt

The total expenditure shown in this table coincides with the total expenditure shown in Table 9.5, as from the economic year of 1883-1884. Until the economic year of 1882-1883, the total expenditure shown in this table corresponds to the values shown in the Conta da Receita e Despesa do Tesouro Público and the total expenditure shown in Table 9.5 corresponds to the values shown in the ministries' accounts. These values may not coincide due to imperfections in the accounting systems.

3 — The following observations are intended to summarise the changes that have occurred in the names of the ministries.



Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

### Finance

The Office of the Secretary of State for Treasury Affairs was created by the royal charter of 15 December 1788. It began to be commonly known as the Ministry of the Treasury during the second half of the nineteenth century and received the name of the Ministry of Finance through the decree with the force of law of 8 October 1910.

The Ministry of Finance and the Ministry of the Economy were joined together under the name of the Ministry of Economic Co-ordination by Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974 and separated once more by Decree-Law no. 337/74 of 17 July 1974. The Ministry of Finance and the Ministry of Planning and Economic Coordination were joined together under the name of the Ministry of Finance by Decree-Law no. 507/75 of 19 September 1975 and separated by Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976. The Ministry of Finance and the Ministry of Economic Coordination and the Plan were joined together under the name of the Ministry of Finance and the Plan by Decree-Law no. 15/78 of 30 January 1978, separated by Decree-Law no. 77/79 of 31 July 1979, joined together again under the same name by Decree-Law no. 4/80 of 3 January 1980 and separated once again by Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985.

In addition to the expenditure of the ministries that have just been mentioned, the expenditure attributed to the item 'Finance' includes: public debt servicing costs (up to 1957); general expenditure (up to 1853-1854 and between 1883-1884 and 1957); extraordinary expenditure not classified by ministries (up to 1857-1858); expenditure incurred with the Special Amortisation Fund (in 1851-1852 and 1852-1853); expenditure incurred with the amortisation of the bills of the Bank of Lisbon (between 1851-1852 and 1878-1879); expenditure incurred with the autonomous services not classified by ministries (more precisely with the *Caixa Geral de Depósitos e Económica Portuguesa* (Portuguese Savings Bank) between 1884-1885 and 1917-1918); expenditure incurred with exchange-rate differences (between 1891-1892 and 1910-1911); public debt servicing charges under the responsibility of the Treasury (between 1906-1907 and 1910-1911); exceptional expenditure resulting from the war and not classified by ministries (between 1922-1923 and 1926-1927) and general State expenditure (as from 1958).

### Interior

The Office of the Secretary of State for Affairs of the Realm was created by the royal charter of 28 July 1736. It began to be commonly known as the Ministry of the Realm during the second half of the nineteenth century and received the names of the Ministry of the Interior through the decree with the force of law of 8 October 1910 and the Ministry of Internal Administration through Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974.

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

The following ministries were separated from this ministry: the Ministry of Justice in 1821; the Ministry of Public Works in 1852; the Ministry of Education, for brief periods in 1870 and between 1890 and 1892 and definitively as from 1913; and the Ministry of Health in 1958.

A significant part of the services of this ministry were transferred to the Ministry of the Plan and Territorial Administration in 1985.

#### Justice

The Office of the Secretary of State for Ecclesiastical Affairs and Justice was created by the law of 23 August 1821. It began to be commonly known as the Ministry of Ecclesiastical Affairs and Justice during the second half of the nineteenth century and received the names of the Ministry of Justice through the decree with the force of law of 8 October 1910, the Ministry of Justice and Cults through the decree with the force of law no. 1 105 of 26 November 1914 and once again the Ministry of Justice through Decree-Law no. 22 708 of 20 June 1933.

#### Army

The Office of the Secretary of State for War Affairs was separated by the decree of 23 September 1823 from the Office of the Secretary of State for Foreign and War Affairs, which had been created by the royal charter of 28 July 1736. It began to be commonly known as the Ministry of War during the second half of the nineteenth century and received the name of the Ministry of the Army through Decree-Law no. 37 930 of 2 August 1951. This Ministry was abolished by Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974, with its duties being performed by the General Staff of the Army until the creation of the Ministry of Defence through Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976.

#### Navy

The Office of the Secretary of State for Naval and Overseas Affairs was created by the royal charter of 28 July 1736. It began to be commonly known as the Ministry of Naval and Overseas Affairs during the second half of the nineteenth century and received the names of the Ministry of the Navy and Colonies through the decree with the force of law of 8 October 1910 and the Ministry of the Navy, when it was separated from the Ministry of the Colonies through the decree with the force of law of 23 August 1911. This Ministry was abolished by Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974, with its duties being performed by the General Staff of the Navy until the creation of the Ministry of Defence through Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976.

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

It should also be noted that, between 1883-1884 and 1910-1911, only the expenditure of the Directorate-General of the Navy of the Ministry of Naval and Overseas Affairs, later known as the Ministry of the Navy and Colonies, is attributed to the item "Navy".

#### Foreign Affairs

The Office of the Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs was separated by the decree of 23 September 1823 from the Office of the Secretary of State for Foreign and War Affairs, which had been created by the royal charter of 28 July 1736. It began to be commonly known as the Ministry of Foreign Affairs during the second half of the nineteenth century.

#### Public Works

The Ministry of Public Works, Trade and Industry was created by the decree with the force of law of 30 August 1852. It received the name of the Ministry of Development through the decree with the force of law of 8 October 1910, and was transformed into the Ministry of Trade, Communications and Public Works (or in abbreviated form the Ministry of Trade) through the decree with the force of law no. 3 511 of 5 November 1917, the Ministry of Trade through the decree with the force of law no. 3 902 of 9 March 1918, the Ministry of Public Works and Communications through the decree with the force of law no. 21 454 of 24 July 1932, the Ministry of Public Works through Decree-Law no. 36 061 of 27 December 1946, the Ministry of Social Equipment and the Environment through Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974, the Ministry of Social Equipment through Decree-Law no. 158-A/75 of 26 March 1975, the Ministry of Public Works through Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976, the Ministry of Housing and Public Works through Decree-Law no. 15/78 of 30 January 1978, the Ministry of Housing, Public Works and Transport through Decree-Law no. 113/81 of 4 September 1981, the Ministry of Social Equipment through Decree-Law no. 15/83 of 9 June 1983, the Ministry of Public Works, Transport and Communications through Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985 and the Ministry of Social Equipment through Decree-Law no. 296-A/95 of 17 November 1996. The Ministry of Social Equipment and the Ministry of Planning and Territorial Administration were joined together into the Ministry of Equipment, Planning and Territorial Administration through Decree-Law 23/96 of 20 March 1996 and separated again by Decree-Law 474-A/99 of 8 November 1999.

The following ministries were separated from this ministry: the Ministry of Labour, between 1916 and 1925; the Ministry of Agriculture in 1918; the Ministry of Transport in 1918, between 1918 and 1919, between 1946 and 1974 and between 1975 and 1981; the Ministry of Trade and Industry in 1932; and the Ministry of Housing between 1976 and 1978.

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

### Education

The Ministry of Public Instruction and Fine Arts was created by the decree with the force of law of 22 June 1870, abolished by the law of 27 December 1870, created once more by the decree with the force of law of 5 April 1890 and abolished once more by the decree with the force of law of 3 March 1892.

The Ministry of Public Instruction was created by Law no. 12 of 7 July 1913 and received the names of the Ministry of National Education through Law no. 1 941 of 11 April 1936, the Ministry of Education and Culture through Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974, the Ministry of Education and Scientific Research through Decree no. 507/75 of 19 September 1975, the Ministry of Education and Culture through Decree-Law no. 15/78 of 30 January 1978, the Ministry of Education and Scientific Research through Decree-Law no. 138/78 of 22 November 1978, the Ministry of Education through Decree-Law no. 77/79 of 31 July 1979, the Ministry of Education and Science through Decree-Law no. 4/80 of 3 January 1980, the Ministry of Education and Universities through Decree-Law no. 113/81 of 4 September 1981, the Ministry of Education and Culture through Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985 and the Ministry of Education through Decree-Law no. 27/87 of 17 August 1987.

### Overseas Affairs

The Ministry of the Colonies was separated by the decree with the force of law of 23 August 1911 from the Ministry of the Navy and Colonies and received the names of the Ministry of Overseas Affairs through Decree-Law no. 38 300 of 15 June 1951 and the Ministry of Interterritorial Coordination through Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974. This ministry was abolished by Decree-Law no. 417/75 of 8 August 1975.

The Ministry of Cooperation was created by Decree-Law no. 532-A/75 of 25 September 1975 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976.

In addition to the expenditure of the ministries that have just been mentioned, the expenditure attributed to the item "Overseas Affairs" includes the expenditure of the Directorate-General of Overseas Affairs of the Ministry of Naval and Overseas Affairs and the Directorate-General of the Colonies of the Ministry of the Navy and Colonies between 1883-1884 and 1910-1911.

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

### Labour

The Ministry of Labour and Social Welfare was created by Law no. 494 of 16 March 1916, was transformed into the Ministry of Agriculture, Industry, Labour and Social Welfare (or in abbreviated form the Ministry of Labour) through the decree with the force of law no. 3 511 of 5 November 1917 and the Ministry of Labour through the decree with the force of law no. 3 902 of 9 March 1918, and was abolished through the decree with the force of law no. 11 267 of 25 November 1925.

The Ministry of Corporations and Social Welfare was created by Decree-Law no. 37 909 of 1 August 1950 and received the names of Ministry of Labour through Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974, the Ministry of Labour and Social Security through Decree-Law no. 15/83 of 9 June 1983, the Ministry of Employment and Social Security through Decree-Law no. 27/87 of 17 August 1987, the Ministry of Solidarity and Social Security through Decree-Law no. 296-A/95 of 17 November 1995, and the Ministry of Labour and Solidarity through Decree-Law 55/98 of 16 March 1998.

### Agriculture

The Ministry of Agriculture was created by the decree with the force of law no. 3 902 of 9 March 1918, abolished by the decree with the force of law no. 21 454 of 24 July 1932, created once more by Decree-Law no. 22 873 of 24 July 1933 and abolished once more by Decree-Law no. 30 692 of 27 August 1940.

The Ministry of Agriculture and Fisheries was created by Decree-Law no. 158-A/75 of 26 March 1975. The Ministry of Agriculture and Fisheries and the Ministry of Trade were joined together to form the Ministry of Agriculture, Trade and Fisheries by Decree-Law no. 113/81 of 4 September 1981 and separated by Decree-Law no. 15/83 of 9 June 1983. The same Decree-Law no. 15/83 of 9 June 1983 gave the Ministry of Agriculture and Fisheries the name of the Ministry of Agriculture, Forests and Food, which was changed by Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985 to the Ministry of Agriculture, Fisheries and Food, by Decree-Law no. 451/91 of 4 December 1991 to the Ministry of Agriculture and by Decree-Law 296-A/96 of 17 November 1996 to the Ministry of Agriculture, Rural Development and Fisheries.

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

### Transport

The Ministry of Subsistences and Transport was created by the decree with the force of law no. 3 902 of 9 March 1918 and abolished by the decree with the force of law no. 4 639 of 14 July 1918.

The Ministry of Supply and Transport was created by the decree with the force of law no. 4 879 of 10 October 1918 and abolished by Law no. 882 of 17 September 1919.

The Ministry of Communications was created by Decree-Law no. 36 061 of 27 December 1946 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974.

The Ministry of Transport and Communications was created by Decree-Law no. 158-A/75 of 26 March 1975 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 113/81 of 4 September 1981.

### Economy

The Ministry of Trade, Industry and Agriculture was created by the decree with the force of law no. 21 454 of 24 July 1932 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 22 873 of 24 July 1933.

The Ministry of the Economy was created by Decree-Law no. 30 692 of 27 August 1940 and received the names of the Ministry of Planning and Economic Coordination through Decree-Law no. 158-A/75 of 26 March 1975, the Ministry of the Plan and Economic Coordination through Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976, the Ministry of Economic Coordination and the Plan through Decree-Law no. 77/79 of 31 July 1979, the Ministry of the Plan and Territorial Administration through Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985, the Ministry of Planning and Territorial Administration through Decree-Law no. 296-A/95 of 17 November 1995, and the Ministry of Planning by Decree-Law 474-A/99 of 8 November 1999.

The Ministry of Finance and the Ministry of the Economy were joined together under the name of the Ministry of Economic Co-ordination by Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974 and separated once more by Decree-Law no. 337/74 of 17 July 1974. The Ministry of Finance and the Ministry of Planning and Economic Coordination were joined together under the name of the Ministry of Finance by Decree-Law no. 507/75 of 19 September 1975 and separated by Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976. The Ministry of Finance and the Ministry of Economic Coordination and the Plan were joined together under the name of the Ministry of Finance and the Plan by Decree-Law no. 15/78 of 30 January 1978, separated by Decree-Law no. 77/79 of 31 July 1979, joined together again under the same name by Decree-Law no. 4/80 of 3 January 1980 and separated once again by Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985. The Ministry of Planning and Territorial Administration was joined with the Ministry of Social Equipment in the Ministry of Equipment, Planning and Territorial Administration through Decree-Law no. 23/96 of 20

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

March 1996. The Ministry of Planning was separated from the Ministry of Equipment, Planning and Territorial Administration by Decree-Law 474-A/99 of 8 November 1999.

### Trade

The Ministry of Trade and Industry was created by Decree-Law no. 22 873 of 24 July 1933 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 30 692 of 27 August 1940.

The Ministry of Internal Trade was created by Decree-Law no. 417/75 of 8 August 1975 and received the name of the Ministry of Trade and Tourism through Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976.

The Ministry of Trade and Tourism was joined with the Ministry of Agriculture between 1981 and 1983 and with the Ministry of Industry between 1985 and 1987 and once again after 1995.

### Health

The Ministry of Health and Welfare was created by Decree-Law no. 41 828 of 14 August 1958 and received the names of the Ministry of Social Affairs through Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974 and the Ministry of Health through Decree-Law no. 15/83 of 9 July 1983.

### Defence

The Ministry of Defence was created by Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976 (previously there had existed the position of Minister of National Defence, created by Decree-Law no. 37 930 of 2 August 1950 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 498-D/74 of 30 September 1974, which entrusted the respective duties to the Chief of the General Staff of the Armed Forces, but not a Minister of National Defence). It received the name of the Ministry of National Defence through Decree-Law 296-A/95 of 17 November 1995.

Since 1975, the expenditure of what was to become the Ministry of Defence had been joined together in one item under the heading of "Defence". This expenditure had been included until then under the heading of general expenditure and thereafter under general State expenditure, in the case of the expenditure of the General Staff of the Armed Forces and the Air Force, and under the previous Ministries of the Army and the Navy, in the case of the respective branches of the armed forces.

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

#### Social Communication

The Ministry of Social Communication was created by Decree-Law no. 205/74 of 15 May 1974, abolished by Decree-Law no. 498-D/74 of 30 September 1974, created once more by Decree-Law no. 507/75 of 19 September 1975, abolished once more by Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976, created once more by Decree-Law no. 77/79 of 31 July 1979 and abolished once more by Decree-Law no. 4/80 of 3 January 1980.

#### Industry

The Ministry of Industry and Technology was created by Decree-Law no. 158-A/75 of 26 March 1975 and received the names of the Ministry of Industry through Decree-Law no. 77/79 of 31 July 1979, the Ministry of Industry and Energy through Decree-Law no. 4/80 of 3 January 1980, the Ministry of Industry, Energy and Exports through Decree-Law no. 113/81 of 4 September 1981 and the Ministry of Industry and Energy through Decree-Law no. 15/83 of 9 June 1983.

The Ministry of Industry and Energy and the Ministry of Trade and Tourism were joined together under the name of the Ministry of Industry and Trade by Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985, separated by Decree-Law no. 27/87 of 17 August 1987 and joined together once more under the name of the Ministry of the Economy by Decree-Law 296-A/95 of 17 November 1995.

#### Foreign Trade

The Ministry of Foreign Trade was created by Decree-Law no. 158-A/75 of 26 March 1975 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976.

#### Housing

The Ministry of Housing, Town Planning and Building was created by Decree-Law no. 603-B/76 of 23 July 1976 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 15/78 of 30 January 1978.



Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

#### Administrative Reform

The Ministry of Administrative Reform was created by Decree-Law no. 15/78 of 30 January 1978, abolished by Decree-Law no. 86/78 of 29 August 1978, created once more by Decree-Law no. 24/81 of 9 January 1981 and abolished once more by Decree-Law no. 15/83 of 9 June 1983.

#### Environment

The Ministry of the Quality of Life was created by Decree-Law no. 24/81 of 9 January 1981 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985.

The Ministry of the Environment and Natural Resources was created by Decree-Law no. 3/90 of 5 January 1990 and received the name of the Ministry of the Environment through Decree-Law 296-A/95 of 17 November 1995 and the Ministry of the Environment and Territory Planning by Decree-Law 474-A/99 of 8 November 1999.

#### European Integration

The Ministry of European Integration was created by Decree-Law no. 24/81 of 9 January 1981 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 113/81 of 4 September 1981.

#### Culture

The Ministry of Culture and Science was created by Decree-Law no. 77/79 of 31 July 1979 and abolished by Decree-Law no. 4/80 of 3 January 1980.

The Ministry of Culture and Scientific Coordination was created by Decree-Law no. 113/81 of 4 September 1981, received the name of the Ministry of Culture through Decree-Law no. 15/83 of 9 June 1983, was abolished by Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985 and was created once more by Decree-Law 296-A/95 of 17 November 1995.

#### Sea

The Ministry of the Sea was created by Decree-Law no. 15/83 of 9 June 1983, abolished by Decree-Law no. 54/85 of 6 November 1985, created once more by Decree-Law no. 451/91 of 4 December 1991 and abolished once more by Presidential Decree no. 80-C/95 of 28 October 1995.

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

Employment

The Ministry of Qualification and Employment was created through Decree-Law 296-A/95 of 17 November 1995 and abolished through Decree-Law 55/98 of 16 March 1998.

Science

The Ministry of Science and Technology was created through Decree-Law 296-A/95 of 17 November 1995.

year	expend- iture	Finance	Interior	Justice	Army	Navy	Foreign Affairs
1833-1834	10	3	+ 0	+ 0	5	1	+ 0
1834-1835	14	5	1	+ 0	6	2	+ 0
1835-1836	12	5	1	+ 0	4	1	+ 0
1836-1837	10	5	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1837-1838	8	4	1	+ 0	2	1	+ 0
1838-1839	7	3	1	+ 0	2	1	+ 0
1839-1840	8	2	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1840-1841	9	4	1	+ 0	2	1	+ 0
1841-1842	14	7	1	1	4	1	+ 0
1842-1843	14	9	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1843-1844	12	6	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1844-1845	11	6	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
...							
1851-1852	11	5	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1852-1853	13	6	1	1	3	1	+ 0
1853-1854	11	5	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1854-1855	14	6	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1855-1856	13	6	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1856-1857	15	5	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1857-1858	18	9	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1858-1859	18	9	1	+ 0	3	2	+ 0
1859-1860	16	7	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Finance	Interior	Justice	Army	Navy	Foreign Affairs
1860-1861	16	7	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1861-1862	21	8	1	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1862-1863	22	9	1	1	3	1	+ 0
1863-1864	22	10	1	1	3	2	+ 0
1864-1865	21	10	2	1	3	2	+ 0
1865-1866	21	10	2	1	3	2	+ 0
1866-1867	23	11	2	1	4	2	+ 0
1867-1868	30	18	2	1	4	2	+ 0
1868-1869	21	11	2	1	4	2	+ 0
1869-1870	33	14	2	1	3	2	+ 0
1870-1871	22	12	1	1	3	1	+ 0
1871-1872	25	15	2	1	3	2	+ 0
1872-1873	25	14	2	1	4	1	+ 0
1873-1874	29	15	2	1	5	1	+ 0
1874-1875	29	14	2	1	5	2	+ 0
1875-1876	31	14	2	1	5	2	+ 0
1876-1877	37	19	2	1	4	3	+ 0
1877-1878	34	16	2	1	5	2	+ 0
1878-1879	34	16	2	1	5	3	+ 0
1879-1880	32	17	2	1	5	3	+ 0
1880-1881	34	18	2	1	5	2	+ 0
1881-1882	36	20	2	1	5	2	+ 0
1882-1883	35	19	2	1	4	2	+ 0
1883-1884	35	19	2	1	5	2	+ 0
1884-1885	40	22	2	1	6	2	+ 0
1885-1886	41	21	2	1	7	2	+ 0
1886-1887	42	23	2	1	6	2	+ 0
1887-1888	45	25	2	1	6	2	+ 0
1888-1889	51	30	2	1	5	2	+ 0
1889-1890	54	28	2	1	6	2	+ 0
1890-1891	51	27	1	1	6	2	+ 0
1891-1892	55	30	2	1	6	3	1

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Finance	Interior	Justice	Army	Navy	Foreign Affairs
1892-1893	48	27	2	1	6	3	1
1893-1894	46	27	2	1	6	3	+ 0
1894-1895	49	28	2	1	6	3	+ 0
1895-1896	55	29	2	1	6	3	+ 0
1896-1897	58	31	3	1	7	4	+ 0
1897-1898	58	31	3	1	7	5	+ 0
1898-1899	56	32	2	1	7	4	+ 0
1899-1900	62	34	3	1	7	3	+ 0
1900-1901	56	34	2	1	7	4	+ 0
1901-1902	58	34	3	1	7	4	+ 0
1902-1903	60	36	3	1	8	4	+ 0
1903-1904	62	37	3	1	8	3	+ 0
1904-1905	62	37	3	1	9	4	+ 0
1905-1906	64	37	3	1	9	4	+ 0
1906-1907	63	36	3	1	9	3	+ 0
1907-1908	77	38	6	1	10	5	+ 0
1908-1909	75	40	6	1	9	4	+ 0
1909-1910	77	43	6	1	9	4	1
1910-1911	70	38	6	1	9	3	+ 0
1911-1912	72	40	6	1	12	4	1
1912-1913	84	40	8	1	11	4	1
1913-1914	70	35	4	1	11	3	1
1914-1915	104	37	5	1	16	4	1
1915-1916	143	57	5	1	24	6	1
1916-1917	153	53	5	1	39	8	1
1917-1918	189	54	8	2	51	12	1
1918-1919	288	112	16	2	73	15	1
1919-1920	367	184	22	3	58	17	2
1920-1921	444	123	41	5	66	32	3
1921-1922	590	242	47	7	86	42	6
1922-1923	1 244	472	64	10	132	54	11
1923-1924	1 224	553	88	18	200	94	18

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Finance	Interior	Justice	Army	Navy	Foreign Affairs
1924-1925	1 518	356	135	24	257	116	42
1925-1926	1 605	622	136	26	276	115	7
1926-1927	1 953	703	159	27	356	150	6
1927-1928	1 812	702	179	29	309	147	38
1928-1929	1 920	664	196	37	314	137	26
1929-1930	2 044	771	181	39	340	166	47
1930-1931	1 901	670	207	38	321	158	27
1931-1932	1 935	649	198	42	315	161	34
1932-1933	2 012	571	193	41	305	279	34
1933-1934	2 159	716	191	34	332	293	38
1934-1935	2 980	853	317	58	479	331	57
1936	2 655	1 185	205	43	375	165	33
1937	2 075	567	203	43	417	206	40
1938	2 298	641	213	44	500	178	35
1939	2 397	673	201	45	441	215	33
1940	2 423	641	204	46	498	234	31
1941	2 820	649	207	49	947	204	30
1942	2 955	696	220	52	988	214	36
1943	3 985	1 075	260	58	1 454	283	34
1944	3 681	970	300	68	1 071	266	39
1945	3 926	940	339	78	1 007	285	75
1946	4 624	1 150	413	91	923	350	69
1947	5 694	1 606	489	109	889	430	64
1948	5 699	1 560	533	113	787	505	68
1949	5 661	1 667	588	121	820	422	73
1950	5 116	1 310	566	126	863	396	72
1951	5 605	1 475	586	133	910	388	91
1952	5 852	1 871	615	142	724	382	93
1953	6 407	2 217	662	147	702	403	96
1954	6 683	2 196	690	156	828	435	120
1955	7 330	2 321	770	166	878	481	109
1956	7 597	2 326	824	166	951	490	126

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Finance	Interior	Justice	Army	Navy	Foreign Affairs
1957	8 230	2 295	883	174	1 042	544	150
1958	8 687	2 500	936	174	1 003	561	134
1959	9 747	2 814	501	196	1 134	633	138
1960	11 336	3 557	522	200	834	606	148
1961	13 445	5 918	542	200	846	592	155
1962	14 831	6 842	556	205	899	616	156
1963	15 700	7 194	562	210	939	663	182
1964	17 167	7 473	570	211	1 043	705	181
1965	18 055	8 835	582	213	985	748	214
1966	19 621	9 754	608	221	1 149	852	208
1967	23 359	12 504	663	245	1 196	953	222
1968	25 193	12 880	691	246	1 262	1 014	280
1969	27 713	13 506	794	246	1 334	1 090	295
1970	31 736	15 005	965	289	1 579	1 306	343
1971	36 648	17 055	1 024	299	2 295	1 460	374
1972	40 868	18 997	1 117	323	1 815	1 709	483
1973	48 894	21 017	1 569	374	2 002	1 916	508
1974	63 415	25 861	2 751	471	2 873	2 565	608
1975	86 620	10 611	6 355	627	-	-	756
1976	124 688	28 634	7 652	794	-	-	1 073
1977	158 741	35 435	16 432	1 038	-	-	1 688
1978	214 802	68 916	12 768	1 398	-	-	2 206
1979	280 659	99 038	32 287	1 907	-	-	2 532
1980	374 780	129 708	41 180	2 631	-	-	3 442
1981	506 843	197 840	48 739	3 451	-	-	3 878
1982	624 158	251 643	58 506	3 887	-	-	4 773
1983	801 871	351 341	67 974	4 960	-	-	6 751
1984	1 019 106	453 744	82 207	6 293	-	-	9 382
1985	1 333 918	626 622	100 707	8 167	-	-	11 219
1986	1 596 796	785 081	38 171	11 339	-	-	13 368
1987	1 835 167	921 443	46 300	13 212	-	-	14 979
1988	2 324 990	1 232 258	55 749	19 707	-	-	16 402

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Finance	Interior	Justice	Army	Navy	Foreign Affairs
1989	2 728 752	1 433 009	69 854	23 200	-	-	19 973
1990	3 437 901	1 893 704	83 140	30 995	-	-	21 721
1991	4 596 342	2 729 421	101 668	37 385	-	-	25 440
1992	4 606 656	2 354 308	156 807	45 870	-	-	29 643
1993	4 998 046	2 436 570	189 117	53 344	-	-	30 345
1994	5 450 937	2 776 737	181 327	59 543	-	-	34 010
1995	6 377 879	3 500 927	180 376	66 358	-	-	39 232
1996	6 729 464	3 476 669	187 476	75 102	-	-	42 600
1997	9 955 775	6 491 750	201 138	76 526	-	-	46 584
1998	8 483 100	4 753 151	216 393	80 967	-	-	51 512

year	expend- iture	Public Works	Education	Overseas	Labour	Agriculture	Transport
1852-1853	13	+ 0	-	-	-	-	-
1853-1854	11	1	-	-	-	-	-
1854-1855	14	3	-	-	-	-	-
1855-1856	13	2	-	-	-	-	-
1856-1857	15	4	-	-	-	-	-
1857-1858	18	4	-	-	-	-	-
1858-1859	18	3	-	-	-	-	-
1859-1860	16	3	-	-	-	-	-
1860-1861	16	3	-	-	-	-	-
1861-1862	21	7	-	-	-	-	-
1862-1863	22	7	-	-	-	-	-
1863-1864	22	5	-	-	-	-	-
1864-1865	21	4	-	-	-	-	-
1865-1866	21	3	-	-	-	-	-
1866-1867	23	3	-	-	-	-	-
1867-1868	30	3	-	-	-	-	-
1868-1869	21	3	-	-	-	-	-
1869-1870	33	11	-	-	-	-	-
1870-1871	22	2	+ 0	-	-	-	-

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Public Works	Education	Overseas	Labour	Agriculture	Transport
1871-1872	25	3	-	-	-	-	-
1872-1873	25	3	-	-	-	-	-
1873-1874	29	5	-	-	-	-	-
1874-1875	29	6	-	-	-	-	-
1875-1876	31	7	-	-	-	-	-
1876-1877	37	8	-	-	-	-	-
1877-1878	34	8	-	-	-	-	-
1878-1879	34	7	-	-	-	-	-
1879-1880	32	5	-	-	-	-	-
1880-1881	34	6	-	-	-	-	-
1881-1882	36	7	-	-	-	-	-
1882-1883	35	6	-	-	-	-	-
1883-1884	35	6	-	1	-	-	-
1884-1885	40	7	-	1	-	-	-
1885-1886	41	7	-	1	-	-	-
1886-1887	42	7	-	1	-	-	-
1887-1888	45	8	-	1	-	-	-
1888-1889	51	8	-	1	-	-	-
1889-1890	54	11	+ 0	4	-	-	-
1890-1891	51	10	1	3	-	-	-
1891-1892	55	8	1	5	-	-	-
1892-1893	48	6	-	2	-	-	-
1893-1894	46	6	-	1	-	-	-
1894-1895	49	8	-	1	-	-	-
1895-1896	55	9	-	4	-	-	-
1896-1897	58	10	-	2	-	-	-
1897-1898	58	9	-	2	-	-	-
1898-1899	56	7	-	2	-	-	-
1899-1900	62	9	-	3	-	-	-
1900-1901	56	6	-	2	-	-	-
1901-1902	58	6	-	2	-	-	-
1902-1903	60	5	-	2	-	-	-



Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Public Works	Education	Overseas	Labour	Agriculture	Transport
1903-1904	62	7	-	1	-	-	-
1904-1905	62	5	-	2	-	-	-
1905-1906	64	6	-	4	-	-	-
1906-1907	63	6	-	3	-	-	-
1907-1908	77	13	-	3	-	-	-
1908-1909	75	10	-	5	-	-	-
1909-1910	77	9	-	4	-	-	-
1910-1911	70	10	-	2	-	-	-
1911-1912	72	6	-	2	-	-	-
1912-1913	84	16	-	3	-	-	-
1913-1914	70	12	3	2	-	-	-
1914-1915	104	21	4	16	-	-	-
1915-1916	143	27	4	10	8	-	-
1916-1917	153	5	4	14	24	-	-
1917-1918	189	6	4	27	21	+ 0	3
1918-1919	288	10	9	24	7	2	18
1919-1920	367	21	15	16	11	16	2
1920-1921	444	34	30	19	18	72	-
1921-1922	590	50	41	16	26	26	-
1922-1923	1 244	130	73	12	37	250	-
1923-1924	1 224	75	105	15	41	18	-
1924-1925	1 518	99	120	77	53	241	-
1925-1926	1 605	108	129	110	57	19	-
1926-1927	1 953	112	149	261	9	20	-
1927-1928	1 812	157	145	83	+ 0	23	-
1928-1929	1 920	336	142	27	-	41	-
1929-1930	2 044	271	172	23	-	34	-
1930-1931	1 901	248	164	35	-	33	-
1931-1932	1 935	298	172	30	-	36	-
1932-1933	2 012	351	172	26	-	-	-
1933-1934	2 159	328	165	21	-	30	-
1934-1935	2 980	517	253	54	-	46	-

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Public Works	Education	Overseas	Labour	Agriculture	Transport
1936	2 655	395	179	27	-	37	-
1937	2 075	334	182	27	-	43	-
1938	2 298	410	189	30	-	45	-
1939	2 397	505	193	29	-	48	-
1940	2 423	486	196	20	-	51	-
1941	2 820	444	199	19	-	-	-
1942	2 955	443	204	19	-	-	-
1943	3 985	491	216	21	-	-	-
1944	3 681	580	257	21	-	-	-
1945	3 926	736	286	39	-	-	-
1946	4 624	1 049	312	111	-	-	-
1947	5 694	921	364	107	-	-	501
1948	5 699	967	391	92	-	-	453
1949	5 661	804	442	85	-	-	410
1950	5 116	729	449	55	-	-	323
1951	5 605	757	455	58	23	-	496
1952	5 852	809	491	63	23	-	392
1953	6 407	805	515	74	24	-	392
1954	6 683	848	564	87	25	-	433
1955	7 330	938	605	234	26	-	466
1956	7 597	1 020	625	135	28	-	550
1957	8 230	1 157	658	136	35	-	756
1958	8 687	1 364	701	128	36	-	700
1959	9 747	1 294	898	189	42	-	699
1960	11 336	1 410	943	1 015	43	-	794
1961	13 445	1 435	974	612	47	-	824
1962	14 831	1 489	1 024	677	53	-	946
1963	15 700	2 101	1 078	370	55	-	954
1964	17 167	2 147	1 126	929	61	-	1 278
1965	18 055	1 864	1 214	573	62	-	1 214
1966	19 621	1 737	1 359	631	66	-	1 423
1967	23 359	1 724	1 586	726	76	-	1 701

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Public Works	Education	Overseas	Labour	Agriculture	Transport
1968	25 193	2 175	1 789	830	85	-	1 873
1969	27 713	2 695	2 330	774	89	-	2 099
1970	31 736	2 902	3 022	839	109	-	2 681
1971	36 648	3 206	3 587	918	109	-	3 143
1972	40 868	3 175	4 817	676	117	-	3 806
1973	48 894	3 852	6 695	1 645	141	-	4 796
1974	63 415	5 172	9 318	1 336	762	-	6 832
1975	86 620	9 827	15 215	4 097	234	-	7 905
1976	124 688	12 386	19 103	6 330	305	2 974	10 002
1977	158 741	12 389	25 026	-	365	5 656	13 311
1978	214 802	22 471	30 184	-	572	6 979	9 030
1979	280 659	20 858	36 062	-	588	8 203	9 582
1980	374 780	28 393	48 410	-	11 239	9 551	11 246
1981	506 843	35 984	60 785	-	18 447	10 467	14 220
1982	624 158	39 791	74 002	-	30 039	13 285	18 984
1983	801 871	42 676	91 685	-	33 409	16 954	24 088
1984	1 019 106	41 535	108 116	-	78 675	17 728	16 152
1985	1 333 918	50 709	137 599	-	89 794	21 235	21 246
1986	1 596 796	79 753	199 533	-	38 103	31 750	-
1987	1 835 167	72 625	239 929	-	35 232	42 947	-
1988	2 324 990	64 062	287 764	-	53 063	55 465	-
1989	2 728 752	74 656	351 882	-	57 426	51 808	-
1990	3 437 901	110 325	421 303	-	62 391	57 410	-
1991	4 596 342	116 805	549 828	-	79 444	64 550	-
1992	4 606 656	135 298	657 745	-	88 232	68 316	-
1993	4 998 046	154 505	691 482	-	219 613	73 877	-
1994	5 450 937	150 486	729 593	-	229 763	82 407	-
1995	6 377 879	171 665	812 015	-	182 788	92 070	-
1996	6 729 464	200 767	882 924	-	331 034	103 371	-
1997	9 955 775	501 663	970 741	-	372 921	113 057	-
1998	8 483 100	549 403	1 068 100	-	408 880	120 006	-

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Economy	Trade	Health	Defence	Social Commun.	Industry
1932-1933	2 012	39	-	-	-	-	-
1933-1934	2 159	-	11	-	-	-	-
1934-1935	2 980	-	16	-	-	-	-
1936	2 655	-	11	-	-	-	-
1937	2 075	-	12	-	-	-	-
1938	2 298	-	14	-	-	-	-
1939	2 397	-	14	-	-	-	-
1940	2 423	-	16	-	-	-	-
1941	2 820	72	-	-	-	-	-
1942	2 955	82	-	-	-	-	-
1943	3 985	93	-	-	-	-	-
1944	3 681	110	-	-	-	-	-
1945	3 926	140	-	-	-	-	-
1946	4 624	154	-	-	-	-	-
1947	5 694	213	-	-	-	-	-
1948	5 699	227	-	-	-	-	-
1949	5 661	229	-	-	-	-	-
1950	5 116	226	-	-	-	-	-
1951	5 605	233	-	-	-	-	-
1952	5 852	246	-	-	-	-	-
1953	6 407	368	-	-	-	-	-
1954	6 683	302	-	-	-	-	-
1955	7 330	334	-	-	-	-	-
1956	7 597	355	-	-	-	-	-
1957	8 230	401	-	-	-	-	-
1958	8 687	450	-	-	-	-	-
1959	9 747	608	-	602	-	-	-
1960	11 336	611	-	652	-	-	-
1961	13 445	615	-	685	-	-	-
1962	14 831	655	-	714	-	-	-
1963	15 700	647	-	746	-	-	-
1964	17 167	676	-	766	-	-	-

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Economy	Trade	Health	Defence	Social Commun.	Industry
1965	18 055	707	-	845	-	-	-
1966	19 621	718	-	895	-	-	-
1967	23 359	803	-	958	-	-	-
1968	25 193	974	-	1 095	-	-	-
1969	27 713	1 225	-	1 236	-	-	-
1970	31 736	1 214	-	1 481	-	-	-
1971	36 648	1 351	-	1 826	-	-	-
1972	40 868	1 732	-	2 100	-	-	-
1973	48 894	1 780	-	2 599	-	-	-
1974	63 415	1 811	-	3 057	-	-	-
1975	86 620	3 613	-	9 534	17 542	303	-
1976	124 688	-	241	16 491	15 516	661	964
1977	158 741	2 949	1 951	14 242	18 180	-	2 450
1978	214 802	-	2 095	27 856	22 030	-	1 222
1979	280 659	-	2 865	36 733	28 217	335	1 463
1980	374 780	-	4 151	46 558	36 571	-	1 701
1981	506 843	-	5 004	57 754	43 119	-	2 011
1982	624 158	-	-	65 673	51 498	-	6 364
1983	801 871	-	-	86 529	62 316	-	7 303
1984	1 019 106	-	9 248	95 437	71 433	-	9 612
1985	1 333 918	-	11 455	131 114	85 724	-	14 542
1986	1 596 796	101 207	-	162 284	109 101	-	27 105
1987	1 835 167	113 177	-	186 305	125 687	-	23 331
1988	2 324 990	122 784	16 311	227 160	153 257	-	21 007
1989	2 728 752	143 705	25 008	276 839	175 928	-	25 465
1990	3 437 901	157 097	31 348	331 600	195 755	-	25 205
1991	4 596 342	191 220	25 750	405 818	219 865	-	28 527
1992	4 606 656	233 710	31 723	485 418	236 835	-	37 463
1993	4 998 046	248 498	32 033	542 278	246 984	-	32 246
1994	5 450 937	237 317	32 932	586 766	268 429	-	33 495
1995	6 377 879	266 163	35 523	635 131	301 954	-	36 086
1996	6 729 464	278 119	66 112	690 775	306 408	-	-

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Economy	Trade	Health	Defence	Social Commun.	Industry
1997	9 955 775	-	76 632	733 178	285 114	-	-
1998	8 483 100	-	82 489	773 966	291 728	-	-

year	expend- iture	Foreign Trade	Housing	Administr. Reform	Environ- ment	European Integration	Culture
1976	124 688	1 563	-	-	-	-	-
1977	158 741	-	7 630	-	-	-	-
1978	214 802	-	-	7 074	-	-	-
1979	280 659	-	-	-	-	-	-
1980	374 780	-	-	-	-	-	-
1981	506 843	65	-	3 875	1 203	65	-
1982	624 158	-	-	2 252	1 120	-	2 342
1983	801 871	-	-	1 886	1 252	-	2 757
1984	1 019 106	-	-	-	1 781	-	3 049
1985	1 333 918	-	-	-	3 179	-	4 067
1986	1 596 796	-	-	-	-	-	-
1987	1 835 167	-	-	-	-	-	-
1988	2 324 990	-	-	-	-	-	-
1989	2 728 752	-	-	-	-	-	-
1990	3 437 901	-	-	-	15 907	-	-
1991	4 596 342	-	-	-	20 621	-	-
1992	4 606 656	-	-	-	26 965	-	-
1993	4 998 046	-	-	-	27 982	-	-
1994	5 450 937	-	-	-	28 045	-	-
1995	6 377 879	-	-	-	33 962	-	-
1996	6 729 464	-	-	-	35 606	-	27 876
1997	9 955 775	-	-	-	33 374	-	28 616
1998	8 483 100	-	-	-	34 786	-	35 073

Table 9.4 — Composition of public expenditure by ministries, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	expend- iture	Sea	Employ- ment	Science
1984	1 019 106	14 702	-	-
1985	1 333 918	16 539	-	-
1986	1 596 796	-	-	-
1987	1 835 167	-	-	-
1988	2 324 990	-	-	-
1989	2 728 752	-	-	-
1990	3 437 901	-	-	-
1991	4 596 342	-	-	-
1992	4 606 656	18 321	-	-
1993	4 998 046	19 169	-	-
1994	5 450 937	20 086	-	-
1995	6 377 879	23 627	-	-
1996	6 729 464	-	9 826	14 797
1997	9 955 775	-	9 484	14 996
1998	8 483 100	-	-	16 646

## Table 9.5 — Funcional composition of public expenditure, 1851-1998

Source — From 1851-1852 to 1882-1883, accounts of the respective ministries; from 1883-1884 to 1919-1920, Conta Geral da Administração Financeira do Estado; from 1920-1921 onwards, Conta Geral do Estado. After 1977, the values are as presented by the source itself. For the years up to 1976, the values are constructed from the source using the same criteria.

Unit — Million escudos.

Remarks:

1 — In organising the series of the functional composition of public expenditure, attention was paid to the type of needs that the expenditure was designed to satisfy.

The item 'public debt' includes the interest and amortisations of the public debt and the expenditure incurred with running the services that directly supervised the public debt.

The item 'administration' includes treasury expenditure, public finance in general, administration in the narrow sense, security, justice, ecclesiastical and religious affairs and foreign relations.

The item 'defence' includes expenditure incurred with the armed forces and with military expeditions in Europe and the Overseas Territories.

The item 'overseas' includes the expenditure incurred with the services located in the Metropolis that supervised the overseas administration and the expenditure effected in the colonies and paid for by the metropolitan administration, except for military expeditions.

The item 'economy' includes expenditure incurred with agriculture, industry, trade, transport, communications and supply.

The item 'education' includes expenditure incurred with education and culture.

The item 'social expenditure' includes expenditure incurred with health, welfare, labour and social security.

2 — The State accounts present a functional classification of public expenditure as from 1972. However, the values for the years from 1972 to 1976 were not adopted, due to the different criterion used in relation to later years.

3 — The total expenditure shown in this table is related to the effective expenditure shown in Table 9.3, through the following equation:

total expenditure = effective expenditure + amortisations of the public debt + interest on fictitious debt



Table 9.5 — Funcional composition of public expenditure, 1851-1998 (continued)

The total expenditure shown in this table coincides with the total expenditure shown in Table 9.4, as from the economic year of 1883-1884. Until the economic year of 1882-1883, the total expenditure shown in this table corresponds to the values shown in the accounts of the respective ministries and the total expenditure shown in Table 9.4 corresponds to the values shown in the Conta da Receita e Despesa do Tesouro Público. These values may not coincide due to imperfections in the accounting systems.

year	total expend- iture	public debt	adminis- tration	defence	over- seas	economy	education	social expend- iture
1851-1852	-	-	-	-	-	+ 0	+ 0	+ 0
1852-1853	13	2	5	5	+ 0	+ 0	1	+ 0
1853-1854	-	-	4	-	+ 0	1	+ 0	+ 0
1854-1855	-	-	-	-	-	2	+ 0	+ 0
1855-1856	14	4	4	3	+ 0	2	+ 0	+ 0
1856-1857	-	-	-	4	+ 0	5	+ 0	+ 0
1857-1858	-	-	3	-	+ 0	4	1	+ 0
1858-1859	-	-	-	-	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1859-1860	-	-	-	4	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1860-1861	20	9	3	4	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1861-1862	21	6	4	4	+ 0	7	1	+ 0
1862-1863	22	7	4	4	+ 0	7	1	+ 0
1863-1864	22	7	4	4	+ 0	5	1	+ 0
1864-1865	22	7	4	5	1	4	1	+ 0
1865-1866	22	8	5	4	1	4	1	+ 0
1866-1867	23	9	5	5	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1867-1868	29	8	11	5	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1868-1869	23	10	4	5	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1869-1870	34	12	4	5	1	11	1	+ 0
1870-1871	25	12	4	6	+ 0	2	1	+ 0
1871-1872	29	16	4	5	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1872-1873	30	16	4	5	+ 0	3	1	+ 0
1873-1874	32	16	4	6	+ 0	4	1	+ 0

Table 9.5 — Funcional composition of public expenditure, 1851-1998 (continued)

year	total expend- iture	public debt	adminis- tration	defence	over- seas	economy	education	social expend- iture
1874-1875	32	14	5	7	+ 0	6	1	+ 0
1875-1876	37	16	5	8	+ 0	7	1	+ 0
1876-1877	40	16	8	6	1	7	1	+ 0
1877-1878	39	17	5	6	1	8	1	+ 0
1878-1879	41	19	5	7	1	7	1	+ 0
1879-1880	37	19	5	6	1	4	1	+ 0
1880-1881	41	21	5	7	1	6	1	+ 0
1881-1882	42	22	6	6	+ 0	6	1	+ 0
1882-1883	42	23	6	6	1	6	1	+ 0
1883-1884	35	15	6	7	1	6	1	+ 0
1884-1885	40	18	6	8	1	6	1	+ 0
1885-1886	41	17	6	9	1	6	1	1
1886-1887	42	18	7	8	1	7	1	+ 0
1887-1888	45	20	7	8	1	8	1	+ 0
1888-1889	51	19	13	7	1	8	1	+ 0
1889-1890	54	21	10	8	4	10	2	+ 0
1890-1891	51	20	9	8	3	9	1	1
1891-1892	55	22	11	8	5	8	1	+ 0
1892-1893	48	19	11	9	2	6	1	1
1893-1894	46	21	8	8	1	6	1	1
1894-1895	49	22	8	8	1	7	1	+ 0
1895-1896	55	23	8	9	4	9	1	1
1896-1897	58	25	9	11	2	9	1	1
1897-1898	58	25	9	12	2	9	1	+ 0
1898-1899	56	26	9	11	2	7	1	+ 0
1899-1900	62	27	10	11	3	9	1	1
1900-1901	56	28	9	10	2	5	1	1
1901-1902	58	28	9	11	2	6	1	1
1902-1903	60	28	11	11	2	5	1	1
1903-1904	62	30	10	12	1	7	1	1
1904-1905	62	30	10	13	2	5	1	1

Table 9.5 — Funcional composition of public expenditure, 1851-1998 (continued)

year	total expend- iture	public debt	adminis- tration	defence	over- seas	economy	education	social expend- iture
1905-1906	64	29	11	12	4	6	1	1
1906-1907	63	29	10	13	3	6	2	1
1907-1908	77	30	11	15	3	13	3	1
1908-1909	75	32	11	13	5	10	3	1
1909-1910	77	32	15	13	4	9	3	1
1910-1911	70	31	11	13	2	10	3	1
1911-1912	72	33	11	15	2	5	4	1
1912-1913	84	33	11	15	3	16	4	2
1913-1914	70	27	12	14	2	12	3	1
1914-1915	104	28	12	20	16	23	4	2
1915-1916	143	36	13	43	10	36	4	2
1916-1917	153	33	18	52	14	30	4	2
1917-1918	189	29	30	65	27	31	4	3
1918-1919	288	36	31	147	24	36	9	5
1919-1920	367	45	65	167	16	49	16	10
1920-1921	444	81	88	109	19	102	32	13
1921-1922	590	193	117	127	16	73	44	21
1922-1923	1 244	259	181	184	12	504	77	29
1923-1924	1 224	371	258	289	15	144	110	37
1924-1925	1 518	402	395	367	77	109	124	45
1925-1926	1 605	455	349	385	110	112	144	51
1926-1927	1 953	416	420	498	261	107	161	89
1927-1928	1 812	492	413	450	83	148	170	57
1928-1929	1 920	456	403	443	27	344	172	76
1929-1930	2 044	502	483	493	23	296	175	72
1930-1931	1 901	424	474	467	35	269	164	69
1931-1932	1 935	359	529	458	30	316	172	71
1932-1933	2 012	328	484	567	26	361	172	74
1933-1934	2 159	446	488	601	21	328	174	100
1934-1935	2 980	506	775	779	44	495	257	124
1936	2 655	921	490	528	27	409	193	88

Table 9.5 — Funcional composition of public expenditure, 1851-1998 (continued)

year	total expend- iture	public debt	adminis- tration	defence	over- seas	economy	education	social expend- iture
1937	2 075	294	509	607	27	360	187	90
1938	2 298	296	567	661	46	439	195	95
1939	2 397	296	642	645	29	473	217	95
1940	2 423	293	620	738	20	447	210	95
1941	2 820	288	617	1 154	19	427	213	103
1942	2 955	319	641	1 201	19	431	228	114
1943	3 985	691	668	1 738	21	490	239	138
1944	3 681	542	772	1 338	21	571	283	154
1945	3 926	394	944	1 288	39	752	320	188
1946	4 624	561	1 050	1 267	116	1 010	375	245
1947	5 694	405	1 208	1 307	317	1 702	464	291
1948	5 699	411	1 226	1 287	549	1 406	548	272
1949	5 661	408	1 323	1 230	85	1 766	561	288
1950	5 116	428	1 302	1 240	155	1 142	561	288
1951	5 605	464	1 325	1 285	102	1 582	549	298
1952	5 852	531	1 393	1 354	218	1 399	638	319
1953	6 407	577	1 418	1 687	103	1 560	711	351
1954	6 683	605	1 497	1 891	104	1 543	671	372
1955	7 330	640	1 562	1 994	252	1 664	779	439
1956	7 597	691	1 637	2 025	147	1 774	828	495
1957	8 230	727	1 724	2 033	148	2 188	861	549
1958	8 687	760	1 724	2 135	134	2 352	1 000	582
1959	9 747	783	1 925	2 449	252	2 563	1 116	659
1960	11 336	854	2 053	2 812	1 043	2 660	1 200	714
1961	13 445	916	2 046	4 776	762	3 000	1 198	747
1962	14 831	989	2 093	5 673	781	3 294	1 225	776
1963	15 700	1 163	2 228	5 813	435	3 982	1 268	811
1964	17 167	1 293	2 280	6 508	936	4 048	1 262	840
1965	18 055	1 825	2 440	7 227	577	3 656	1 403	927
1966	19 621	2 072	2 479	7 957	634	3 930	1 560	989
1967	23 359	2 567	2 744	9 751	725	4 704	1 801	1 067

Table 9.5 — Funcional composition of public expenditure, 1851-1998 (continued)

year	total expend- iture	public debt	adminis- tration	defence	over- seas	economy	education	social expend- iture
1968	25 193	2 433	3 036	10 673	830	4 838	2 112	1 271
1969	27 713	2 185	3 371	11 332	775	5 813	2 758	1 479
1970	31 736	2 334	3 670	12 963	839	6 573	3 549	1 808
1971	36 648	2 482	3 956	14 555	1 448	7 849	4 177	2 181
1972	40 868	2 621	4 735	14 373	1 988	9 219	5 438	2 494
1973	48 894	2 883	5 988	16 518	2 179	10 908	7 368	3 050
1974	63 415	3 326	8 190	21 244	1 726	14 764	10 091	4 074
1975	86 620	4 339	13 288	17 465	4 097	21 252	16 047	10 132
1976	124 688	7 947	17 746	15 461	6 330	39 351	20 429	17 424
1977	158 741	13 354	35 181	17 339	2 357	45 626	24 161	20 723
1978	214 802	24 701	43 777	20 742	2 962	55 651	28 708	38 261
1979	280 659	36 357	61 411	26 576	1 440	61 851	34 910	58 114
1980	374 780	47 452	92 273	34 383	12	85 483	51 822	63 355
1981	506 843	101 147	110 434	40 995	14	112 309	64 631	77 313
1982	624 158	150 018	127 974	49 068	13	129 548	78 916	88 621
1983	801 871	215 185	162 332	59 037	6	145 774	97 016	122 521
1984	1 019 106	309 473	194 165	67 932	15	164 980	115 344	167 197
1985	1 333 918	401 267	285 205	81 552	67	211 715	141 953	212 159
1986	1 596 796	508 019	309 688	104 566	110	235 574	185 787	253 052
1987	1 835 167	604 500	374 566	124 484	111	229 175	224 530	277 801
1988	2 324 990	873 790	414 883	148 375	106	255 151	283 741	348 944
1989	2 728 752	941 390	575 517	170 728	111	260 534	348 416	432 056
1990	3 437 901	1 294 709	750 854	189 666	111	307 768	419 204	475 589
1991	4 596 342	2 063 582	856 798	211 865	111	338 864	545 749	579 373
1992	4 606 656	1 489 978	1 111 575	227 798	0	398 224	655 109	723 972
1993	4 998 046	1 675 154	1 025 220	238 121	0	415 123	687 611	956 817
1994	5 450 937	1 754 513	1 127 632	259 893	0	421 169	725 263	1 162 467
1995	6 377 879	2 448 692	536 978	290 069	0	981 615	804 668	1 315 857
1996	6 729 464	2 603 303	536 039	295 688	0	1 009 670	888 204	1 396 560
1997	9 955 775	5 527 427	505 937	274 370	0	1 081 582	1 038 773	1 527 686
1998	8 483 100	4 236 635	633 069	278 108	0	615 487	1 073 420	1 646 381

## Table 9.6 — Tax revenue, 1833-1998

Source — From 1835-1837 to 1882-1883, Conta da Receita e Despesa do Tesouro Público; from 1883-1884 to 1919-1920, Conta Geral da Administração Financeira do Estado; from 1920-1921 onwards, Conta Geral do Estado. Values constructed on the basis of the source.

Unit — Million escudos.

Remarks:

1 — The account for 1833-1834 only refers to the flows relating to the constitutional government of Lisbon, and therefore excludes the flows relating to the absolutist government of Santarém.

2 — The tax revenue was broken down into four categories corresponding to:

- a) Direct taxes on income.
- b) Customs duties.
- c) Internal indirect taxes on production, consumption, etc.
- d) Taxes on gratuitous or onerous conveyances of property.

Below are shown the main taxes included in each of the categories and, where relevant, the dates of their creation and abolition.

Direct taxes — Royal tithe (1641-1870), tax on land and buildings (1852-1989), industrial tax (1860-1989), tax on interest (1870-1922), income tax (1880-1928), capital yield tax (1922-1989), personal income tax (1922-1928), public salvation tax (1928-1941), wages tax (1929-1989), complementary tax (1928-1989), supplementary tax (1940-1964), war profits tax (1942-1945), agricultural tax (1964-1989), capital gains tax (1964-1989), individual income tax (since 1989) and corporate income tax (since 1989).

Customs duties — Export duties and import duties.

Indirect taxes — Stamp duty (from 1797 onwards), personal tax (1860-1872), house rental tax (1872-1911), luxury tax (1872-1922), sales transaction tax (1922-1929 and 1966-1987), national salvation tax (1928-1966) and value added tax (since 1987).

Taxes on the conveyance of property — Property transfer tax (1832-1860 and from 1929 onwards), property conveyance tax (1838-1860), property registration tax (1860-1929) and gifts and inheritance tax (from 1929 onwards).

Table 9.6 — Tax revenue, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	tax revenue	direct taxes	customs duties	internal indirect taxes	taxes on the conveyance of property
1833-1834	3	+ 0	2	1	+ 0
1834-1835	6	1	4	2	+ 0
1835-1836	7	1	4	2	+ 0
1836-1837	6	1	4	1	+ 0
1837-1838	6	1	4	1	+ 0
1838-1839	7	1	4	1	+ 0
1839-1840	7	1	4	2	+ 0
1840-1841	6	1	3	2	+ 0
1841-1842	7	2	3	3	+ 0
1842-1843	7	1	3	3	+ 0
1843-1844	8	1	3	3	+ 0
1844-1845	8	1	3	3	+ 0
...					
1851-1852	9	2	4	3	+ 0
1852-1853	10	2	4	3	+ 0
1853-1854	9	3	4	3	+ 0
1854-1855	10	2	4	3	+ 0
1855-1856	10	3	4	3	+ 0
1856-1857	10	3	4	2	+ 0
1857-1858	10	3	4	2	+ 0
1858-1859	11	4	4	3	+ 0
1859-1860	10	3	4	3	+ 0
1860-1861	11	3	5	3	+ 0
1861-1862	12	3	5	4	1
1862-1863	13	3	6	3	1
1863-1864	13	3	6	3	1
1864-1865	15	3	5	6	1
1865-1866	13	3	5	4	1
1866-1867	13	3	5	4	1
1867-1868	14	4	5	5	1
1868-1869	14	4	4	5	1

Table 9.6 — Tax revenue, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	tax revenue	direct taxes	customs duties	internal indirect taxes	taxes on the conveyance of property
1869-1870	15	4	5	5	1
1870-1871	15	5	5	5	1
1871-1872	16	5	6	5	1
1872-1873	17	4	6	5	1
1873-1874	19	5	7	6	1
1874-1875	20	5	7	7	1
1875-1876	21	5	8	7	1
1876-1877	21	5	7	7	1
1877-1878	22	5	8	7	1
1878-1879	24	5	8	9	1
1879-1880	20	5	8	5	1
1880-1881	22	5	9	7	2
1881-1882	25	5	10	8	2
1882-1883	23	5	8	8	2
1883-1884	25	5	9	8	2
1884-1885	26	6	10	9	2
1885-1886	27	5	10	9	2
1886-1887	29	5	12	10	2
1887-1888	32	6	13	11	2
1888-1889	32	6	13	10	2
1889-1890	32	6	14	10	2
1890-1891	33	6	14	10	2
1891-1892	32	7	11	12	2
1892-1893	35	10	13	11	2
1893-1894	39	11	15	12	2
1894-1895	38	10	14	12	2
1895-1896	43	11	17	12	2
1896-1897	40	11	14	13	3
1897-1898	40	11	12	13	3
1898-1899	41	12	14	13	3
1899-1900	44	12	15	14	3



Table 9.6 — Tax revenue, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	tax revenue	direct taxes	customs duties	internal indirect taxes	taxes on the conveyance of property
1900-1901	45	13	15	14	3
1901-1902	43	12	13	15	3
1902-1903	45	12	15	15	3
1903-1904	47	13	16	15	3
1904-1905	48	13	17	15	3
1905-1906	48	13	17	15	3
1906-1907	47	13	15	16	3
1907-1908	50	13	16	18	3
1908-1909	50	14	16	18	3
1909-1910	51	14	16	18	3
1910-1911	50	13	15	18	3
1911-1912	51	14	15	18	4
1912-1913	56	15	18	18	4
1913-1914	53	11	19	18	5
1914-1915	46	11	12	17	5
1915-1916	47	11	12	18	6
1916-1917	50	11	14	19	6
1917-1918	49	11	11	20	7
1918-1919	64	16	15	24	9
1919-1920	88	15	28	31	14
1920-1921	131	35	39	39	18
1921-1922	173	49	54	50	20
1922-1923	321	76	100	116	29
1923-1924	555	104	224	182	45
1924-1925	734	183	209	290	52
1925-1926	815	236	244	267	68
1926-1927	907	228	317	288	74
1927-1928	1 069	231	383	363	92
1928-1929	1 444	406	551	371	116
1929-1930	1 549	501	585	335	127
1930-1931	1 439	456	566	307	110

Table 9.6 — Tax revenue, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	tax revenue	direct taxes	customs duties	internal indirect taxes	taxes on the conveyance of property
1931-1932	1 482	485	554	319	124
1932-1933	1 497	485	542	326	144
1933-1934	1 548	463	586	343	156
1934-1935	2 426	695	934	566	231
1936	1 612	487	608	375	142
1937	1 663	510	589	390	174
1938	1 752	525	629	407	191
1939	1 684	528	554	411	191
1940	1 727	597	507	423	200
1941	1 911	634	586	456	236
1942	2 364	819	779	484	283
1943	2 453	891	798	508	257
1944	2 526	1 022	633	574	297
1945	2 570	1 080	584	620	287
1946	2 968	970	930	740	329
1947	3 386	1 016	1 186	819	365
1948	3 494	1 110	1 073	881	430
1949	3 687	1 205	1 063	1 052	367
1950	3 842	1 259	1 071	1 133	379
1951	4 280	1 303	1 348	1 214	415
1952	4 548	1 361	1 488	1 263	436
1953	4 539	1 471	1 357	1 237	474
1954	4 777	1 510	1 484	1 300	483
1955	5 134	1 579	1 641	1 387	527
1956	5 465	1 683	1 738	1 470	574
1957	5 790	1 803	1 845	1 562	580
1958	6 256	2 062	1 874	1 681	639
1959	6 637	2 138	1 990	1 806	703
1960	7 269	2 239	2 273	1 966	791
1961	8 247	2 425	2 547	2 436	839
1962	8 680	2 661	2 299	2 922	798

Table 9.6 — Tax revenue, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	tax revenue	direct taxes	customs duties	internal indirect taxes	taxes on the conveyance of property
1963	9 428	2 918	2 390	3 205	915
1964	9 750	3 003	2 216	3 601	930
1965	11 527	4 161	2 863	3 516	987
1966	12 631	4 307	2 798	4 305	1 221
1967	14 928	4 343	2 950	6 473	1 162
1968	16 409	5 101	2 995	7 067	1 246
1969	18 873	6 101	3 423	7 947	1 402
1970	23 011	7 216	4 033	10 133	1 629
1971	24 798	7 579	4 079	11 231	1 909
1972	29 658	8 836	4 540	14 065	2 217
1973	35 498	10 786	4 725	17 088	2 899
1974	42 878	13 381	5 128	21 198	3 171
1975	48 235	13 538	5 581	26 784	2 332
1976	65 884	18 282	8 916	36 623	2 063
1977	91 297	26 463	12 797	49 346	2 691
1978	110 655	34 543	11 651	61 513	2 948
1979	139 896	48 602	10 551	77 014	3 729
1980	192 868	62 842	12 107	112 933	4 986
1981	257 171	91 056	15 600	144 045	6 470
1982	323 628	118 464	19 087	177 856	8 221
1983	434 492	169 624	23 008	228 909	12 951
1984	511 125	199 089	19 730	276 817	15 489
1985	629 366	257 650	22 047	329 108	20 561
1986	760 617	263 781	16 237	454 114	26 485
1987	1 008 140	275 541	18 719	699 393	14 487
1988	1 313 692	405 570	18 898	876 228	12 996
1989	1 621 140	595 830	18 957	999 275	7 078
1990	1 891 002	708 801	21 703	1 145 616	14 882
1991	2 295 918	921 279	19 697	1 335 362	19 580
1992	2 845 346	1 163 907	12 365	1 658 551	10 523
1993	2 786 209	1 108 454	1 725	1 666 247	9 783

Table 9.6 — Tax revenue, 1833-1998 (continued)

year	tax revenue	direct taxes	customs duties	internal indirect taxes	taxes on the conveyance of property
1994	3 160 372	1 179 402	132	1 970 905	9 933
1995	3 396 930	1 311 488	175	2 073 939	11 328
1996	3 651 423	1 511 517	89	2 128 037	11 780
1997	3 992 462	1 670 128	242	2 308 086	14 006
1998	4 397 031	1 841 123	394	2 538 897	16 617

## Table 9.7 — Public debt, 1851-1998

Source — Mata, 1993 and Valério, 1994, prolonged using the same criteria, based on the General State Account as from 1948.

Unit — million escudos.

Remark:

The amounts of the public debt were divided into six categories corresponding to the combination of two debt classifications:

a) One which draws a distinction on the basis of the repayment period:

- consolidated debt, without any fixed repayment period;
- redeemable debt, with a fixed repayment period of more than one year;
- floating debt, with a fixed repayment period of less than one year.

b) One which draws a distinction on the basis of the issue market:

- internal debt, issued on the Portuguese market;
- external debt, issued on foreign markets.

year	effective debt	internal consolidated	external consolidated	internal redeemable	external redeemable	internal floating	external floating
1851	83	34	44	5	0	0	0
1852	91	39	47	4	0	0	0
1853	76	29	42	4	0	0	0
1854	92	42	45	4	1	1	0
1855	92	42	44	4	+ 0	1	0
1856	93	43	44	4	+ 0	2	0
1857	107	52	47	5	+ 0	2	0
1858	106	47	51	5	+ 0	3	0
1859	112	46	58	5	+ 0	2	0
1860	124	48	67	5	+ 0	3	0
1861	136	57	70	5	+ 0	4	0
1862	141	62	70	5	+ 0	3	0
1863	148	61	77	6	+ 0	4	0
1864	170	73	86	5	+ 0	6	0

Table 9.7 — Public debt, 1851-1998 (continued)

year	effective debt	internal consolidated	external consolidated	internal redeemable	external redeemable	internal floating	external floating
1865	183	83	89	4	+ 0	7	0
1866	184	87	87	4	+ 0	6	0
1867	193	93	86	1	+ 0	14	0
1868	226	111	102	1	+ 0	12	0
1869	246	127	105	1	+ 0	13	0
1870	261	146	105	1	+ 0	9	0
1871	308	151	145	1	+ 0	11	0
1872	307	145	145	2	+ 0	16	0
1873	308	145	142	4	0	16	0
1874	343	192	142	7	0	2	0
1875	351	194	142	11	0	4	0
1876	363	204	136	16	0	7	0
1877	380	212	136	15	1	16	0
1878	404	218	154	19	1	11	0
1879	406	205	165	21	1	13	0
1880	421	212	165	21	8	9	5
1881	417	220	165	21	8	3	0
1882	433	194	196	28	8	3	4
1883	444	201	195	28	8	5	5
1884	441	198	195	28	8	5	7
1885	489	213	236	28	8	2	1
1886	494	215	229	28	8	7	7
1887	502	214	229	41	8	10	0
1888	513	226	213	55	8	12	0
1889	526	210	209	20	75	13	0
1890	539	206	209	22	82	17	3
1891	583	205	209	23	127	14	5
1892	587	196	212	31	126	20	3
1893	625	235	205	46	121	17	2
1894	600	224	188	56	110	20	2
1895	599	218	188	56	110	25	1
1896	610	215	188	54	124	27	2

Table 9.7 — Public debt, 1851-1998 (continued)

year	effective debt	internal consolidated	external consolidated	internal redeemable	external redeemable	internal floating	external floating
1897	671	266	188	58	123	33	3
1898	665	253	188	57	122	39	5
1899	615	206	188	57	121	42	+ 0
1900	665	258	188	56	121	42	+ 0
1901	695	279	188	56	120	47	6
1902	683	268	188	55	119	52	2
1903	594	271	0	55	208	55	4
1904	610	282	0	57	206	56	9
1905	646	319	0	56	204	58	7
1906	649	312	0	60	203	62	12
1907	628	294	0	59	201	62	12
1908	627	289	0	59	200	66	14
1909	628	288	0	62	198	69	11
1910	670	333	0	65	189	70	12
1911	656	322	0	64	187	71	12
1912	661	322	0	63	186	78	12
1913	657	322	0	62	184	86	4
1914	648	314	0	65	182	88	+ 0
1915	744	312	0	66	248	116	+ 0
1916	806	316	0	66	265	143	15
1917	883	317	0	66	280	197	22
1918	994	317	0	228	293	130	26
1919	1 164	317	0	336	278	161	73
1920	1 553	316	0	455	413	172	196
1921	2 860	316	0	696	1 014	274	560
1922	4 002	316	0	818	1 552	410	906
1923	6 963	315	0	1 144	3 040	539	1 925
1924	8 048	664	0	1 475	3 281	418	2 211
1925	8 401	685	0	1 483	3 210	821	2 202
1926	8 900	714	0	1 482	3 137	1 350	2 217
1927	9 365	684	0	1 645	5 177	1 765	93
1928	9 573	688	0	1 646	5 243	1 939	57

Table 9.7 — Public debt, 1851-1998 (continued)

year	effective debt	internal consolidated	external consolidated	internal redeemable	external redeemable	internal floating	external floating
1929	9 547	754	0	1 662	5 305	1 825	0
1930	9 432	1 089	0	1 876	5 256	1 211	0
1931	9 583	1 171	0	1 615	5 833	965	0
1932	9 867	1 103	0	1 800	5 857	1 107	0
1933	7 394	1 465	0	1 975	3 330	623	0
1934	7 270	1 915	0	2 001	3 322	32	0
1935	7 208	1 960	0	1 977	3 271	0	0
1936	7 186	2 652	0	1 289	3 245	0	0
1937	7 238	2 736	0	1 277	3 225	0	0
1938	7 200	2 719	0	1 298	3 183	0	0
1939	7 154	2 742	0	1 314	3 099	0	0
1940	6 391	4 122	0	1 315	954	0	0
1941	6 615	4 222	0	1 498	896	0	0
1942	8 243	5 389	0	1 978	875	0	0
1943	8 760	5 938	0	1 960	863	0	0
1944	9 410	6 098	0	2 461	851	0	0
1945	9 884	6 293	0	2 756	835	0	0
1946	10 437	6 588	0	3 023	826	0	0
1947	10 297	6 494	0	2 985	818	0	0
1948	10 230	6 487	0	2 934	810	0	0
1949	10 258	6 744	0	2 868	647	0	0
1950	10 504	6 975	0	2 889	640	0	0
1951	11 018	7 204	0	3 088	725	0	0
1952	11 133	7 164	0	3 216	753	0	0
1953	11 120	7 360	0	3 080	679	0	0
1954	11 652	7 800	0	3 159	693	0	0
1955	11 686	7 974	0	3 028	685	0	0
1956	11 717	8 147	0	2 897	673	0	0
1957	11 734	8 311	0	2 766	656	0	0
1958	14 790	8 481	0	4 310	1 999	0	0
1959	15 330	8 644	0	4 735	1 951	0	0
1960	16 174	9 582	0	4 693	1 899	0	0



Table 9.7 — Public debt, 1851-1998 (continued)

year	effective debt	internal consolidated	external consolidated	internal redeemable	external redeemable	internal floating	external floating
1961	17 552	10 220	0	5 493	1 839	0	0
1962	21 524	10 689	0	5 612	5 223	0	0
1963	24 731	11 391	0	7 017	6 323	0	0
1964	28 276	11 789	0	8 573	7 914	0	0
1965	30 570	12 527	0	9 513	8 530	0	0
1966	32 413	13 275	0	9 722	9 416	0	0
1967	33 152	13 957	0	10 120	9 075	0	0
1968	33 304	14 646	0	10 346	8 312	0	0
1969	34 981	15 447	0	11 332	8 202	0	0
1970	38 658	15 958	0	12 812	9 888	0	0
1971	42 723	16 863	0	14 104	11 756	0	0
1972	46 499	17 463	0	17 620	11 416	0	0
1973	53 626	17 986	0	21 749	13 891	0	0
1974	62 809	17 933	0	29 573	15 303	0	0
1975	100 340	16 421	0	65 523	18 396	0	0
1976	151 397	17 789	0	107 839	25 769	0	0
1977	210 549	17 688	0	160 664	32 197	0	0
1978	292 530	17 597	0	206 198	68 735	0	0
1979	253 773	5 097	0	162 738	85 938	0	0
1980	466 918	5 043	0	353 518	108 357	0	0
1981	709 702	5 021	0	539 660	165 021	0	0
1982	938 834	4 993	0	654 389	279 452	0	0
1983	1 302 540	5 010	0	819 604	477 926	0	0
1984	1 773 625	4 950	0	1 063 088	705 587	0	0
1985	2 343 372	4 941	0	1 402 342	786 089	150 000	0
1986	2 858 292	5 003	0	1 560 819	792 470	500 000	0
1987	3 768 076	5 081	0	2 119 704	843 291	800 000	0
1988	4 511 583	5 086	0	2 734 707	939 570	832 220	0
1989	5 180 194	4 988	0	3 399 082	922 800	853 324	0
1990	5 671 315	4 933	0	4 031 662	673 380	961 340	0
1991	6 584 002	4 858	0	4 704 577	534 850	1 339 717	0
1992	7 048 897	4 892	0	5 440 135	542 934	1 060 936	0

Table 9.7 — Public debt, 1851-1998 (continued)

year	effective debt	internal consolidated	external consolidated	internal redeemable	external redeemable	internal floating	external floating
1993	8 225 777	4 892	0	6 338 336	992 193	890 356	0
1994	9 328 602	3 989	0	6 719 410	1 371 527	1 233 676	0
1995	10 509 910	3 898	0	7 417 901	1 837 491	1 250 620	0
1996	11 161 220	3 895	0	7 831 943	1 973 898	1 351 484	0
1997	11 365 911	3 947	0	7 791 675	2 527 822	1 042 467	0
1998	11 677 376	3 906	0	8 391 725	2 906 044	375 791	0

# CHAPTER 10 — FOREIGN ECONOMIC RELATIONS

PAULA FONTOURA (Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

## 1 — Trade

The first aspect of Portuguese foreign economic relations that was submitted to statistical treatment was evidently that of trade. This happened for two reasons: firstly, it was the aspect which had the largest quantitative expression in the periods before the formation of the contemporary world economy as well as in the very early stages thereof; and, secondly, it was the aspect which provided the State with its greatest source of income, through the collection of customs duties, particularly import duties. Annual statistics of Portuguese foreign trade, classified by types of goods and trading partners, began to be drawn up in rather intermittent fashion in the second third of the nineteenth century and became a regular feature after 1865. These statistics were published under the following names:

a) In 1842, 1843, 1848, 1851, 1855, 1856 and 1861 and from 1865 to 1867 1867 — *Mappas Geraes do Commercio de Portugal*.

b) From 1868 to 1879 — *Estatistica Geral do Commercio de Portugal*.

c) From 1880 to 1896 — *Estatistica do Commercio de Portugal*.

d) From 1897 to 1920 — *Commercio e Navegação*.

e) From 1921 to 1937 — *Estatística Comercial*.

f) From 1938 to 1966 — *Comércio externo*.

g) From 1967 to 1992 — *Estatísticas do Comércio Externo*.

h) Since 1993 — *Estatísticas do Comércio Internacional*.

In 1968, the Foreign Trade Statistics also published a retrospective of the aggregate values of Portuguese foreign trade for the years 1776, 1777, 1796, 1797 and the period from 1799 to 1831.

The overall values of the exports of national and nationalised commodities, expressed on a f.o.b. basis, and of imports for consumption, expressed on a c.i.f. basis, are the figures that are shown in Table 10.1, together with the total values of import duties, included in the State's accounts as from the date (1921) when they ceased to be included in the foreign trade statistics. The aggregate values of exports and imports presented here therefore exclude re-export, goods in transit and transhipment. They also exclude trade in gold and silver bullion and coins.

\*

The accuracy of the Portuguese foreign trade statistics has naturally given rise to some discussion, with it generally being admitted that there is some underestimation of imports because of smuggling and an overestimation of exports, particularly during the 1920s, due to the existence of exchange-rate controls, involving high export duties, even though these were repayable. And it is also generally admitted that the accuracy of the international trade statistics has declined since 1993, due to the abolition of customs records of transactions with European Union countries.

Pedro Lains recently went much further and published corrected series of Portuguese foreign trade statistics for the years in the period from 1842 to 1913, for which there are official data ([Lains, 1992](#)). We decided not to use the corrected series for two reasons — the impossibility of connecting these to the official series for the period after 1913 and the very strange behaviour of the series when compared with the evolution of the exchange-rate. These reasons have already been explained in greater detail elsewhere ([Fontoura, Valério, 1996](#)).

## 2 — Monetary operations

The second aspect of Portuguese foreign economic relations that attracted the attention of the public authorities was evidently that of monetary operations, normally in order to prohibit the export of foreign currency and precious metals from a mercantilist standpoint.

Once such prohibitions had come to an end and regular statistics of foreign trade had begun to be published, some information also became available about monetary operations with other countries, more precisely about the import and export of gold and silver bullion and foreign currency. This type of operation is the only one about which information is available from 1848 to 1890. Thereafter, information also became available about net variations in the reserves of international payment means in the possession of the Bank of Portugal. After 1931, information was also made available by the Bank of Portugal on the net variations in the assets and liabilities of the whole of the banking system in relation to other countries. This is the information that makes it possible to construct an estimation of the balance of monetary operations for the years 1842, 1843, 1848, 1851, 1855, 1856 and the period from 1861 to 1947.

In Table 10.2, this estimation of the balance of monetary operations is compared with the balance of trade, calculated as the difference between exports f. o. b. and imports c. i. f. presented in Table 10.1. An estimation is also presented of invisible movements (current invisibles + capital movements), calculated through the difference between them.

It is possible to argue that the balance of trade introduced here is a crude estimation of the balance of goods and services (excluding tourism) because the payment to foreign operators of the cost of freights and insurance for imported goods is the main item in the balance of services (excluding tourism). For example, during the period from 1948 to 1993, 38 of the 46 years show a difference of less than 10% between the balance of trade and the balance of goods and services (excluding tourism).

It must be underlined that the estimation of monetary movements presented here leads to values that are perfectly plausible for most of the nineteenth century and for the years after 1932, although the values for the period 1899-1931 are fairly implausible (considering the evolution of the exchange rate), suggesting that the (unknown) net variations in the assets and liabilities of the banking system as a whole in relation to other countries were fairly significant.

### **3 — Balance of payments**

Only after the Second World War, or more precisely in 1948, did statistical data relating to most of the items of the Portuguese balance of payments begin to be published on a regular basis. Such data were then stated with regularity in the Estatísticas Financeiras, which changed their name to Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras after 1969, published by the National Statistical Institute, and the Relatórios do Banco de Portugal, although there are some gaps relating to capital movements until the mid-1960s and some changes in the criteria for the organisation of these statistics which make these series less useful.

In Pinheiro et alii, 1997, the Bank of Portugal recently published series of balance of payments statistics for Portugal for the years from 1948 to 1993, organised with uniform criteria. It is these series, prolonged with the definitive data published in the Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras and the Relatórios do Banco de Portugal, which form the basis of Tables 10.3, 10.4 and 10.5.

### **4 — Exchange rates**

There are no reliable data collected and published for the exchange rates of the Portuguese currency unit for the years up to 1854.

From the second half of 1854 to the first half of 1891, the exchange rates of the Portuguese currency unit fluctuated between the import and export points for gold, i.e. around the

par exchange value, which at that time was 4 500 *réis* per pound sterling, in accordance with the rules of the gold standard.

From the second half of 1891 to the first half of 1931, the exchange rates of the Portuguese currency unit floated freely, due to the existence of a conventional monetary regime in Portugal. There were attempts to establish regimes for the control of exchange rates between September and December 1914, between September and October 1918, between December 1919 and May 1920 and after September 1921, but these were not successful, except, in part, for the last one. There were also attempts made to intervene in the foreign exchange market as from June 1922, by buying and selling on account from a Foreign Exchange Equalisation Fund, consisting of foreign currency being obtained through the obligation imposed upon exporters to sell the foreign currency that they had obtained. This measure began to enjoy some success as from July 1924.

Between 1 July and 21 September 1931, the exchange rates of the Portuguese currency unit fluctuated between the conventional import and export points for gold, i.e. around the par exchange value, which at that time was 110 escudos per pound sterling, in accordance with the rules of the gold exchange standard.

Between 22 September 1931 and 31 August 1991, the exchange rates of the Portuguese currency unit were allowed to fluctuate in a controlled form by the Bank of Portugal. From September 1931 to September 1939, this control was designed to establish stability in relation to the pound sterling, except for those occasional periods when the latter currency underwent an exceptional devaluation, when the American dollar and French franc were used as the reference standard. From September 1939 to September 1949, control was designed to establish a joint stability in relation to both the pound sterling and the American dollar. In practice, this corresponded to a gradual transition from one foreign currency to another as the reference standard. From September 1949 to March 1973, control was designed to establish stability in relation to the American dollar (between November 1960 and March 1973, this policy was pursued in the context of the rules of the International Monetary Fund and involved some appreciation in relation to the American dollar between August 1971 and March 1973). From March 1973 to January 1976, control was designed to stabilise the effective exchange rate of the escudo in relation to a basket of foreign currencies considered to be representative of the economy's foreign relations. From January 1976 to August 1991, control was designed above all to guarantee the competitiveness abroad of Portuguese economic activities. During the first half of 1976, a first attempt was made at gradual devaluation, which was interrupted during most of the second half of 1976, and reestablished between December 1976 and February 1977. To the 10 % devaluation already introduced by these measures, a 25 % devaluation was added on 25 February 1977. This was followed by a further attempt at stabilisation, but on 25 August 1977 a crawling-peg scheme (involving a devaluation of 1 % per month) was adopted. On 5 May 1978 there was a 6.1 %

devaluation, accompanied by an acceleration of the crawling-peg devaluation to 1.25 % per month. The crawling-peg devaluation was reduced to 1 % per month in April 1979 and to 0.75 % per month in June of the same year. On 12 February 1980, a revaluation of 6 % was made, and in June of the same year the crawling-peg devaluation was reduced to 0.5 % per month, but in December 1981 it was raised once more to 0.75 % per month. There were further devaluations of 1.3 % on 1 April 1982, 9.4 % on 16 June 1982 and 2 % on 23 March 1983, whilst the crawling-peg devaluation was raised to 1 % per month from that date on, and there was a 12 % devaluation on 22 June 1983. The crawling-peg devaluation was interrupted between November 1985 and March 1986 and then resumed at a rate of 0.9 % per month, which was reduced to 0.7 % per month in June 1986, 0.6 % per month in October 1986, 0.5 % per month in January 1987, 0.4 % per month in January 1988, 0.3 % per month in April 1988 and 3 % per year in January 1989.

After 1 September 1991, as a result of the publication of Decree-Law no. 176/91 of 14 May 1991, which liberalised most exchange rate operations (with the liberalisation process being completed on 16 December 1992), the exchange rates of the Portuguese currency unit were allowed to float freely, due to the disappearance of the previously existing exchange rate controls.

On 6 April 1992, the Portuguese escudo was integrated into the exchange rate mechanism of the European Monetary System, at the initial central rate of 178.735 escudos/ecu. The Bank of Portugal then intervened in the market whenever necessary in order to guarantee that the fluctuation of the escudo in relation to the other currencies of the system took place within the margins established by this system (initially  $\pm 6\%$ ). The central rate and the margins of fluctuation were later changed several times: the central rate became 182.194 escudos/ecu on 23 November 1992, 194.036 escudos/ecu on 13 May 1993, and 200.827 on 6 March 1995. The band of fluctuation was widened to  $\pm 15\%$  in August 1993.

As from 1999, the Portuguese currency unit has ceased to exist legally, due to Portugal's integration in the euro zone, with the conversion factor of 1 euro = 200.482 escudos.

The exchange rates shown in Table 10.6 reflect the prevailing guidelines of the international monetary system and the Portuguese monetary authorities. Until 1931, their almost exclusive concern was the exchange rate with the pound, the predominant currency at the international level and the currency of Portugal's main trading and financial partner. Between 1931 and 1949, there was a transition between the pound and the dollar, beginning with the abandonment of the convertibility of the pound into gold on 21 September 1931 and ending with the devaluation of the pound on 18 September 1949. Between 1949 and 1985, the main concern was the exchange rate with the dollar, the predominant currency at the international level and the currency in which most of Portugal's trading and financial transactions were processed. Between 1985 and 1998, the European unit of account and its main anchor, the Deutschmark, became just as important as the dollar as the reference standard for the Portuguese monetary authorities. With

the integration of Portugal into the euro zone in 1999, the most important exchange rate (for the European monetary authorities in general) became the exchange rate of the euro against the dollar.

## References

FONTOURA, Paula; VALÉRIO, Nuno — Foreign economic relations and economic growth in Portugal 1840-1990. a long term view. Économies et Sociétés, 3/2000.

LAINS, Pedro — Foreign trade and economic growth in the European periphery: Portugal, 1851-1913. Ph. D. thesis presented at the European University Institute, 1992.

PINHEIRO, Maximiano; et alii — Séries longas para a economia portuguesa. Lisboa: Banco de Portugal, 1997.

## List of tables

- 10.1 — Foreign trade and import duties 1776-1998
- 10.2 — Balance of trade and monetary operations 1776-1998
- 10.3 — Balance of payments 1948-1998
- 10.4 — Balance of current accounts 1948-1998
- 10.5 — Balance of capital movements 1965-1998
- 10.6 — Exchange rates 1891-1998



**Table 10.1 — Foreign trade and import duties 1776-1998**

Source — See text.

Unit — Million escudos.

year	exports	imports	import duties
1776	9	10	-
1777	8	9	-
...			
1796	21	24	-
1797	11	19	-
1798	-	-	-
1799	32	33	-
1800	31	33	-
1801	35	34	-
1802	32	29	-
1803	30	28	-
1804	30	30	-
1805	30	35	-
1806	31	31	-
1807	27	29	-
1808	7	3	-
1809	12	14	-
1810	13	21	-
1811	8	43	-
1812	9	39	-
1813	10	38	-
1814	20	32	-
1815	23	37	-
1816	21	30	-
1817	21	27	-
1818	23	31	-
1819	16	24	-

Table 10.1 — Foreign trade and import duties 1776-1998 (continued)

year	exports	imports	import duties
1820	16	21	-
1821	14	22	-
1822	14	19	-
1823	10	17	-
1824	10	17	-
1825	13	16	-
1826	9	15	-
1827	11	16	-
1828	10	12	-
1829	9	12	-
1830	9	13	-
1831	7	10	-
...			
1842	7	10	2
1843	7	12	3
...			
1848	8	11	3
...			
1851	8	12	4
...			
1855	12	16	4
1856	15	19	4
...			
1861	14	25	5
...			
1865	16	24	8
1866	17	25	7
1867	16	26	7
1868	16	24	7
1869	17	22	6
1870	20	24	7
1871	21	24	6
1872	23	27	8

Table 10.1 — Foreign trade and import duties 1776-1998 (continued)

year	exports	imports	import duties
1873	24	30	8
1874	23	27	8
1875	24	34	10
1876	21	30	9
1877	23	31	10
1878	18	29	10
1879	18	33	12
1880	25	32	9
1881	21	33	10
1882	23	34	11
1883	23	31	12
1884	23	33	13
1885	23	33	14
1886	26	37	15
1887	21	37	16
1888	23	38	14
1889	23	42	14
1890	22	44	15
1891	21	40	13
1892	25	31	10
1893	23	38	14
1894	24	36	14
1895	27	40	16
1896	26	40	15
1897	27	40	13
1898	31	49	12
1899	29	51	15
1900	31	60	16
1901	28	58	15
1902	28	56	14
1903	31	59	16
1904	31	62	17
1905	29	61	17

Table 10.1 — Foreign trade and import duties 1776-1998 (continued)

year	exports	imports	import duties
1906	31	60	17
1907	30	62	16
1908	28	67	17
1909	31	65	16
1910	36	70	16
1911	34	68	16
1912	34	75	17
1913	35	89	20
1914	27	69	17
1915	34	76	12
1916	56	129	12
1917	55	137	11
1918	83	178	10
1919	107	229	14
1920	222	691	26
1921	225	933	40
1922	444	1 252	69
1923	684	2 229	147
1924	949	2 958	198
1925	862	2 484	213
1926	736	2 342	271
1927	723	2 663	342
1928	1 029	2 679	455
1929	1 073	2 529	554
1930	945	2 406	565
1931	812	1 674	552
1932	791	1 707	539
1933	802	1 905	555
1934	909	1 965	595
1935	923	2 294	612
1936	1 026	1 994	599
1937	1 202	2 353	578
1938	1 139	2 300	619

Table 10.1 — Foreign trade and import duties 1776-1998 (continued)

year	exports	imports	import duties
1939	1 336	2 077	543
1940	1 619	2 441	483
1941	2 972	2 468	528
1942	3 939	2 477	421
1943	4 035	3 323	437
1944	3 166	3 920	479
1945	3 237	4 050	510
1946	4 587	6 857	867
1947	4 307	9 445	1 131
1948	4 295	10 351	1 073
1949	4 089	9 043	1 225
1950	5 334	7 879	1 071
1951	7 559	9 472	1 348
1952	6 811	9 988	1 488
1953	6 283	9 513	1 357
1954	7 297	10 085	1 484
1955	8 165	11 453	1 641
1956	8 621	12 725	1 738
1957	8 289	14 422	1 845
1958	8 299	13 809	1 874
1959	8 351	13 681	1 990
1960	9 408	15 695	2 273
1961	9 373	18 863	2 548
1962	10 632	16 830	2 299
1963	12 024	18 866	2 390
1964	14 831	22 377	2 341
1965	16 573	26 553	3 029
1966	17 812	29 406	2 992
1967	20 166	30 453	3 112
1968	21 917	33 858	3 112
1969	24 526	37 262	3 533
1970	27 299	45 495	4 896
1971	30 248	52 416	4 786

Table 10.1 — Foreign trade and import duties 1776-1998 (continued)

year	exports	imports	import duties
1972	35 255	60 684	4 890
1973	45 410	74 776	4 725
1974	58 014	118 095	5 128
1975	49 328	99 474	5 581
1976	55 089	130 859	8 916
1977	77 685	190 684	12 797
1978	106 451	230 128	11 650
1979	176 051	331 927	10 551
1980	231 623	475 486	12 107
1981	256 913	609 014	15 600
1982	331 743	756 981	19 087
1983	508 568	899 340	23 006
1984	760 580	1 160 633	19 721
1985	971 747	1 326 529	22 041
1986	1 082 261	1 444 026	16 236
1987	1 311 003	1 965 315	18 449
1988	1 581 957	2 570 265	18 899
1989	2 015 711	3 003 196	18 956
1990	2 335 798	3 589 570	21 703
1991	2 354 083	3 811 076	19 697
1992	2 475 202	4 087 577	12 365
1993	2 474 401	3 882 777	1 725
1994	2 975 639	4 514 296	132
1995	3 501 819	5 028 697	175
1996	3 795 868	5 427 132	89
1997	4 195 050	6 139 709	242
1998	4 461 034	6 914 779	394

## Table 10.2 — Balance of trade and monetary operations 1776-1998

Source — See text.

Unit — Million escudos.

year	balance of trade	invisible operations	monetary operations
1776	- 1	?	?
1777	- 1	?	?
...			
1796	- 3	?	?
1797	- 8	?	?
...			
1799	- 1	?	?
1800	- 2	?	?
1801	+ 1	?	?
1802	+ 3	?	?
1803	+ 2	?	?
1804	0	?	?
1805	- 5	?	?
1806	0	?	?
1807	- 2	?	?
1808	+ 4	?	?
1809	- 2	?	?
1810	- 8	?	?
1811	- 35	?	?
1812	- 30	?	?
1813	- 28	?	?
1814	- 12	?	?
1815	- 14	?	?
1816	- 9	?	?
1817	- 6	?	?
1818	- 8	?	?

Table 10.2 — Balance of trade and monetary operations 1776-1998 (continued)

year	balance of trade	invisible operations	monetary operations
1819	- 8	?	?
1820	- 5	?	?
1821	- 8	?	?
1822	- 5	?	?
1823	- 7	?	?
1824	- 7	?	?
1825	- 3	?	?
1826	- 6	?	?
1827	- 5	?	?
1828	- 2	?	?
1829	- 3	?	?
1830	- 4	?	?
1831	- 3	?	?
...			
1842	- 3	- 3	+ 0
1843	- 5	- 5	+ 0
...			
1848	- 2	+ 2	+ 0
...			
1851	- 4	+ 6	- 2
...			
1854	?	?	- 3
1855	- 4	+ 7	- 3
1856	- 4	+ 5	- 1
...			
1861	- 11	+ 13	- 2
1862	?	?	- 4
1863	?	?	- 2
1864	?	?	0
1865	- 8	+ 5	+ 3
1866	- 8	+ 8	+ 0
1867	- 10	+ 9	+ 1
1868	- 8	+ 7	+ 1



Table 10.2 — Balance of trade and monetary operations 1776-1998 (continued)

year	balance of trade	invisible operations	monetary operations
1869	- 5	+ 5	+ 0
1870	- 4	+ 5	- 1
1871	- 2	+ 6	- 4
1872	- 4	+ 6	- 2
1873	- 7	+ 11	- 4
1874	- 4	+ 5	- 1
1875	- 9	+ 11	- 2
1876	- 9	+ 12	- 3
1877	- 8	+ 7	+ 1
1878	- 10	+ 12	- 2
1879	- 15	+ 14	+ 1
1880	- 8	+ 11	- 3
1881	- 13	+ 16	- 3
1882	- 11	+ 12	- 1
1883	- 8	+ 11	- 3
1884	- 10	+ 13	- 3
1885	- 10	+ 13	- 3
1886	- 11	+ 20	- 9
1887	- 16	+ 20	- 4
1888	- 15	+ 21	- 6
1889	- 18	+ 26	- 8
1890	- 23	+ 27	- 4
1891	- 18	- 8	+ 26
1892	- 6	+ 2	+ 4
1893	- 15	+ 9	+ 6
1894	- 12	+ 9	+ 3
1895	- 13	+ 13	0
1896	- 13	+ 9	+ 4
1897	- 13	+ 11	+ 2
1898	- 18	+ 19	- 1
1899	- 22	+ 20	+ 2
1900	- 29	+ 27	+ 2
1901	- 29	+ 28	+ 1

Table 10.2 — Balance of trade and monetary operations 1776-1998 (continued)

year	balance of trade	invisible operations	monetary operations
1902	- 27	+ 27	+ 0
1903	- 28	+ 28	+ 0
1904	- 31	+ 29	+ 2
1905	- 32	+ 34	- 2
1906	- 30	+ 28	+ 2
1907	- 31	+ 31	+ 0
1908	- 39	+ 38	+ 1
1909	- 34	+ 38	- 4
1910	- 34	+ 30	+ 4
1911	- 34	+ 38	- 4
1912	- 40	+ 42	- 2
1913	- 54	+ 51	+ 3
1914	- 42	+ 43	-1
1915	- 42	+ 44	- 2
1916	- 73	+ 73	0
1917	- 82	+ 83	- 1
1918	- 95	+ 97	- 2
1919	- 122	+ 121	+ 1
1920	- 469	+ 470	- 1
1921	- 708	+ 709	- 1
1922	- 808	+ 809	0
1923	- 1 545	+ 1 545	0
1924	- 2 009	+ 2 037	- 28
1925	- 1 622	+ 1 630	- 8
1926	- 1 606	+ 1 608	- 2
1927	- 1 940	+ 1 933	+ 7
1928	- 1 650	+ 1 645	+ 5
1929	- 1 456	+ 1 455	+ 1
1930	- 1 461	+ 1 462	- 1
1931	- 862	+ 1 850	- 988
1932	- 916	+ 1 181	- 265
1933	- 1 103	+ 1 209	- 106
1934	- 1 056	+ 1 041	+ 15

Table 10.2 — Balance of trade and monetary operations 1776-1998 (continued)

year	balance of trade	invisible operations	monetary operations
1935	- 1 371	+ 1 302	+ 69
1936	- 968	+ 1 178	+ 210
1937	- 1 151	+ 1 382	- 231
1938	- 1 161	+ 996	+ 165
1939	- 741	+ 1 132	- 391
1940	- 822	+ 1 481	- 659
1941	+ 504	+ 3 214	- 3 718
1942	+ 1 462	+ 3 066	- 4 528
1943	+ 712	+ 993	- 1 705
1944	- 754	+ 3 429	- 2 675
1945	- 813	+ 2 669	- 1 856
1946	- 2 270	+ 2 772	- 502
1947	- 5 138	+ 2 339	+ 2 799
1948	- 6 056	+ 2 794	+ 3 262
1949	- 4 954	+ 4 869	+ 85
1950	- 2 545	+ 3 731	- 1 186
1951	- 1 913	+ 4 256	- 2 343
1952	- 3 177	+ 3 672	- 495
1953	- 3 230	+ 5 205	- 1 975
1954	- 2 788	+ 4 213	- 1 425
1955	- 3 288	+ 3 722	- 434
1956	- 4 104	+ 5 112	- 1 008
1957	- 6 133	+ 6 225	- 92
1958	- 5 510	+ 5 705	- 195
1959	- 5 330	+ 5 705	- 375
1960	- 6 287	+ 6 165	+ 122
1961	- 9 490	+ 7 113	+ 2 377
1962	- 6 198	+ 11 239	- 5 041
1963	- 6 842	+ 8 709	- 1 867
1964	- 7 546	+ 10 684	- 3 138
1965	- 9 980	+ 12 206	- 2 226
1966	- 11 594	+ 15 622	- 4 028
1967	- 10 287	+ 14 876	- 4 589

Table 10.2 — Balance of trade and monetary operations 1776-1998 (continued)

year	balance of trade	invisible operations	monetary operations
1968	- 11 941	+ 16 357	- 4 416
1969	- 12 736	+ 15 226	- 2 490
1970	- 18 196	+ 20 421	- 2 225
1971	- 22 168	+ 31 412	- 9 244
1972	- 25 429	+ 33 094	- 7 665
1973	- 29 366	+ 39 200	- 9 834
1974	- 60 081	+ 46 866	+ 13 215
1975	- 50 146	+ 25 194	+ 24 952
1976	- 75 770	+ 42 487	+ 33 283
1977	- 112 999	+ 53 524	+ 59 475
1978	- 123 677	+ 133 033	- 9 356
1979	- 155 876	+ 194 233	- 38 357
1980	- 243 863	+ 278 863	- 35 000
1981	- 352 101	+ 340 881	+ 11 220
1982	- 425 238	+ 432 460	- 7 222
1983	- 390 772	+ 303 456	+ 87 316
1984	- 400 053	+ 459 374	- 59 321
1985	- 354 782	+ 522 634	- 167 852
1986	- 361 765	+ 328 704	+ 33 061
1987	- 654 312	+ 920 896	- 266 584
1988	- 988 308	+ 1 180 683	- 192 275
1989	- 987 485	+ 1 536 600	- 549 115
1990	- 1 253 772	+ 1 746 832	- 493 060
1991	- 1 456 993	+ 2 042 256	- 585 263
1992	- 1 612 375	+ 1 857 584	- 245 209
1993	- 1 408 376	+ 1 863 473	- 455 097
1994	- 1 538 662	+ 1 006 762	+ 531 900
1995	- 1 526 878	+ 788 978	+ 737 900
1996	- 1 631 264	+ 461 964	+ 1 169 300
1997	- 1 944 659	+ 2 164 759	- 220 100
1998	- 2 453 745	+ 2 549 645	- 95 900

## Table 10.3 — Balance of payments 1946-1998

Source — See text.

Unit — Million escudos. From 1994 onwards, the values are presented in the source in billion escudos with a decimal point.

year	current account	capital movements	errors and omissions /adjustments	monetary operations
1948	- 4 157	+ 895	0	+ 3 262
1949	- 3 129	+ 3 044	0	+ 85
1950	- 345	+ 1 531	0	- 1 186
1951	+ 15	+ 2 328	0	- 2 343
1952	-1 623	+ 2 118	0	- 495
1953	-1 573	+ 3 548	0	- 1 975
1954	-1 102	+ 2 527	0	- 1 425
1955	-1 331	+ 1 765	0	- 434
1956	- 881	+ 1 889	0	- 1 008
1957	-1 809	+ 1 901	0	- 92
1958	- 536	+ 731	0	- 195
1959	- 888	+ 1 263	0	- 375
1960	-1 701	+ 1 579	0	+ 122
1961	-7 870	+ 5 493	0	+ 2 377
1962	-1 192	+ 6 233	0	- 5 041
1963	-1 317	+ 3 184	0	- 1 867
1964	+ 56	+ 3 082	0	- 3 138
1965	- 460	+ 1 002	+ 1 684	- 2 226
1966	+ 1 924	+ 3 244	- 1 140	- 4 028
1967	+ 4 866	+ 2 403	- 2 680	- 4 589
1968	+ 1 193	+ 2 644	+ 579	- 4 416
1969	+ 4 693	- 794	- 1 409	- 2 490
1970	+ 1 713	- 104	+ 616	- 2 225
1971	+ 3 894	+ 1 733	+ 3 617	- 9 244
1972	+ 8 627	- 3 779	+ 2 817	- 7 665

Table 10.3 — Balance of payments 1946-1998 (continued)

year	current account	capital movements	errors and omissions /adjustments	monetary operations
1973	+ 6 550	- 3 763	+ 7 047	- 9 834
1974	- 24 507	+ 6 719	+ 4 573	+ 13 215
1975	- 25 101	- 3 021	+ 3 170	+ 24 952
1976	- 43 959	+ 948	+ 9 726	+ 33 283
1977	- 60 518	+ 3 054	- 2 010	+ 59 475
1978	- 35 719	+ 34 178	+ 10 897	- 9 356
1979	+ 1 151	+ 40 846	- 3 640	- 38 357
1980	- 69 179	+ 146 168	- 41 989	- 35 000
1981	- 191 703	+ 178 831	+ 1 652	+ 11 220
1982	- 276 463	+ 255 894	+ 27 790	- 7 222
1983	- 196 301	+ 91 940	+ 17 045	+ 87 316
1984	- 122 848	+ 155 661	+ 26 508	- 59 321
1985	+ 21 037	+ 154 834	- 8 019	- 167 852
1986	+ 174 995	- 239 845	+ 31 790	+ 33 061
1987	+ 90 758	+ 125 093	+ 50 733	- 266 584
1988	- 129 443	+ 158 390	+ 163 328	- 192 275
1989	+ 87 596	+ 427 814	+ 33 704	- 549 115
1990	+ 45 812	+ 337 426	+ 109 821	- 493 060
1991	- 103 767	+ 325 409	+ 363 621	- 585 263
1992	- 39 836	+ 197 343	+ 87 702	- 245 209
1993	+ 1 320	+ 433 950	+ 19 827	- 455 097
1994	- 252 600	- 188 600	- 90 700	+ 531 900
1995	- 107 500	- 160 400	- 470 000	+ 737 900
1996	- 232 300	- 504 400	- 432 600	+ 1 169 300
1997	- 961 800	+ 1 615 100	- 433 200	- 220 100
1998	- 1 295 600	+ 1 652 600	- 261 100	- 95 900

## Table 10.4 — Balance of current accounts 1946-1998

Source — See text.

Unit — Million escudos. From 1994 onwards, the values are presented in the source in billion escudos with a decimal point.

year	commodities	services	tourism	income	transfers	current accounts
1948	- 5 031	- 794	+ 223	+ 327	+ 1 117	- 4 157
1949	- 4 070	- 772	+ 248	+ 256	+ 1 210	- 3 129
1950	- 1 795	- 685	+ 215	+ 271	+ 1 650	- 345
1951	- 998	- 968	+ 217	+ 434	+ 1 329	+ 15
1952	- 2 212	- 742	+ 171	+ 185	+ 975	- 1 623
1953	- 2 326	- 900	+ 187	+ 267	+ 1 199	- 1 573
1954	- 1 832	- 1 080	+ 261	+ 304	+ 1 245	- 1 102
1955	- 2 203	- 1 174	+ 304	+ 248	+ 1 493	- 1 331
1956	- 2 901	- 531	+ 458	+ 270	+ 1 823	- 881
1957	- 4 764	- 425	+ 612	+ 357	+ 2 412	- 1 809
1958	- 4 219	+ 249	+ 563	+ 334	+ 2 536	- 536
1959	- 4 069	- 453	+ 572	+ 254	+ 2 808	- 888
1960	- 4 830	- 558	+ 496	+ 334	+ 2 857	- 1 701
1961	- 7 977	- 2 992	+ 625	+ 32	+ 2 441	- 7 870
1962	- 4 582	- 1 228	+ 1 148	+ 156	+ 3 314	- 1 192
1963	- 5 045	- 1 944	+ 1 829	+ 141	+ 3 700	- 1 317
1964	- 5 507	- 2 075	+ 3 114	+ 418	+ 4 108	+ 56
1965	- 7 631	- 2 070	+ 3 837	+ 580	+ 4 824	- 460
1966	- 9 273	- 2 444	+ 7 242	+ 424	+ 5 974	+ 1 924
1967	- 8 634	- 3 142	+ 7 731	+ 1 091	+ 7 819	+ 4 866
1968	- 10 322	- 4 399	+ 5 827	+ 955	+ 9 133	+ 1 193
1969	- 10 323	- 2 184	+ 4 257	+ 717	+ 12 226	+ 4 693
1970	- 14 686	- 3 665	+ 5 561	- 55	+ 14 559	+ 1 713
1971	- 19 108	- 3 349	+ 8 181	- 853	+ 19 022	+ 3 894

Table 10.4 — Balance of current accounts 1946-1998 (continued)

year	commodities	services	tourism	income	transfers	current accounts
1972	- 21 319	- 2 349	+ 9 581	- 1 170	+ 23 885	+ 8 627
1973	- 22 969	- 6 918	+ 10 733	- 1 414	+ 27 118	+ 6 550
1974	- 53 293	- 7 094	+ 7 978	- 1 383	+ 29 286	- 24 507
1975	- 44 837	- 6 019	+ 1 274	- 4 218	+ 28 700	- 25 101
1976	- 68 745	- 2 694	+ 7 673	- 8 768	+ 28 574	- 43 959
1977	- 100 861	- 5 089	+ 13 798	- 11 834	+ 43 469	- 60 518
1978	- 109 316	- 6 404	+ 25 452	- 18 030	+ 72 579	- 35 719
1979	- 134 483	- 6 734	+ 45 014	- 23 854	+ 121 208	+ 1 151
1980	- 223 850	- 16 591	+ 56 590	- 35 441	+ 150 113	- 69 179
1981	- 337 739	- 26 575	+ 63 732	- 69 748	+ 178 627	- 191 703
1982	- 403 259	- 33 894	+ 66 025	- 120 338	+ 215 002	- 276 463
1983	- 358 442	- 21 267	+ 89 580	- 148 377	+ 242 205	- 196 301
1984	- 351 621	- 23 754	+ 141 555	- 209 329	+ 320 302	- 122 848
1985	- 306 530	- 21 910	+ 198 877	- 229 085	+ 379 686	+ 21 037
1986	- 308 150	+ 4 644	+ 235 502	- 191 985	+ 434 983	+ 174 995
1987	- 585 006	- 21 675	+ 318 173	- 152 643	+ 531 909	+ 90 758
1988	- 891 664	- 72 935	+ 357 883	- 146 432	+ 623 705	- 129 443
1989	- 883 955	- 65 262	+ 437 375	- 116 546	+ 715 985	+ 87 596
1990	- 1 116 936	- 45 941	+ 502 562	- 75 766	+ 781 893	+ 45 812
1991	- 1 365 448	- 72 939	+ 540 187	- 73 413	+ 867 846	- 103 767
1992	- 1 455 425	- 102 136	+ 485 165	- 18 973	+ 1 051 533	- 39 836
1993	- 1 287 889	- 111 131	+ 348 938	- 22 819	+ 1 074 220	+ 1 320
1994	- 1 336 600	- 160 900	+ 399 800	- 51 600	+ 896 700	- 252 600
1995	- 1 350 400	- 137 100	+ 405 200	- 102 300	+ 1 077 000	- 107 500
1996	- 1 442 300	- 138 900	+ 387 200	- 91 500	+ 1 053 200	- 232 300
1997	- 1 760 700	- 196 800	+ 430 900	- 78 700	+ 643 600	- 961 800
1998	- 2 200 300	- 239 400	+ 523 600	- 105 600	+ 726 200	- 1 295 600



## Table 10.5 — Balance of capital movements 1965-1998

Source — See text.

Unit — Million escudos. From 1994 onwards, the values are presented in the source in billion escudos with a decimal point.

year	direct investment	potfolio investment	loans and sundry items	capital movements
1965	+ 1 002	+ 629	+ 86	+ 287
1966	+ 3 244	+ 643	+ 189	+ 2 412
1967	+ 2 403	+ 606	+ 93	+ 1 704
1968	+ 2 644	+ 512	+ 394	+ 1 738
1969	- 794	+ 686	- 243	- 1 237
1970	- 104	+ 475	- 17	- 562
1971	+ 1 733	+ 1 386	- 56	+ 403
1972	- 3 779	+ 1 698	- 615	- 4 862
1973	- 3 763	+ 1 284	- 148	- 4 899
1974	+ 6 719	+ 1 679	+ 392	+ 4 648
1975	- 3 021	+ 2 431	+ 251	- 5 703
1976	+ 948	+ 1 663	+ 442	- 1 157
1977	+ 3 054	+ 1 049	+ 412	+ 1 593
1978	+ 34 178	+ 2 664	+ 194	+ 31 320
1979	+ 40 846	+ 5 214	+ 143	+ 35 489
1980	+ 146 168	+ 7 625	- 309	+ 138 852
1981	+ 178 831	+ 10 697	- 400	+ 168 534
1982	+ 255 894	+ 8 678	+ 1 869	+ 245 347
1983	+ 91 940	+ 14 965	+ 1 445	+ 75 530
1984	+ 155 661	+ 30 513	+ 19 940	+ 105 208
1985	+ 154 834	+ 46 169	+ 34 981	+ 73 684
1986	- 239 845	+ 38 070	+ 52 196	- 330 111
1987	+ 125 093	+ 74 314	+ 134 087	- 83 308
1988	+ 158 390	+ 136 192	+ 180 857	- 158 659

Table 10.5 — Balance of capital movements 1965-1998 (continued)

year	direct investment	potfolio investment	loans and sundry items	capital movements
1989	+ 427 814	+ 269 770	+ 111 449	+ 46 595
1990	+ 337 426	+ 382 707	+ 43 970	- 89 251
1991	+ 325 409	+ 299 979	+ 175 000	- 149 570
1992	+ 197 343	+ 206 543	- 214 199	+ 204 999
1993	+ 433 950	+ 226 640	+ 313 760	- 106 450
1994	- 188 600	+ 161 200	+ 189 600	- 269 100
1995	- 160 400	+ 900	- 99 200	+ 62 000
1996	- 8 900	- 275 200	- 220 200	- 504 400
1997	+ 106 800	+ 357 000	+ 1 151 300	+ 1 615 100
1998	- 205 500	+ 27 400	+ 1 830 700	+ 1 652 600

## Table 10.6 — Exchange rates 1891-1998

Source — Anuário Estatístico, Estatísticas Financeiras, Estatísticas Monetárias e Financeiras and Relatório do Banco de Portugal.

### A — Exchange rate against the pound sterling

year	escudos/£	year	escudos/£	year	escudos/£
1891	4.832	1911	4.889	1931	109.369
1892	5.735	1912	4.974	1932	110.061
1893	5.600	1913	5.235	1933	109.103
1894	5.790	1914	5.663	1934	110.453
1895	5.698	1915	6.746	1935	110.363
1896	5.853	1916	7.032	1936	110.377
1897	6.575	1917	7.726	1937	110.375
1898	7.108	1918	7.901	1938	110.385
1899	6.416	1919	8.196	1939	110.270
1900	6.320	1920	18.329	1940	102.726
1901	6.382	1921	39.384	1941	100.200
1902	5.722	1922	65.084	1942	100.200
1903	5.581	1923	109.714	1943	100.200
1904	5.413	1924	133.950	1944	100.200
1905	4.793	1925	99.210	1945	100.200
1906	4.582	1926	94.770	1946	100.200
1907	4.642	1927	108.360	1947	100.200
1908	5.199	1928	108.250	1948	100.200
1909	5.185	1929	108.250	1949	94.791
1910	4.895	1930	108.250	1950	80.650

Table 10.6 — Exchange rates 1891-1998 (continued)

**B — Exchange rate against the American dollar**

year	escudos/\$	year	escudos/\$	year	escudos/\$
1931	23.861	1954	28.900	1977	38.410
1932	31.601	1955	28.900	1978	44.090
1933	26.603	1956	28.900	1979	49.080
1934	20.027	1957	28.900	1980	50.220
1935	22.396	1958	28.900	1981	61.710
1936	22.172	1959	28.780	1982	79.300
1937	22.291	1960	28.790	1983	110.950
1938	22.553	1961	28.860	1984	146.560
1939	24.944	1962	28.800	1985	170.580
1940	27.564	1963	28.870	1986	149.800
1941	25.198	1964	28.940	1987	141.090
1942	25.054	1965	28.900	1988	144.240
1943	25.050	1966	28.940	1989	157.770
1944	24.977	1967	28.960	1990	142.555
1945	24.920	1968	28.850	1991	144.482
1946	24.940	1969	28.680	1992	134.998
1947	25.014	1970	28.740	1993	160.780
1948	25.065	1971	28.310	1994	166.076
1949	26.150	1972	27.170	1995	149.984
1950	28.900	1973	24.650	1996	154.244
1951	28.900	1974	25.520	1997	175.313
1952	28.900	1975	25.670	1998	180.216
1953	28.900	1976	30.340		

Table 10.6 — Exchange rates 1891-1998 (continued)

**C — Exchange rate against the European unit of account**

year	escudos/ecu
1986	147.220
1987	162.730
1988	170.360
1989	173.670
1990	181.429

year	escudos/ecu
1991	178.833
1992	174.438
1993	187.804
1994	180.128
1995	193.898

year	escudos/ecu
1996	193.170
1997	197.958
1998	202.064

## CHAPTER 11 — CULTURE

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

This chapter brings together the main information available on the cultural characteristics of the Portuguese population. More precisely, it seeks to address three cultural aspects: mother tongue, religion and educational qualifications.

### 1 — Mother tongue

The cultural homogeneity of the Portuguese population from the linguistic point of view is well known. There are no statistics available on the mother tongue of the Portuguese population, but to a large extent this is simply a consequence of the fact that only a tiny minority of people do not use Portuguese as their mother tongue.

Table 11.1 presents the data that can be gathered from the General Population Censuses and which clearly show that this is the case.

It can be seen from the table that:

a) The population of the regions of Barrancos and Miranda do Douro, which are characterised by their traditional use of dialects, from Castilian and Leonese respectively, has never been more than 0.5% of the Portuguese population.

b) The proportion of foreigners in the Portuguese population amounted to between 0.5% and 1% before the First World War, showing a tendency to fall to less than 0.5% between the First World War and the 1960s and rising to slightly above 1% from the 1970s onwards.

This last rise was accompanied by an important change in the composition by nationality of foreigners living in Portugal. Indeed, the Spanish were traditionally the main group of foreigners in Portugal, normally exceeding 1‰ of the Portuguese population and amounting to more than half of the foreigners present in the country. After this group came the Brazilians, with there being no other nationality at any time that represented more than 1‰ of the Portuguese population (the third most important group was almost always the British). However, in the last decades of the twentieth century, the tendency was for four groups to be situated above or very close to 1‰ of the Portuguese population: Angolans, Cape Verdians, Brazilians and French. In the case of the first two groups, one might well wonder whether they were in fact present before 1970, but were not registered as foreigners. This was not in fact the case — indeed, only at the end of the 1960s was there any significant immigration beginning to be recorded from what was at that time the

Portuguese colonial empire to the Metropolis, as is shown by the data on the numbers of Portuguese citizens born in the overseas provinces and living in the metropolitan territory (13 200 in 1940, 18 825 in 1950, 8 835 in 1960, these being the only censuses in which such information was made available). The presence of Brazilians in Portugal is traditional, although it has intensified slightly. The presence of French citizens has clearly increased, perhaps as a result of the numbers of descendants of Portuguese immigrants in France coming to Portugal with French nationality.

## 2 — Religion

The Portuguese population is also known to be culturally homogeneous in religious terms.

In the early days of the existence of Portuguese society, Jews and Muslims still represented an important part of the population, although most Portuguese citizens were already practising Roman Catholicism, which was the official religion at that time, and the Catholic Church represented a public power parallel to that of the State. However, other religions, and in particular the two mentioned above, not only enjoyed respect, but also benefited from legal protection. This situation was nonetheless transformed by the peaceful conversion of the Muslim minority throughout the medieval period, and further altered by the measures introduced in 1496-1497, which forced the Jewish minority to choose between conversion and emigration.. Roman Catholicism continued to be the religion of the majority and the official religion, whilst the Catholic Church continued to be a parallel public power to that of the State, but the other religions were now either prohibited or merely tolerated (as, for example, in the case of foreign communities, such as the English). In 1832, especially through the decree with the force of law No. 40 of 30 July 1832, which was applied throughout the whole country in 1834, the status of a parallel public power enjoyed by the Catholic Church was brought to an end, so that thereafter the Church was clearly submitted to the State, even though Roman Catholicism continued to be the official religion and tolerance increased in relation to other religions. In 1911, the decree with the force of law of 20 April separated the State and the Church, with Roman Catholicism ceasing to be the official religion. From 1940 onwards, relations between the State and the Church were regulated by the Concordat of 7 May of that same year, which did not change the principles of the separation between the two powers and the absence of an official religion.

Table 11.2 shows the data that can be gathered from the General Population Censuses about the religion of the Portuguese population. Roman Catholics have always represented the majority of the population, although their share has been diminishing regularly, from a level of more than 99% in the census taken in the last year of the nineteenth century to little more than

77% in the last census of the twentieth century. Practically all the other shares have tended to increase, although the proportion of the population without any religion reached its highest peak of close on 5% of the total in 1940, diminishing again thereafter, particularly in favour of the group of people that declined to reveal their religion and who amounted to roughly 17% of the population in 1991. It may be supposed that this reflects a fall in anti-religious activism, counterbalanced by an increase in religious indifference.

### 3 — Education

Table 11.3 presents an estimate of the composition of the Portuguese population by educational qualifications (other data on education can be found in section M of Chapter 5). The results obtained are in accordance with what would be expected: the average level of qualification was and still is quite low, corresponding to roughly 1 year of schooling in the mid-nineteenth century and close on 5 years of schooling as the century drew towards its end (clearly still far removed from the present-day 9 years of compulsory education), having, nonetheless, shown a tendency to increase progressively over the period covered by the estimation.

### Bibliography

— Domingos, Alda — Educação e crescimento económico moderno — o caso português (período pós II guerra mundial). M. A thesis presented at the Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão of the Universidade Técnica de Lisboa, 1997.

### Tables

11.1 — Mother tongue of the Portuguese population

11.2 — Religion of the Portuguese population

11.3 — Educational qualifications of the Portuguese population



## Table 11.1 — Mother tongue of the Portuguese population

Source — Recenseamentos Gerais da População.

### A — Population in dialect regions and foreigners

Remark — The Censuses of 1864, 1878 e 1970 did not enquire about, ascertain or publish data on foreigners in Portugal.

year	total population	dialect regions	foreigners
1864	4 286 995	10 998	?
1878	4 698 984	11 936	?
1890	5 102 891	12 590	41 399
1900	5 446 760	13 298	41 728
1911	5 999 146	13 961	41 197
1920	6 080 135	13 737	29 070
1930	6 802 429	14 482	30 443
1940	7 755 423	16 073	32 127
1950	8 510 240	16 568	21 186
1960	8 889 392	22 401	29 579
1970	8 863 252	13 290	?
1981	9 833 014	12 105	108 526
1991	9 862 056	10 526	106 519

### B — Population of the dialect regions

year	total	Barrancos	Miranda do Douro
1864	10 998	1 994	9 004
1878	11 936	2 372	9 564
1890	12 590	2 581	10 009
1900	13 298	2 659	10 639

Table 11.1 — Mother tongue of the Portuguese population (continued)

## B — Population of the dialect regions (continued)

ano	total	Barrancos	Miranda do Douro
1911	13 961	2 753	11 208
1920	13 737	2 999	10 738
1930	14 482	3 210	11 272
1940	16 073	3 489	12 584
1950	16 568	3 264	12 944
1960	22 401	3 429	18 972
1970	13 290	2 610	10 680
1981	12 105	2 157	9 948
1991	10 526	2 018	8 508

## C — Foreigners in Portugal

Remark — The Censuses of 1864, 1878 e 1970 did not enquire about, ascertain or publish data on foreigners in Portugal. The data published in the other Censuses include information on other nationalities that never amounted to as much as one thousandth of the Portuguese population.

year	foreigners	Brazilians	British	Spanish	French	Angolans	Cape Verd.
1890	41 399	6 192	2 264	27 207	2 559	—	—
1900	41 728	7 594	2 292	27 029	1 841	—	—
1911	41 197	12 143	2 516	20 517	1 832	—	—
1920	29 070	4 969	2 300	17 813	1 673	—	—
1930	30 443	8 632	2 219	13 092	1 616	—	—
1940	32 127	4 825	3 908	12 043	1 703	—	—
1950	21 186	3 780	1 865	8 713	1 383	—	—
1960	29 579	6 357	2 122	11 713	1 666	—	—
1981	108 526	9 962	3 105	9 081	12 079	19 567	18 557
1991	106 519	13 499	5 977	6 272	13 740	9 365	15 702

## Table 11.2 — Religion of the Portuguese population

Source — Recenseamentos Gerais da População.

Remark — The Censuses of 1864, 1878, 1911, 1920, 1930 and 1970 did not enquire about, ascertain or publish data on the religion of the Portuguese population. In the Censuses of 1900, 1940, 1950 and 1960, the data on religion relate to the total population. In the Censuses of 1981 and 1991, the data on religion relate to the population aged 12 or over.

year	population	Catholics	other christians	non- christians	no religion	religion not known
1900	5 423 132	5 416 204	4495	515	1 454	462
1940	7 722 152	7 191 913	57 591	5 469	347 284	119 895
1950	8 441 312	8 167 457	?	?	?	273 855
1960	8 889 392	8 701 898	38 005	1 742	147 747	—
1981	7 836 504	6 352 705	101 671	13 727	253 786	1 114 615
1991	8 380 947	6 527 595	127 850	22 158	225 582	1 477 762

## Table 11.3 — Educational qualifications of the Portuguese population

Source — Domingos, 1997, except for the average number of years of schooling, which is an estimate calculated on the basis of other data and the hypotheses put forward in the remark made below.

Unit — Thousands.

Remark — The source should be consulted regarding the methodology and criteria used. As a general rule, it can be said that the qualification levels correspond to the following definitions:

- a) Literacy — knowing how to read and write.
- b) 1st cycle of basic education or primary education — 4 years of schooling.
- c) 2nd cycle of basic education or preparatory education — 6 years of schooling.
- d) 3rd cycle of basic education — 9 years of schooling.
- e) Secondary education — 12 years of schooling.
- f) Middle education — 15 years of schooling.
- g) Higher education — 18 years of schooling.

year	popu- lation	literate	1 <sup>st</sup> cycle (primary)	2 <sup>nd</sup> cycle (prepar- atory)	3 <sup>rd</sup> cycle (basic)	secon- dary	middle	higher	average school years
1940	7 758	3 126	1 109	377	360	107	30	30	0.9
1941	7 800	3 221	1 139	379	361	110	31	30	0.9
1942	7 859	3 324	1 172	381	363	114	31	30	0.9
1943	7 934	3 443	1 205	384	364	117	32	31	0.9
1944	8 013	3 558	1 239	388	366	121	33	31	0.9
1945	8 101	3 678	1 275	392	368	125	34	32	0.9
1946	8 182	3 796	1 314	396	370	129	35	32	1.0
1947	8 258	3 914	1 353	398	372	132	36	32	1.0
1948	8 358	4 054	1 397	403	377	136	37	33	1.0
1949	8 434	4 175	1 443	409	380	141	38	33	1.0
1950	8 512	4 299	1 494	416	384	147	39	34	1.0
1951	8 547	4 393	1 543	424	386	151	41	34	1.0
1952	8 563	4 478	1 595	432	389	154	41	35	1.1

Table 11.3 — Educational qualifications of the Portuguese population (continued)

year	popu- lation	literate	1 <sup>st</sup> cycle (primary)	2 <sup>nd</sup> cycle (prepar- atory)	3 <sup>rd</sup> cycle (basic)	secon- dary	middle	higher	average school years
1953	8 587	4 577	1 656	442	392	156	41	35	1.1
1954	8 607	4 665	1 726	454	395	159	41	35	1.1
1955	8 657	4 770	1 795	466	399	163	42	36	1.2
1956	8 698	4 871	1 869	480	404	167	43	37	1.2
1957	8 737	4 971	1 948	495	409	172	44	38	1.2
1958	8 789	5 089	2 042	512	414	177	45	40	1.3
1959	8 837	5 196	2 166	531	420	183	46	41	1.3
1960	8 891	5 308	2 324	555	426	188	47	42	1.4
1961	8 944	5 402	2 452	582	436	193	49	43	1.5
1962	9 002	5 491	2 582	611	447	198	51	44	1.5
1963	9 040	5 578	2 708	643	459	204	53	45	1.6
1964	9 053	5 640	2 825	674	471	209	54	45	1.7
1965	8 996	5 667	2 923	706	483	216	55	46	1.7
1966	8 871	5 642	3 006	736	494	221	56	46	1.8
1967	8 798	5 657	3 096	765	506	228	57	47	1.9
1968	8 743	5 674	3 186	799	520	236	58	48	1.9
1969	8 696	5 705	3 292	855	536	245	59	48	2.0
1970	8 648	5 725	3 390	912	555	256	60	50	2.1
1971	8 642	5 781	3 484	967	568	265	61	55	2.2
1972	8 622	5 837	3 582	1 030	585	275	62	63	2.3
1973	8 545	5 845	3 660	1 089	604	286	63	71	2.3
1974	8 891	6 153	3 994	1 271	671	314	67	82	2.5
1975	9 457	6 610	4 485	1 482	735	343	75	91	2.6
1976	9 685	6 838	4 738	1 613	786	369	81	103	2.7
1977	9 737	6 952	4 874	1 704	827	399	81	115	2.8
1978	9 772	7 046	4 985	1 780	889	444	85	129	2.9
1979	9 800	7 144	5 085	1 861	947	470	87	142	3.0
1980	9 828	7 233	5 187	1 938	1 004	500	88	155	3.1
1981	9 829	7 332	5 303	2 032	1 069	526	88	170	3.2
1982	9 845	7 433	5 429	2 145	1 130	552	89	181	3.3
1983	9 863	7 545	5 561	2 274	1 197	591	90	192	3.4

Table 11.3 — Educational qualifications of the Portuguese population (continued)

year	popu- lation	literate	1 <sup>st</sup> cycle (primary)	2 <sup>nd</sup> cycle (prepar- atory)	3 <sup>rd</sup> cycle (basic)	secon- dary	middle	higher	average school years
1984	9 881	7 648	5 698	2 405	1 261	643	90	204	3.5
1985	9 884	7 749	5 834	2 538	1 336	687	91	218	3.6
1986	9 890	7 853	5 967	2 679	1 416	732	93	232	3.8
1987	9 883	7 936	6 104	2 820	1 501	782	95	246	3.9
1988	9 867	8 022	6 230	2 964	1 577	841	95	260	4.0
1989	9 854	8 100	6 350	3 104	1 679	909	95	272	4.2
1990	9 832	8 180	6 456	3 241	1 788	983	98	283	4.3

## CHAPTER 12 — POLITICS

NUNO VALÉRIO (Gabinete de História Económica e Social — Instituto Superior de Economia e Gestão — Universidade Técnica de Lisboa)

### 1 — The State

The formation of the Portuguese State began with the existence of the first County of Portugal and the County of Coimbra between the ninth and eleventh centuries and the second County of Portugal between the eleventh and twelfth centuries.

The existence of the Portuguese State was consolidated with the formation of the Kingdom of Portugal in the twelfth century. The Kingdom of Portugal existed between the twelfth and nineteenth centuries as an absolute monarchy and between the nineteenth and twentieth centuries as a constitutional monarchy.

On 5 October 1910, Portugal became a republic.

#### — The Counties of Portugal and Coimbra

The first County of Portugal was formed as a result of the conquest of the regions of Entre-Douro-e-Minho and Trás-os-Montes by the Kingdom of León in the eighth century and the establishment of a regular administration of these regions in the ninth century. In the course of its existence, it was integrated into the Kingdom of León until 1035 and thereafter into the Kingdom of León and Castile. It was abolished in 1071 as a result of the removal from power of the dynasty of Counts, after they had supported the pretender to the throne, who was defeated in a civil war in the Kingdom of León and Castile.

The County of Coimbra was formed as a result of the conquest of the regions of Beira Litoral and Beira Alta by the Kingdom of León in the ninth century and the establishment of a regular administration of these regions in the same century. Throughout this first phase of its existence, it was integrated into the Kingdom of León. It was abolished in the tenth century as a result of the Muslim reconquest of its territory.

The County of Coimbra was reformed as a result of the reconquest of the regions of Beira Litoral and Beira Alta by the Kingdom of León and Castile in the eleventh century and the establishment of a regular administration of these regions in 1064. Throughout this second phase of its existence, it was integrated into the Kingdom of León and Castile. It was abolished in 1093

as a result of the integration of its territory into the County of Galicia, which was formed at that same time.

The second County of Portugal was formed as a result of the separation of the regions of Entre-Douro-e-Minho, Trás-os-Montes, Beira Litoral and Beira Alta from the County of Galicia by the King of León and Castile in 1096. Throughout its existence, it was integrated into the Kingdom of León and Castile. It was transformed into the Kingdom of Portugal (a vassal kingdom of the Kingdom of León and Castile) through a proclamation made by Count Afonso in 1139, which was recognised by the King of León and Castile in 1143 and by the pope in 1176.

Table 12.1 shows the lists of the Counts of the Counties of Portugal and Coimbra.

### — The Kingdom of Portugal

The Kingdom of Portugal was formed as a vassal kingdom of the Kingdom of León and Castile through the treaty of Zamora (1143). It ceased to be a vassal kingdom of the Kingdom of León and Castile through the treaties of Badajoz (1267) and Alcañices (1297). It was connected under the form of a personal union to the states of León and Castile, Aragon, Navarre, Sardinia, Sicily, Naples, Milan, the Netherlands and Burgundy between 1580 and 1640. It became a constitutional monarchy between 1820 and 1823, again between 1826 and 1828, and once more from 1834 to 1910. With regard to the constitutional texts that were in force during these periods, see section 2 further on.

Table 12.2 shows the list of the Kings, Regents and Governors of the Kingdom of Portugal.

### — The Portuguese Republic

Portugal became a republic on 5 October 1910, as a result of a revolution. With regard to the constitutional texts that were in force in the Portuguese Republic, see section 2 further on.

Table 12.3 shows the list of the Presidents of the Portuguese Republic and the direct elections for the Presidents of the Republic held in Portugal.

## 2 — The political regime

Throughout the existence of the Portuguese State, the formal political regime is normally considered to have consisted of a succession of the following regimes:



- 1) Absolute Monarchy.
- 2) Constitutional Monarchy.
- 3) The First Republic.
- 4) The Authoritarian Republic.
- 5) The New Democratic Republic.

### — Absolute Monarchy

The formal characterisation of the political regime of Absolute Monarchy can be briefly summarised as follows:

a) The main organ of sovereignty was the King, a lifelong and hereditary monarch, who held both legislative and executive power. The rules relating to the succession to the throne and to possible regencies (i.e. to the king being replaced when he was incapacitated and unable to carry out his office) existed in the form of common law until the seventeenth century. After the overthrow of the king Filipe III on 1 December 1640 and its subsequent ratification by the *Cortes* (parliament) of Lisbon in 1641, these rules were formalised in writing in the so-called *Actas das Cortes de Lamego* (Proceedings of the Parliament of Lamego) of 1143 (in actual fact, these *cortes* were never held and its proceedings are a construction from the first half of the seventeenth century), which were altered and amended by the *Cortes* of Lisbon of 1674, the *Cortes* of Lisbon of 1679 and the *Cortes* of Lisbon of 1698.

b) There was another important organ of sovereignty, the *Cortes*. The *Cortes* were formed from representatives from the various ranks of the king's subjects — initially only the clergy and the nobility, but later also the common people — and met at the summons of the king, but without any fixed frequency for their meetings. The powers and duties of the *Cortes* were never formally established. In practical terms, depending on the circumstances, they involved deliberations on rules and doubtful cases of succession to the throne and regency, the monetary regime, the tax regime, the declaration of war and the approval of peace treaties.

Table 12.4 shows a list of the meetings of the *Cortes* during the period of Absolute Monarchy.

### — Constitutional Monarchy

During the period of constitutional monarchy, the following constitutional texts were in force:

1) From 4 July 1821 to 1 October 1822, the Bases of the Constitution approved by the *Cortes Constituintes* (Constituent Assembly) on 9 March 1821.

2) From 1 October 1822 to 2 June 1823, the Constitution of 1822 approved by the *Cortes Constituintes* on 23 September 1822 and revoked by the king João VI on the second of these two dates.

The political regime established in the Bases of the Constitution of 1821 and the Constitution of 1822 had as its main characteristics:

a) The separation between the legislative power, exercised by the *Cortes*, elected every two years by direct and qualificatory suffrage (male literate citizens or heads of households), and the executive power, exercised by Secretaries of State appointed by the king.

b) A certain supremacy of the *Cortes* over the king, in so far as the Secretaries of State were answerable to the *Cortes* and the king only had the right to exercise a suspensive veto over the legislation produced by the *Cortes*, not having the power to dissolve them.

3) From 31 July 1826 to 25 April 1828, the Constitutional Charter of 1826, granted by the king Pedro IV on 29 April 1826 and revoked by the regent Miguel (the future king Miguel I) on the second of these dates.

The political regime established in the Constitutional Charter of 1826 sought to conjugate liberal formalism with royal authority and the traditional importance given to the privileged social orders. For this reason:

a) Executive power was entrusted to Ministers, appointed by the king and independent of the *Cortes*.

b) Legislative power was entrusted to the *Cortes*, although the legislation produced by the *Cortes* was subject to the king's approval.

c) The *Cortes* were organised into two chambers: one the *Câmara dos Deputados* (Chamber of Deputies), elected by indirect and property-based (male) suffrage for four-year legislatures, although it could be dissolved by the king; the other, the *Câmara dos Pares* (Chamber of Peers), appointed by the king, but on a lifelong and hereditary basis, and, in practice, including the top members of the ecclesiastical hierarchy (the patriarch of Lisbon, archbishops and bishops) and the high nobility (basically dukes, marquises and counts).

4) From 26 May 1834 to 10 September 1836, the Constitutional Charter of 1826, reintroduced as a result of the civil war between the supporters of the absolutist regime and the supporters of the liberal regime.

5) From 10 September 1836 to 4 April 1838, the Constitution of 1822, reintroduced as a result of a military insurrection.

6) From 4 April 1838 to 10 February 1842, the Constitution of 1838, approved by the *Cortes Constituintes* (Constituent Assembly) on the first of these two dates.

The 1838 Constitution was an attempt to effect a compromise between the 1822 Constitution and the Constitutional Charter of 1826. For this reason:

a) Executive power was entrusted to Ministers, appointed by the king and independent of the *Cortes*.

b) Legislative power was entrusted to the *Cortes*, although legislation produced by the *Cortes* was subject to the king's approval.

c) The *Cortes* were organised into two chambers: one, the *Câmara dos Deputados* (Chamber of Deputies), elected by indirect and property-based (male) suffrage for three-year legislatures, although it could be dissolved by the king; the other, the *Senado* (Senate), elected by direct and property-based (male) suffrage, half of which chamber was renewed whenever elections were held for the *Câmara dos Deputados*, whilst the conditions for the eligibility of members were more restricted than for the *Câmara dos Deputados*.

7) From 10 February 1842 to 5 July 1852, the Constitutional Charter of 1826, again reintroduced in its original version as a result of a military insurrection.

8) From 5 July 1852 to 24 July 1885, the Constitutional Charter, amended by the Additional Act of the *Cortes* on the first of these two dates.

The Additional Act of 1852 was an attempt to effect a compromise between the original version of the 1826 Constitutional Charter and the 1838 Constitution. For this reason, direct election by property-based (male) suffrage was re-established for the *Câmara dos Deputados*. Later, the law of 8 May 1878 extended the right to vote to all male literate citizens or heads of households.

9) From 24 July 1885 to 25 September 1895, the Constitutional Charter, amended by the Additional Act of the *Cortes* on the first of these two dates.

The Additional Act of 1885 established a political regime that was very similar to that of the 1838 Constitution. For this reason:

a) Legislatures of the *Câmara dos Deputados* were reduced to a three-year period.

b) The *Câmara dos Pares* was replaced (without its name being changed) by a senate, formed from: members of the royal family; bishops; 100 life members appointed by the king; 50 members elected by indirect and qualificatory suffrage (male literate citizens or heads of households), half of this chamber being renewed whenever elections were held for the *Câmara dos Deputados*.

10) From 25 September 1895 to 3 April 1896, the Constitutional Charter, amended by decree of the king Carlos I on the first of these two dates.

The main provisions contained in the Additional Act of 1895 partially revoked the Additional Act of 1885, in particular putting an end to the elected part of the *Câmara dos Pares*.

11) From 3 April 1896 to 5 October 1910, the Constitutional Charter, amended by the Additional Act of the *Cortes* on the first of these two dates.

The Additional Act of 1896 essentially confirmed the Additional Act of 1895.

### — The First Republic

The First Republic includes:

1) The period from the Provisional Government of the Republic between 5 October 1910 and 21 August 1911. During this period, the Constitutional Charter remained in force as a suppletive measure, amended by decrees with the force of law issued by the Provisional Government and, in particular, by the proclamation of 5 October 1910, which abolished the Monarchy.

2) The so-called 'Old Republic' between 21 August 1911 and 8 December 1917. During this period, the Constitution of 1911 was in force, approved by the Constituent Assembly on the first of these two dates and revised by the Congress of the Republic through Law No. 635 of 28 September 1916.

The political regime established in the Constitution of 1911, during the period of the 'Old Republic', was a parliamentary regime and its main characteristics were as follows:

a) The separation between the legislative power, exercised by a Congress, and the executive power, exercised by Ministers, appointed by a President of the Republic, elected by the Congress for a mandate of four years.

b) The organisation of the Congress into two chambers: one, the *Câmara dos Deputados* (Chamber of Deputies), elected for three-year legislatures by direct and qualificatory suffrage (male literate citizens or heads of households, although, after the passing of Law No. 3 of 3 July 1913, this was restricted only to literate male citizens); the other, the *Senado* (Senate), elected by the same electoral body, half of which chamber was renewed whenever elections were held for the *Câmara dos Deputados*, whilst the conditions for the eligibility of members were more restricted than for the *Câmara dos Deputados*.

c) The predominance of the Congress over the President of the Republic and the Government, in so far as the Ministers were answerable to the Congress and the President of the Republic had no veto over the legislation produced by the Congress and was not able to dissolve it.

3) The so-called 'New Republic' between 8 December 1917 and 13 February 1919. During this period, the 1911 Constitution was in force, amended by the decree with the force of law No. 3997 of 30 March 1918. This decree was revoked by Law No. 833 of 16 December 1918.

The political regime established in the decree with the force of law No. 3997 of 30 March 1918 was a presidential regime and its main characteristics were as follows:

a) The separation between the legislative power, exercised by a Congress, and the executive power, exercised by Secretaries of State, appointed by a President of the Republic, who was elected by direct and universal (male) suffrage for a mandate to be determined by the Congress, but lasting for at least four years.

b) The organisation of the Congress into two chambers: one, the *Câmara dos Deputados* (Chamber of Deputies), elected for three-year legislatures by direct and universal (male) suffrage; the other, the *Senado* (Senate), consisting of 49 representatives from the municipalities, transitorily elected by direct and universal (male) suffrage, and 28 representatives from professional organisations, with all representatives from each group being elected for three-year legislatures.

c) The predominance of the President of the Republic over the Congress, in so far as, in practice, the Secretaries of State were not answerable to the Congress.

It should be noted that from 19 January 1919 to 13 February 1919, some regions from the North of mainland Portugal were controlled by a monarchist government based in Oporto (the so-called Northern Monarchy).

4) The so-called 'New Old Republic' between 13 February 1919 and 30 May 1926. During this period, the 1911 Constitution was in force, revised by the Congress of the Republic through Laws No. 854 of 20 August 1919, No. 891 of 22 September 1919, No. 1005 of 7 August 1920 and No. 1154 of 27 April 1921.

The revisions made of the 1911 Constitution during the period of the 'New Old Republic' essentially maintained the parliamentary regime of the 'Old Republic', but granted the President of the Republic the possibility of dissolving the Congress.

## — The Authoritarian Republic

The Authoritarian Republic includes:

1) The period of military dictatorship between 30 May 1926 and 11 April 1933. During this period, the 1911 Constitution was in force, amended by the Government through decrees with the force of law No. 11789 of 19 June 1926, No. 12740 of 16 November 1926, No. 15063 of 25 February 1928, No. 15248 of 24 March 1928, No. 15381 of 9 April 1928 and No. 18570 of 8 July 1930.

These alterations established a presidential regime, in particular with the election by direct suffrage of the President of the Republic for mandates of five years.

2) The so-called *Estado Novo* (New State) between 1 April 1933 and 25 April 1974. During this period, the 1933 Constitution was in force, approved by plebiscite on 19 March 1933, under the terms of decrees with the force of law No. 20643 of 22 December 1931, No. 22229 of 21

February 1933 and No. 22241 of 22 February 1933. The 1933 Constitution came into force on 11 April 1933 and was revised by the National Assembly through Laws No. 1885 of 23 March 1935, No. 1910 of 23 May 1935, No. 1945 of 21 December 1936, No. 1963 of 18 December 1937, No. 1966 of 23 April 1938, No. 2009 of 17 September 1945, No. 2048 of 11 June 1951, No. 2100 of 29 August 1959 and No. 3/71 of 16 August 1971.

The political regime established in the 1933 Constitution was a presidential regime and its main characteristics were as follows:

a) The concentration of the regulatory legislative power and the executive power in the hands of a Council of Ministers, appointed by a President of the Republic, who was elected for a mandate of seven years by direct and simultaneously qualificatory (male literate citizens and female university graduates and holders of the certificate of secondary education) and property-based suffrage.

b) The restriction of the powers of the National Assembly to basic legislation. The National Assembly was elected by direct suffrage by the same electoral body as the one that elected the President of the Republic for four-year legislatures, and was advised by a *Câmara Corporativa* (Corporative Chamber), formed from representatives of organised social groups.

c) The predominance of the President of the Republic over the National Assembly, in so far as the Council of Ministers was not answerable to the National Assembly whilst the President of the Republic enjoyed the power of veto over the legislation produced by the National Assembly and had the power to dissolve it.

In practice, it was the President of the Council of Ministers and not the President of the Republic who became the main political head of the regime.

Amongst the alterations made to the 1933 Constitution, during the period when it was in force, attention is drawn to the election of the President of the Republic by an electoral college formed by the National Assembly, the Corporative Chamber and representatives of the municipalities and overseas provinces, which resulted from Law No. 2100 of 29 August 1959. Mention should also be made of the gradual increase in the spread of female suffrage, particularly through Law No. 2015 of 28 May 1946. Law No. 2137 of 26 December 1968 finally submitted female suffrage to the same qualificatory restrictions (literate citizens) as male suffrage.

## — The New Democratic Republic

The New Democratic Republic includes:

1) The transitional period between 25 April 1974 and 25 April 1976. During this period, the 1933 Constitution remained in force as a suppletive measure, amended by the *Junta da Salvação Nacional* (Junta of National Salvation), the *Conselho de Estado* (Council of State) and the

*Conselho da Revolução* (Council of the Revolution) through constitutional laws Nos. 1/74 of 25 April 1974, 2/74 of 14 May 1974, 3/74 of 14 May 1974, 4/74 of 1 July 1974, 5/74 of 12 July 1974, 6/74 of 19 July 1974, 7/74 of 27 July 1974, 8/74 of 9 September 1974, 9/74 of 15 October 1974, 10/74 of 15 November 1974, 11/74 of 25 November 1974, 12/74 of 17 December 1974, 13/74 of 17 December 1974, 1/75 of 30 January 1975, 2/75 of 31 January 1975, 3/75 of 19 February 1975, 4/75 of 13 March 1975, 5/75 of 14 March 1975, 6/75 of 26 March 1975, 7/75 of 17 July 1975, 8/75 of 25 July 1975, 9/75 of 7 August 1975, 10/75 of 7 August 1975, 11/75 of 9 September 1975, 12/75 of 25 September 1975, 13/75 of 12 November 1975, 14/75 of 20 November 1975, 15/75 of 23 December 1975, 16/75 of 23 December 1975, 17/75 of 26 December 1975, 18/75 of 26 December 1975, 19/75 of 31 December 1975, 1/76 of 17 February 1976 and 2/76 of 23 February 1976. Amongst these, attention is drawn to the following laws in particular:

a) Law No. 1/74 of 25 April 1974, which awarded the exercise of legislative and executive powers to the Junta of National Salvation (formed from seven military officers chosen by the Armed Forces Movement).

b) Law No. 3/74 of 14 May 1974, which established a provisional constitutional structure, whose organs of power were the President of the Republic (elected by the Junta of National Salvation from amongst its own members), the Junta of National Salvation (chosen by the Armed Forces Movement), the Council of State (formed from the Junta of National Salvation, a further seven military officers chosen by the Armed Forces Movement and seven personalities chosen by the President of the Republic; this body was given basic legislative power), the Provisional Government (appointed by the President of the Republic; this body was given regulatory legislative and executive powers) and the Constituent Assembly (elected by universal direct suffrage and exclusively responsible for the drawing up of a new constitution).

c) Law No. 5/75 of 14 March 1975, which abolished the Junta of National Salvation and the Council of State and created the Council of the Revolution (formed from the military members of the previous Council of State) and the Assembly of the Armed Forces Movement (elected by the armed forces and having a form that was to be determined by the Council of the Revolution), with the powers previously enjoyed by the Junta of National Salvation and the Council of State being awarded to the Council of the Revolution.

2) The period of the new democratic republic in the strict sense of its meaning after 25 April 1976. During this period, the 1976 Constitution was in force. This was approved by the Constituent Assembly on 2 April 1976, came into force on 25 April 1976 and was revised by the *Assembleia da República* (Assembly of the Republic — the Portuguese Parliament) through constitutional laws Nos. 1/82 of 30 September 1982, 1/89 of 8 July 1989, 1/92 of 25 November 1992 and 1/97 of 20 September 1997.

The political regime established in the 1976 Constitution is a compromise between a parliamentary and presidential regime and its main characteristics are as follows:

a) The separation between the basic legislative power, exercised by a parliament elected for four-year legislatures by direct universal (male and female) suffrage, and the executive and regulatory legislative powers, exercised by a Government, appointed by a President of the Republic, elected for a mandate of five years by direct universal (male and female) suffrage.

b) The Government's answerability to the parliament.

c) The suspensive veto enjoyed by the President of the Republic over the legislation produced by parliament.

d) The possibility of the parliament being dissolved by the President of the Republic.

During a transitional period lasting until the first revision of the constitution, the Council of the Revolution remained in existence, performing the supervisory functions of ensuring respect for the constitution, which were later taken over by a constitutional court.

The revisions of the 1976 Constitution did not essentially alter the political regime established therein. It is, however, worth noting that they significantly reduced the programmatic content that this constitution originally had, particularly by allowing for the reprivatisation of the economy's vast public sector, formed through the nationalisations that took place during the transitional period.

### **3 — The political forces**

Until the end of the eighteenth century, it was not possible to identify the existence of political forces that had an ideological basis or were organised along party lines, except in the context of wars and internal conflicts (in relation to these situations, see section 5 further on).

The evolution of the main political forces existing after the end of the eighteenth century can be divided into six main periods:

1) The period of the struggle for the implementation of a regime governed by a Constitutional Monarchy.

2) The period of the struggle for the definition of the regime governed by a Constitutional Monarchy.

3) The period of stable existence of the Constitutional Monarchy.

4) The First Republic.

5) The Authoritarian Republic.

6) The New Democratic Republic.



### **— The period of the struggle for the implementation of a regime governed by a Constitutional Monarchy**

During this period, corresponding to the end of the eighteenth century and the first third of the nineteenth century, the main existing political forces were:

- a) The absolutist group, i.e. the supporters of an Absolute Monarchy;
- b) The liberal group, i.e. the supporters of a Constitutional Monarchy.

### **— The period of the struggle for the definition of the regime governed by a Constitutional Monarchy**

During this period, which lasted from the early 1830s to the early 1850s, the main existing political forces were:

a) The conservative liberal group, i.e. the supporters of a regime in which the king had supremacy over the parliament (Constitutional Charter of 1826) sometimes further divided into a radical conservative liberal group and a moderate conservative liberal group, also known as the orderly liberal conservative group.

b) The progressist liberal group, i.e. the supporters of a regime in which the parliament had supremacy over the king (1822 Constitution), also sometimes further divided into a radical progressist liberal group and a moderate progressist liberal group.

The absolutist group remained at some distance from the centre of the political struggle.

### **— The period of stable existence of the Constitutional Monarchy**

As a result of the reorganisation of political forces which took place in the early 1850s, the following two main political parties were formed:

a) The *Partido Progressista Regenerador* (Regenerator Progressist Party), or just simply the *Partido Regenerador* (Regenerator Party), in which there was a convergence of most of the moderate conservative group and the moderate progressist group.

b) The *Partido Progressista Histórico* (Historical Progressist Party), or just simply the *Partido Histórico* (Historical Party), in which most of the radical progressist group remained as members.

On the fringes of this reorganisation, there remained:

a) Most of the radical conservative group, sometimes referred to after this as the *Partido Cartista* (Chartist Party) or the *Partido Conservador* (Conservative Party).

b) The absolutist group.

Both these groups gradually lost their importance, practically disappearing in the 1870s.

In 1865, there was a split in the *Partido Progressista Histórico*, giving rise to the *Partido Reformista* (Reformist Party).

In 1870, a new party was formed, the *Partido Constituinte* (Constituent Party), which disappeared a few years afterwards.

In 1875, the following parties were formed:

a) The *Partido Socialista* (Socialist Party), which became later a member of the Socialist International.

b) The *Partido Republicano Português* (Portuguese Republican Party).

In 1876, the *Partido Reformista* and the *Partido Progressista Histórico* merged together to form the *Partido Progressista* (Progressist Party).

In 1901, there was a split in the *Partido Regenerador*, resulting in the formation of the *Partido Regenerador-Liberal* (Liberal Regenerator Party).

Between 1901 and 1910, both the *Partido Regenerador* and the *Partido Progressista* experienced various dissident movements, although these did not give rise to the creation of any formalised parties.

## — The First Republic

As a result of the proclamation of the Portuguese republic, the monarchist political parties disappeared, so that the main political parties were now:

a) The Portuguese Republican Party.

b) The Socialist Party.

c) The *Causa Monárquica* (Monarchist Cause), which grouped together the supporters of the restoration of the constitutional monarchy.

In 1911, there was a split in the Portuguese Republican Party, resulting in the formation of the following main political parties:

a) *União Republicana* (the Republican Union), usually known as *Partido Unionista* (Unionist Party).

b) *Partido Republicano Evolucionista* (Evolutionist Republican Party), or simply *Partido Evolucionista* (Evolutionist Party).

c) *Partido Republicano Português* (Portuguese Republican Party), usually known as *Partido Democrático* (Democratic Party).

In 1918, the *Partido Nacional Republicano* (Republican National Party) was formed to support the so-called “New Republic”.

In 1919, the Unionist Party and the Evolutionist Party merged to form the *Partido Liberal Republicano* (Republican Liberal Party), or more simply the *Partido Liberal* (Liberal Party). However, some evolutionist dissidents broke away from the party to form the *Partido Popular* (Popular Party).

In 1920, there was a split in the Democratic Party, resulting in the formation of the *Núcleo de Acção de Reconstituição Nacional* (National Reconstitution Action Group), usually known as the *Partido Reconstituente* (Reconstituent Party).

In 1921, dissidents from a number of parties were joined by the Popular Party and formed the *Partido Radical* (Radical Party).

In 1921, the *Partido Comunista Português* (Portuguese Communist Party) was founded.

In 1923, the Liberal Party and the Reconstituent Party merged to form the *Partido Nacionalista* (Nationalist Party). However, most of the previous Reconstituent Party broke away again in the same year to form the *Acção Republicana* (Republican Action).

### — The Authoritarian Republic

During the authoritarian republic, the existence of political parties was legally forbidden. The main political forces existing at that time were:

a) The *União Nacional* (UN — National Union), which was formed in 1930 to provide the regime with political support and, after 1969, was known as *Acção Nacional Popular* (ANP — Popular National Action).

b) The *Partido Comunista Português* (PCP — Portuguese Communist Party), which was a clandestine organisation.

c) Various opposition movements with liberal and republican leanings, generally with the participation of the PCP, amongst which the most important were the *Movimento de Unidade Nacional Anti-Fascista* (MUNAF — Anti-Fascist National Unity Movement), which existed during the Second World War, the *Movimento de Unidade Democrática* (MUD — Democratic Unity Movement), which existed immediately after the war, and the *Movimento Democrático Português* (MDP — Portuguese Democratic Movement), formed at the end of the 1960s.

### — The New Democratic Republic

In 1974, the following main political parties were legalised or formed:

a) *Partido do Centro Democrático e Social* (CDS — Democratic and Social Centre Party), which also added *Partido Popular* (PP — Popular Party) to its name in 1993.

b) *Partido Popular Democrático* (PPD — Democratic Popular Party), which changed its name to *Partido Social-Democrata* (PSD — Social Democratic Party) in 1978.

c) *Partido Popular Monárquico* (PPM — Monarchist Popular Party).

d) *Partido Socialista* (PS — Socialist Party).

e) *Partido Comunista Português* (PCP — Portuguese Communist Party).

Between 1979 and 1983, the CDS, PSD and PPM joined together to form a coalition known as the *Aliança Democrática* (AD — Democratic Alliance).

In 1985, the *Partido Renovador Democrático* (PRD — Democratic Renewal Party) was formed, which disappeared at the beginning of the 1990s.

\*

Table 12.5 shows a list of the parliamentary elections held in Portugal during the periods of the Constitutional Monarchy, the First Republic, the New State and the New Democratic Republic, together with their results.

## 4 — Governments

It is reasonable to consider that an organ that could actually be referred to as the Government first came into existence in Portugal only after the effective assumption of the leadership of the state by the queen Maria II in September 1834, for only after that time did it become customary for the various Secretaries of State or Ministers to be appointed and removed from office en bloc and for one of them to be appointed to lead the government.

The heads of government had the official title of: President of the Council of Ministers during the constitutional monarchy; President of the Ministry from the time of the proclamation of the republic until the approval of the 1933 Constitution; President of the Council of Ministers during the period when the 1933 Constitution was in force; and Prime Minister ever since the formation of the first provisional government after the revolution of 25 April 1974.

Table 12.6 presents a list of the governments of Portugal since 1834, indicating the names of their heads and the political forces that supported them.

## 5 — Internal wars and conflicts

Table 12.7 presents a list of the main attempts to modify the organs of power through violent actions or complete breaks with the legal system that had previously been in force.

This list obviously includes all those attempts that have been successful, as well as the most important failed attempts. The identification of the degree of importance to be attributed to these failed attempts necessarily involves a subjective judgement, which is formally assumed here.

Attempts to modify the organs of power through violent actions or complete breaks with the legal system that had previously been in force are implicitly categorised under several headings. The main headings are:

a) Civil wars — Conflicts, which in principle lasted for a prolonged period, involving military operations between forces obedient to two governments, established at different places in the country and controlling different regions of the country.

b) Revolutions — Attempts by political forces to take power through violent actions, using military and civil means.

c) Military insurrections — Attempts by political or military forces to take power through violent actions, using military means.

d) Coups d'état — Attempts by political forces to take power by effecting a complete break with the legal system that had previously been in force, through non-violent actions.

e) Dictatorships — Unconstitutional assumption of the powers of parliament by the government.

## 6 — External wars and conflicts

Table 12.8 presents a list of situations in which the Portuguese state was at war or in conflict with other states.

In this list, an attempt was made to include not only formally declared wars and conflicts (even though these may not have resulted in military operations) and their respective peace treaties, but also undeclared or endemic wars and conflicts, indicating the main military operations carried out, whenever relevant.

## Bibliography

CAETANO, Marcelo — História do direito português [1140-1495]. Lisboa: Verbo, 1981.

MATA, Eugénia — Actividade revolucionária no Portugal contemporâneo — uma perspectiva de longa duração. Análise Social, no. 112-113, 1991.

MATOSO, José (editor) — História de Portugal (7 volumes). Lisboa: Círculo de Leitores, 1992-1994.

PERES, Damião (editor) — História de Portugal (8 volumes). Barcelos: Portucalense Editora, 1938-1940.

RODRIGUES, António Simões (editor) — História de Portugal em datas. Lisboa: Círculo de Leitores, 1994.

SANTOS, Manuel Pinto dos — Monarquia Constitucional — Organização e relações do poder governamental com a Câmara dos Deputados. Lisboa: Assembleia da República, 1986.

SERRÃO, Joel; MARQUES, A. H. de Oliveira (editors) — Nova história da expansão portuguesa (5 published volumes). Lisboa: Estampa, 1986-1998.

SERRÃO, Joel; MARQUES, A. H. de Oliveira (editors) — Nova história de Portugal (7 published volumes). Lisboa: Presença, 1987-1998.

## Tables

12.1 — Counts of the Counties of Portugal and Coimbra

12.2 — Kings of Portugal

12.3 — Presidents of the Portuguese Republic

12.4 — Meetings of the *Cortes* during the period of Absolute Monarchy

12.5 — Parliamentary elections

12.6 — Governments

12.7 — Internal wars and conflicts

12.8 — External wars and conflicts

## Table 12.1 — Counts of the Counties of Portugal and Coimbra

Source — Matoso, 1992-1994; Serrão, Marques, 1987-1998.

### A — First County of Portugal

beginning of office	name	relation to predecessor	remarks
868	Vímara Peres	—	—
?	Lúcio Vimaranes	son	—
?	Diogo Fernandes	son-in-law	—
924	Hermenegildo Gonçalves	son-in-law	—
950	Gonçalo Mendes	son	—
981	Mendo Gonçalves	son	—
1008	Alvito Nunes	cousin	—
?	Nuno Alvites	son	—
1028	Mendo Nunes	son	—
1053	Nuno Mendes	son	(1)

Remarks:

(1) Died in 1071. The dynasty of the Counts of Portugal was deposed by the king of León and Castile.

### B — County of Coimbra — first dynasty

beginning of office	name	relation to predecessor	remarks
878	Hermenegildo Guterres	—	—
?	Aires Mendes	son	—
931	Ximeno Dias	nephew	—
?	Gonçalo Moniz	nephew	—
?	Múnio Gonçalves	son	(2)

Table 12.1 — Counts of the Counties of Portugal and Coimbra (continued)

Remarks:

(2) Deposed in 981 as a result of the Muslim reconquest of the county.

### **C — County of Coimbra — second dynasty**

beginning of office	name	relation to predecessor	remarks
1064	Sesnando	—	—
1091	Martim Moniz	son-in-law	(3)

Remarks:

(3) Ceased to hold the office of Count, as a result of the inclusion of the Country of Coimbra in the County of Galicia in 1093.

### **D — Second County of Portugal**

beginning of office	name	relation to predecessor	remarks
1096	Henrique	—	—
1112	Afonso Henriques	son	(4)

Remarks:

(4) Regency of the Count's mother, Teresa, until 1128. He became King of Portugal by proclamation in 1139, which was recognized by the suzerain in 1143 and by the pope in 1179.



## Table 12.2 — Kings of Portugal

Source — Matoso, 1992-1994; Serrão, Marques, 1987-1998.

beginning of office	name	relation to predecessor	remarks
1143	Afonso I	—	—
1185	Sancho I	son	—
1211	Afonso II	son	—
1223	Sancho II	son	(1)
1248	Afonso III	brother	—
1279	Dinis I	son	—
1325	Afonso IV	son	—
1357	Pedro I	son	—
1367	Fernando I	son	—
1383	Beatriz I	daughter	(2)
1385	João I	uncle	(3)
1433	Duarte I	son	—
1438	Afonso V	son	(4)
1481	João II	son	—
1495	Manuel I	cousin	(5)
1521	João III	son	—
1557	Sebastião I	grandson	(6)
1578	Henrique I	great uncle	—
1580	Filipe I	nephew	(7)
1598	Filipe II	son	(8)
1621	Filipe III	son	(9)
1640	João IV	cousin	—
1656	Afonso VI	son	(10)
1683	Pedro II	brother	—
1706	João V	son	—
1750	José I	son	—
1777	Maria I	daughter	(11) (12)
1816	João VI	son	—
1826	Pedro IV	son	(13)
1826	Maria II	daughter	(14)
1828	Miguel I	uncle	(15)

Table 12.2 — Kings of Portugal (continued)

beginning of office	name	relation to predecessor	remarks
1834	Maria II	niece	(16)
1853	Pedro V	son	(17)
1861	Luís I	brother	—
1889	Carlos I	son	—
1908	Manuel II	son	(18)

Remarks:

(1) Deposed by Pope Innocent IV in 1245. His brother, Afonso (later King Afonso III), was regent until 1248.

(2) Absent from Portugal, with her mother, Leonor Teles, acting as regent. Deposed by her uncle, João (later King João I), in 1383.

(3) Regent between 1383 and 1385.

(4) Between 1438 and 1439, his mother, Leonor, and uncle, Pedro, were regents. Between 1439 and 1446, his uncle, Pedro, was regent. Absent from Portugal between 1476 and 1477, with his son, João (later King João II), acting as regent (João was even proclaimed king in 1477).

(5) Absent from Portugal in 1498, with his sister and widow-queen, Leonor, acting as regent.

(6) Between 1557 and 1562, his grandmother, Catarina, was regent. Between 1562 and 1568, his great uncle, Henrique (later King Henrique I), was regent.

(7) For a few months in 1580, there was a regency of five governors presided over by Jorge Almeida (archbishop of Lisbon). Between 1580 and 1583, part of the country rebelled and remained under the rule of the king's cousin, António. Absent from Portugal between 1583 and 1598. During this period, the country was governed by:

beginning of office	name	remarks
1583	Alberto (cardinal)	viceroys — member of the royal family
1593	Miguel Castro (arcebispo de Lisboa)	president of the Council of Government

Table 12.2 — Kings of Portugal (continued)

(8) Absent from Portugal between 1598 and 1619 and between 1619 and 1621. During this period, the country was governed by:

beginning of office	name	remarks
1598	Miguel Castro (archbishop of Lisbon)	president of the Council of Government
1600	Cristóvão de Moura (marquis of Castelo Rodrigo)	viceroys
1603	Afonso Castelo Branco (bishop of Coimbra)	viceroys
1604	Pedro Castilho (bishop of Leiria)	viceroys
1608	Cristóvão de Moura (marquis of Castelo Rodrigo)	viceroys
1612	Pedro Castilho (bishop of Leiria)	viceroys
1614	Aleixo Meneses (archbishop of Braga)	viceroys
1615	Miguel Castro (archbishop of Lisbon)	viceroys
1617	Diogo Mendonça (marquis of Alenquer)	viceroys
1619	Diogo Mendonça (marquis of Alenquer)	viceroys

(9) Absent from Portugal throughout his reign. During this period, the country was governed by:

beginning of office	name	remarks
1621	Martinho Meixa (bishop of Coimbra)	president of the Council of Government
1623	Diogo de Castro (count of Basto)	president of the Council of Government
1626	Afonso Mendonça (archbishop of Braga)	president of the Council of Government
1627	Afonso Mendonça (archbishop of Lisbon)	governor
1630	Diogo de Castro (conde do Basto)	governor
1631	António de Ataíde (count of Castro Daire and Castanheira)	governors
	Nuno de Mendonça (count of Val de Reis)	
1632	António de Ataíde (count of Castro Daire and Castanheira)	governor
1633	João Manuel (archbishop of Lisbon)	viceroys
1633	The Council of State	as the Council of Government
1633	Diogo de Castro (count of Basto)	viceroys
1634	Margarida (duchess of Mântua)	vicereine — member of the royal family

Deposed by his cousin, the duke of Bragança, who became King João IV.

Table 12.2 — Kings of Portugal (continued)

(10) Between 1656 and 1662, his mother, Luísa, was regent. Deposed in 1667 by his brother, Pedro (later King Pedro II). Pedro was regent between 1667 and 1683.

(11) Her husband took the title of King Pedro III. Her son, João (later King João VI), was regent between 1792 and 1816.

(12) Between 1807 and 1808, the mainland part of the kingdom was occupied by a French and Spanish army, whose commander, Junot, was responsible for governing the country during this period.

(13) Absent from Portugal as a result of his being Emperor of Brazil. His sister, Isabel, acted as regent. He abdicated in favour of his daughter, Maria.

(14) Absent from Portugal. Between 1826 and 1828, her aunt, Isabel, was regent. In 1828, her uncle, Miguel, was regent. Deposed by her uncle, Miguel (later King Miguel I), in 1828.

(15) Part of the country rebelled, recognising Maria II as queen.

(16) Queen of part of the country between 1828 and 1834. Between 1828 and 1831, Pedro Sousa Holstein (marquis of Palmela) was regent. Between 1831 and 1834, her father, Pedro (previously King Pedro IV), was regent. Part of the country rebelled under the regency of Francisco Silva Pereira (count of Antas) between 1846 and 1847. Her husband took the title of King Fernando II.

(17) Between 1853 and 1855, his father, King Fernando II, was regent.

(18) Deposed by a republican revolution in 1910.

## Table 12.3 — Presidents of the Portuguese Republic

Source — Matoso, 1992-1994; Serrão, Marques, 1987-1998; press reports from the time.

beginning of office	name	remarks
1910	Teófilo Braga	(1)
1911	Manuel Arriaga	(2)
1915	Teófilo Braga	(3)
1915	Bernardino Machado	(4)
1917	Sidónio Pais	(5)
1918	João Canto e Castro	(6)
1919	António José de Almeida	(7)
1923	Manuel Teixeira Gomes	(8)
1925	Bernardino Machado	(9)
1926	José Mendes Cabeçadas	(10)
1926	Manuel Gomes da Costa	(11)
1926	António Óscar Carmona	(12)
1951	António Oliveira Salazar	(13)
1951	Francisco Craveiro Lopes	(14)
1958	Américo Tomás	(15)
1974	António Spínola	(16)
1974	Francisco Costa Gomes	(17)
1976	António Ramalho Eanes	(18)
1986	Mário Soares	(19)
1996	Jorge Sampaio	(20)

Remarks:

(1) President of the Provisional Government after the republican revolution (5 October 1910).

(2) Elected by the Congress on 24 August 1911 for a mandate lasting from that date to 5 October 1915. Forced to renounce his presidency after a revolution (May 1915).

(3) Elected as an interim president by the Congress on 29 May 1915 in order to complete the presidential mandate from 1911 to 1915.

Table 12.3 — Presidents of the Portuguese Republic (continued)

(4) Elected by the Congress on 6 August 1915 for a mandate lasting from 5 October 1915 to 5 October 1919. Deposed by a military insurrection on 11 December 1917.

(5) President of the Revolutionary Junta and later President of the Ministry after a military insurrection (December 1917). Elected by direct suffrage on 28 April 1918 for a mandate beginning on 9 May 1915. The duration of the mandate was to be fixed by the Congress and was due to be a minimum of four years. Assassinated on 14 December 1918.

(6) Replaced Sidónio Pais after his death as the senior member of the government. Elected as interim president by the Congress on 16 December 1918 in order to complete the presidential mandate from 1915 to 1919 (completed on 5 October 1919).

(7) Elected by the Congress on 6 August 1919 for a mandate lasting from 5 October 1919 to 5 October 1923.

(8) Elected by the Congress on 6 August 1923 for a mandate lasting from 5 October 1923 to 5 October 1927. Renounced his presidency in December 1925.

(9) Elected as interim president by the Congress on 11 December 1925 in order to complete the presidential mandate from 1923 to 1927. Deposed by a military insurrection in May 1926.

(10) President of the Ministry as a result of a military insurrection (30 May 1926). Deposed by a military insurrection (June 1926).

(11) President of the Ministry as a result of a military insurrection (19 June 1926). Deposed by a military insurrection (July 1926).

(12) President of the Ministry as a result of a military insurrection (9 July 1926). Appointed interim President of the Republic by the Ministry through decree with the force of law No. 12740 of 29 November 1926. Elected by direct suffrage on 25 March 1928 for a five-year mandate beginning on 15 April 1928. This mandate was extended to seven years by the 1933 Constitution. Re-elected by direct suffrage on 17 February 1935 for a seven-year mandate beginning on 26 April 1935, on 8 February 1942 for a seven-year mandate beginning on 15 April 1942 and on 13 February 1949 for a seven-year mandate beginning on 20 April 1949. Died in office on 18 April 1951.

Table 12.3 — Presidents of the Portuguese Republic (continued)

(13) Became interim president as a result of his being President of the Council of Ministers on the death of Óscar Carmona.

(14) Elected by direct suffrage on 22 July 1951 for a seven-year mandate beginning on 9 August 1951.

(15) Elected by direct suffrage on 8 June 1958 for a seven-year mandate beginning on 9 August 1958. Re-elected by an Electoral College on 25 July 1965 for a seven-year mandate beginning on 9 August 1965 and on 25 July 1972 for a seven-year mandate beginning on 9 August 1972. Deposed by a military insurrection (April 1974).

(16) President of the Junta of National Salvation as a result of a military insurrection (25 April 1974). Elected interim President of the Republic by the Junta of National Salvation on 14 May 1974. Renounced office after a military insurrection (September 1974).

(17) Elected interim President of the Republic by the Junta of National Salvation on 30 September 1974 as a result of a military insurrection.

(18) Elected by direct suffrage on 27 June 1976 for a mandate lasting from 14 July 1976 to 14 January 1981. Re-elected by direct suffrage on 7 December 1980 for a mandate from 14 January 1981 to 9 March 1986.

(19) Elected by direct suffrage on 26 January 1986 (1st ballot) and 16 February 1986 (2nd ballot) for a mandate lasting from 9 March 1986 to 9 March 1991. Re-elected by direct suffrage on 13 January 1991 for a mandate from 9 March 1991 to 9 March 1996.

(20) Elected by direct suffrage on 14 January 1996 for a mandate lasting from 9 March 1996 to 9 March 2001.

Table 12.3 — Presidents of the Portuguese Republic (continued)

**Appendix — Elections of the President of the Republic by direct suffrage**

year	elected	other candidates	remarks
1918	Sidónio Pais	—	—
1928	António Óscar Carmona	—	—
1935	António Óscar Carmona	—	—
1942	António Óscar Carmona	—	—
1949	António Óscar Carmona	—	—
1951	Francisco Craveiro Lopes	—	—
1958	Américo Tomás	Humberto Delgado	(1)
1976	António Ramalho Eanes	Otelo Saraiva de Carvalho José Pinheiro de Azevedo Octávio Pato	(2)
1980	António Ramalho Eanes	António Soares Carneiro Otelo Saraiva de Carvalho Carlos Galvão de Melo António Pires Veloso António Aires Rodrigues	(2)
1986	Mário Soares	Diogo Freitas do Amaral Francisco Salgado Zenha Maria Lurdes Pintassilgo	(3)
1991	Mário Soares	Basílio Horta Carlos Carvalhas Carlos Marques	(2)
1996	Jorge Sampaio	Aníbal Cavaco Silva	(2)

(1) Humberto Delgado disputed the result.

(2) Elected president with an overall majority on the first ballot.

(3) No candidate obtained an overall majority on the first ballot. Second ballot between the two candidates receiving most votes on the first ballot, Diogo Freitas do Amaral and Mário Soares.



## Table 12.4 — Meetings of the *Cortes* during the period of Absolute Monarchy

Source — Caetano, 1981, Matoso, 1992-1994; Serrão, Marques, 1987-1998.

date	place	remarks
1211	Coimbra	Plenary Curia (with representatives only from the clergy and the nobility).
1223	Coimbra	Plenary Curia (with representatives only from the clergy and the nobility).
1228-1229	Coimbra	Plenary Curia (with representatives only from the clergy and the nobility).
1235	Coimbra	Plenary Curia (with representatives only from the clergy and the nobility).
1250	Guimarães	Plenary Curia (with representatives only from the clergy and the nobility).
1254	Leiria	Deliberation upon the monetary regime.
1261	Coimbra	Deliberation upon the monetary regime.
1273-1274	Santarém	Discussion about conflicts between the King and the clergy.
1282	Évora	Discussion about conflicts between the King and the clergy.
1285	Lisboa	Discussion about <i>inquirições</i> (royal commissions investigating the legitimacy of feudal tenures).
1288	Guimarães	Discussion about <i>inquirições</i> (royal commissions investigating the legitimacy of feudal tenures).
1289	Lisboa	Discussion about conflicts between the King and the clergy.
1291	Coimbra	—
1305	Lisboa	—
1323	Lisboa	—
1325	Évora	Acclamation of the King Afonso IV. Discussion about the monetary regime.
1331	Santarém	—
1340	Santarém	Approval of social dress code.
1352	Lisboa	—
1361	Elvas	—
1371	Lisboa	—
1372	Porto	Discussion about the monetary regime.

Table 12.4 — Meetings of the *Cortes* during the period of Absolute Monarchy (continued)

date	place	remarks
1372	Leiria	Discussion about the marriage of the King Fernando I.
1373	Santarém	Discussion of the peace with Castile.
1375	Serra d'El Rei	There are doubts about the holding of this meeting.
1376	Leiria	Discussion about the marriage of the heiress to the throne, Beatriz, daughter of the King Fernando I.
1380	Torres Novas	Discussion about the marriage of the heiress to the throne, Beatriz, daughter of the King Fernando I.
1383	Santarém	Discussion about the marriage of the heiress to the throne, Beatriz, daughter of the King Fernando I.
1385	Coimbra	Deliberation upon the sucession to the throne — election of King João I. Creation of a new tax — the <i>sisas</i> (sales tax).
1387	Coimbra	Renewal of the <i>sisas</i> .
1387	Braga	Renewal of the <i>sisas</i> .
1389	Lisboa	—
1390	Coimbra	—
1390-1391	Évora	—
1391-1392	Viseu	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1393	Serra d'El Rei	Discussion of the truce with Castile.
1394-1395	Coimbra	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1398	Coimbra	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1398	Porto	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1399	Lisboa	Discussion of the correction of land rents in view of the increase in prices.
1400	Coimbra	—
1401	Guimarães	—
1402	Montemor-o-Novo	
	— Santarém	Discussion of the truce with Castile.
1404	Lisboa	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1406	Santarém	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1408	Évora	Discussion of the creation of the Houses of younger princes.
1410	Lisboa	—
1412	Lisboa	—
1413	Lisboa	—
1416	Estremoz	—

Table 12.4 — Meetings of the *Cortes* during the period of Absolute Monarchy (continued)

date	place	remarks
1417	Lisboa	Discussion of the correction of land rents in view of the increase in prices.
1418	Santarém	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1427	Lisboa	Discussion of the peace with Castile.
1430	Santarém	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1432	Almeirim	Discussion of the peace with Castile.
1433-1434	Leiria — Santarém	Acclamation of the King Duarte I.
1436	Évora	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1438	Leiria	Discussion of the consequences of the failure of the expedition to Tangier.
1438	Torres Novas	Deliberation on the regency during the minority of the King Afonso V — joint regency of the King's mother, Leonor, and his uncle, Pedro.
1439-1440	Lisboa	Deliberation on the regency during the minority of the King Afonso V — regency of the King's uncle, Pedro.
1441	Torres Vedras	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1442	Évora	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1446	Lisboa	Handing over of the government by the regent Pedro to the King Afonso V.
1447	Évora	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1448	Lisboa	There are doubts about the holding of this meeting.
1451	Santarém	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1455	Lisboa	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1455	Lisboa	Oath of allegiance to the son of the King Afonso V, João (the future King João II), as the heir to the throne.
1456	Lisboa	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1459	Lisboa	—
1460-1461	Lisboa — Évora.	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1465	Guarda	—
1468	Santarém	—
1471	Lisboa	Discussion about the marriage of the heir to the throne, João, son of the King Afonso V. Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1472-1473	Coimbra — Évora	—
1475	Évora	Voting of an extraordinary tax.

Table 12.4 — Meetings of the *Cortes* during the period of Absolute Monarchy (continued)

date	place	remarks
1476	Lisboa	Oath of allegiance to Afonso, son of the heir to the throne, João (the future King João II), as the heir to the throne.
1477	Montemor-o-Novo	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1477	Santarém	Acclamation of the King João II, at the instructions of King Afonso V, who was absent in France. (Afonso V was to retake the throne that same year).
1478	Lisboa	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1481-1482	Évora — Montemor-o-Novo — Viana do Alentejo — Alvito	Acclamation of the King João II.
1482-1483	Santarém	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1490	Évora	Discussion about the marriage of the heir to the throne, Afonso, son of the King João II. Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1495	Montemor-o-Novo	Acclamation of the King Manuel I.
1498	Lisboa	Acceptance of the regency of the widow-queen Leonor during the absence of the King Manuel I in Castile.
1499	Lisboa	Oath of allegiance to the son of the King Manuel I, Miguel, as the heir to the throne.
1502	Lisboa	Oath of allegiance to the son of the King Manuel I, João (the future King João III), as the heir to the throne. Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1525-1526	Torres Novas	Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1535	Évora	Oath of allegiance to the son of the King João III, Manuel, as the heir to the throne. Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1544	Almeirim	Oath of allegiance to the son of the King João III, João, as the heir to the throne. Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1562-1563	Lisboa	Acceptance of the great uncle of the King Sebastião I, Henrique (the future King Henrique I), as the regent. Voting of an extraordinary tax.
1579	Lisboa	Choice of governors in the event of the death of the King Henrique I and of the judges of the succession to the throne.
1579-1580	Almeirim — Santarém	Failed attempt at deliberating on the succession to the throne.
1581	Tomar	Acclamation of the King Filipe I and oath of allegiance to the son of the king, Diogo, as the heir to the throne.

Table 12.4 — Meetings of the *Cortes* during the period of Absolute Monarchy (continued)

date	place	remarks
1582-1583	Lisboa	Oath of allegiance to the son of the King Filipe I, Filipe (the future King Filipe II), as the heir to the throne.
1619	Lisboa	Oath of allegiance to the son of the King Filipe II, Filipe (the future King Filipe III), as the heir to the throne.
1641	Lisboa	Ratification of the deposition of the King Filipe III by the King João IV. Ratification of the <i>real de água</i> , a tax on meat and wine created in 1634 by Filipe III. Creation of a new tax — the <i>décima</i> (a tithe).
1642	Lisboa	—
1645	Lisboa	—
1646	Lisboa	—
1649	Tomar	—
1653	Lisboa	—
1654	Lisboa	—
1668	Lisboa	Ratification of the regency of Pedro (the future King Pedro II), after the deposition of the King Afonso VI.
1673-1674	Lisboa	Deliberation on the rules relating to regencies.
1679	Lisboa	Deliberation on the rules relating to marriages of the heirs to the throne.
1697-1698	Lisboa	Deliberation on the rules relating to the succession to the throne.
1828	Lisboa	Acclamation of the King Miguel I.

## Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections

Source — Matoso, 1992-1994; Serrão, Marques, 1987-1998.

General remark — The list of parliamentary elections is organised by sections corresponding to periods when the framework of political forces remained relatively stable. For more information about the evolution of the framework of political forces, see the introduction to this chapter. For more information about the governments mentioned in the notes, see Table 12.6. For more information about the internal wars and conflicts mentioned in the notes, see Table 12.7. During the period when the Constitutional Charter and the 1911 Constitution were in force, by-elections were held on several occasions, although only those by-elections resulting in a significant alteration to the framework of political forces in parliament are mentioned in the list.

### A — Constitutional Monarchy: first and second periods

date	type	results	notes
1820 Dec	indirect for Constituent Assembly	liberal majority	(1)
1822 Nov	direct for unicameral parliament	liberal majority	(2)
1826 Oct	indirect for the Chamber of Deputies	liberal majority	(3)

Notes:

(1) Elections held as a result of the liberal revolution of 1820. Legislature concluded as a result of the approval of the 1822 Constitution.

(2) Elections held as a result of the approval of the 1822 Constitution. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of parliament in June 1823, when the 1822 Constitution was revoked.

(3) Elections held as a result of the granting of the Constitutional Charter. Parliament composed of the Chamber of Deputies and the Chamber of Peers, with the latter body not being an elected one. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of parliament in March 1828, as a prelude to the revoking of the Constitutional Charter.

Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

## B — Constitutional Monarchy: from its definitive establishment to the Regeneration

date	type	results	notes
1834 Jul	indirect for the Chamber of Deputies	conservative majority	(4) (*)
1836 Jul	indirect for the Chamber of Deputies	conservative majority	(5) (*)
1836 Nov	direct for Constituent Assembly	progressist majority	(6)
1838 Aug	direct for bicameral parliament	progressist majority	(7)
1840 Mar	direct for bicameral parliament	moderate conservative majority	(8)
1842 Jul	indirect for the Chamber of Deputies	radical conservative majority	(9) (*)
1845 Aug	indirect for the Chamber of Deputies	radical conservative majority	(10) (*)
1847 Dec	indirect for the Chamber of Deputies	radical conservative majority	(11) (*)

### Notes:

(4) Elections held as a result of the end of the civil war. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

(5) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the parliament, caused by the Revolution of September 1836.

(6) Elections held as a result of the Revolution of September 1836. Legislature completed as a result of the approval of the 1838 Constitution.

(7) Elections held as a result of the approval of the 1838 Constitution. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (progressists → moderate conservatives).

(8) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the parliament, caused by the Carnival Revolution of February 1842.

(9) Elections held as a result of the restoration of the Constitutional Charter. Legislature completed.

(10) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the rebellion of Maria da Fonte in May 1846.

(11) Elections held after the civil war of Patuleia, as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies caused by the rebellion of Maria da Fonte. Legislature not completed due to

Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the military insurrection of Regeneration in May 1851.

(\*) Parliament composed of the Chamber of Deputies and the Chamber of Peers, with the latter body not being an elected one.

## C — Constitutional Monarchy: from the Regeneration to the Republic

date	type	results	notes
1851 Nov	indirect for the Chamber of Deputies	majority future Regenerator P.	(12) (*)
1852 Dec	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(13) (*)
1856 Nov	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Historic Progressist P.	(14) (*)
1858 May	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Historic Progressist P.	(15) (*)
1860 Jan	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(16) (*)
1861 Apr	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Historic Progressist P.	(17) (*)
1864 Sep	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Historic Progressist P.	(18) (*)
1865 Jul	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Historic Progressist P.	(19) (*)
1868 Mar	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	relative majority Reformist P.	(20) (*)
1869 Apr	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	relative majority Conservative P.	(21) (*)
1870 Mar	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Historic Progressist P.	(22) (*)
1870 Sep	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	relative majority Reformist P.	(23) (*)
1871 Jul	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	relative majority Regenerator P.	(24) (*)
1874 Jul	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(25) (*)
1878 Oct	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(26) (*)
1879 Oct	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Progressist P.	(27) (*)
1881 Aug	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(28) (*)
1884 Jun	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(29) (*)
1887 Mar	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Progressist P.	(30) (**)
	indirect for part of the Chamber of Peers		
1889 Oct	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Progressist P.	(31) (**)
	indirect for part of the Chamber of Peers		
1890 Mar	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(32) (**)
	indirect for part of the Chamber of Peers		
1892 Oct	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(33) (**)
	indirect for part of the Chamber of Peers		



Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

date	type	results	notes
1894 Apr	direct for the Chamber of Deputies indirect for part of the Chamber of Peers	majority Regenerator P.	(34) (**)
1895 Nov	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(35) (*)
1897 May	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Progressist P.	(36) (*)
1899 Nov	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Progressist P.	(37) (*)
1900 Nov	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(38) (*)
1901 Oct	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(39) (*)
1904 Jun	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(40) (*)
1905 Feb	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Progressist P.	(41) (*)
1906 Apr	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(42) (*)
1906 Aug	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Liberal-Regenerator P.	(43) (*)
1908 Apr	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P. and Progressist P.	(44) (*)
1910 Aug	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	majority Regenerator P.	(45) (*)

Notes:

(12) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the Regeneration. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

(21 3) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, after the approval of the Additional Act of 1852. Legislature completed.

(14) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

(15) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Historical Progressist Party → Regenerator Party).

(16) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Regenerator Party → Historical Progressist Party).

(17) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature completed.

(18) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

(19) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (coalition of Regenerator Party + Historical Progressist Party —> Reformist Party) as a result of the Janeirinha rebellion in January 1868.

(20) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

(21) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Conservative Party + Reformist Party —> Historical Progressist Party).

(22) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Historical Progressist Party —> the future Constituent Party), as a result of the Saldanhada military insurrection in May 1870.

(23) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

(24) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature completed.

(25) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed.

(26) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Regenerator Party —> Progressist Party).

(27) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Progressist Party —> Regenerator Party).

(28) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the parliamentary decision to call a constituent parliament.

(29) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies and the elective part of the Chamber of Peers, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Regenerator Party —> Progressist Party).

(30) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies and the elective part of the Chamber of Peers. Legislature completed.

Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

(31) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies and the elective part of the Chamber of Peers, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Progressist Party → Regenerador Party).

(32) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies and the elective part of the Chamber of Peers. Legislature completed.

(33) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies and the elective part of the Chamber of Peers, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

(34) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies and the elective part of the Chamber of Peers. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies and the elective part of the Chamber of Peers, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

(35) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Regenerator Party → Progressist Party).

(36) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature completed.

(37) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Progressist Party → Regenerador Party).

(38) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

(39) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the break-up of the government majority.

(40) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Regenerator Party → Progressist Party).

(41) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Progressist Party → Regenerador Party).

(42) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (Regenerador Party → Liberal-Regenerador Party).

Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

(43) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the break-up of the government majority, without fresh elections being called, i. e. with the subsequent beginning of a dictatorship.

(44) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, after the assassination of the King Carlos I. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies, caused by the change in the political force leading the government (coalition of Progressist Party + dissidents of the Regenerador Party → Regenerador Party).

(45) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Chamber of Deputies. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the parliament, caused by the republican revolution of October 1910.

(\*) Parliament composed of the Chamber of Deputies and the Chamber of Peers, with the latter body not being an elected one.

(\*\*) Parliament composed of the Chamber of Deputies and the Chamber of Peers, with the latter body being a partially elected one.

## D — First Republic

date	type	results	notes
1911 May	direct for Constituent Assembly	overall majority Republican P.	(46)
1913 Nov	direct for the Chamber of Deputies	overall majority Democratic P. in the Chamber of Deputies	(47)
1915 Jun	direct for the bicameral Congress	overall majority Democratic P. in both chambers	(48)
1918 Apr	direct for the bicameral Congress	overall majority National- Republican P. in the Chamber of Deputies and relative majority of the same party in the Senate	(49)
1919 May	direct for the bicameral Congress	overall majority Democratic P. in both chambers	(50)
1921 Jul	direct for the bicameral Congress	overall majority Liberal P. in the Chamber of Deputies and relative majority of the same party in the Senate	(51)

Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

date	type	results	notes
1922 Jan	direct for the bicameral Congress	overall majority Democratic P. in the Senate and relative majority of the same party in the Chamber of Deputies	(52)
1925 Nov	direct for the bicameral Congress	overall majority Democratic P. in both chambers	(53)

Notes:

(46) Election held as a result of the republican revolution. Once the Constitution was completed, the Constituent Assembly was divided into the two chambers of the Congress, with by-elections being held only for the Chamber of Deputies in November 1913. After the split in the Republican Party, and until these by-elections were held, no party had an overall majority in either of the two chambers. Legislature completed. The legislature was prolonged after the revolution in May 1915, as no elections had been held according to the constitutional delay, because of the military insurrection in January 1915.

(47) By-elections.

(48) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Congress, caused by the Revolution of December 1917.

(49) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Congress. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Congress, caused by the end of the 'New Republic' in February 1919.

(50) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Congress. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Congress, caused by the military insurrection of May 1921.

(51) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Congress. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Congress, caused by the radical revolution of October 1921.

(52) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Congress. Legislature completed.

(53) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Congress, caused by the military insurrection of May 1926.

Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

**E — *Estado Novo* (New State)**

date	type	results	notes
1934 Dec	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(54)
1938 Oct	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(55)
1942 Nov	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(56)
1945 Nov	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(57)
1949 Nov	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(58)
1953 Nov	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(59)
1957 Nov	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(60)
1961 Nov	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(61)
1965 Nov	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(62)
1969 Nov	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by UN	(63)
1973 Oct	direct for the National Assembly	all seats won by ANP	(64)

Notes:

(54) Election held as the result of the approval of the 1933 Constitution. Legislature completed.

(55) Elections held as the result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed.

(56) Elections held as the result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the National Assembly, formally justified by the increase in the number of deputies, but in practical terms brought about to promote the electoral legitimisation of the regime in the political context of the period immediately after the Second World War.

(57) Elections held as the result of the dissolution of the National Assembly. Legislature completed.

(58) Elections held as the result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed.

(59) Elections held as the result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed.

(60) Elections held as the result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed.

(61) Elections held as the result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed.

(62) Elections held as the result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed..

(63) Elections held as the result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed.

(64) Elections held as the result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the National Assembly, caused by the military insurrection of 25 April 1974.

Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

## F — New Democratic Republic

date	type	results	notes
1975 Apr	direct for the Constituent Assembly	relative majority PS	(65)
1976 Apr	direct for the Assembly of the Republic	relative majority PS	(66)
1979 Dec	direct for the Assembly of the Republic	overall majority AD	(67)
1980 Oct	direct for the Assembly of the Republic	overall majority AD	(68)
1983 Apr	direct for the Assembly of the Republic	relative majority PS	(69)
1985 Oct	direct for the Assembly of the Republic	relative majority PSD	(70)
1987 Jul	direct for the Assembly of the Republic	overall majority PSD	(71)
1991 Oct	direct for the Assembly of the Republic	overall majority PSD	(72)
1995 Oct	direct for the Assembly of the Republic	relative majority PS	(73)
1999 Oct	direct for the Assembly of the Republic	relative majority PS	(74)

### Notes:

(65) Elections held as a result of the military insurrection of 25 April 1974. Legislature completed as a result of the approval of the 1976 Constitution.

(66) Elections held as a result of the approval of the 1976 Constitution. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Assembly of the Republic, caused by the impossibility of forming a stable government majority.

(67) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Assembly of the Republic. Legislature completed.

(68) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Assembly of the Republic, caused by the break-up of the Democratic Alliance.

(69) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Assembly of the Republic. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Assembly of the Republic, caused by the break-up of the government coalition between the Socialist Party and the Social-Democratic Party.

(70) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Assembly of the Republic. Legislature not completed due to the dissolution of the Assembly of the Republic, caused by the approval of the motion of censure brought by the Assembly of the Republic against the minority government led by the Social-Democratic Party.

(71) Elections held as a result of the dissolution of the Assembly of the Republic. Legislature completed.

Table 12.5 — Parliamentary elections (continued)

(72) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed.

(73) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature. Legislature completed.

(74) Elections held as a result of the end of legislature.



## Table 12.6 — Governments

Source — Matoso, 1992-1994; Santos, 1986; Serrão, Marques, 1987-1998.

General remarks:

1 — The list of governments is organised by sections corresponding to periods when the framework of political forces remained relatively stable. For more information on the evolution of the framework of political forces, see the introduction to this chapter.

2 — The governments shown as being coalition governments included ministers from most of the main parties. The governments shown as being non-party governments were formed from outside the framework of parties, being based on the political support of the King or the President of the Republic. The parties shown in brackets as forming part of the political base of some governments did not participate in the government, but gave it their support in parliament for some time.

3 — For more information about the elections mentioned in the notes, see Table 12.5. For more information about the internal wars and conflicts mentioned in the notes, see Table 12.7.

### A — From the definitive establishment of the Constitutional Monarchy to the Regeneration

date	head of government	political base	order / notes
1834-09-24	Pedro Sousa Holstein (Duke of Palmela)	conservatives	(1)
1835-04-28	Vitório Andrade Barbosa (Count of Linhares)	conservatives	(2)
1835-05-27	João Oliveira Daun (Marquis of Saldanha)	moderate conservatives + + moderate progressists	(3)
1835-11-18	José Jorge Loureiro	moderate conservatives + + moderate progressists	(4)
1836-04-20	António Severim Noronha (Duque of Terceira)	conservatives	(5)
1836-09-10	José Carneiro Sousa (Count of Lumiares)	progressists	(6)
1836-11-03	José Portugal Castro (Marquis of Valença)	conservatives	(7)
1836-11-05	B. Sá Nogueira (Viscount of Sá da Bandeira)	progressists	(8)
1837-06-01	António Dias de Oliveira	progressists	(9)
1837-08-10	B. Sá Nogueira (Viscount of Sá da Bandeira)	progressists	(10)

Table 12.6 — Governments (continued)

date	head of government	political base	order / notes
1839-04-18	R. Pinto Pizarro (Baron of Ribeira de Sabrosa)	progressists	(11)
1839-11-26	José Travassos Valdez (Count of Bonfim)	orderly conservatives	(12)
1841-06-09	Joaquim António de Aguiar	orderly conservatives	(13)
1842-02-07	Pedro Sousa Holstein (Duke of Palmela)	orderly conservatives	(14)
1842-02-09	António Severim Noronha (Duke of Terceira)	radical conservatives	(15)
1846-05-20	Pedro Sousa Holstein (Duke of Palmela)	progressists + + orderly conservatives	(16)
1846-10-06	João Oliveira Daun (Marquis of Saldanha)	radical conservatives	(17) (*)
1847-04-28	—	radical conservatives	(18) (*)
1847-12-18	João Oliveira Daun (Duke of Saldanha)	radical conservatives	(19)
1849-06-18	António Costa Cabral (Count of Tomar)	radical conservatives	(20)
1851-04-26	António Severim Noronha (Duke of Terceira)	radical conservatives	(21)

Notes:

(1) Government formed after the declaration of the age of majority of the queen Maria II.

(2) The President of the Council was only appointed on 1835-05-04.

(4) The President of the Council was only appointed on 1835-11-25.

(6) Government formed as a result of the September Revolution.

(7) Government formed as a result of the Belenzada.

(8) Government formed as a result of the defeat of the Belenzada.

(9) The President of the Council was only appointed on 1837-06-02.

(15) Government formed as a result of the Carnival Revolution.

(16) Government formed as a result of the Maria da Fonte rebellion.

(17) Government formed as a result of the Emboscada coup d'état.

(18) No President of Council was appointed for this government.

(\*) Between October 1846 and June 1847 some regions of mainland Portugal were controlled by a progressist government based in Oporto and led by Francisco Silva Pereira (Count of Antas).

Table 12.6 — Governments (continued)

**B — From the Regeneration to the Republic**

date	head of government	political base	order /notes
1851-05-01	João Oliveira Daun (Duke of Saldanha)	Regenerator Party	(22)
1856-06-06	Nuno Moura Barreto (Marquis of Loulé)	Historic Progressist Party	(23)
1859-03-16	António Severim Noronha (Duke of Terceira)	Regenerator Party	(24)
1860-05-01	Joaquim António Aguiar	Regenerator Party	(25)
1860-07-04	Nuno Moura Barreto (Marquis of Loulé)	Historic Progressist Party	(26)
1865-04-17	B. Sá Nogueira (Marquis of Sá da Bandeira)	Historic Progressist Party	(27)
1865-09-04	Joaquim António Aguiar	Regenerator Party + + Historic Progressist Party	(28)
1868-01-04	António José Ávila (Count of de Ávila)	Reformist Party + + Conservative Party	(29)
1868-07-22	B. Sá Nogueira (Marquis of Sá da Bandeira)	Conservative Party + + Reformist Party	(30)
1869-08-11	Nuno Moura Barreto (Duke of Loulé)	Historic Progressist Party	(31)
1870-05-19	João Oliveira Daun (Duke of Saldanha)	military later future Constituent Party	(32)
1870-08-29	B. Sá Nogueira (Marquis of Sá da Bandeira)	coalition (excluding Constituent Party)	(33)
1870-10-29	Ant. José Ávila (Marquis of Ávila e Bolama)	Conservative Party + + Reformist Party later Conservative Party (+ Regenerator Party)	(34)
1871-09-13	Fontes Pereira de Melo	Regenerator Party (+ Conservative Party + + Constituent Party)	(35)
1877-03-05	António José Ávila (Duke of Ávila)	Conservative Party (+ Regenerator Party)	(36)
1878-01-29	Fontes Pereira de Melo	Regenerator Party	(37)
1879-06-01	Anselmo José Braamcamp	Progressist Party	(38)
1881-03-25	António Rodrigues Sampaio	Regenerator Party	(39)
1881-11-14	Fontes Pereira de Melo	Regenerator Party	(40)
1883-10-24	Fontes Pereira de Melo	Regenerator Party	(41)
1886-02-20	José Luciano de Castro	Progressist Party	(42)

Table 12.6 — Governments (continued)

date	head of government	political base	order /notes
1890-01-14	António Serpa Pimentel	Regenerator Party	(43)
1890-10-14	João Crisóstomo Sousa	non-party	(44)
1891-05-25	João Crisóstomo Sousa	non-party	(45)
1892-01-17	José Dias Ferreira	non-party	(46)
1892-05-27	José Dias Ferreira	non-party	(47)
1893-02-22	Ernesto Hintze Ribeiro	Regenerator Party	(48)
1897-02-07	José Luciano de Castro	Progressist Party	(49)
1898-08-18	José Luciano de Castro	Progressist Party	(50)
1900-06-25	Ernesto Hintze Ribeiro	Regenerator Party	(51)
1903-02-28	Ernesto Hintze Ribeiro	Regenerator Party	(52)
1904-10-20	José Luciano de Castro	Progressist Party	(53)
1905-12-27	José Luciano de Castro	Progressist Party	(54)
1906-03-20	Ernesto Hintze Ribeiro	Regenerator Party	(55)
1906-05-19	João Franco Castelo Branco	Liberal-Regenerator Party	(56)
1907-05-02	João Franco Castelo Branco	Liberal-Regenerator Party	(57)
1908-02-04	Francisco Ferreira do Amaral	Progressist Party + Regenerator Party	(58)
1908-12-25	Artur Campos Henriques	Progressist Party + + dissidents regenerators	(59)
1909-04-11	Sebastião Sousa Teles	Progressist Party + + dissidents regenerators	(60)
1909-05-14	Venceslau Lima	Progressist Party + + dissidents regenerators	(61)
1909-12-22	Francisco Veiga Beirão	Progressist Party + + dissidents regenerators	(62)
1910-06-26	António Teixeira de Sousa	Regenerator Party	(63)

Notes:

(22) Government formed as a result of the Regeneration.

(25) Joaquim António Aguiar became head of government on the death of the Duke of Terceira.

(29) Government formed as a result of the Janeirinha.

Table 12.6 — Governments (continued)

(32) Government formed as a result of the Saldanhada.

(48) Dictatorship, i. e. the Chamber of Deputies and the elective part of the Chamber of Peers were dissolved and no elections were called, between November 1894 and January 1896.

(57) Dictatorship, i. e. the Chamber of Deputies was dissolved and no elections were called.

## C — First Republic

date	head of government	political base	notes
1910-10-05	Teófilo Braga	Republican Party	(64)
1911-09-03	João Chagas	coalition	(65)
1911-11-12	Augusto Vasconcelos	coalition	(66)
1912-06-16	Duarte Leite	coalition	(67)
1913-01-09	Afonso Costa	Democratic Party (+ Unionist Party)	(68)
1914-02-09	Bernardino Machado	Democratic Party	(69)
1914-06-23	Bernardino Machado	Democratic Party	(70)
1914-12-12	Azevedo Coutinho	Democratic Party	(71)
1915-01-25	Pimenta de Castro	military + + Evolutionist Party + + Unionist Party	(72)
1915-05-17	José de Castro	Democratic Party	(73)
1915-06-18	José de Castro	Democratic Party	(74)
1915-11-29	Afonso Costa	Democratic Party	(75)
1916-03-15	António José de Almeida	Democratic Party + + Evolutionist Party	(76)
1917-04-25	Afonso Costa	Democratic Party (+ Evolutionist Party)	(77)
1917-12-11	Sidónio Pais	military + + Unionist Party later	(78)
1918-12-14	Canto e Castro	National Republican P.	(79)
1918-12-16	Tamagnini Barbosa	National Republican P.	(80) (**)

Table 12.6 — Governments (continued)

date	head of government	political base	notes
1919-01-27	José Relvas	coalition (including National Republican P.)	(81) (**)
1919-03-30	Domingos Pereira	coalition (excluding National Republican P.)	(82)
1919-06-29	Sá Cardoso	Democratic Party	(83)
1920-01-21	Domingos Pereira	Democratic Party	(84)
1920-03-08	António Maria Baptista	Democratic Party	(85)
1920-06-06	Ramos Preto	Democratic Party	(86)
1920-06-26	António Maria da Silva	Democratic Party + Popular Party	(87)
1920-07-19	António Granjo	Liberal Party + + Reconstituent Party	(88)
1920-11-20	Álvaro de Castro	Reconstituent Party + + Popular Party	(89)
1920-11-30	Liberato Pinto	Democratic Party + + Reconstituent Party + + Popular Party	(90)
1921-03-02	Bernardino Machado	Democratic Party + + Reconstituent Party	(91)
1921-05-23	Barros Queirós	Liberal Party	(92)
1921-08-30	António Granjo	Liberal Party	(93)
1921-10-19	Manuel Maria Coelho	Radical Party	(94)
1921-11-05	Maia Pinto	Radical Party	(95)
1921-12-16	Cunha Leal	coalition (excluding Radical Party)	(96)
1922-02-06	António Maria da Silva	Democratic Party	(97)
1923-11-15	Ginestal Machado	Nacionalist Party	(98)
1923-12-18	Álvaro de Castro	Reconstituent Party + Democratic Party	(99)
1924-07-06	Rodrigues Gaspar	Democratic Party	(100)
1924-11-22	Domingues dos Santos	Democratic Party	(101)
1925-02-15	Vitorino Guimarães	Democratic Party	(102)
1925-07-01	António Maria da Silva	Democratic Party	(103)
1925-08-01	Domingos Pereira	Democratic Party	(104)
1925-12-17	António Maria da Silva	Democratic Party	(105)

Table 12.6 — Governments (continued)

Notes:

(64) Government formed as a result of the republican revolution of 1910.

(72) Government formed as a result of the military insurrection of January 1915 (*Movimento das Espadas*).

(73) Government formed as a result of the revolution led by the Democratic Party in May 1915. On 1915-05-15, João Chagas was appointed head of government, but he was physically incapacitated and unable to take power.

(78) Government formed as a result of the December Revolution.

(79) Canto e Castro became head of government as a result of the assassination of Sidónio Pais.

(\*\*) Between 19 January and 13 February 1919, some regions of the north of mainland Portugal were controlled by a monarchist government based in Oporto and presided over by Henrique Paiva Couceiro.

(83) On 1920-01-15, a Liberal Party government was appointed, led by Fernandes Costa. Due to a rebellion, this government did not take office.

(86) Ramos Preto became head of government on the death of António Maria Baptista.

(92) Government formed as a result of the military insurrection of 1921.

(94) Government formed as a result of the October Revolution.

## D — Military dictatorship and New State

date	head of government	political base	order / notes
1926-05-30	Mendes Cabeçadas	military	(106)
1926-06-19	Gomes da Costa	military	(107)
1926-07-09	Óscar Carmona	military	(108)
1928-04-18	Vicente de Freitas	military	(109)
1929-07-08	Ivens Ferraz	military	(110)

Table 12.6 — Governments (continued)

date	head of government	political base	order / notes
1930-01-21	Domingos Oliveira	military	(111) (***)
1932-07-05	Oliveira Salazar	military	(112)
1933-04-11	Oliveira Salazar	UN	(113)
1936-01-18	Oliveira Salazar	UN	(114)
1968-09-27	Marcelo Cetano	UN later ANP	(115)

## Notas:

(106) Government formed as a result of the military insurrection of May 1926.

(107) Government formed as a result of the military insurrection of June 1926.

(108) Government formed as a result of the military insurrection of July 1926.

(\*\*\*) During part of 1931, the region of Madeira was controlled by a democratic government based in Funchal and presided over by Adalberto Sousa Dias.

(113) Government formed as a result of the approval of the 1933 Constitution.

**E — New democratic republic**

date	head of government	political base	order / notes
1974-04-25	António Spínola	military	(116)
1974-05-15	Palma Carlos	PPD + PS + PCP	(117)
1974-07-17	Vasco Gonçalves	military + PPD + PS + PCP	(118)
1974-09-30	Vasco Gonçalves	military + PPD + PS + PCP	(119)
1975-03-26	Vasco Gonçalves	military + PPD + PS + PCP	(120)
1975-08-08	Vasco Gonçalves	military	(121)
1975-09-19	Pinheiro de Azevedo	military + PPD + PS + PCP	(122)
1976-06-23	Almeida Costa	military + PPD + PS + PCP	(123)
1976-07-23	Mário Soares	PS	(124)
1978-01-23	Mário Soares	PS + CDS	(125)
1978-08-29	Nobre da Costa	non-party	(126)
1978-11-22	Mota Pinto	non-party	(127)
1979-07-31	Lurdes Pintassilgo	non-party	(128)



Table 12.6 — Governments (continued)

date	head of government	political base	order / notes
1980-01-03	Sá Carneiro	AD	(129)
1980-12-04	Freitas do Amaral	AD	(130)
1981-01-09	Pinto Balsemão	AD	(131)
1982-09-04	Pinto Balsemão	AD	(132)
1983-06-09	Mário Soares	PS + PSD	(133)
1985-11-06	Cavaco Silva	PSD (+ PRD)	(134)
1987-08-17	Cavaco Silva	PSD	(135)
1991-12-04	Cavaco Silva	PSD	(136)
1995-10-28	António Guterres	PS	(137)
1999-10-25	António Guterres	PS	(138)

## Notes:

- (116) Responsibility for government taken over by the Junta of National Salvation as a result of the military insurrection of April 1974.
- (117) 1st provisional government without the participation of the military.
- (118) 2nd provisional government.
- (119) 3rd provisional government formed as a result of the insurrection of September 1974.
- (120) 4th provisional government formed as a result of the military insurrection of March 1975.
- (121) 5th provisional government.
- (122) 6th provisional government.
- (123) Almeida Costa became head of government as a result of the physical incapacity of Pinheiro de Azevedo.
- (124) 1st constitutional government formed as a result of the 1976 elections for the first constitutional legislature.
- (125) 2nd constitutional government formed as a result of the rejection of a motion of confidence in the 1st constitutional government by the Assembly of the Republic.
- (126) 3rd constitutional government formed as a result of the Social Democratic Centre leaving the 2nd constitutional government.
- (127) 4th constitutional government formed as a result of the rejection of the programme of the 3rd constitutional government by the Assembly of the Republic.
- (128) 5th constitutional government formed as a result of the approval of a motion of a lack of confidence in the 4th constitutional government by the Assembly of the Republic.
- (129) 6th constitutional government formed as a result of the 1979 elections held for the completion of the first constitutional legislature (elections brought forward).

Table 12.6 — Governments (continued)

- (130) Freitas do Amaral became head of government on the death of Sá Carneiro.
- (131) 7th constitutional government formed as a result of the 1980 elections for the 2nd constitutional legislature.
- (132) 8th constitutional government formed as a result of the Social Democratic Centre leaving the 7th constitutional government.
- (133) 9th constitutional government formed as a result of the 1983 elections for the 3rd constitutional legislature (elections brought forward due to the split in the Democratic Alliance).
- (134) 10th constitutional government formed as a result of the 1985 elections for the 4th constitutional legislature (elections brought forward due to the Social-Democratic Party leaving the 9th constitutional government).
- (135) 11th constitutional government formed as a result of the 1987 elections for the 5th constitutional legislature (elections brought forward due to the approval of a motion of censure in the 10th constitutional government by the Assembly of the Republic).
- (136) 12th constitutional government formed as a result of the 1991 elections for the 6th constitutional legislature.
- (137) 13th constitutional government formed as a result of the 1995 elections for the 7th constitutional legislature.
- (138) 14th constitutional government formed as a result of the 1999 elections for the 8th constitutional legislature.

## **Table 12.7 — Internal wars and conflicts**

Source — Mata, 1991; Matoso, 1992-1994; Rodrigues, 1994; Serrão, Marques, 1987-1998.

### **— Conflicts in the reign of D. Afonso II**

During most of the reign of Afonso II, there were conflicts between the king and members of the clerical orders and the nobility, which sporadically broke out into civil war.

### **— Conflicts in the reign of Sancho II and deposition of the King Sancho II**

During most of the reign of Sancho II, there were conflicts between the king and members of the clerical orders and the nobility, which sporadically broke out into civil war.

As a result of these conflicts, Pope Innocent IV deposed the King Sancho II in 1245 and handed the regency to his brother Afonso. From 1245 to 1248 (the date when Sancho II died in exile in Toledo), there was a civil war between the supporters of the deposed king and the supporters of the regent.

After the death of Sancho II, Afonso was accepted as King Afonso III without any problems.

### **— Conflict between the King Dinis I and the heir to the throne**

From 1322 to 1323, there was a conflict between the King Dinis I and the heir to the throne, Afonso, the future King Afonso IV, as a result of the king's alleged favouring of Afonso Sanches, the bastard brother of the heir to the throne. In 1325, after the death of the king Dinis I, there was again a short conflict between Afonso IV and Afonso Sanches, which can be considered a continuation of the previous conflict.

### — Conflict between the king Afonso IV and the heir to the throne

From 1355 to 1356, there was a conflict between the King Afonso IV and the heir to the throne, Pedro, the future King Pedro I, as a result of the sentencing to death and execution of Inês de Castro, the wife of the heir to the throne, against the king's wishes.

### — First War of Succession in Portugal

In view of the intervention of the Kingdom of Castile in this war and its close connections with the Fourth War of Succession in Castile, it has been decided that this should be included in Table 12.8.

### — Struggle for the regency during the minority of the King Afonso V

After the death of the King Duarte I in 1438, the regency during the minority of his son and successor, Afonso V, was disputed between the mother of the new king, Leonor, and one of his uncles, Pedro. From 1438 to 1439, they exercised the regency jointly, as a result of a decision made by the *Cortes* of Torres Novas in 1438. From 1439 to 1446, the regency was exercised individually by Pedro, as a result of a decision made by the *Cortes* of Lisbon in 1439.

### — Conflict between the King Afonso V and the ex-regent Pedro

In 1448, there was a conflict between the King Afonso V and his uncle and ex-regent, Pedro. In a battle fought at Alfarrobeira Pedro was killed, bringing an end to the conflict.

### — Conspiracies against the King João II

In 1483 and 1484, there were conspiracies against the King João II, led by the Duke of Bragança, Fernando, and the Duke of Viseu, Diogo. The Duke of Bragança was sentenced to death and executed in 1483 and the Duke of Viseu was killed by the king himself in 1484.

### — Struggle for the regency during the minority of the King Sebastião I

After the death of the King João III in 1557, the regency during the minority of his grandson and successor, Sebastião I, was disputed between the new king's grandmother, Catarina, and a great uncle of the new king, Henrique, later King Henrique I. From 1557 to 1562, the regency was exercised by Catarina. From 1562 to 1568, the regency was exercised by Henrique, a situation that was confirmed by the *Cortes* held in Lisbon from 1562-1563.

### — Second War of Succession in Portugal

In view of the intervention in this war by the states of León and Castile, Aragon, Navarre, Sardinia, Sicily, Naples, Milan, the Netherlands and Burgundy, it has been decided that this should be included in Table 12.8.

### — Rebellions during the reign of Filipe III

As a result of the creation of a new tax, the *real de água*, by the King Filipe III, which had not been approved by the *Cortes*, there were popular rebellions against the new tax and against the king, with those taking place in Évora in 1637 being particularly significant.

### — Deposition of the King Filipe III

On 1 December 1640, there was a revolution in Lisbon which led to the overthrow of the King Filipe III and his replacement by the Duke of Bragança, João, as King João IV.

The change of king was accepted throughout the whole of the Portuguese territory, except for the fortress of Ceuta, and ratified by the *Cortes* held in Lisbon in 1641.

For further information about the deposition of the King Filipe III and the Second War of Succession in Portugal, and about the subsequent War of Restoration, see table 12.8.

### — Deposition of the King Afonso VI

In 1667, the King Afonso VI was deposed by his brother Pedro, later King Pedro II, who took over the regency until the death of Afonso VI in 1683. This situation was ratified by the *Cortes* of Lisbon held in 1668.

### — Liberal revolution of 1817

In 1817, there was a liberal revolution in Lisbon, which ended in failure.

### — Liberal revolution of 1820

On 24 August 1820, there was a liberal revolution in Oporto, followed by another revolution of an identical nature in Lisbon on 15 September 1820.

As a result of the triumph of these liberal revolutions in 1820, elections were held for the *Cortes Constituintes* (Constituent Assembly), which prepared the Constitutional Bases approved on 9 March 1821 and the Constitution approved on 23 September 1822.

### — Military insurrection of November 1820 (*Martinhada*)

On 11 November 1820, there was a military insurrection in Lisbon. This insurrection was formally of a radical liberal nature directed against the government formed as a result of the liberal revolutions of the same year. The insurrection was a failure.

### — Absolutist military insurrection of 1823 (*Vila-Francada*)

On 27 May 1823, there was an absolutist military insurrection in Lisbon. This insurrection is generally referred to as the Vila-Francada, because the rebels travelled to Vila Franca de Xira, where the King João VI joined them after the collapse of the liberal administration in Lisbon.

As a result of this absolutist military insurrection, the Constitution which had been approved on 23 September 1822 was revoked on 2 June 1823.

### — Radical absolutist military insurrection of 1824 (*Abrilada*)

On 30 April 1824, there was a radical absolutist military insurrection in Lisbon. This insurrection was generally referred to as the *Abrilada* and was directed against the policy of compromise with the moderate absolutist and moderate liberal groups that had been pursued by the King João VI after the Vila-Francada. This military insurrection ended in failure.

### — Liberal military insurrection of 1826

On 12 July 1826, there was a liberal military insurrection in Oporto.

As a result of this military insurrection, the Constitutional Charter, granted by the King Pedro IV on 29 April 1826, was promulgated on 31 July 1826 by the regent Isabel.

### — Absolutist rebellions of 1826-1827

As a result of the promulgation of the Constitutional Charter on 31 July 1826 by the regent Isabel, there were absolutist rebellions at various points around the country, resulting in military operations between August 1826 and March 1827. The conflict ended with the advantage being gained by the liberal government in Lisbon, supported by a British expeditionary force.

### — Absolutist restoration of 1828

On 13 March 1828, the regent Miguel dissolved the *Cortes* set up under the terms of the Constitutional Charter of 1826, and, on 5 March 1828, he summoned the *Cortes* under the traditional terms of the Absolutist Monarchy. These *Cortes* acclaimed him as king and deposed the Queen Maria II.

### — Civil war of 1828-1834 between absolutists and liberals

From May 1828 to May 1834, a civil war was fought between the absolutist government (i.e. one that was bound to a regime of Absolute Monarchy) of the King Miguel I, initially based in Lisbon, and later in Santarém and Évora, and a liberal government (i.e. one that was bound to a

Table 12.7 — Internal wars and conflicts (continued)

regime of Constitutional Monarchy), which recognised the Queen Maria II, based initially in Oporto, and then later in Angra, in Oporto once more, and finally in Lisbon.

The war began as a result of the revoking, by the regent Miguel in April 1828, of the Constitutional Charter in force at that time, through the summoning of the *Cortes* by social orders. These *Cortes* met in May 1828 and deposed the Queen Maria II, replacing her with the regent (the queen's uncle). The absolutist government initially managed to control the whole of the Portuguese territory, except for Oporto, Madeira and Angra. Liberal uprisings at other points around the territory were rapidly quelled.

Military operations began with the conquest, by the absolutist government, of Oporto in July 1828 and Madeira in August 1828. The liberal forces in Oporto were expatriated to France and England, some of them by sea (this withdrawal is normally referred to as the *Belfastada*, deriving from the name of the ship, the *Belfast*, which took the army away), and some by land through Galicia. As a result of these conquests, the absolutist government in Lisbon took control of the whole country, except for the city of Angra in the Azores, where the liberal government was established.

On 4 October 1828, as a result of the battle of Pico do Celeiro, the liberal government of Angra took complete control of the island of Terceira.

On 11 August 1829, the absolutist forces attempted to disembark in Terceira. This attempted invasion was defeated at the battle of Praia.

From April to August 1831, the liberal government of Angra gradually established its control over the whole of the archipelago of the Azores, through successful disembarkations on a number of islands (Pico in April, São Jorge in May, Faial in June, Graciosa in July and São Miguel in August) and the acceptance of its authority without resistance on the remaining islands of the archipelago (Flores and Corvo in July and Santa Maria in August).

On 8 July 1832, a liberal expedition set sail from the Azores, where the liberal forces had been strengthened by the emigrants from the mainland battles of 1828 and by foreign mercenaries, and disembarked on the Atlantic beaches to the west of Oporto. Throughout the following weeks, the liberal forces occupied Oporto and tried unsuccessfully to establish control over the south of Entre-Douro-e-Minho and the north of Beira Litoral, ending up being surrounded on land by the absolutist forces in Oporto. As it was impossible for the absolutist forces to encircle their opponents in a similar fashion by sea, the liberal forces were able to maintain their supplies and withstood the siege until the summer of 1833.

On 24 June 1833, a liberal expedition from Oporto disembarked at Cacela and spent the next few days occupying the Algarve coast. On 3 July 1833, the liberal fleet defeated the absolutist fleet at the battle of Cape St Vincent. In the following weeks, a liberal force marched on Lisbon, defeated the absolutist forces that were defending the city at the battle of Cova da Piedade (23 July 1833) and occupied Lisbon on 24 July 1833. The absolutist forces still



Table 12.7 — Internal wars and conflicts (continued)

attempted to lay siege to Lisbon by land and recapture the city, but they were forced to retreat to Santarém on 10 October 1833.

During the following months, the liberal forces defeated the absolutist forces at the battles of Pernes (30 January 1834), Almoester (18 February 1834) and Asseiceira (16 May 1834), finally forcing them to retreat to Évora.

Meanwhile, the Portuguese civil war had become closely linked to a similar war being fought in Spain, through the alliance between the Portuguese absolutist party (which supported the King Miguel I) and the Spanish absolutist party (which supported the claimant Carlos) and between the Portuguese liberal party (which supported Queen Maria II) and the Spanish liberal party (which supported Queen Isabel, who was curiously also the niece of the absolutist candidate). The liberal alliance was extended to include the intervention of Great Britain and France through the Quadruple Alliance Treaty of 22 April 1834. Carlos, the claimant to the Spanish throne, sought refuge in Portuguese territory with some of his forces and a Spanish expeditionary force was sent into Portuguese territory to fight against him.

As the situation could no longer be sustained by the absolutist party, their surrender was accepted by the Concession of Évora-Monte of 27 May 1834 signed by the regent Pedro, the former King Pedro IV, under the terms of which agreement a broad amnesty was granted.

### — Progressist military insurrection of 1836 (September Revolution)

On 10 September 1836, there was a progressist military insurrection, normally referred to as the September Revolution, which began with the election of progressist deputies in Oporto and ended with the rebellion of the military garrison in Lisbon.

As a result of this military insurrection, the Constitutional Charter of 1826 was revoked, the Constitution of 1822 was brought back into force, elections were held for the *Cortes Constituintes* (Constituent Assembly) and a Constitution was drawn up that came into force on 4 April 1838.

### — Conservative coup d'état of 1836 (*Belenzada*)

On 3 November 1836, there was a conservative coup d'état in Lisbon, commonly referred to as the *Belenzada*, because the Queen attempted to direct it from the royal palace in Belém. As a result of this coup d'état, the progressist government set up after the September Revolution was dismissed and a conservative government was appointed.

Table 12.7 — Internal wars and conflicts (continued)

On 4 November 1836, there was a military insurrection led by the National Guard in Lisbon against the government formed after the Belenzada. As a result of this military insurrection, the conservative government that had been formed the day before was dismissed and a new progressist government was formed.

#### — Absolutist military insurrection of 1837 (*Marnotas Conspiracy*)

On 14 May 1837, there was an absolutist military insurrection, known as the *Marnotas Conspiracy*, as the rebels had gathered together in this particular place. Lacking any significant support, this military insurrection was quelled the following day.

#### — Conservative revolt of 1837 (the ‘Revolt of the Marshals’)

From 12 July to 20 September 1837, there was a conflict between the progressist government based in Lisbon (which supported the Constitution of 1822 and the Constituent Assembly that had met at that time) and part of the army (which supported the Constitutional Charter of 1826). This conflict is generally referred to as the Revolt of the Marshals.

The main military operations consisted of various marches and counter-marches made by the different forces, culminating in the inconclusive battle of Chão da Feira (28 August 1837) and the later battle of Ruivães (18 September 1837), which ended unfavourably for the rebels.

This conflict between conservatives and progressists ended in a victory for the progressist government. The military leaders of both sides signed the Chaves Convention on 20 September 1837, which granted an amnesty to the rebels, although their leaders were forced to leave the country.

#### — Radical progressist military insurrection of 1838 (the ‘*Rossio Massacre*’)

On 13 March 1838, there was a radical progressist military insurrection in Lisbon against the policy of compromise with the moderate conservative groups that was being pursued by the progressist government set up after the failure of the Belenzada (see the earlier reference to this event). This military insurrection was a failure.

Table 12.7 — Internal wars and conflicts (continued)

Several battalions of the National Guard, who had provided the main military support for the insurrection, were heavily defeated in Rossio square in the centre of Lisbon, which meant that the outcome of the insurrection soon became known as the Rossio massacre.

### **— Radical conservative military insurrection of 1842 (the Carnival Revolution)**

On 27 January 1842, there was a radical conservative military insurrection in Oporto against the continued enforcement of the Constitution of 1838, which is sometimes referred to as the Carnival Revolution, as it triumphed during that period in 1842.

As a result of this military insurrection, a radical conservative government was appointed under the leadership of the Duke of Terceira and the Constitutional Charter of 1826 was brought back into force on 10 February 1842.

### **— Progressist military insurrection of 1844**

On 4 February 1844, there was a progressist military insurrection in Torres Novas against the continued enforcement of the Constitutional Charter and against the government led by the Duke of Terceira, which had been formed after the radical conservative military insurrection that had triumphed on 10 February 1842.

After retreating to the fortress of Almeida, the main forces supporting the military insurrection surrendered on 25 April 1844.

### **— Popular rebellion of 1846 (*Maria da Fonte*)**

In April and May 1846, a series of popular rebellions took place in the Minho province, beginning at Fonte Arcada in the municipality of Póvoa de Lanhoso. These riots were commonly referred to as the Maria da Fonte rebellion and were aimed against the taxation measures and sanitary regulations introduced by the government led by the Duke of Terceira, which had been formed after the radical conservative military insurrection that had triumphed on 10 February 1842.

As a result of these rebellions, a coalition government formed from progressists and moderate conservatives was appointed and led by the Duke of Palmela.

### — Radical conservative coup d'état of 1846 (*Emboscada*)

On 6 October 1846, there was a radical conservative coup d'état in Lisbon, normally referred to as the *Emboscada* (the Ambush).

As a result of this coup d'état, the coalition government formed from progressists and moderate conservatives, led by the Duke of Palmela and appointed as a result of the Maria da Fonte rebellion, was dismissed and a radical conservative government led by the Marquis of Saldanha was appointed.

### — Civil war of 1846-1847 between conservatives and progressists (*Patuleia*)

From October 1846 to June 1847, there was a civil war between a radical conservative government based in Lisbon and a progressist government based in Oporto, to which moderate conservative and absolutist forces had allied themselves. This civil war is usually referred to as the *Patuleia*.

Initially, the progressist government of Oporto controlled most of mainland Portugal and the conservative government of Lisbon controlled the region of Lisbon and the rest of the Portuguese territory.

The main military operations consisted of attempts made by the forces of the Oporto government to conquer Lisbon, which were thwarted by the battle of Torres Vedras (22 and 23 December 1846) and the capture of the progressist fleet by a British fleet off the coast of Oporto (30 May 1846).

This civil war between conservatives and progressists ended with the intervention of British and Spanish forces on the side of the radical conservative government of Lisbon, invoking the Quadruple Alliance Treaty of 22 April 1834 (see the reference to the civil war of 1828-1834 between absolutists and liberals). The military leaders of both sides signed the Convention of Gramido on 29 June 1847, which was not ratified by the radical conservative government of Lisbon, although its main provisions — an amnesty for the supporters of the progressist government of Oporto — were applied in practice.

### — Progressist military insurrection of 1851 (Regeneration)

On 24 April 1851, there was a progressist military insurrection in Oporto, generally referred to as the Regeneration, against the radical conservative government led by the Count of Tomar, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this military insurrection, a progressist government was appointed, led by the Duke of Saldanha, elections were held for the formation of extraordinary *Cortes Constituintes* (Constituent Assembly) and the Additional Act to the Constitutional Charter of 5 July 1852 was drawn up.

### — Popular rebellion of 1868 (*Janeirinha*)

On 4 January 1868, there were popular uprisings in Oporto, normally referred to as the *Janeirinha*, against tax measures introduced by the coalition government of the Regenerator Party and the Historical Progressist Party led by Joaquim António de Aguiar, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this rebellion, a government of the Reformist Party and the Conservative Party was appointed, led by the Count of Ávila.

### — Military insurrection of 1870 (*Saldanhada*)

On 18 May 1870, there was a military insurrection in Lisbon, generally referred to as the *Saldanhada*, against the government of the Historical Progressist Party led by the Duke of Loulé, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this military insurrection, a new government was appointed, led by the Duke of Saldanha, who attempted to form a new party, the Constituent Party, to support him. The new political situation, which was accused of being a military dictatorship with Iberianist sympathies, was, however, only maintained until August 1870.

### — Republican revolution of 1891

On 31 January 1891, there was a republican revolution in Oporto, which was unsuccessful.

### — Dictatorship of 1894-1895

In November 1894, the government of the Regenerator Party led by Ernesto Hintze Ribeiro convinced the King (Carlos I) to dissolve the *Cortes* without calling new elections. This marked the beginning of a period of dictatorship, which ended when elections were held in November 1895.

### — Dictatorship of 1907-1908

In May 1907, the government of the Liberal-Regenerator Party led by João Franco convinced the King (Carlos I) to dissolve the *Cortes* without calling new elections. This marked the beginning of a period of dictatorship, which only ended with the assassination of Carlos I on 1 February 1908 (see next reference).

### — Assassination of the King Carlos I

On 1 February 1908, the King Carlos I and the heir to the throne, Luís Filipe, were both assassinated.

As a result of this assassination, the dictatorship government of the Liberal-Regenerator Party led by João Franco, which was in power at that time, was dismissed and a coalition government between the Progressist Party and the Regenerator Party, led by Ferreira do Amaral, was appointed.

### — Republican revolution of 1910

On 3 October 1910, there was a republican revolution in Lisbon, which finally triumphed on 5 October 1910.

As a result of this revolution, the King Manuel II was deposed, a provisional republican government was formed, elections were held for a Constituent Assembly and a Constitution was drawn up, coming into force in August 1911.

### **— Monarchist military insurrection and incursion of 1911**

On 28 September 1911, there was a military insurrection in Oporto followed from 5 to 8 October 1911, by an incursion made into the province of Trás-os-Montes by monarchist forces coming from Spain. These movements were unsuccessful.

### **— Monarchist military insurrection and incursions of 1912**

On 29 June 1912, there was a military insurrection in Barcelos followed from 6 to 9 July 1912, by incursions made into the provinces of Minho and Trás-os-Montes by monarchist forces coming from Spain. These movements were unsuccessful.

### **— Military insurrection of April 1913**

On 17 April 1913, there was a radical republican military insurrection in Lisbon against the government of the Democratic Party led by Afonso Costa, which was in power at that time. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### **— Monarchist military insurrection of October 1913**

On 21 October 1913, there was a monarchist military insurrection in Lisbon against the government of the Democratic Party led by Afonso Costa, which was in power at that time. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### **— Monarchist military insurrection of 1914**

On 20 October 1914, there was a monarchist military insurrection in Lisbon against the government of the Democratic Party led by Bernardino Machado, which was in power at that time. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### — **Military insurrection of 1915 (*Movimento das Espadas*)**

On 25 January 1915, there was a military insurrection in Lisbon, generally referred to as the *Movimento das Espadas* (Movement of the Swords) against the government of the Democratic Party led by Azevedo Coutinho, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this military insurrection, a government was appointed, led by General Pimenta de Castro.

### — **Revolution of the Democratic Party in 1915**

On 14 May 1915, there was a revolution in Lisbon of the Democratic Party against the government led by General Pimenta de Castro, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this revolution, a government of the Democratic Party was formed and led by João Chagas, whilst the President of the Republic, Manuel Arriaga, was forced to resign and Teófilo Braga was elected to finish off his mandate.

### — **Military insurrection of 1916**

On 13 December 1916, there was a conservative republican military insurrection in several places against the coalition government of the Democratic Party and the Evolutionist Party led by António José de Almeida, which was in power at that time. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### — **Military insurrection of 1917 (December Revolution)**

On 5 December 1917, there was a military insurrection in Lisbon, generally referred to as the December Revolution, against the government of the Democratic Party led by Afonso Costa, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this military insurrection, a military government was formed, led by Major Sidónio Pais (8 December 1917), and the President of the Republic, Bernardino Machado was deposed (11 December 1917).

As a further result of this military insurrection, the Constitution of 1911 was changed, giving rise to a new political situation, known as the 'New Republic', in contrast to the earlier 'Old Republic'.



### — **Military insurrection of January 1918**

On 7 and 8 January 1918, there was a military insurrection of the Navy in Lisbon against the regime of the 'New Republic'. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### — **Military insurrection of October 1918**

On 12 October 1918, there was a military insurrection in Coimbra and Évora against the regime of the 'New Republic'. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### — **Assassination of the President of the Republic Sidónio Pais**

On 14 December 1918, the President of the Republic, Sidónio Pais, was assassinated in Lisbon.

As a result of this assassination, the changes that had been made to the Constitution of 1911 in the context of the 'New Republic' were revoked.

### — **Military insurrection of 1919**

On 10 January 1919, there was a military insurrection in Lisbon, Covilhã and Santarém against the regime of the 'New Republic'. The insurrections in Lisbon and Covilhã were quelled on the same day, 10 January 1919, and the one in Santarém on 16 January 1919.

### — **Monarchist revolutions of 1919**

On 19 January 1919, there were monarchist revolutions in Lisbon and Oporto. The Lisbon revolution was put down on 24 January 1919. The Oporto revolution gave rise to the so-called Northern Monarchy (see the following reference to the civil war between republicans and monarchists in 1919).

### **— Civil war of 1919 between republicans and monarchists (Northern Monarchy)**

From 19 January to 13 February 1919, there was a civil war between the republican government based in Lisbon and a monarchist government based in Oporto.

Initially, the monarchist government of Oporto controlled most of the districts of Aveiro, Braga, Bragança, Oporto, Viana do Castelo, Vila Real (except for Chaves) and Viseu, forming what was known as the Northern Monarchy, whilst the republican government of Lisbon controlled the rest of the Portuguese territory.

Military operations consisted of an advance on Oporto by the forces of the republican government of Lisbon, which only met with sporadic resistance.

As a result of the civil war of 1919 between republicans and monarchists, the 'New Republic' entered into a state of collapse, with the political regime of the 'Old Republic', now generally known as the 'New Old Republic', being restored.

### **— Military insurrection of 1921**

On 23 May 1921, there was a military insurrection of the Republican National Guard in Lisbon against the coalition government of the Democratic Party and the Reconstituent Party led by Bernardino Machado, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this insurrection, a government of the Liberal Party was formed, led by Barros Queirós.

### **— Radical revolution of 1921**

On 19 October 1921, there was a revolution of the Radical Party in Lisbon against the government of the Liberal Party led by António Granjo, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this revolution, a government of the Radical Party was formed, led by Manuel Maria Coelho. The assassination of the deposed head of government and various other personalities on the night when the revolution proved successful (known as the 'bloody night') caused much damage to the prestige of the new political situation, which, despite the formation in November of a new government of the Radical Party led by Carlos Maia Pinto, only lasted until December 1921.

### — **Military insurrection of 1924**

From 3 to 7 July 1924, there was a military insurrection of the Air Force in Amadora against the coalition government of the Reconstituent Party and the Democratic Party led by Álvaro de Castro, which was in power at that time. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### — **Monarchist military insurrection of March 1925**

On 5 March 1925, there was a monarchist military insurrection in Lisbon against the government of the Democratic Party led by Vitorino Guimarães, which was in power at that time. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### — **Military insurrection of April 1925**

On 18 April 1925, there was a conservative republican military insurrection in Lisbon against the government of the Democratic Party led by Vitorino Guimarães, which was in power at that time. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### — **Military insurrection of July 1925**

On 19 July 1925, there was a conservative republican military insurrection in Lisbon against the government of the Democratic Party led by António Maria da Silva, which was in power at that time. This insurrection was unsuccessful.

### — **Military insurrection of May 1926**

On 28 May 1926, there was a military insurrection in Braga against the government of the Democratic Party led by António Maria da Silva, which was in power at that time. This insurrection was backed up by another insurrection that successfully took place in Évora on 30 May 1926.

As a result of this military insurrection, a military government led by Captain Mendes Cabeçadas was formed and the President of the Republic, Bernardino Machado, was forced to resign (30 May 1926).

### **— Military insurrection of June 1926**

On 17 June 1926, there was a military insurrection in Lisbon against the military government presided over by Captain Mendes Cabeçadas, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this military insurrection, a military government presided over by General Gomes da Costa was formed.

### **— Military insurrection of July 1926**

On 9 July 1926, there was a military insurrection in Lisbon against the military government presided over by General Gomes da Costa, which was in power at that time.

As a result of this military insurrection, a military government presided over by General Óscar Carmona was formed.

### **— Republican revolutions of 1927**

In February 1927, there were republican revolutions in Oporto and Lisbon against the military government of General Óscar Carmona, which was in power at that time. These revolutions proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Republican revolutions of 1928**

On 20 July 1928, there were republican revolutions in Setúbal and Lisbon against the military government of General Óscar Carmona, which was in power at that time. These revolutions proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Civil war of 1931 between the military dictatorship and republicans**

From April to May 1931, there was a civil war between the military government of General Domingos Oliveira based in Lisbon and a government that had been set up by rebellious republicans, based in Funchal and led by General Adalberto Sousa Dias.

Table 12.7 — Internal wars and conflicts (continued)

Initially, the republican government of Funchal controlled the region of Madeira and obtained some supports in the region of the Azores and the colony of Guinea. The military government of Lisbon controlled the rest of the country.

Military operations consisted of a blockade of Madeira by government forces from Lisbon, leading to the surrender of the republican government of Funchal.

### **— Republican revolution of 1931**

On 26 August 1931, there was a republican revolution in Lisbon against the military government of General Domingos Oliveira, which was in power at that time. This revolution proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Anarchist and communist revolution of 1934**

On 18 January 1934, there was an anarchist and communist revolution in several places of the country against the regime of the New State. This revolution proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Fascist revolution of 1934**

In 1934, there was a fascist revolution in Lisbon against the regime of the New State. This revolution proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Republican military insurrection of 1946**

In 1946, there was a military insurrection in Oporto against the regime of the New State. This revolution proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Military insurrection of 1961**

In April 1961, there was a military insurrection against the President of the Council of Ministers, Oliveira Salazar. This military insurrection proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Republican revolution of 1962**

On 1 January 1962, there was a republican revolution in Beja against the regime of the New State. This revolution proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Military insurrection of March 1974**

On 16 March 1974, there was a military insurrection in Caldas da Rainha against the regime of the New State. This revolution proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Military insurrection of April 1974**

On 25 April 1974, there was a successful military insurrection against the regime of the New State.

As a result of this military insurrection, the government led by Marcelo Caetano was dismissed, the President of the Republic Américo Tomás was deposed, a Junta of National Salvation, later replaced by a Council of the Revolution, was set up, six provisional governments were formed in succession and elections were held for the formation of a Constituent Assembly, which drew up a Constitution that came into force on 25 April 1976.

### **— Military insurrection of September 1974**

On 28 September 1974, the President of the Republic, António Spínola, tried to organise a popular demonstration in Lisbon to strengthen his political position. The Communist Party and other political forces opposed this demonstration through their control of the main routes of access to Lisbon and other points of the country.

As a result of these events, the Armed Forces Movement forced the President of the Republic, António Spínola, to resign and he was replaced by General Francisco Costa Gomes. The second provisional government led by Colonel Vasco Gonçalves was replaced by the third provisional government also led by Colonel Vasco Gonçalves (30 September 1974).

### — **Military insurrection of March 1975**

On 11 March 1975, there was a military insurrection in Lisbon against the third provisional government led by Brigadier Vasco Gonçalves, which was in power at that time. This insurrection proved to be unsuccessful.

As a result of this military insurrection, the fourth provisional government also led by Brigadier Vasco Gonçalves was formed.

### — **Military insurrection of November 1975**

On 25 November 1975, there was a military insurrection in Lisbon against the sixth provisional government led by Admiral Pinheiro de Azevedo, which was in power at that time. This insurrection proved to be unsuccessful.

## Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts

Source — Matoso, 1992-1994; Peres, 1938-1940; Rodrigues, 1994; Serrão, Marques, 1986-1998; Serrão, Marques 1987-1998.

### — The wars of the Reconquest

The wars of the Reconquest were fought between the Christian states of the Iberian Peninsula in general and their neighbouring Muslim states, beginning with the conquest of most of the Iberian Peninsula by the Arab Empire (711-718) and ending with the extinction of the last Muslim state in the Iberian Peninsula, the Emirate of Granada (1492).

In the case of Portugal, the main stages of these wars were as follows;

a) Occupation of the region to the north of the River Douro by the Kingdom of Asturias, later the Kingdom of León, in the mid-eighth century. The first County of Portugal was established in this region in the mid-ninth century.

b) Occupation of the region between the River Douro and the central chain of mountains by the Kingdom of León in the mid-ninth century. The County of Coimbra was established in this region in the mid-ninth century and was later reoccupied by Muslim states in the tenth century.

c) Re-occupation of the region between the River Douro and the central chain of mountains by the Kingdom of León and Castile in the mid-eleventh century. The County of Coimbra was re-established in this region in 1064.

d) Fleeting occupation of the region between the central chain of mountains and the River Tagus by the Kingdom of León and Castile at the end of the eleventh century. As a result of the re-occupation of this region by Muslim states, the second County of Portugal was created in 1096, joining together the territories of the former first County of Portugal (which had been extinguished in 1071) and the County of Coimbra (which had been extinguished in 1093).

e) Re-occupation of the region between the central chain of mountains and the River Tagus and occupation of part of the northern region of the Alentejo by the Kingdom of Portugal in the mid-twelfth century.

f) Occupation of the rest of the Alentejo and the Algarve by the Kingdom of Portugal during the first half of the thirteenth century.

The main episodes of these wars after the proclamation of the Kingdom of Portugal were as follows:

1139 — Portuguese incursion into Muslim territory. Battle of Ourique.

1145 — Portuguese conquest of Leiria.

1147 — Portuguese conquest of Santarém and Lisbon.



Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

- 1151 — Unsuccessful Portuguese attack on Alcácer do Sal.
- 1157 — Unsuccessful Portuguese attack on Alcácer do Sal.
- 1158 — Portuguese conquest of Alcácer do Sal.
- 1159 — Portuguese conquest of Évora and Beja.
- 1160 — Muslim conquest of Évora and Beja.
- 1162 — Portuguese conquest of Beja.
- 1165 — Portuguese conquest of Évora.
- 1166 — Portuguese conquest of Serpa and Moura.
- 1167 — Portuguese conquest of Monsaraz.
- 1168 — Portuguese conquest of Badajoz.
- 1171 — Unsuccessful Muslim attack on Santarém.
- 1178 — Portuguese incursion into Muslim territory.
- 1184 — Muslim incursions into Portuguese territory. Muslim conquest of Serpa, Moura and Beja.
- 1189 — Portuguese conquest of Silves.
- 1190 — Unsuccessful Muslim attack on Silves and Tomar.
- 1191 — Muslim conquest of Alcácer do Sal and Silves.
- 1197 — Unsuccessful Portuguese attack on Silves.
- 1212 — Portuguese participation in the Battle of Las Navas de Tolosa.
- 1217 — Portuguese conquest of Alcácer do Sal.
- 1230 — Portuguese conquest of Juromenha.
- 1232 — Portuguese conquest of Serpa, Moura and Beja.
- 1234 — Portuguese conquest of Aljustrel.
- 1238 — Portuguese conquest of Mértola.
- 1239 — Portuguese conquest of Tavira and Eastern Algarve.
- 1249 — Portuguese conquest of Faro and Western Algarve.

### — The War for the Independence of Portugal

The War for the Independence of Portugal was fought from 1128 to 1137 and from 1140 to 1143 between the County of Portugal and the Kingdom of León and Castile. The Count of Portugal, Afonso I, sought to conserve and consolidate the county's autonomy. The king of León and Castile, Alfonso VII, the suzerain of the county, sought to restore royal authority, which had been shaken by civil conflicts during the reign of his mother, Urraca I (1109-1126). Alfonso VII of León and Castile had already obtained a first act of recognition of his authority from the County of Portugal in 1127, but this recognition was called into question in 1128, when the Count of

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

Portugal, Afonso, took over the government of the county and drove out his mother, Teresa, who had been regent of the country until then, as a result of the Battle of São Mamede (24 July 1128). This was followed by a military conflict between suzerain and vassal, whose main battles were fought at Cerneja in 1136 and Arcos de Valdevez in 1140.

A first peace treaty was signed at Tuy in 1137, but was not respected. A second peace treaty was signed at Zamora on 5 October 1143, after negotiations in which the papal envoy, Cardinal Guido de Vico, acted as intermediary. In this Treaty of Zamora, Alfonso VII of León and Castile recognised Afonso I as king of Portugal and the latter recognised the former as Emperor of Spain and his suzerain.

Although the Treaty of Zamora did not formally recognise the independence of Portugal, the Kingdom of Portugal began to act as a fully independent state as a result of:

a) The expansion of its frontiers at the expense of the neighbouring Muslim states — see the reference to the Wars of the Reconquest in regard to this matter.

b) Break-up of the Kingdom of León and Castile in 1157, which removed any substantial basis of support for the power of the Emperor of Spain.

c) Recognition of the autonomy of the Kingdom of Portugal by the Holy See in 1179 (the *Manifestus probatum* bull issued by Pope Alexander III).

### — First Portuguese-Leonese War

The First Portuguese-Leonese War was fought in 1169 because the Kingdom of León disputed the Portuguese conquest of Badajoz, which had taken place the year before.

Military operations consisted of the conquest of Badajoz by the Kingdom of León.

In practice, Portugal recognised this conquest.

### — Second Portuguese-Leonese War

The Second Portuguese-Leonese War was fought from 1196 to 1199 without any significant consequences.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

### **— First Portuguese-Castilian War**

The First Portuguese-Castilian War was fought from 1252 to 1253 without any significant consequences.

### **— Second Portuguese-Castilian War**

The Second Portuguese-Castilian War was fought from 1295 to 1297 as a result of the Castilian claims upon territories occupied by Portugal (territories on the left bank of the River Guadiana).

The main military operations consisted of the occupation of the region of Ribacoa by Portugal.

The Second Portuguese-Castilian War ended with the Treaty of Alcañices of 1297, which recognised the full independence of Portugal, as well as Portuguese sovereignty over the regions under dispute and over Ribacoa.

### **— Third Portuguese-Castilian War**

A Third Portuguese-Castilian War was fought from 1336 to 1339 without any significant consequences.

### **— Intervention of Castile against Muslim states**

In 1340, a Portuguese army commanded by the King Afonso IV took part in the Battle of Salado on Castilian territory, fighting alongside a Castilian army against Muslim armies from the Emirate of Granada and the Marinid Emirate of Morocco.

### **— First War of Succession in Castile**

The First War of Succession in Castile was fought from 1369 to 1371 as a consequence of the King of Portugal, Fernando I (the maternal grandson of Sancho IV of Castile), reclaiming the throne of Castile, occupied by Henrique II (the illegitimate son of Alfonso XI, who was in turn the

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

son of Sancho IV), who had deposed and assassinated his half-brother, Pedro I (the legitimate son of the same Alfonso XI). D. Fernando succeeded in obtaining support in different quarters, particularly in Galicia, León and Extremadura, whilst Henrique maintained control over the rest of his kingdom.

The main military operations consisted of Portuguese incursions into Andaluzia and Castilian incursions into Trás-os-Montes and Entre-Douro-e-Minho, which were unfavourable to Portugal.

Fernando I of Portugal recognised Henrique II as King of Castile through the Treaty of Alcoutim, signed in 1371.

### — Second War of Succession in Castile

The Second War of Succession in Castile was fought from 1372 to 1373 as a consequence of the King of Portugal, Fernando I, supporting the claim to the throne of Castile of John of Gaunt (the son-in-law of Pedro I of Castile) against the king Henrique II — see reference to the First War of Succession in Castile.

The main military operations consisted of Castilian incursions into Beira and Estremadura, which were unfavourable to Portugal.

Fernando I of Portugal again recognised Henrique II as King of Castile through the Treaty of Santarém, signed in 1371.

### — Third War of Succession in Castile

The Third War of Succession in Castile was fought from 1381 to 1382 as a consequence of the King of Portugal, Fernando I, again supporting the claim to the throne of Castile of John of Gaunt (the son-in-law of Pedro I of Castile) against the king Juan I (the son and successor of Henrique II) — see reference to the First War of Succession in Castile and the Second War of Succession in Castile.

The main military operations consisted of Castilian incursions into Beira and the Alentejo and the siege of Lisbon by a Castilian army transported by sea, which were unfavourable to Portugal.

D. Fernando I of Portugal once again recognised Juan I as King of Castile through the Treaty of Elvas signed in 1383. As a result of the Treaty of Salvaterra de Magos signed in the same year, Beatriz (the daughter and heiress of Fernando I of Portugal) married Juan I of Castile.

### — First War of Succession in Portugal and Fourth War of Succession in Castile

The First War of Succession in Portugal was fought from 1383 to 1387 as a consequence of the dispute over the throne of Portugal, after the death of King Fernando I, between Beatriz (the daughter of Fernando I and wife of Juan I of Castile), João (the son of Pedro I and Inês de Castro and therefore half-brother of Fernando I) and João (the son of Pedro I and Teresa Lourenço and therefore also the half-brother of Fernando I). Beatriz, who had been acclaimed as Queen in October 1383, under the regency of her mother, Leonor Teles, was deposed in Lisbon in December 1383 by her uncle João (the second of the two claimants mentioned above), but she maintained control over most of the regions of Entre-Douro-e-Minho, Trás-os-Montes and Beira and was supported by Castile, since she was married to the respective king. João, who was regent from December 1383 onwards, managed to gain the support of most of the regions of Estremadura, the Alentejo and the Algarve. The other claimant, João, never succeeded in controlling any significant part of the country.

The main military operations consisted of:

- a) Castilian incursions into Portuguese territory, which were defeated at the Battle of Atoleiros (1384), the unsuccessful siege of Lisbon (1384) and the Battle of Aljubarrota (1385).
- b) The gradual conquest by the regent João of the regions that had initially been favourable to Beatriz.
- c) Portuguese incursions into Castilian territory without any significant results.

The *Cortes* of Coimbra of 1385 elected the regent João as king D. João I.

The First War of Succession in Portugal ended up being linked to the Fourth War of Succession in Castile, since the King of Portugal, João I, supported the claim to the throne of John of Gaunt (the son-in-law of Pedro I of Castile) against King Juan I of Castile — see the references to the First War of Succession in Castile, the Second War of Succession in Castile and the Third War of Succession in Castile. King Juan I of Castile ended up relinquishing the claim of his wife Beatriz to the throne of Portugal and supporting the claim of Dinis (the brother of the claimant João whose claims had been passed over and who had since died).

The subsequent main military operations consisted of Portuguese incursions into Castilian territory and an attempt by Dinis to invade Portugal, without any significant results.

A truce was signed in 1387.

From 1396 to 1400, new military operations took place, which one again consisted of Portuguese incursions into Castilian territory and an attempt by Dinis to invade Portugal, without any significant results.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

As a result of these military operations, a new truce was signed, which was respected until 1411, when a treaty was signed through which the King of Castile recognised D. João I as King of Portugal. This treaty was ratified in 1432.

### — Wars of Conquest in Morocco

Between 1415 and 1769, Portugal sought to establish its dominion over the Atlantic coast of Morocco. As such dominion was never recognised by the Kingdom of Morocco, this caused there to be an endemic state of war between Portugal and Morocco during this period. Below is a list of the main episodes occurring during these wars of conquest in Morocco:

- 1415 — Conquest of Ceuta by Portugal (expedition led by the King João I).
- 1418 — Moroccan attack on Ceuta.
- 1419 — Moroccan attack on Ceuta.
- 1437 — Unsuccessful Portuguese attack on Tangier (expedition led by members of the royal family).
- 1458 — Conquest of Alcácer Ceguer by Portugal (expedition led by the King Afonso V).
- 1458 — Moroccan attack on Alcácer Ceguer.
- 1459 — Moroccan attack on Alcácer Ceguer.
- 1460 — Unsuccessful Portuguese attack on Tangier (expedition led by the King Afonso V).
- 1463-1464 — Unsuccessful Portuguese attack on Tangier (expedition led by the King Afonso V).
- 1468 — Conquest of Anafé by Portugal.
- 1471 — Conquest of Arzila by Portugal (expedition led by the King Afonso V). Occupation of Tangier by Portugal, as a result of its abandonment by Morocco. Conquest of Larache by Portugal.
- 1486 — Occupation of Azamor by Portugal.
- 1488 — Occupation of Safim by Portugal.
- 1489 — Portuguese attempt to establish a fortress at Graciosa, which proved unsuccessful due to a Moroccan attack. Loss of Anafé and Larache to the Kingdom of Morocco.
- 1505 — Conquest of Santa Cruz do Cabo da Gué by Portugal.
- 1506 — Conquest of Mogador by Portugal.
- 1508 — Moroccan attack on Arzila. Establishment of a fortress at Safim by Portugal.
- 1510 — Loss of Mogador to the Kingdom of Morocco.
- 1513 — Establishment of a fortress at Azamor by Portugal.
- 1514 — Conquest of Mazagão by Portugal.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

- 1534 — Moroccan attack on Safim.
- 1541 — Loss of Santa Cruz do Cabo da Gué to the Kingdom of Morocco.
- 1542 — Loss of Safim and Azamor to the Kingdom of Morocco.
- 1549 — Loss of Alcácer Ceguer to the Kingdom of Morocco.
- 1550 — Loss of Arzila to the Kingdom of Morocco.
- 1562 — Moroccan attack on Mazagão.
- 1577 — Conquest of Arzila by Portugal.
- 1578 — Attempt by the Portuguese to interfere in the war of succession in Morocco. Defeat at the battle of Alcácer Quibir (expedition led by the King Sebastião I).
- 1589 — Loss of Arzila to the Kingdom of Morocco.
- 1640 — Loss of Ceuta to the Kingdom of Spain, due to the fact that it did not recognise the deposition of the King Filipe III by King João IV.
- 1662 — Cession of Tangier to England.
- 1668 — Recognition of Spanish sovereignty over Ceuta.
- 1769 — Loss of Mazagão to the Kingdom of Morocco.

### — Fifth War of Succession in Castile

The Fifth War of Succession in Castile was fought from 1474 to 1479 as a consequence of the dispute over the throne of Castile, after the death of the King Henrique IV, between Juana (the daughter of Henrique IV and wife of the King of Portugal, Afonso V) and Isabel (the sister of Henrique IV and wife of the king of Aragón, Fernando II).

The military operations consisted mainly of Portuguese incursions into Castilian territory, culminating in the Battle of Toro (1476), which ended in an inconclusive Portuguese victory, and in Castilian attempts to dispute with Portugal control over the trade of the coast of Guinea. These attacks were launched from the Canary Islands and, despite being quite disturbing, were largely unsuccessful.

Isabel was recognised as queen of Castile by the Treaty of Alcáçovas, signed in 1479. The same treaty recognised Portugal's monopoly of overseas explorations south of the 30° N parallel. However, the Canary Islands continued to belong to Castile.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

### — Wars of Conquest in the East

Beginning in 1498, Portugal sought to establish its control over the trade of the Indian Ocean and the East Indies, based on a network of alliances, protectorates and fortresses. As such dominion was never recognised by most local states, this caused there to be an endemic state of war between Portugal and these states, which was to last until 1785. Below is a list of the main episodes occurring during these wars of conquest in the East:

1503 — Establishment of a Portuguese protectorate over Cochin. Conquest of Zanzibar by Portugal.

1505 — Conquest of Sofala, Kilwa and Mombasa by Portugal.

1507 — Conquest of Ormuz and Mascate by Portugal.

1508-1509 — War against the Kingdom of Gujarat and the Mamluk Empire. Portuguese defeat at the Battle of Chaúl (1508), Portuguese victory at the Battle of Diu (1509).

1510 — Conquest of Goa by Portugal.

1511 — Conquest of Malacca by Portugal.

1512 — Abandonment of Kilwa by Portugal.

1513 — Unsuccessful Portuguese attack on Aden.

1516 — Unsuccessful Portuguese attack on Aden. Conquest of Chaúl by Portugal.

1518 — Conquest of Colombo by Portugal.

1522 — Occupation of Banda and the Molucca Islands by Portugal.

1525 — Unsuccessful attack on Malacca by neighbouring sultanates.

1533 — Conquest of Baçaím by Portugal.

1534 — Conquest of Bombay by Portugal.

1535 — Conquest of Diu by Portugal.

1538 — Unsuccessful siege of Diu by the Kingdom of Gujarat supported by the Ottoman Empire.

1541 — Unsuccessful Portuguese attack on Aden and the Suez.

1541-1542 — Portuguese intervention in support of Abyssinia against the Sultanate of Adal, an ally of the Ottoman Empire.

1544 — Conquest of Bardez and Salcete by Portugal.

1545 — Conquest of Mozambique by Portugal.

1546 — Unsuccessful siege of Diu by the Kingdom of Gujarat supported by the Ottoman Empire.

1553 — Unsuccessful siege of Ormuz by Persia.

1559 — Conquest of Damão by Portugal.

1570 — Unsuccessful siege of Goa by the Mogul Empire.



Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

- 1581 — Unsuccessful attack on Damão by the Mogul Empire.
- 1614 — Unsuccessful attack on Damão by the Mogul Empire.
- 1622 — Conquest of Ormuz by Persia.
- 1652 — Conquest of Mascate and Zanzibar by the Sultanate of Oman.
- 1683 — Unsuccessful attack on Goa by the Maratha Kingdom.
- 1696-1698 — Siege of Mombasa by the Sultanate of Oman. Conquest of Mombasa by the Sultanate of Oman (1698).
- 1728 — Conquest of Mombasa by Portugal.
- 1729 — Conquest of Mombasa by the Sultanate of Oman.
- 1737-1740 — War against the Maratha Kingdom. Conquest of Baçaim by the Maratha Kingdom (1739). Conquest of Chaúl by the Maratha Kingdom (1740).
- 1747 — Portuguese victory over the Maratha Kingdom at the Battle of Alorna.
- 1756 — Portuguese defeat against the Maratha Kingdom at the first Battle of Pondá.
- 1763 — Portuguese victory over the Maratha Kingdom at the second Battle of Pondá.
- 1779 — Treaty with the Maratha Kingdom by means of which Portugal renounced Baçaim and Chaúl in exchange for the territories of Bicholim, Canácona, Perném, Pondá, Quepém, Sanguém and Satari (New Conquests) in the region of Goa and Dadrá and Nagar-Aveli in the region of Damão. This treaty was only fully enforced in 1785.
- From 1785 onwards, the Portuguese possessions in the East ceased to experience the previous situation of an endemic war.

## — Second War of Succession in Portugal

The Second War of Succession in Portugal was fought from 1580 to 1583 as a consequence of the dispute over the throne of Portugal, after the death of the King Henrique I, between António (the illegitimate great nephew of Henrique I) and Filipe (the legitimate nephew of Henrique I and sovereign of León and Castile, Aragón, Navarre, Sardinia, Sicily, Naples, Milan, the Netherlands and Burgundy).

António initially managed to control most of the country, expelling the governors of Portugal appointed by the late King Henrique I.

The main military operations consisted of:

a) Occupation of mainland Portugal by a Castilian army, as a result of the Battle of Alcântara in 1580.

b) Occupation of the Azores, and in particular of the island of Terceira, the only region that remained under António's control, by a Portuguese-Castilian fleet in 1583.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

Through a judgement made at Castro Marim in 1580 by the governors of Portugal appointed by the late King Henrique I, Filipe was proclaimed king of Portugal. This judgement was ratified by the *Cortes* held at Tomar in 1581.

### — Wars against the United Dutch Provinces

As a result of the personal union in 1580 of the Kingdom of Portugal to the states of León and Castile, Aragón, Navarre, Sardinia, Sicily, Naples, Milan, the Netherlands and Burgundy, Portugal found itself at war with the United Dutch Provinces, who had been in revolt since 1572 against the sovereign that they now had in common. This war was interrupted in 1609 by a twelve-year truce agreed between the opposing sides and began once again in 1621.

After the separation of Portugal from the Western Hapsburg Empire, a new truce was agreed in 1641 between Portugal and the United Dutch Provinces, lasting for ten years. This truce was respected in the European theatre of war, but was not respected in the overseas theatres of war. Despite the formal recommencement of hostilities in 1651, the United Dutch Provinces formally declared war on Portugal in 1658. A peace treaty was signed in 1661, confirming the territorial gains made during the war. In practice, the war was further prolonged for some time in the theatre of war of the Indian Ocean and the Far East, and the peace treaty was confirmed in 1669.

The main military operations of this war took place in three theatres of war:

a) In the theatre of war of Europe, with a (limited) participation of Portuguese troops in the operations carried out by the Western Hapsburg Empire against the United Dutch Provinces and sporadic attempts at mutual blockades of ports, although after 1640 such action was only taken at the initiative of the United Dutch Provinces.

b) In the theatre of war of the Indian Ocean and the Far East, with attempts being made by the Dutch East India Company to break the Portuguese monopoly of the route round the Cape of Good Hope.

c) In the theatre of war of the Atlantic, with attempts being made by the Dutch West India Company to occupy various regions of Brazil.

The main episodes occurring in the war between Portugal and the Dutch East India Company (VOC) in the theatre of war of the Indian Ocean and the Far East were as follows:

1599 — Conquest of Banda by the Dutch East India Company (VOC).

1600 — Beginning of the conquest of the Molucca Islands by the Dutch East India Company (VOC).

1604 — Unsuccessful attack by the Dutch East India Company (VOC) on Mozambique and Macau.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

1605 — Conquest of Amboim by the Dutch East India Company (VOC).

1607-1608 — Unsuccessful attack by the Dutch East India Company (VOC) on Mozambique.

1622 — Unsuccessful attack by the Dutch East India Company (VOC) on Macau.

1641 — Conquest of Malacca by the Dutch East India Company (VOC).

1656 — Conquest of Colombo by the Dutch East India Company (VOC).

1662 — Conquest of Cochin by the Dutch East India Company (VOC).

1663 — Completion of the conquest of the Molucca Islands by the Dutch East India Company (VOC).

The main episodes occurring in the war between Portugal and the Dutch West India Company in the theatre of war of the Atlantic were as follows:

1624 — Conquest of São Salvador da Baía by the Dutch West India Company.

1625 — Conquest of São Salvador da Baía by Portugal.

1630 — Conquest of Pernambuco by the Dutch West India Company.

1632 — Conquest of Alagoas by the Dutch West India Company.

1635 — Conquest of Paraíba by the Dutch West India Company.

1637 — Conquest of São Jorge da Mina and Sergipe by the Dutch West India Company.

1638 — Conquest of Argüim and Ceará by the Dutch West India Company.

1641 — Conquest of São Tomé, São Paulo de Luanda and Maranhão by the Dutch West India Company.

1645 — Portuguese victory at the Battle of Tabocas.

1648 — Conquest of São Tomé and São Paulo de Luanda by Portugal.

1649 — Portuguese victory at the Battle of Guararapes.

1654 — Expulsion of the Dutch West India Company from Brazil.

### — Wars against England

As a result of the personal union of the Kingdom of Portugal to the states of León and Castile, Aragón, Navarre, Sardinia, Sicily, Naples, Milan, the Netherlands and Burgundy, Portugal found itself at war with England. The peace treaty was signed in 1605, which did not prevent England from continuing to try and break the Portuguese monopoly of the route round the Cape of Good Hope.

The main military operations of this war consisted of:

a) An attack on England by a fleet from the Western Hapsburg Empire with a substantial Portuguese participation (the Invincible Armada) in 1588-1589, which ended in failure.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

b) Attacks by English pirates on Portuguese metropolitan and overseas territories with varying degrees of success.

c) Support given by England to the conquest of Ormuz by Persia in 1622.

As a result of the support given by Portugal to King Charles I of England in his fight against Parliament and later to his heirs in the fight against Oliver Cromwell's government, there was a new war between Portugal and England between 1650 and 1654.

Peace was re-established between Portugal and England by a treaty signed in 1654, which was confirmed in 1662 through the marriage of King Charles II of England to Catharine of Bragança, the daughter of King João IV of Portugal, and the cession by Portugal to England of Bombay and Tangier.

### — Wars against France

As a result of the attempts made by French pirates to intercept Portuguese ships in the North Atlantic during the sixteenth century and at the beginning of the seventeenth century, as well as the attempts by French colonists to settle in Brazil, namely at Guanabara from 1555 to 1567 and at Pará and Maranhão from 1594 to 1615, there were a number of skirmishes between Portugal and France, although these did not lead to a formal war. The attempts by French pirates to intercept Portuguese ships in the North Atlantic met with varying degrees of success. The attempts by French colonists to settle in Brazil were unsuccessful, although France managed to establish a colony in Guiana (Cayenne) from 1626 onwards.

In 1635, France declared war on the Western Hapsburg Empire, of which Portugal was part, in the context of its intervention in the so-called Thirty Years' War. There were no significant military operations between Portuguese and French forces during this war.

The war between Portugal and France ended with the separation of Portugal from the Western Hapsburg Empire, with a peace treaty being signed in 1641.

### — War of Restoration

The War of Restoration was fought between Portugal and the Western Hapsburg Empire between 1640 and 1668, as a result of the deposition of the King Filipe III by King João IV and the consequent separation of Portugal from the Western Hapsburg Empire.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

The garrisons at the fortresses of Angra and Ceuta did not accept this change. The fortress of Angra (more precisely the fortress of São Filipe do Monte Brasil) was taken by Portugal in 1642. The fortress of Ceuta was not subject to any attempt at recovery.

The main military operations of this war consisted of successive attempts by the armies of the Western Hapsburg Empire to invade Portugal. These forces were defeated at the following battles:

1659 — Elvas

1663 — Ameixial

1664 — Castelo Rodrigo

1665 — Montes Claros

The War of Restoration ended with the signing of a peace treaty in 1668, through which the Western Hapsburg Empire recognised the independence of Portugal in exchange for the cession of Ceuta.

### — War of Succession in Spain

The War of Succession in Spain was fought from 1701 to 1713 as a consequence of the dispute over the Western Hapsburg Empire, after the death of the King Carlos II, between a claimant from the House of the Western Hapsburgs (Austria), the Archduke Charles, and a claimant from the House of Bourbon (France), Philippe.

From 1703 onwards, Portugal supported the claims of Charles, as a result of a treaty by which they were promised:

- the establishment of the southern border of Brazil at the River Plate;
- the cession of some frontier fortresses in the Iberian Peninsula;
- the concession of the contract [asiento] for the supply of slaves to the Castilian colonies in America.

The main military operations of this war, in which Portuguese troops took part, were:

- a) Castilian incursions into the Alentejo and Beira from 1704 and 1708;
- b) Portuguese incursions into Spain between 1706 and 1711. In 1706, Portuguese forces occupied Madrid, being expelled from this city the following year and retreating to the region of Valência, where they were defeated, again in 1707, at the Battle of Almanza.

The War of Succession in Spain ended with the break-up, in 1711, of the coalition (led by Great Britain) supporting the claimant to the throne, Charles. In 1712, an armistice was signed and, in 1713, the Treaty of Utrecht was signed, through which the Western Hapsburg Empire was divided between the two claimants. In relation to Portugal, the Treaty of Utrecht established the

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

northern frontier of Brazil at the River Oyapock and the southern border of Brazil at the River Plate.

### **— Intervention in the Mediterranean against the Ottoman Empire**

From 1716 to 1719, a war was fought between various powers, namely the Papal States and Venice, and the Ottoman Empire, in which Portugal participated by sending a naval force to the Mediterranean against the Ottoman Empire. In particular, this force took part in the Battle of Matapan in 1717.

### **— Seven Years' War**

In 1761, France and Spain proposed a Family Pact to Portugal, by means of which all the countries whose sovereigns were relatives of the House of Bourbon should ally themselves to those countries, which were then at war with a coalition led by Great Britain and Prussia (it should be noted that King José I of Portugal was married to a princess of the House of Bourbon). In view of Portugal's refusal, France and Spain declared war on Portugal.

The main military operations of this war consisted of Spanish incursions over the border, leading to the occupation of Miranda do Douro in 1762.

The Seven Years' War ended with the signing of the Treaty of Paris in 1763. In relation to Portugal, the Treaty of Paris re-established the southern frontier of Brazil at the River Plate, thereby annulling the Treaty of Madrid signed in 1750, which had ceded Uruguay to Spain.

### **— Roussillon Campaign (War of the First Coalition against France)**

In 1793, a Portuguese expeditionary corps was sent to Catalonia to take part in an attempt to invade the French province of Roussillon, in the context of the so-called War of the First Coalition against revolutionary France.

Military operations were inconclusive and the Portuguese expeditionary corps had to be repatriated in 1795, due to Spain's abandonment of the coalition.

Portugal did not take part in the remaining operations of the War of the First Coalition against revolutionary France, which ended in 1797.

### — War of the Oranges (War of the Second Coalition against France)

In the context of the so-called War of the Second Coalition against revolutionary France, Portugal took part in naval operations in cooperation with Great Britain against France and her allies, amongst whom were Spain.

By way of reprisal, Spain invaded and occupied the Alentejo in 1801. This invasion is usually referred to as the War of the Oranges.

The War of the Oranges ended with the signing of the Treaty of Badajoz in 1801, through which Portugal ceded the region of Olivença to Spain, whilst the northern frontier of Brazil was re-established at the River Amazon.

### — Peninsular War

Portugal remained neutral in the war which opposed the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and her allies to France and her allies between 1803 and 1807. However, the refusal to participate in the so-called Continental Blockade, imposed by France on trade with the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, involved Portugal in what is usually referred to as the Peninsular War.

The military operations of the Peninsular War can be divided into four phases:

1) First French (and Spanish) invasion of Portugal — In November 1807, the territory of mainland Portugal was occupied, without any Portuguese resistance, by French forces (in the south) and Spanish forces (in the north), led by General Junot, who temporarily took over the regency of the occupied territories.

In Spring 1808, there were rebellions against the French and Spanish occupation. In May 1808, the Spanish forces withdrew from Portugal, as a result of the Spanish rebellion of 2 May 1808 against the King Joseph Bonaparte, whom France had just imposed, deposing the King Carlos III. As a result of this withdrawal, a Portuguese regency was set up in June 1808, based in Oporto, and an army was organised. In July 1808, a British expeditionary force led by General Arthur Wellesley (the future Duke of Wellington) disembarked in the centre of the country. Attempts by the Anglo-Portuguese forces to advance on Lisbon met with French resistance, which they defeated at the battles of Roliça and Vimeiro in August 1808. In view of the impossibility of maintaining their positions, the occupying French forces surrendered. Under the terms of the Convention of Sintra, they were repatriated in British ships in September 1808.

2) Second French invasion of Portugal — In February 1809, Marshal Soult, the commander of the French forces occupying Galicia, led a French force through the valley of the River Tâmega

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

as far as Oporto, which was occupied. He could not, however, maintain his positions against a counter-offensive by the Anglo-Portuguese forces and was forced to withdraw.

3) Third French invasion of Portugal — In July 1810, a French force, commanded by Marshal Massena, invaded Beira and Estremadura and managed to encircle Lisbon by land to the north of the River Tagus, after overcoming the resistance of the frontier fortress of Almeida and an attempt by the Anglo-Portuguese forces to stop the French forces at Buçaco.

After roughly a year of fighting in the vicinity of Lisbon (the so-called lines of Torres Vedras), the French forces were forced to withdraw in March 1811, finally being expelled from Portugal in October 1811, after the Battle of Redinha.

4) Participation of Portuguese forces in military operations in Spain and France — From 1811 to 1814, Portuguese forces took part in military operations in Spain and France. These operations, carried out by British, Portuguese and Spanish forces, resulted in the expulsion of the French forces from Spain by 1813 and the occupation of South West France in 1814.

It should also be noted that, in 1808, deploying forces from Brazil, Portugal occupied the Spanish colony of Uruguay and the French colony of Cayenne.

Portugal did not take part in the military operations related to the so-called Hundred Days in 1815.

The Peninsular War ended with the signing of the Treaty of Vienna in 1815. In accordance with this treaty, the territories occupied in the wars of 1801 and 1815 were due to revert to the control of their original sovereigns (which meant that the northern border of Brazil was re-established at the River Oyapock). This happened with Cayenne, but not with Uruguay (which rebelled and ended up becoming independent), nor with Olivença.

### **— Brazilian War of Independence**

The Brazilian War of Independence was fought from 1822 to 1825, as a consequence of the resistance of Portuguese forces stationed in Brazil to the declaration of independence made by this country on 7 September 1822.

Military operations were inconclusive, due to the Brazilian incapacity to subdue the Portuguese forces and the Portuguese incapacity to strengthen its forces in Brazil.

The Brazilian War of Independence ended with the unilateral recognition of the independence of Brazil by the King João VI through a Letter Patent of 13 May 1825, which was followed by the Treaty of Rio de Janeiro of 29 August 1825, ratified by the law of 15 November 1825.



### — French intervention in Portugal

As a result of a series of diplomatic incidents, a French fleet penetrated into the estuary of the River Tagus on 11 July 1831, forcing the forces that were defending it to surrender and imposing on Portugal the provision of certain diplomatic satisfactions and indemnities.

### — African campaigns

From the fifteenth century onwards, the establishment of Portuguese trading-posts and fortresses at various points along the coast of Africa led to conflicts with the African states that had previously existed in the regions that Portugal wished to submit to its sovereignty. However, it was only at the end of the nineteenth century and the beginning of the twentieth century that the main wars were fought between Portugal and these African states. The beginning of these wars was caused by the need to establish an effective administration in the regions whose sovereignty was recognised as belonging to Portugal by the treaties following on from the Berlin Conference of 1885. The end of these wars resulted from the fact that the aim of establishing an effective administration of these regions had generally been achieved in the years immediately following the first world war.

These wars are generally referred to as the African campaigns and ended systematically with the victory of the Portuguese forces. The most significant military operations were:

a) In Mozambique:

- the campaign for the control of Zambezia in 1889;
- the campaign against the Macololo tribe in 1889;
- the campaign against the Vátua tribe from 1895 to 1897;
- the campaign against the Namarral tribe in 1896;
- the campaign for the submission of the Sultanate of Angoche in 1910.

b) In Angola:

- the campaign for the control of Cubango in 1889;
- the campaign for the control of Bié in 1890;
- the campaign for the control of Bailundo in 1902;
- the campaigns against the Cuamata tribe from 1904 to 1907;
- the campaign against the Dembo tribe in 1907;
- the campaign against the Cuanhama tribe in 1910;

c) In Guinea:

- the campaign against the Balanta and Mandinga tribes in 1913;

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

- the campaign against the Manjaco tribe in 1914;
- the campaign against the Papel tribe in 1915;

### — The Boxer War

The Boxer War was fought in the summer of 1900 as a result of the taking of power in China by the White Lotus Flower society (whose members were known as 'boxers') and the subsequent declaration of war by China on all the countries that had been granted rights of sovereignty on Chinese territory (Austria-Hungary, Belgium, France, Germany, Great Britain, Japan, Netherlands, Portugal, Russia, Spain and United States of America).

The military operations consisted of the occupation of Tianjin and Beijing by troops from some of the countries on which China had declared war. Portuguese forces did not take part in these operations.

The Boxer War ended with the signing of the treaty of Beijing, which confirmed the concessions of the rights of sovereignty that had previously existed on Chinese territory and obliged China to pay compensation to the victorious powers.

### — First World War

Portugal's participation in the First World War passed through two distinct periods: the period of formal neutrality from August 1914 to March 1916 and the period of formal belligerence from March 1916 to November 1918.

During the period of formal neutrality, Germany promoted rebellions amongst the natives and provoked border incidents in the south of Angola (from the German colony of South West Africa, or present-day Namibia) and in the north of Mozambique (from the German colony of Tanganyika, today part of Tanzania). Such problems forced the Portuguese government to send military expeditions to defend the two main Portuguese colonies in Africa, but did not lead to significant military operations. The occupation of German South West Africa in 1915 by the British dominion of South Africa did in fact bring an end to the problems in Angola thereafter.

Portugal transferred to a position of formal belligerence as a result of the declaration of war by Germany on 9 March 1916. This declaration of war invoked, as a reason, the fact that Portugal had refused to guarantee that the German ships anchored in Portuguese ports, which had been impounded by Portugal a month before, would not be placed at the disposal of Germany's

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

enemies. In fact, the impounded ships were divided between the Portuguese and British merchant navies, as had been expected.

During the period of formal belligerence, Portugal took part in military operations in three theatres of war.

a) Mozambique — In 1916, Portugal attempted to set in motion an invasion of the German colony of Tanganyika, thus cooperating with the British attacks from Kenya and the Belgian attacks from the Congo. At first, it met with some success and managed to occupy the south of Tanganyika in 1916. However, the Portuguese troops were soon driven back and a German counter-offensive occupied the northern half of Mozambique in 1917. Despite some Portuguese gains in 1918, the German troops only left Mozambique after the general German surrender in November 1918.

b) Flanders — In 1916, a Portuguese Expeditionary Corps was sent to Flanders with a view to strengthening a sector of the European western front. After waging a bloody and inconclusive trench war between Autumn 1916 and Spring 1918, the Portuguese Expeditionary Corps was crushed by a German offensive on 9 April 1918 (at the Battle of La Lys). After this defeat, the Portuguese troops remaining in Flanders were incorporated into the British forces until the end of the war.

c) Atlantic — Portuguese ships in the Atlantic were subjected to a series of submarine attacks by Germany, to which Portugal replied with the convoy and escort system that had already been adopted by its allies. In addition to this, Portugal ceded bases on its territory to its allies, particularly Great Britain and the United States of America, in order for them to conduct the anti-submarine war and protect communications between the two shores of the Atlantic.

The First World War ended with the armistice of 11 November 1918, which was followed by the Treaties of Versailles (with Germany), Saint-Germain (with Austria), Neuilly (with Bulgaria), Trianon (with Hungary) and Sèvres (with Turkey). In accordance with these treaties, Portugal obtained the following effects: the cession of the ships of the defeated powers, which had been impounded during the war; the cession of the territory of Quionga (which was part of the German colony of Tanganyika and was integrated into Mozambique); and the right to receive 0.75% of the war reparations to be paid by the defeated countries. These reparations were later fixed at 6 600 million pounds (Portugal effectively received roughly 4 635 000 pounds of the 49 500 000 provided for under the terms of the treaties).

## — Second World War

Although Portugal maintained formal neutrality throughout the Second World War, this did not prevent it from taking part in two important military events.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

a) Occupation of Timor — In December 1941, the Portuguese colony of Timor was occupied by an Australian and Dutch force in order to prevent it being used by the Japanese army as a base against Australia or the Dutch East Indies (present-day Indonesia). The Portuguese garrison did not resist, but the Portuguese government protested. Subsequent negotiations led to an agreement to replace the Australian and Dutch force through a reinforcement of the Portuguese garrison. However, before this reinforcement arrived, the Australian and Dutch force was defeated by a Japanese army in February 1942 and, despite fresh Portuguese protests and the maintenance of a band of guerrillas led by Australians and Dutch, Portuguese Timor was occupied by Japan until August 1945. The Portuguese administration was re-established in September 1945.

b) Cession of military bases to Great Britain (and the United States) in the Azores — From October 1943 onwards, the Anglo-Portuguese alliance was invoked and Portugal granted Great Britain the right to use military bases in the Azores (in practice, it was the American air force that used the bases, situated on the islands of Terceira and Santa Maria). Germany protested, but this protest was not followed by any declaration of war or severing of relations.

### — Occupation of Portuguese India by India

After gaining independence in 1947, India requested Portugal to hold talks for the transfer of its sovereignty over Portuguese India to India. In view of Portugal's refusal, India occupied the territories of Dadrá and Nagar-Aveli in July 1954 and the territories of Goa, Damão and Diu in December 1961, with Portugal offering only brief resistance.

Portugal recognised India's sovereignty over Portuguese India through Law No. 9/74 of 15 October 1974.

### — Angolan War of Independence

The armed struggle for the independence of Angola was set in motion by the *Movimento Popular de Libertação de Angola* (MPLA — Popular Movement for the Liberation of Angola) on 4 February 1961, the *União dos Povos de Angola* (UPA — Popular Angolan Union), later the *Frente Nacional de Libertação de Angola* (FNLA — National Front for the Liberation of Angola), on 15 March 1961 and the *União Nacional para a Independência Total de Angola* (UNITA — Union for the Total Independence of Angola) on 25 December 1965.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

Military operations continued until 1974, with Portugal managing to retain control of most of the territory.

The Angolan War of Independence ended with the signing of the Alvor Agreement of 15 January 1975 between Portugal, FNLA, MPLA and UNITA about the concession of Angolan independence. The transitional government structures of the State of Angola were created by Constitutional Law No. 1/75 of 30 January 1975. During the transitional period, a civil war broke out between MPLA and an alliance formed between FNLA and UNITA. On 11 November 1975, Portugal ceased to formally exercise sovereignty over Angola and the independence of Angola was proclaimed separately by an MPLA government based in Luanda and an FNLA-UNITA alliance government based in Nova Lisboa (present-day Huambo).

### **— Occupation of São João Baptista de Ajudá by Dahomey (present-day Benin)**

In 1961, the fortress of São João Baptista de Ajudá, which was part of the overseas province of São Tomé and Príncipe, was occupied by Dahomey (present-day Benin), with Portugal offering only symbolic resistance.

Portugal recognised Dahomey's sovereignty over São João Baptista de Ajudá in 1974.

### **— Guinean War of Independence**

The armed struggle for the independence of Portuguese Guinea was set in motion by the *Partido Africano para a Independência da Guiné e Cabo Verde* (PAIGC — African Party for the Independence of Guinea and Cape Verde) in January 1962.

Military operations continued until 1974, with Portugal having lost effective control of most of the territory. On 24 September 1973, the Popular National Assembly of Guinea-Bissau met at Madina do Boé and proclaimed the independence of Guinea-Bissau.

The Guinean War of Independence ended with the Algiers Protocol of 26 August 1974, signed between Portugal and PAIGC, about the recognition of the independence of Guinea-Bissau and the granting of independence to Cape Verde. The independence of Guinea-Bissau was recognised by Portugal on 10 September 1974. Cape Verde became independent on 5 July 1975.

### — Mozambican War of Independence

The armed struggle for the independence of Mozambique was set in motion by the *Frente de Libertação de Moçambique* (FRELIMO — Front for the Liberation of Mozambique) in September 1964.

Military operations continued until 1974, with Portugal managing to retain control of most, although not all, of the territory.

The Mozambican War of Independence ended with the Lusaka Accord of 7 September 1974 signed between Portugal and FRELIMO about the granting of independence to Mozambique. The transitional government structures of the State of Mozambique were created by Constitutional Law No. 8/74 of 9 September 1974. Mozambique became independent on 25 July 1975.

### — Occupation of East Timor by Indonesia

Constitutional Law No. 7/75 of 17 July 1975 approved the process and the calendar for the decolonisation of Portuguese Timor. However, the outbreak of a civil war in August 1975 between the *Associação Popular Democrática de Timor* (APODETI — Democratic Popular Association of Timor), the *Frente Timorense de Libertação Nacional* (FRETILIN — Timorese National Liberation Front) and the *União Democrática de Timor* (UDT — Democratic Union of Timor) meant that Portuguese sovereignty was in fact brought to an end in the territory. As a result of these events, Indonesia invaded and occupied the territory of East Timor in December 1975. The following year, East Timor was formally annexed by Indonesia. However, this annexation was recognised neither by Portugal nor by the United Nations and was contested through both armed resistance and diplomatic action by FRETILIN and UDT, who were later united in the *Conselho Nacional de Resistência Timorense* (CNRT — National Council of Timorese Resistance) until 1999. In May 1999, an agreement was signed between Portugal and Indonesia to hold a consultation of the population of the territory so that they could choose between its integration into Indonesia as an autonomous region and independence. The consultation was held in August 1999, with the result being clearly in favour of independence. In the same year, the administration of the territory was formally handed over to the United Nations as the beginning of the process of transition towards independence.

Table 12.8 — External wars and conflicts (continued)

### **— Peace-keeping operations in Mozambique**

Between 1994 and 1996, Portuguese forces took part in peace-keeping operations carried out by the United Nations Organisation (UN) in Mozambique. These operations were successful.

### **— Peace-keeping operations in Angola**

Between 1995 and 1998, Portuguese forces took part in peace-keeping operations carried out by the United Nations Organisation (UN) in Angola. These operations proved to be unsuccessful.

### **— Peace-keeping operations in Bosnia-Herzegovina**

Since 1996, Portuguese forces have been involved in peace-keeping operations carried out by the Organisation for Security and Cooperation in Europe (OSCE) in Bosnia-Herzegovina.

### **— War against Yugoslavia**

In 1999, Portuguese forces took part in operations carried out by the North Atlantic Treaty Organisation (NATO) to impose the withdrawal of Yugoslavian military forces from the autonomous region of Kosovo. These operations were successful.

### **— Peace-keeping operations in Kosovo**

Since 1999, Portuguese forces have been involved in peace-keeping operations carried out by the North Atlantic Treaty Organisation (NATO) in Kosovo.

### **— Peace-keeping operations in East-Timor**

Since 1999, Portuguese forces have been involved in peace-keeping operations carried out by the United Nations Organisation (UN) in East-Timor.